



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Gough, Add.,
Ireland. 8^{vo} 136

I R E L A N D :

Historical and Statistical.

BY

GEORGE LEWIS SMYTH.



VOL. I.

LONDON:
WHITTAKER AND CO., AVE MARIA LANE.

M D C C C X L I V .

LONDON:
WILLIAM STEVENS, PRINTER, BELL YARD,
TEMPLE BAR.

TO

NICHOLAS MAHER, ESQ., M.P.,
TURTULLA, TIPPERARY.

MY DEAR MAHER,

It affords me peculiar pleasure to dedicate to you this account of the past and present state of our country.

If I were to recapitulate here all the motives which have led me to prefix your name to these pages, I should trespass upon the reserve of private friendship. There are public grounds, however, on which the selection becomes so appropriate, that I may be fairly allowed to mention some of them. As a constant resident in the country—a practical agriculturalist—a large landed proprietor—and one of the representatives in Parliament of an extensive, populous, and wealthy county,—you take, I know, a deep interest in the subject itself, and will regard, I am sure, with indulgence, this attempt to make its importance more generally understood.

There are, it is true, opinions expressed and views taken in this Work, which neither you, nor a large number of our fellow countrymen, at present coincide in. I am not, however, the less disposed, on that account, to place it in your hands or theirs. I have studied to be impartial, and spoken deliberate convictions; and I rely with confidence upon the candour

and justice of all parties, for an honest appreciation of my intentions in offering this humble contribution to the cause we have all at heart—the good of Ireland.

I am, my dear Maher,

Ever truly and sincerely yours,

GEO. LEWIS SMYTH.

*Bridge Street, Westminster,
April, 1844.*

and justice shall

i

v

I R E L A N D,

&c. &c.

CHAPTER I.

STATISTICAL AND POLITICAL SUMMARY.

NUMBER OF ACRES AND PEOPLE.—THEIR OCCUPATIONS, DWELLINGS, AND EXTENT OF EDUCATION.—VALUE AND RENTAL OF LAND.—TAXATION AND DEBT.—EXPORTS AND IMPORTS.—ESTABLISHMENTS, THEIR NUMBER, OBJECTS, AND EXPENSES.—HOW FILLED.—COLONIAL FORM OF GOVERNMENT.—ITS INJURIOUS EFFECTS.—POLICY AND ECONOMY OF ABOLISHING IT, AND ADMINISTERING THE AFFAIRS OF IRELAND AS THOSE OF SCOTLAND ARE ADMINISTERED.—RECAPITULATION.

ACCORDING to the Report of the Census Commissioners of Ireland for 1841, the surface of the island contains 8,175,124 persons, and 20,808,271 acres. Deducting from the latter 630,825 acres of water, the land will consist of 20,177,446 acres.* Of these there are 374,482 which are covered by

* There appears some discrepancy in the separate statements of the Commissioners under this head. At page XIII of the Report, the number of arable acres is set forth at 20,765,342. At page 452, the number of acres upon the surface of the island is given as 20,808,271, which seems an error, as if the acreage in water be added to the arable acreage enumerated at p. XIII, the total surface would be 21,396,167.

There has been a Parliamentary Census of the Population of Ireland three times, according to which the inhabitants were—

In 1821	6,801,827
1831	7,767,401
1841	8,175,124

being an addition from 1821 to 1831 of about 14½ per cent., and but 5½ per cent. from 1831 to 1841; as to which, however, the Commissioners assert that the numbers returned in 1831 were greater, and those in 1821

plantations, 13,464,300 which are cultivated, and 6,295,735 waste.

Upon the same authority we learn that the 8,175,124 persons inhabit 1,328,839 houses, of which 491,278 are mud cabins containing only one room; 533,297 are mud cabins containing from two to four rooms; 264,184 good farm-houses, and houses in the back streets of towns, containing from four to nine rooms; and 40,080 are houses of a better description. Out of the total number of 1,328,839 dwellings, therefore, no less than 1,024,575 are mud cabins.

Again, of the total number of inhabitants, 8,175,124, no less than 625,356 families, numbering 3,470,725 persons, live in single rooms, while the rural population engrosses 7,039,659. The wages of the labouring portion of this monstrous majority vary in the South and West from 4d. to 10d., and in the North from 8d. to 1s. a day. Under so depressed a state of things, it cannot surprise us to find the Commissioners of Poor Enquiry in the year 1836* reporting that 2,385,000 of the whole less than the actual population. But from the native population, from 1831 to 1841, there were drafts in the way of

Emigration to the Colonies	.	.	.	428,471
", Great Britain	.	.	.	104,814
Recruits for the Army	.	.	.	34,090
", East India Company	.	.	.	5,089

572,464

This number added to the resident population gives a total of 8,747,588. Subjecting the Returns for 1831 to the same corrections, there appear—

Census of 1831	.	.	.	7,767,401
Emigration from 1821 to 1831	.	.	.	70,000
Recruits do.	.	.	.	46,402
				<hr/>
Deduct Army in Ireland	.	.	.	7,883,803
				<hr/>
Computed Population in 1831	.	.	.	7,854,317
Do. in 1841	.	.	.	8,747,588

Computed increase 893,271

being an increase of nearly 12 per cent. *Census Report, 1841.*
* Third Report, p. 5. The estimate is—"Number of persons out of work, and in distress, during 30 weeks in the year, 585,000—number of persons dependent upon them, 1,800,000,—in the whole, 2,385,000." In the preceding page, the average earnings of agricultural labourers in England are stated to be from 8s. to 10s. a week; and in Ireland, from 2s. to 2s. 6d.

population are paupers; and as that population has since increased, and the unproductive harvests of three ungenial seasons in succession have added to the general distress, we are not warranted, unfortunately, in supposing that there is now less destitution and suffering in Ireland than there was eight years ago. Amongst a people so poor, it follows as a natural consequence that a large body should also be extremely ignorant. Out of the total resident population, after deducting children under five years of age, the Census Commissioners return 3,766,066 as unable to read or write.

In the following Table, drawn up from the Report of the Census Commissioners, by D. Phelan, Esq., Author of the "Enquiry into the Medical Charities of Ireland," and late an Assistant Poor Law Commissioner, a striking view is exhibited of the circumstances and condition of the population.

PROVINCE.	COUNTY.	Population of County.	Number of Persons residing in Houses of 4th Class Ac- commodation.	Proportion per Cent. of the Population residing in Houses of 4th Class Ac- commodation.
Leinster.	Wexford	202,033	58,446	28 <i>1</i> <i>2</i>
	Dublin	140,070	39,882	28 <i>1</i> <i>2</i>
	Kilkenny	202,420	61,934	31
	Carlow County	86,228	27,694	31 <i>1</i>
	Queen's County	153,930	50,465	32 <i>1</i>
	Wicklow	126,143	41,314	32 <i>1</i>
	King's County	146,857	49,022	33 <i>1</i>
	Kildare	114,488	38,932	34 <i>1</i>
	Longford	115,491	40,331	35 <i>1</i>
	Westmeath	141,300	54,195	38
	Meath	183,828	69,124	40
	Louth and Drogheda	128,240	52,269	42
Munster.	County of City of Dublin	232,726	128,742	55 <i>1</i>
	Waterford County and City	196,187	71,349	36 <i>1</i> <i>2</i>
	Tipperary	435,553	174,270	40
	Limerick County and City	330,029	166,758	50
	Clare	286,394	152,236	53
Ulster.	Cork County and City	773,398	399,177	54 <i>1</i>
	— City	80,720	32,445	
	Kerry	293,880	185,308	
	Down	361,446	91,575	25 <i>1</i>
	Antrim	360,875	101,171	28
	Armagh	232,393	73,537	31 <i>1</i>
	Monaghan	200,442	64,235	32 <i>1</i>

PROVINCE.	COUNTY.	Population of County.	Number of Persons residing in Houses of 4th Class Ac- commodation.	Proportion per Cent. of the Population residing in Houses of 4th Class Ac- commodation.
Ulster— <i>continued.</i>	Tyrone	312,956	114,922	Mean. 36 $\frac{1}{2}$
	Londonderry	222,174	82,478	37
	Cavan	243,158	88,860	37 $\frac{1}{2}$
	Fermanagh	156,481	64,313	41
	Donegal	296,448	139,876	47
Connaught.	Leitrim	155,297	70,540	45 $\frac{1}{2}$
	Roscommon	253,591	121,467	47 $\frac{1}{2}$
	Sligo	180,886	89,277	49
	Galway County and Town	440,198	229,142	52
	Mayo	388,887	241,052	62
	Total of Leinster . . .	1,973,754	712,350	Mean. 36 $\frac{1}{2}$
	Total of Munster . . .	2,396,161	1,181,543	Mean. 49 $\frac{1}{2}$
	Total of Ulster . . .	2,386,373	820,967	Mean. 34 $\frac{1}{2}$
	Total of Connaught . . .	1,418,859	751,478	Mean. 52 $\frac{1}{2}$
	Total of Ireland . . .	8,175,147	3,466,338	Mean. 42 $\frac{1}{2}$

In all these details of the actual state of Ireland, and its inhabitants, the leading facts are so bold, and they stand so prominently forward, that the attention of the least reflecting minds must be attracted by them. Upon thinking men, they will necessarily produce so deep an impression, as to render the simplest recapitulation of them sufficient to fix their true character upon the memory. They are, 1st, the large quantity of uncultivated compared with cultivated land—6,295,735 to 13,464,300 acres: 2ndly, the vast preponderance in the number of persons dependent upon agriculture—7,039,659 out of 8,175,124: 3rdly, the excess of mud cabins—1,024,575 out of 1,328,839 dwellings: 4thly, the abject poverty and ignorance shown in the low rate of wages and the inability of 3,766,066 persons above five years of age either to read or to write.

Under these few heads we detect the deep-seated and

wide-spread roots of many of those evils which are a shame to our humanity ; and of not a few of the heavy grievances long reasonably but unavailingly complained of and remonstrated against—evils and grievances of which the dark and disheartening parallel is not to be found in any other country in Europe.*

* Of the many writers who have described the distress of the Irish poor, the last is the best. His relation of the persons, places, the objects he saw, and the impressions produced upon his mind by them, is plain and without vanity or prejudice. In his preceding travels, the poorest people in the poorest countries of Europe, had fallen under his notice: he came to visit Ireland with an intimate knowledge of the miseries endured by pauper populations, such as no other traveller with whom we are acquainted has possessed. The following extract from the recently published "Travels in Ireland," by J. G. Kohl, is long, but too truthful and forcible to be abridged:—

" I remember, when I saw the poor Lettes in Livonia, I used to pity them for having to live in huts built of the unhewn logs of trees, the crevices being stopped up with moss. I pitied them on account of their low doors, and their diminutive windows, and gladly would I have arranged their chimnies for them in a more suitable manner. Well, Heaven pardon my ignorance. I knew not that I should ever see a people on whom Almighty God had imposed yet heavier privations. Now that I have seen Ireland, it seems to me that the Lettes, the Estonians, and the Finlanders, lead a life of comparative comfort, and poor Paddy would feel like a King with their houses, their habiliments, and their daily fare.

" A wooden house, with moss to stop up its crevices, would be a palace in the wild regions of Ireland. Paddy's cabin is built of earth, one shovelful over the other, with a few stones mingled here and there, till the wall is high enough. But perhaps you will say, the roof is thatched or covered with bark. Ay, indeed ! A few sods of grass cut from a neighbouring bog are his only thatch. Well, but a window or two at least, if it be only a pane of glass fixed in the wall, or the bladder of some animal, or a piece of talc, as may often be seen in a Wallachian hut ? What idle luxury were this ! There are thousands of cabins in which not a trace of a window is to be seen ; nothing but a little square hole in front, which doubles the duty of door, window and chimney ; light, smoke, pigs, and children, all must pass in and out of the same aperture !

" A French author, Beaumont, who had seen the Irish peasant in his cabin, and the North American Indian in his wigwam, has assured us that the savage is better provided for than the poor man in Ireland. Indeed, the question may be raised, whether in the whole world a nation is to be found that is subjected to such physical privations as the peasantry in some parts of Ireland. This fact cannot be placed in too strong a light; for if it can once be shown that the wretchedness of the Irish population is without a parallel example on the globe, surely every friend of humanity will feel himself called on to reflect whether means may not be found for remedying an evil of so astounding a magnitude !

" A Russian peasant, no doubt, is the slave of a harder master, but still he is fed and housed to his content, and no trace of mendicancy is to be seen in him. The Hungarians are certainly not among the best used people in the world ; still, what fine wheaten bread, and what wine, has

Having grown up, and been suffered to exist notwithstanding the intimate connection of England with Ireland, and the laws passed by the legislature of Great Britain, they must be

even the humblest among them for his daily fare ! The Hungarian would scarcely believe it, if he were to be told there was a country in which the inhabitants must content themselves with potatoes every alternate day in the year.

" Servia and Bosnia are reckoned among the most wretched countries of Europe, and certainly the appearance of one of their villages has little that is attractive about it ; but at least the people, if badly housed, are well clad. We look not for much luxury or comfort among the Tartars of the Crimea ; we call them poor and barbarous, but, good heavens ! they look at least like human creatures. They have a national costume, their houses are habitable, their orchards are carefully tended, and their gaily-harnessed ponies are mostly in good condition. An Irishman has nothing national about him but his rags,—his habitation is without a plan, his domestic economy without rule or law. We have beggars and paupers among us, but they form at least an exception : whereas, in Ireland, beggary or abject poverty is the prevailing rule. The nation is one of beggars, and they who are above beggary seem to form the exception.

" The African negroes go naked, but then they have a tropical sun to warm them. The Irish are little removed from a state of nakedness, and their climate, though not cold, is cool, and extremely humid.

" The Indians in America live wretchedly enough at times, but they have no knowledge of a better condition, and, as they are hunters, they have every now and then a productive chase, and are able to make a number of feast days in the year. Many Irishmen have but one day on which they eat flesh, namely, on Christmas-day. Every other day they feed on potatoes, and nothing but potatoes. Now this is inhuman ; for the appetite and stomach of man claim variety in food, and nowhere else do we find human beings gnawing, from year's end to year's end, at the same root, berry, or weed. There are animals who do so, but human beings nowhere, except in Ireland.

" There are nations of slaves, but they have, by long custom, been made unconscious of the yoke of slavery. This is not the case with the Irish, who have a strong feeling of liberty within them, and are fully sensible of the weight of the yoke they have to bear. They are intelligent enough to know the injustice done them by the distorted laws of their country : and while they are themselves enduring the extreme of poverty, they have frequently before them, in the manner of life of their English landlords, a spectacle of the most refined luxury that human ingenuity ever invented.

" What awakens the most painful feelings in travelling through one of these rocky, boggy districts, rich in nothing but ruins, is this :—Whether you look back into the past, or forward to the future, no prospect more cheering presents itself. There is not the least trace left to show that the country has ever been better cultivated, or that a happier race ever dwelt in it. It seems as if wretchedness had prevailed there from time immemorial—as if rags had succeeded rags, bog had formed over bog, ruins had given birth to ruins, and beggars had begotten beggars, for a long series of centuries. Nor does the future present a more cheering view. Even for the poor Greeks under Turkish domination, there was more hope than for the Irish under the English."

taken to prove that there has prevailed, either the most culpable ignorance and heartless indifference to the strength and welfare of the empire at large ; or a sad and very discreditable want of foresight, wisdom, and liberality, amongst the various statesmen who for many years past have been permitted to hold the destinies of the three kingdoms in their hands. Who can wonder that discontent, insubordination, and even crime, should predominate, where misery—the unvarying lot of the multitude—has always been compressed into the most rigid forms of intense suffering ? Who will doubt that the improvement of a country thus deeply wretched, must, if it is to be permanent, spring from the very lowest foundations of the social system ? We must begin at the bottom and work upwards. If the essential evil be not first of all corrected—if the 2,385,000 paupers, crowded into their 1,024,527 huts, with 5,000,000 acres * of reclaimable waste land around them, be not promptly dealt with—if the craving wants of this great mass be not appeased, if food and raiment be not brought within the reach of the famished tillers of the soil, their half-clad wives, and naked children—it is utterly vain to hope that any other labour, however noble and extensive in its plan, and however strenuous and honourable the efforts made to carry it out, can, by possibility, be sound in its origin, successful in its prosecution, or suffice to regenerate this desolate and discomfited nation ?

The value of the cultivated land in Ireland, excepting pasture fields in the immediate neighbourhood of the better sort of towns and con acre lettings, varies from 10*s.* to £2 10*s.* an acre per annum. The rent of town fields and of fields set in con acre, rises from £3 to £6, £8, and even £10 an acre per annum. Of the first named land, pasturage bears the highest rent. The most productive arable land in the best situations is eagerly taken at £1 10*s.* and £1 15*s.* an acre per annum. Upon the whole, these rents do not appear to be considered excessive—that is, they are not higher than the ground, pro-

* This is the common estimate of the quantity of land now waste but held to be reclaimable.

perly cultivated, would enable an industrious tenant to pay, if duly assisted by capital, and the protection of a fair tenure. In the generality of cases, however, there is neither adequate capital, nor a fair tenure : in some the capital exists, but the sharp and precarious conditions of the tenure operate strongly against its application. If both capital and a fair tenure were to be happily conjoined, there are few persons well acquainted with the country and the people, who would not be sanguine in their expectations of a considerable increase in the produce and consequent value of the land in Ireland.

Mr. Wakefield, in 1812, estimated the rental of Ireland at £17,000,000. (Vol. ii. p. 835.) In the evidence given in 1830 before the Commons Committee of Inquiry on the State of the Poor in Ireland, we find one witness of opinion that the rental was then £12,000,000, and another that it was £15,000,000. The valuation of the Poor Law Commissioners, completed, but not yet presented to Parliament, is understood to stand at between £13,000,000 and £14,000,000. In the latter case, the prescribed standard of calculation, and a number of deductions not unreasonably allowed under the circumstances, give a smaller amount than the real sum of the total rental. If, however, we add the applicable data of the Census Commissioners, by way of further illustration, we shall bring together probably the fullest and most minute materials it is possible to obtain for a calculation of the true rental of all property in land in Ireland. It appears (Census Report, pp. 454, 455) that the live stock upon the land, as to description, number, and value, stands thus :—

552,569	Horses and Mules, at £8	each	£4,420,552
1,840,025	Cattle . . . — £6 10s. ditto	11,960,158	
2,091,199	Sheep . . . — £1 2s. ditto	2,300,317	
1,353,101	Pigs . . . — £1 5s. ditto	1,691,373	
8,334,427	Poultry . . . — 6d. ditto	208,353	
90,315	Asses . . . — £1 ditto	90,315	
<hr/>			<hr/>
Total value of live stock			£20,671,068
<hr/>			<hr/>

As such property forms a principal material in the computation of rent ; and as the land must always be held to pre-

sent an amount of property corresponding with the value of this stock; it has been quoted here as an incidental test that our estimate of the annual rental of the whole country is not excessive in the following detail:—

	£
13,464,300 acres, from 10 <i>s.</i> to £2 10 <i>s.</i> per acre	20,196,450
Say 100 acres of field-land, surrounding 300 towns at from £3 to £8 a year per acre	135,000
Sites of towns, at £25 per acre, in round numbers	1,063,225
	<hr/>
	£21,394,675

There are English agriculturists who assert that the quantity and value of the produce of the soil in Ireland is to be doubled by an improved system of cultivation. Without taking that opinion into the account, it seems but fair to contend, after all the evidence adduced and the experiments tried during the last thirty years, that at least 5,000,000 acres of waste land are reclaimable upon the cheap terms of devoting to them the labour of the unemployed pauper population. By this easy process, the course of a few years would suffice to add £5,000,000 a year to the present rental of £21,394,675.

The other fountains of national wealth in Ireland are few, and, comparatively speaking, insignificant. The country abounds in mines, and mining operations of late years have been prosecuted upon an enlarged scale, with considerable success and fair profit. Four thousand tons of Irish copper appear to have been sold in a month last year at Swansea, and to have produced £30,000. The quantity of coal raised—it is principally anthracite—is on the increase both in the North and South, and it is now preferred to turf by the cottiers who can afford to use it. Still, neither the money embarked nor the money made by mining pursuit is considerable. In those great departments of productive industry, public works and public companies, much has been projected, and but little attempted. Of that little, moreover, only a small fractional part has proved lucrative. The mischievous interference of successive administrations, as will be shown in detail in a subsequent chapter, is chiefly to be blamed

for this serious misfortune. Four or five Joint-stock Banks, two or three Steam-boat, and one or two Mining Companies, are the only bodies of this description by which a good return has been realised upon the capital invested in them. The total number* of Joint-stock Companies is 32; the amount of their united paid up capitals, £9,327,730; and the total annual dividends thereupon £508,105 8s.

We cannot now, as we formerly could, produce with all desirable fulness and accuracy accounts illustrative of the income and expenditure of Ireland, the condition of the country, and the progress made in developing its resources. By the consolidation, not only of the national debts of Great Britain and Ireland, in the year 1816; but subsequently of their public Exchequers, Boards of Customs, Excise, and other great departments of financial government, an end was put to a number of separate offices and establishments, and in their stead was formed a general system of books and returns for the empire at large. It is thus no longer an easy task to show the extent of the operations carried on in a portion of the whole. Owing to the difficulties thus standing in our way, and our inability to present here, in an abridged shape, and upon unquestionable authority, the information it would be proper, if possible, to give, it will be necessary to place together a more numerous collection of extracts from official papers than under different circumstances would be called for.

Committees of the House of Commons sat and published Reports in the years 1811, 1812, and 1813 upon the Income and Expenditure of Ireland. The following accounts from the last of these will supply the more important details.

* They consist of 10 Banking, 3 Canal, 6 Navigation, 4 Railway, 2 Insurance, 3 Mining, 3 Steam-boat, and 1 Steam-ship Building Company.

The Amount of PAYMENTS made by GREAT BRITAIN, on account of the Joint Charge of the United Kingdom; and also, the Expense of managing and collecting the Revenue of Great Britain;—in Twelve Years, ended 5th January, 1813.

YEARS, ended 5th Jan.	PAYMENTS. (British Currency.)	MANAGEMENT. (British Currency.)	TOTALS. (British Currency.)
	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
1802 . .	25,219,180 3 10½	2,025,469 1 0½	27,244,649 4 11
1803 . .	25,244,817 10 14	1,982,079 5 10½	27,226,896 16 0½
1804 . .	23,138,895 10 7½	1,955,368 2 11	25,094,263 13 6½
1805 . .	34,326,193 18 6½	2,135,176 15 9½	36,461,370 14 4½
1806 . .	40,132,074 7 8½	2,257,185 19 2	42,389,260 6 10½
1807 . .	39,235,680 13 1	2,375,828 17 3	41,611,509 10 4
1808 . .	39,412,204 16 0½	2,699,048 1 7	42,111,252 17 7½
1809 . .	44,960,651 14 4	2,816,568 12 11½	47,777,220 7 3½
1810 . .	46,895,645 6 4½	2,886,201 0 5	49,781,846 6 9½
1811 . .	48,654,598 16 10½	2,934,876 0 9½	51,589,474 17 8
1812 . .	54,053,354 3 5½	3,096,581 16 4	57,149,935 19 9½
1813 . .	58,719,010 17 1½	3,273,242 0 0	61,992,252 17 1½
Totals .	£ 479,992,307 18 1½	£ 30,437,625 14 2½	£ 510,429,933 12 4

The Amount of PAYMENTS made by IRELAND, on account of the Joint Charge of the United Kingdom; and also, of the Expense of managing and collecting the Revenue of Ireland;—in Twelve Years, ended 5th January, 1813.

YEARS, ended 5th Jan.	PAYMENTS. (British Currency.)	MANAGEMENT. (British Currency.)	TOTALS. (British Currency.)
	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
1802 . .	3,897,899 2 9½	351,258 3 9½	4,249,157 6 7½
1803 . .	3,156,225 12 8	379,426 5 0½	3,535,651 17 8½
1804 . .	3,769,369 0 6½	406,764 14 3½	4,176,133 14 9½
1805 . .	4,946,194 8 7½	414,549 3 10	5,360,743 12 5½
1806 . .	4,609,916 13 0½	409,154 2 6½	5,019,070 15 7½
1807 . .	4,524,067 8 8½	420,602 18 4½	4,944,670 7 1½
1808 . .	4,656,391 14 0	487,997 1 7	5,144,388 15 7
1809 . .	5,034,294 18 1	596,946 10 4½	5,631,241 8 5½
1810 . .	4,991,385 13 11	727,671 4 0½	5,719,056 17 11½
1811 . .	4,514,098 15 0½	810,006 12 9½	5,324,105 7 9½
1812 . .	4,766,492 16 2	828,990 10 5	5,595,483 6 7
1813 . .	4,479,984 18 4½	826,232 13 4	5,306,217 11 8½
Totals .	£ 53,346,321 2 0	£ 6,659,600 0 4½	£ 60,005,921 2 4½

GENERAL STATEMENT OF THE FOREGOING ACCOUNTS.

(In British Currency).

	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Payments made by Great Britain in twelve years, ended the 5th January 1813 Management in said period	479,992	307	18	1 <i>1</i> 30,437,625 14 2 <i>4</i>		
				£510,429,933 12 4		
From which, deduct : viz. Repayments made to the British Exchequer, on account of Monies imprest or paid in advance, or on account, in eleven years ; from 1st January 1801, to 5th January 1812 Ditto, in the year ended 5th January 1813	864,055	9	9 <i>4</i> 66,253 11 4	53,346,321 2 0 6,655,600 0 4 <i>4</i>		
				930,309 1 1<i>4</i>		
Payments made by Ireland, in twelve years, ended 5th January 1813 Management in said period				509,499,624 11 2 <i>4</i>		
				£60,005,921 2 4<i>4</i>		
Joint Charge				£569,505,545 13 7		
Great Britain's Proportion of Contribution				502,504,893 4 1 <i>1</i> 67,000,652 8 8		
Ireland's Proportion				£569,505,545 13 7		
Expenditure by Great Britain Deduct her Proportion of Contribution				509,499,624 11 2 <i>4</i> 502,504,893 4 1 <i>1</i>		
Overpaid by Great Britain				£6,994,731 6 3<i>4</i>		

67,000	652	8	8
60,005	921	2	44
<hr/>			
£6,984	731	6	34
<hr/>			
4,391	276	0	0
<hr/>			
£2,603	455	6	34

From this is to be deducted the following Payments made by Ireland :
In the Year 1810

Which leaves the Balance due by Ireland, 5th January 1813

**PAYMENTS made by IRELAND, in 1812, on the Joint Account
of Great Britain and Ireland.**

	<i>£</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>	No. 1.—Payments out of the Consolidated Fund, for Civil List, Pensions, and other permanent Charges	No. 1.—Payments out of the Consolidated Fund	<i>£</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
No. 2.—Payments in anticipation of Exchequer Receipts	474,300	17	84	No. 2.—Civil Government of Scotland	No. 2.—Civil Government of Scotland	1,600,216	19	8
No. 3.—Payments for Ordnance Services	151,742	13	114	No. 3.—Payments in anticipation of Exchequer Receipts	No. 3.—Payments in anticipation of Exchequer Receipts	112,748	2	7
No. 4.—Payments for Army Services	514,547	0	11	No. 4.—Payments for Naval Services	No. 4.—Payments for Naval Services	582,675	8	84
No. 5.—Payments for Miscellaneous Services	3,208,845	17	24	No. 5.—Payments for Ordnance Services	No. 5.—Payments for Ordnance Services	20,500,339	7	0
	503,880	10	14	No. 6.—Payments for Army Services	No. 6.—Payments for Army Services	4,252,208	5	3
	4,833,316	19	11	No. 7.—Subsidies, &c.	No. 7.—Subsidies, &c.	24,907,286	15	114
				No. 8.—Payments for Miscellaneous Services	No. 8.—Payments for Miscellaneous Services	5,315,528	3	74
Expenses of managing and collecting the Revenue of Ireland, in the year ended the 5th January 1813	895,085	7	94	No. 9.—Expenses of managing and collecting the Revenue	No. 9.—Expenses of managing and collecting the Revenue	1,448,007	14	34
Irish Currency	£ 5,748,402	7	84			58,719,010	17	14
British Currency	£ 5,306,217	11	84			3,273,242	0	0
						£61,992,252	17	14

An ACCOUNT showing the Net Public INCOME and EXPENDITURE of IRELAND,
Ways and Means provided, within the same Period, by the

INCOME.—Years ended 5th Jan.	1828.			
	£	s. d.	£	s. d.
Monies remaining in the Exchequer at the commencement of the Year . . .	.	.	565,812	3 1
The Net Payments into the Exchequer of the following several Duties or Revenues ; viz.				
Customs	1,502,566	2 8	.	.
Excise	1,469,141	12 5	.	.
Stamps	436,085	13 0	.	.
Postage of Letters	78,000	0 0	.	.
Poundage Fee, Pells Fees, Treasury Fees, Hospital Fee and Casualties	9,896	8 0	.	.
Total Ordinary Revenue	3,495,689	16 1	.	.
OTHER RECEIPTS.				
Repayment of Money advanced for Public Works or other Public Objects	172,983	17 9½	.	.
Monies repaid by Public Accountants, and other Miscellaneous Payments	13,667	16 5	.	.
Total Income			3,682,341	10 3½
Total	£	.	4,248,153	13 4½

EXPENDITURE.—Years ended 5th Jan.	1828.			
	£	s. d.	£	s. d.
Dividend, Interest and Management of the Public Funded Debt, payable in Ireland	1,163,222	9 7	.	.
Civil List	207,000	0 0	.	.
Other Payments out of the Consolidated Fund	303,199	19 0	.	.
Total Payments out of the Consolidated Fund	1,673,422	8 7	.	.
Payments on Account [Army of Grants of Parliament Ordnance Miscellaneous]	1,026,826	10 9 (Paid by British Exchequer, from this time.)	.	.
Total Expenditure	367,322	18 8	.	.
OTHER PAYMENTS.				
Monies advanced out of the Consolidated Fund for Public Objects	437,753	19 9	.	.
Total Expenditure			3,505,325	17 9
Carried forward	£	.	3,505,325	17 9

in each Year, from 1828 to 1830, inclusive; and also showing the whole of the Creation of Debt, together with the Application thereof.

1829.			1830.		
£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
544,346	16	3½	860,167	10	8½
1,110,289	1	8	1,187,978	14	7
2,059,309	13	9½	1,790,288	14	3
441,585	7	7	456,688	17	7
108,000	0	0	105,000	0	0
9,353	1	1	8,886	14	8½
3,728,537	4	1½	3,548,823	1	1½
212,030	18	1½	211,986	0	1
20,864	13	7½	105,786	2	2
3,961,432	15	10½	3,866,595	3	4½
4,505,779	12	2½	4,726,762	14	0½

1829.			1830.		
£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
1,141,139	12	4	1,178,454	1	5
207,000	0	0	207,000	0	0
300,959	0	11½	377,968	12	5½
1,649,098	13	3½	1,763,422	13	10½
1,035,348	12	2	986,209	2	8½
362,228	7	6½	366,871	10	0½
424,691	10	3½	380,817	10	2
3,471,367	3	3	3,497,320	16	9½

EXPENDITURE.—Years ended 5th Jan.	1828.		
	£	s.	d.
Brought forward			3,505,325 17 9
APPLICATION OF THE WAYS AND MEANS PROVIDED:			
Applied to the Reduction of the National Debt			198,480 19 4
			3,703,806 17 1
Money remaining in the Exchequer at the end of the Year			544,346 16 3½
Total . . . £	.	.	4,248,153 13 4½

The next official document we shall refer to will be the last volume published—No. XI. of the Board of Trade Tables of Revenue, Population, &c.

PAYMENTS into the EXCHEQUER of BRITISH and IRISH REVENUE separately, with the Proportion which Irish Payments bore to the whole in each Year, and Quinquennial Period from Jan. 5, 1825, to Jan. 5, 1841.

YEARS.	Net Payments of ordinary Revenues into the Exchequer.		Proportion of Irish Payments to British in each Period of 5 Years.
	In Great Britain.	In Ireland.	
1825	£48,697,585	£3,367,805	
Total from 1821 to 1825	247,236,648	17,097,047	About 1-15th.
1830	46,374,698	3,515,297	
Do. from 1825 to 1830	233,456,438	17,733,971	About 1-14th.
1835	41,888,835	4,004,535	
Do. from 1830 to 1835	212,817,727	18,798,949	About 1-12th.
1840	43,797,682	3,553,881	
Do. from 1835 to 1840	217,439,618	19,495,971	About 1-12th.

An Account of GROSS RECEIPTS of REVENUE within the Year, after deducting Repayments, Allowances, Discounts, Drawbacks, and Bounties in the nature of Drawbacks, for Great Britain and Ireland, for each Year, from Jan. 5, 1821, to Jan. 5, 1841; and a Statement of the Proportion that Irish Payments bore to the whole, calculated in Periods of Five Years each.

YEARS.	Gross Payments of ordinary Revenues into the Exchequer.		Proportion of Irish Payments to British in each Period of 5 Years.
	In Great Britain.	In Ireland.	
1825	£52,829,274	£4,455,697	
Total from 1821 to 1825	270,038,808	22,538,093	About 1-13th.
1830	54,844,096	4,298,155	
Do. from 1825 to 1830	270,607,111	22,298,321	About 1-13th.
1835	47,948,282	4,641,711	
Do. from 1831 to 1835	244,074,356	22,096,998	About 1-12th.
1840	47,402,223	4,102,285	
Do. from 1836 to 1840	242,422,560	22,668,098	About 1-12th.

1829.				1830.				
£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
			3,471,367	3	3			
.	.	.	174,244	18	3	.	.	125,049
.	.	.	3,645,612	1	6			3,622,370
.	.	.	860,167	10	8 <i>½</i>	.	.	1,104,392
.	.	.	4,505,779	12	2 <i>½</i>	.	.	4,726,762

The Board of Trade give no accounts explanatory of the Expenditure of Ireland. We proceed, therefore, to

An Account of the VALUE of all IMPORTS into, and of all EXPORTS from IRELAND, calculated according to the Official Rates of Valuation; distinguishing the Value of the Produce and Manufactures of Ireland from the Value of Foreign and Colonial Merchandise exported; also stating the Value of the Produce and Manufactures of Ireland exported, according to the real or declared Value thereof, during the Year 1841; and comparing the same with the Year 1840.

Value of Imports into Ireland, calculated at the Official Rates of Valuation.		Produce and Manufactures of Ireland.		Foreign and Colonial Merchandise.		Total Exports.		Value of the Produce and Manufactures of Ireland exported, according to the real or declared Value.	
1840	1841	1840	1841	1840	1841	1840	1841	1840	1841
£	£	£	£	£	£	£	£	£	£
1,559,553	1,698,375	441,680	399,764	8,688	8,516	450,548	408,280	509,574	416,965

As this is the only Table of the Exports and Imports of Ireland published by the Board of Trade, and as the heavy items of agricultural produce, such as corn, live stock, and cured provisions shipped to England, are not here taken into account, we are driven to find other sources for an estimate of the amount of the property thus realised. The Commons Committee of 1830, as already stated, valued the Irish exports to Great Britain in the year 1825 at £7,048,936. The Irish Railway Commissioners raised that estimate to £9,243,210; and made the aggregate value of the Irish exports for the year 1835, £16,693,685. The different commodities and their quantities, tonnage, and value are set forth in the Appendix to their Report B. p. 91. As specimens we shall cite—

Live Stock	.	.	.	£1,953,115
Wheat, Barley, Oats, Flour, &c.	.	.	.	4,202,265
Bacon, Beef, Butter, &c.	.	.	.	5,050,412

As it would be superfluous to enlarge upon the importance of these various Tables, spreading over a long series of years, and condensing a multiplicity of matter, so ought it to be unnecessary to offer an apology for the length to which they have been extended here. They are inserted in their original forms, in order that no room should be left open for doubts of their authenticity. To the Irish reader they will prove, it is to be hoped, peculiarly valuable. Disputes and discussions have occurred at public meetings, in the periodical press, and in numerous pamphlets, of late years, in Ireland, upon questions of national taxation, revenue and expenditure, which impose upon every person who offers an observation upon any of them the indispensable duty of being frank in his mode of dealing with them, and liberal in his supply of evidence to illustrate the general subject. For, unquestionably, much has been addressed to the public for that purpose, in which neither full information nor mature judgment happen to be conspicuous. For instance, Mr. Finn's Return is frequently referred to for the purpose of proving two things which cannot possibly be established by any such paper; first, that the total cost of the government in Ireland, including all disbursements for public purposes, is, from year to year, more or less, about such a sum as £2,910,808; and secondly, that the difference between that sum and the income of the revenue for any year, is a drain from the Irish to the English Exchequer.

It will be easy to show that any use made of Mr. Finn's Return for the purpose of establishing either of these propositions must lead to serious errors. Now popular errors upon such points cannot be too gravely deprecated,—because they serve to divert the community from enforcing their real grievances upon the authorities, or lead them at least to mingle with their complaints untenable assertions, which are sure to be quickly caught up by their adversaries in debate and controversy, and are then triumphantly exposed as samples of the unreasonable and unsubstantial nature of the case altogether.

The Return of 1833 does not contain the total disburse-

ments for the public service, because it does not include the monies expended for any of the great departments of Customs, Excise, Stamps, or Post-office. How large an amount of public money spent in Ireland is thus excluded, may be estimated in round numbers by the difference between the gross and the net produce of the four heads of taxation just named.

They stand in the Finance Accounts of Jan. 5, 1843, as follows:—

REVENUE of CUSTOMS in IRELAND, in the Year ended 5th January, 1843.

INCOME.			
	£	s.	d.
Balances in the hands of Collectors } on 5th January, 1842	£	s.	d.
	32,513	17	7
Bills outstanding on 5th Jan. 1842 .		21,619	18 7
			<hr/>
Total Balances and Bills out- } standing on 5th Jan. 1842	£	s.	d.
	.	.	.
Gross Receipt within the Year . . .	2,221,494	9	9
			<hr/>
Drawbacks on Goods } exported	£	s.	d.
	8,913	10	4
Bounties of the na- } ture of Drawbacks	13	2	2
			<hr/>
Repayments on Over- } Entries, Damaged } Goods, &c.	£	s.	d.
	8,926	12	6
			<hr/>
	1,952	8	0
			<hr/>
Total Drawbacks, Repayments, &c.	£	s.	d.
	10,879	0	6
			<hr/>
Net Receipt within the Year, after deducting Re- } payments, &c.	£	s.	d.
	2,210,615	9	3
			<hr/>
Total Income, including Balances	£	s.	d.
	2,264,749	5	5

REVENUE of CUSTOMS in IRELAND, in the Year ended 5th January, 1843.
(Continued.)

DISCHARGE OF INCOME.			
Charges of Collection		£	s. d.
		220,291	16 7
Other Payments		18,133	9 8
Total Payments out of the Income in its progress] to the Exchequer		238,425	6 3
Payments into the Exchequer		1,949,834	4 3
Balances in the hands of Collectors } on 5th January, 1843 }	£	s. d.	
	30,669	18 1	
Bills outstanding on 5th Jan. 1843	45,819	16 10	
Total Balances and Bills outstanding on 5th Jan. 1843		76,489	14 11
Total Discharge of the Income	£	2,264,749	5 5

REVENUE of EXCISE in IRELAND, in the Year ended 5th January, 1843.

INCOME.			
Balances in the hands of the several] Collectors on 5th January, 1842 . . }	£	s. d.	£
	30,125	6 6	s. d.
Bills outstanding on 5th January, } 1842	34,149	0 6½	
Total Balances and Bills out- standing on 5th January, } 1842			64,274 7 0½
Gross Receipt	1,298,381	14 7	
Drawbacks on Goods } exported	1,459	13 1½	
Bounties of the na- ture of Drawbacks }	—		
Allowances	1,214	17 4	
Repayments on Over- charges	364	4 9½	
Total Repayments, Drawbacks, &c.	3,038	15 2½	
Net Receipt within the Year, after deducting Repay- ments, &c.	1,295,342	19 4½	
Total Income, including Balances	£	1,359,617	6 5

REVENUE of EXCISE in IRELAND, in the Year ended 5th January, 1843.
 (Continued.)

DISPOSAL OF THE INCOME.		
Charges of Collection	£	s. d.
Other Payments	166,703	9 3½
Total Payments out of the Income, in its progress to the Exchequer	19,122	10 5½
Payments into the Exchequer	185,825	19 8½
Balances in the hands of the several Collectors on 5th January, 1843	1,110,342	6 7
Bills outstanding on 5th January, 1843	29,542	18 3½
Total Balances and Bills outstanding on 5th January, 1843	33,906	1 10½
Total Discharge of the Income	63,449	0 1½
	£	1,359,617 6 5

REVENUE of STAMPS in IRELAND, in the Year ended 5th January, 1843.

INCOME.		
Balances in the hands of the several Distributors on the 6th Jan. 1842	£	s. d.
Balances from late Distributors, &c.	1,122	11 11½
Balances of Imprest Money on the 6th January, 1842	9,418	10 9½
Bills outstanding on the 6th January, 1842	400	0 0
Total Balances and Bills outstanding on 6th January, 1842	1,384	18 10
Gross Receipt . . . . .	.	.
Add Monies received from the Bank of Ireland in lieu of Stamp Duties	526,336	10 2½
Total of Gross Receipt	4,718	17 0
Discounts and Parliamentary Allowances	531,055	7 2½
Drawbacks and Repayments	11,134	9 1½
Paper, Parchment, and Blanks to stamp on	4,792	0 0
Total Discounts, &c.	643	17 10
Net Receipt within the Year, after deducting Discounts, &c.	16,570	6 11½
Total Income, including Balances	514,485	0 3
	£	526,811 1 10

REVENUE of STAMPS in IRELAND, in the Year ended 5th January, 1843.
 (Continued.)

DISPOSAL OF THE INCOME.			
Charges of Collection	£ 21,854	s. 18	d. 9½
Total Payments out of the Income in its progress to the Exchequer	£ 21,854	s. 18	d. 9½
Payments into the Exchequer	£ 487,132	s. 11	d. 1
Add Monies paid into the Exchequer by the Bank of Ireland, in lieu of Stamp Duties	4,718	s. 17	d. 0
Total Payments into the Exchequer	491,851	s. 8	d. 1
Balances in the hands of the several Distributors on the 5th January, 1843	1,189	s. 13	d. 2½
Balances due from late Distributors, &c. . . .	9,789	s. 3	d. 7½
Balances of Imprest Money on the 5th January, 1843	—		
Bills outstanding on the 5th January, 1843	2,125	s. 18	d. 2
Total Balances and Bills outstanding on 5th January, 1843	13,104	s. 14	d. 11½
Total Discharge of the Income	£ 526,811	s. 1	d. 10

REVENUE of the POST-OFFICE of IRELAND, in the Year ended 5th Jan. 1843.

INCOME.			
To Balance due 5th of Jan. 1842; viz.: Balance in Bank	£ 25,861	s. 13	d. 9
Balances in hands of Deputy Postmasters and Letter Receivers of Dublin	10,790	s. 4	d. 4½
Balances due by deceased and dismissed Deputies and Letter Carriers	1,183	s. 19	d. 5½
Insolvent Arrears	29,236	s. 12	d. 3½
Balances due by the several Public Offices	1,132	s. 6	d. 2
Postage Stamps in the hands of the Receiver-General	689	s. 6	d. 3½
			68,894 s. 2 d. 4½
To Amount of Gross Receipt Re-directed, Returned, Dead, Unknown, Refused, and Overcharged Letters, &c. . . .	132,429	s. 14	d. 1½
	3,445	s. 10	d. 9
Net Receipt within the Year, after deducting Repayments, &c. . . .	128,984	s. 3	d. 4½
Total Income, including Balances	£197,878	s. 5	d. 8½

REVENUE of the POST-OFFICE of IRELAND, in the Year ended 5th Jan. 1843.
 (Continued.)

DISPOSAL OF THE INCOME.			
Charges of Collection			£127,856 8 7½
Total Payments out of the Income, in its progress } to the Exchequer			127,856 8 7½
Payments into the Exchequer			3,000 0 0
Balance due on 5th of Jan. 1843 ; viz. :	£	s. d.	
Balance in Bank	23,436	9 10	
Balance in hands of Deputy Postmas- } ters and Letter Receivers of Dublin }	10,590	15 3	
Balances due by deceased and dismiss- } ed Deputies and Letter Carriers . }	954	14 0½	
Insolvent Arrears	29,236	12 3½	
Balances due by the several Public Offices	2,133	4 9	
Postage Stamps in the hands of the Re- } ceiver-General	670	0 11½	
Total Balances Outstanding			67,021 17 1½
Total Discharge of the Income			£197,878 5 8½

In these four departments we find a sum of £220,291 for Customs, £127,856 for the Post-office, £166,703 for Excise, and £21,854 for Stamps, or £537,704 a year disbursements for public purposes, no item of which is comprised in the Return for 1833.

But, it may be argued, the Return deals with the net produce of the Irish revenue; and whatever that yields to the Exchequer in London, after paying the charges of the remaining establishments, should be regarded as a drain from Ireland to England. This, again, is a representation which will not bear investigation. All statements of the kind are hazarded at random, without due reflection upon the subject, or a close examination of its details. If they go to prove anything, it is this—that the extent and pressure of taxation in England, Scotland, and Ireland, should not exceed the annual amount required to defray the separate public establishments in each of these divisions of the empire. But how then would the general government of the empire at large be provided?—how would the outlay be furnished for the maintenance of that dominion, which, springing right and left from these islands, embraces the circumference of the globe?—that dominion

which has been acquired, is preserved, and will be yet extended by the genius and valour of the natives of all parts of the empire, and upon which our sailors, soldiers, statesmen, merchants and manufacturers, artisans and labourers advance in common, as upon their natural field for employment, and the acquisition of wealth and fame? Far from taking such narrow and mistaken views of this question, the Irishman is bound to assume a much higher and more legitimate position, and there fortifying himself with the irresistible argument, that as taxation is spread over the one country as well as over the other, and every man contributes to pay the expenses of the empire, so no vain distinctions or corrupt preferences should be tolerated in the distribution of offices to Englishmen, Scotchmen, and Irishmen, but that each in his own country should be impartially retained to discharge those duties for which local knowledge, experience and association give the best title, while, for the general range of occupation in the great departments of the empire at large, all should be free to compete and carry off prizes as fitness and meritorious service may warrant.

Another item in this Return has likewise led to false conclusions. The amount set down as the charge of the national debt in Ireland, has been repeatedly interpreted to constitute the yearly interest which the Irish portion of the debt of the United Empire would bear, if subtracted from the greater sum total of which it forms a part. In point of fact, however, it only represents the interest due to holders of the debt, who happen to be inscribed in the books of the Bank of England as residents in Ireland during the year. The real debt of Ireland may be soon calculated. The Act of Union which came into operation January, 1801, provided, by the seventh article, that the charges for all debts incurred by either kingdom before the Union, should be separately defrayed; that for a term of twenty years the contributions of Great Britain and Ireland respectively, towards the expenditure of the United Kingdom, should be as fifteen to two; and that all monies raised after the Union should be a joint debt, the charges of which should be borne by the respective countries in the proportions

of their respective contributions towards expenditure. By the Commons Return (35) 1819—20, p. 6, we find that the total Funded Debt of Ireland, January 5 and February 1, 1801, was £27,792,975 ; and, p. 3, that the total Funded Debt of Great Britain at the same date, was £488,205,923.

Jan 5, 1843, the Funded debt of the United Empire was £774,859,379	
There has accrued, therefore, since the Union	286,653,456
Two-seventeenths of this will be	33,723,936
To which add Irish debt at the Union	27,792,975
 Total Irish proportion	<u>61,516,911</u>
On which the yearly interest would be	<u>2,153,091</u>

Reverting to the public expenditure in Ireland, it is to be regretted that our means of information are so incomplete. The yearly sessional Estimates, and the Finance Accounts laid before Parliament, arrange many charges in proper order, but there is a quantity of money spent for British and Irish uses jointly, which it is impossible to separate and apportion. There are also not a few large items debited to Ireland, as to which it is difficult to say whether the amounts placed opposite to them are local outlay or not. Taking the last set of these documents, however, as we find them, and carefully extracting from each the sums paid and voted on account of Irish offices and expenditure, the following will be as fair a list as perhaps can be made out of the amount and uses of the public money annually applied by the Legislature to Ireland. Even here, however, some degree of confusion and repetition is unavoidable, as the Finance Accounts give the amounts paid in one year, and the Estimates those wanted for the next. Exceptis Excipiendis, then, and omitting the National Debt and Revenue charges, we have for 1843 :—

The Army and Navy as hereafter estimated	£910,941 0 11½
The Lord Lieutenant's Salary and Allowances, heretofore paid out of the Civil List	22,091 17 1
Courts of Justice and Police	495,661 19 9
Record Branch of Civil Services	1,000 0 0
Inspectors of the Schools of Anatomy	470 0 0
Salaries and Incidents—Board of Public Works	6,600 0 0
Allowances under Act 41 Geo. III. Cap. 32	1,553 19 0
Weighmasters of Butter	4,907 8 0
Late Treasury Officers	271 11 4
 Carried forward	 £1,443,497 16 1½

	Brought forward	£1,443,497	16	1½	
Secretary to Board of Education, and the Contingencies of the Board	606	10	2		
Miscellaneous Services	3,968	4	8		
Boundary Survey	1,644	0	0		
Irish Office, Westminster	258	8	9		
Maintaining and repairing Dublin Castle, the Four Courts, Phoenix Park, &c.	25,376	0	0		
Works and Repairs to King's Town Harbour	10,000	0	0		
The Poor Law Commission	20,385	7	6		
Household of the Lord Lieutenant	6,464	17	5		
Chief Secretary to the Lord Lieutenant	21,376	0	0		
Paymaster of Civil Services	4,937	0	0		
The Commissioners of Public Works	2,400	0	0		
Printing and Stationery for Public Offices	12,195	0	0		
Criminal Prosecutions, and other Law Charges	1,449	6	6		
Crown Solicitors	17,300	0	0		
Prosecutions, Witnesses, &c.	42,700	0	0		
Converting Smithfield Penitentiary into a Convict Depot, &c.	5,596	0	0		
Education, Maynooth College included	58,928	0	0		
Royal Irish Academy	300	0	0		
Royal Hibernian Academy	300	0	0		
Royal Dublin Society	5,600	0	0		
Royal Belfast Academical Institution	1,950	0	0		
The Foundling Hospital, Dublin	7,597	0	0		
The House of Industry, in Dublin	13,973	0	0		
Westmoreland Lock Hospital	2,500	0	0		
The Lying-in Hospital, Dublin	1,000	0	0		
Dr. Stevens' Hospital, Dublin	1,500	0	0		
The House of Recovery and Fever Hospital, Cork Street, Dublin	3,000	0	0		
The Hospital for Incurables	500	0	0		
Commissioners of Charitable Donations and Bequests Non-conforming, Seceding, and Protestant Dissenting Ministers	700	0	0		
Concordatum Fund, and other Allowances and Bounties hitherto defrayed from the Grants for the Lord Lieu- tenant's Household	35,630	0	0		
Townland Survey of Ireland	7,475	0	0		
The Shannon Commissioners, per Act	5,000	0	0		
General Staff Officers, and Officers of Hospitals	3,421	0	0		
Ditto, Medical Staff	10,232	7	7		
The Hibernian Military School	3,733	4	0		
Superannuation or Retired Allowances	5,404	10	8		
Kilmainham Hospital	3,834	13	10		
Ordnance at Athlone, Cork Harbour, Dublin, Duncan- non Fort, Enniskillen	9,376	11	6		
Barrack Masters, &c.—Connaught District, Leinster District, Munster District, and Ulster District	6,528	0	0		
Ordnance Works, Repairs, &c.—Connaught District, Leinster District, Munster District, and Ulster Dis- trict	8,805	0	0		
Carried forward	82,267	0	0		
		£1,899,709	18	8	

	£	s.	d.
Brought forward	1,899,709	18	8½
Recruiting Districts—Newry, Cork, and Dublin	7,376	3	7
Naval Dock Yards, &c.	978	10	0
Revenue Police, Ireland	41,218	12	4
General Payments out of the Public Income of Ireland in its progress to the Exchequer other than Charges of Collection	37,256	0	1½
Amounts advanced by the Commissioners of Public Works (Annual Report, p. 22)	71,750	0	0
Amounts expended by the Shannon Navigation Com- missioners (4th Annual Report, p. 14)	78,964	1	3½
	<hr/>		
	£2,137,253	6	0

In noticing the establishments of Ireland, we are most struck by those raised to promote religion. Under this head the statistics are as pregnant with matter of extreme surprise as those under any other presented to the eyes of the perplexed observer. There was a census of the creeds of the whole population, made under the authority of Parliament, in 1834; and according to the Report then published, the distribution of the people into different religions ranged thus:—

Roman Catholics	. . . . .	6,427,712
Protestants	. . . . .	752,064
Presbyterians	. . . . .	642,356
Other Protestant Dissenters	. .	121,808*

If a similar inquiry were now to be instituted, the relative proportions of the population since accrued would, in all probability, be found the same in every class, save that of other Dissenters. Data exist which seem to warrant the assertion that these last are an increasing body. If so, the Protestants have lost what they have gained, for the Roman Catholics preserve their superior majority undiminished. And here it is that perhaps the most extraordinary feature upon the mixed face of Irish affairs challenges our attention. The constitution promotes religion, and for that sacred purpose gives to this vast number of Roman Catholics £8,928 a year

* For the sake of brevity, the number of other Dissenters has here been increased by adding 100,000 Wesleyans, erroneously classed by the Education Commissioners under the head of Protestant Episcopalian.

towards the education of their priests; £35,630 a year towards the maintenance of Presbyterian ministers; and an actual revenue in gross receipts of £806,784* for the support of the Protestant clergy!

We have marked out the extent of pauperism in Ireland: it fills the heart with grief and horror, and is not to be matched in all the countries of Europe; but it is far exceeded in its enormity by the state of religion. That overwhelms the reasoning faculties with astonishment, and is not to be paralleled

* This is the sum for which Mr. Ward took credit in his speech, August 1st, 1843. The passage is as follows:—

ACTUAL REVENUE of the IRISH CHURCH in 1843.

	£
Episcopal Revenues :	
Land and Tithes	Gross 151,127
Deans and Prebends, exclusive of those attached to Epis- copal Sees	34,481
Minor Canons and Vicars Choral	10,525
Parochial Benefices, Value of Glebes and Tithes, Ministers' Money, Easter Offerings, &c. :	
Province of Armagh	£256,372
" Tuam	42,738
" Dublin	121,859
" Cashel	189,682
	<hr/> 610,651
Gross Receipts	<hr/> £806,784
Tithe Composition taken separately :	
Parochial	486,785
Episcopal	9,515
Received by Dignitaries	24,360
	<hr/> 520,660
Deduct 25 per cent. for Rent Charge, under Act of 1838	<hr/> 130,165
Remain	<hr/> 390,495
Add Episcopal Revenues, after deducting £33,875 received by Bishops and Dignitaries	<hr/> 162,258
	<hr/> £552,753

The correctness of this amount was questioned during the debate; and afterwards the Rt. Hon. F. Shaw gave notice of a motion for a series of Returns, which, if furnished, would have left no room for further controversy upon the subject; but a few days after Mr. Shaw withdrew his motion.

in the annals of the whole world. In every other nation, civilized or barbarous,—in every age, whether ancient or modern,—one universal rule has prevailed, by the common consent of all mankind, from the dawn of the first sun down to the present day, in favour of a suitable provision, and an honourable rank in society, for the religious order of the majority of the people. The sum of this provision, moreover, and the dignity of this rank, have generally risen higher the more the community has become prosperous and refined. In Ireland only this most primitive and influential of the elements of social peace and charity between man and man is contravened. There only the government neither gives money nor distinction, nor evinces consideration nor sympathy for the hierarchy and priesthood of the majority of the people. If it were the duty of a statesman to provide by special arrangement that discontent and turbulence should constantly abound in a country, no surer means could be adopted for producing so calamitous a result than the course of action pursued in Ireland upon the vital subject of religion. Touch to the quick, and the whole frame quivers. We treat a warm and sensitive people, on one of the keenest points of human feeling, as no race of men has been treated since the creation of mankind ; and then we affect to wonder that they are not happy, grateful, and resigned ! True, the subject matter here is religion, and that is a question of conscience ; but the statesman must deal with it as a question of politics ; and to him it ought to be unnecessary to observe that it is utterly vain to dream of standing out against human nature. The history of mankind, in its most primitive as well as in its most polished forms, and the experience of all governments, lead us to no conviction stronger, or more conclusive, than that it is impossible to secure the peace of any society without gratifying the religious bias of the multitude by whom it is composed. Any attempt to resist the impulse which demands this satisfaction is as wild as the effort to stop a torrent in its course. If it could have been arrested or diverted, the English government would have long ago done one or other in

Ireland. They have repeatedly tried, and invariably failed. It remains at last to supply proper channels for the waters of a tide which, as they take their rise from a natural spring, can neither be kept down, drawn off, nor exhausted by forcible means.

Wherever, as in the case before us, political events operate to prevent the ministry of religion from producing its due effect,—wherever the appointed pastor fails to gather the people around him in a flock, to conciliate their affections, and command their confidence,—other and less wholesome agents are necessarily called in to perform the duties he fails to fulfil. The military and police are then numerous and expensive. Their force in Ireland is large and increasing. In January, 1840, the number was 14,956. In December, 1843, the total rank and file of the army serving in Ireland was 21,210.* These were distributed over the five military districts of Dublin, Belfast, Athlone, Limerick, and Cork, as follows:— Dublin, 6,788; Belfast, 2,894; Athlone, 4,210; Limerick, 3,445; and Cork, 8,873: and they consisted of 81 Sappers and Miners; 1,045 Artillery; 69 Marine Artillery; 2,090 Ca-

* The RETURN of the NUMBER of TROOPS QUARTERED in IRELAND during the Years 1833, 1834, 1835, 1836, 1837, 1838, 1839, and 1840, printed by the House of Commons, June 13, 1843, is a significant document. We may add that the cost of a regiment, according to the Parliamentary Estimates, is from £17,000 to £27,000 a year.

Adjutant-General's Office, 15 June, 1843.

	RANK AND FILE.			TOTAL.
	Cavalry.	Artillery.	Infantry.	
1st January 1833	.	2,064	873	21,061
" 1834	.	2,339	873	23,035
" 1835	.	1,887	876	16,199
" 1836	.	1,845	809	15,252
" 1837	.	1,839	809	15,832
" 1838	.	1,641	751	15,028
" 1839	.	1,443	745	14,076
" 1840	.	873	743	14,956

JOHN MACDONALD, A. G.

valry : 17,295 Infantry, and 628 Marines. This force, it is to be observed, has been materially strengthened while this work has been in a course of preparation for the press. Almost every arm of service mentioned seems to be undergoing a course of gradual increase, which it is impossible to follow. More difficult still is the task of computing the exact annual cost of this army to the national exchequer. A careful series of computations, based upon the data furnished in the Army, Navy, and Ordnance Estimates of the last session of Parliament, have produced the results that follow.

		£	s.	d.
Artillery, Engineers, and Marines	.	69,980	13	4
<i>Cavalry Regiments.</i>				
1st Royal Dragoons	.	22,264	7	0
2nd ditto	.	17,103	1	4
3rd ditto	.	22,264	7	0
4th ditto	.	22,264	7	0
5th ditto	.	22,264	7	0
10th Hussars	.	22,264	7	0
11th ditto	.	22,264	7	0
<i>Infantry Regiments.</i>				
5th Royal Fusiliers	.	26,620	4	10
11th Foot	.	26,620	4	10
16th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
24th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
34th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
36th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
45th ditto	.	37,305	9	5
53rd ditto	.	26,620	4	10
54th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
56th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
60th Rifles, 1st battalion	.	27,118	10	4
61st Foot	.	31,404	9	2
65th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
66th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
67th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
69th ditto	.	26,620	4	10
72nd Highlanders	.	26,620	4	10
<i>Depots.</i>				
1st Royals, 1st battalion	.	6,592	3	5
1st ditto, 2nd ditto	.	6,592	3	5
14th Foot	.	6,655	1	2½
27th ditto	.	6,655	1	2½
30th ditto	.	6,655	1	2½
33rd ditto	.	6,655	1	2½
43rd ditto	.	6,643	11	0½
Carried forward	.	<u>£735,629</u>	<u>15</u>	<u>11½</u>
d 2				

	Brought forward	£	s.	d.
46th Foot	735,629	15	11½	
47th ditto . . . . .	. 6,655	1	2½	
60th ditto . . . . .	. 6,655	1	2	
74th ditto . . . . .	. 6,779	12	7	
81st ditto . . . . .	. 6,655	1	2½	
82nd ditto . . . . .	. 6,655	1	2½	
85th ditto . . . . .	. 6,643	11	0½	
89th ditto . . . . .	. 6,655	1	2½	
90th ditto . . . . .	. 6,643	11	0½	
Rifle Brigade, 1st battalion . . . . .	. 6,814	3	1½	
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
	£802,441	0	11½	

Besides this military force, there was a naval armament composed of one flag-officer and suite, £1500.

Name of Ship.	Guns.	Men.	Annual Cost.
Caledonia Flag Ship, Rear-Admiral Bowles	120	850	£38,000
Fox Frigate	42	350	18,000
Iris ditto	26	250	8,500
Lynx Sloop	3	75	2,500
Snipe ditto	2	50	1,500
Penelope Steamer	22	250	12,000
Stromboli ditto	6	150	6,500
Flamer ditto	6	150	6,500
Tartarus ditto	2	75	4,500
Volcano ditto	2	75	4,500
Rhadamanthus ditto	2	75	4,500
Total	233	2,350	£108,500

To this military and naval force the armed constabulary is to be added, which consists of 9,043 men, and costs £512,605 a year.

In the Established Church, nearly all the bishoprics* and benefices are properly filled by Irishmen. So is it also in the law courts. With the exception of the Lord Chancellor, the different judges, and higher legal functionaries, are Irishmen. It is far otherwise in the remaining establishments, of which it may be summarily observed, that many are unnecessary; and many, nearly all, obnoxious, in consequence of the manner in which they are filled. This character will be most clearly

* The bench of bishops consists of two archbishops and twelve bishops; of whom three are Englishmen, and eleven Irishmen.

and intelligibly portrayed by printing a list of the principal public officers, with their respective denominations and salaries. There is—

	£	s.	d.
The Lord Lieutenant, <i>Earl de Grey</i>	22,091	17	1
His Private Secretary, A. C. Magenis	829	0	8
State-Steward, Capt. <i>Seymour</i>	505	19	4
Comptroller of Household, Major R. Parker	413	13	4
Chamberlain, G. L'Estrange	200	0	0
Gentleman Usher, <i>F. Willis</i>	200	0	0
Gentleman of the Bedchamber, <i>C. Boothby</i>	184	12	8
Gentlemen at large, Capt. Staines	128	18	0
Hamilton Gorges	128	18	0
Master of the Horse, <i>W. W. Williams</i>	200	0	0
Aids-de-Camp—Lord <i>Francis Gordon</i>	647	13	4
Capt. A. Cole			
Capt. R. P. Dawson			
Lieut. Lord <i>Aberdour</i>			
Chief Secretary, <i>Lord Eliot</i>	5,500	0	0
His Secretary, <i>C. H. W. A'Court</i>	369	4	0
Under-Secretary, E. Lucas	1,789	0	0
Chief, Senior, and Junior Clerks, (of whom 5 are English)	6,516	2	3
Keeper of Birmingham Tower, and Ulster King of Arms, Sir <i>W. Betham</i>	580	0	0
Lord Chancellor, Sir <i>E. Sugden</i>	8,000	0	0
His Secretary, <i>E. Sugden</i>	2,000	0	0
Commander of the Forces, Sir <i>E. Blakeney</i> , (exclusive of salary and allowances as Gover- nor of Kilmainham Hospital)	1,387	0	0
Aids-de-Camp—Capt. <i>H. G. Cowroy</i>	347	0	0
Capt. Hon. <i>St. G. Foley</i> }			
Military Secretary, Lieut.-Col. <i>Graves</i>	553	0	0
Adjutant-General, Col. T. Wade	347	0	0
Deputy, Capt. <i>A. Sterling</i>	173	0	0
Inspector-General of Constabulary, Colonel <i>Duncan Mac Gregor</i>	1,500	0	0
Deputy-Inspectors-General, Lieut.-Col. Miller Major J. <i>Gallwey</i>	1,200	0	0
1,200	0	0	
Inspector-General of Coast Guard, Sir <i>J. Dombrain</i>	1,000	0	0
Inspector-in-Chief of Revenue Police, Lieut.- Col. <i>W. Brereton</i> , C.B. K.H.	1,000	0	0
Deputy-Chief do., Capt. <i>W. D. Stewart</i>	500	0	0
Paymaster of Civil Services, Right Hon. <i>T. F. Kennedy</i>	1,000	0	0
Ten Clerks in his Office, (of whom six Irish)	3,516	9	2
Secretary to the Post Office, <i>A. Godby</i>	1,200	0	0
Assistant Poor Law Commissioners, <i>E. Gulson</i> , <i>R. Hall</i> , <i>E. Senior</i> , <i>W. J. Hancock</i> , <i>R. M. Muggeridge</i> , <i>C. G. Otway</i> ,* <i>J. Burke</i>	13,160	0	0
Carried forward	<u>578,366</u>	7	10

	£	s.	d.
Brought forward	78,368	7	10
Poor Law Architect, <i>G. Wilkinson</i>	1,664	0	0 †
Resident Commissioner of Education, <i>A. Mac Donnell</i>	1,000	0	0
Secretaries to the Commission, Maurice Cross and <i>J. Kelly</i> ,* Esqrs.	800	0	0
Commissioners of Public Works, Fisheries, and Drainage of Land, Major-Gen. Sir <i>J. F. Burgoyné</i> , K.C.B.	1,200	0	0
Pay as Major-General, in addition to salary, and exclusive of travelling expenses	500	0	0
Brooke Taylor Ottley	600	0	0
<i>J. Radcliffe</i>	600	0	0
Engineer and Architect, <i>J. Owen</i>	1,000	0	0
Shannon Commissioners—	} No salary in this office, but		
Sir <i>J. F. Burgoyné</i> ,	} travelling and incidental		
<i>R. Griffith</i> ,	} expenses.		
Lieut.-Col. <i>H. Jones</i> , besides travelling expenses	600	0	0
General Boundary Surveyor and Commissioner of Valuation, <i>R. Griffith</i>	1,000	0	0
Inspectors-General of Prisons and Lunatic Asylums, Major <i>T. Palmer</i>	500	0	0
Doctor <i>F. White</i> *	500	0	0
	<u>£88,512</u>	<u>7</u>	<u>10</u>

By this list, in which the names of all those who are not Irishmen appear in Italics, and a star is affixed to the names of the Roman Catholics, we see that out of 82 places, with salaries amounting to £88,512 7s. 10d., 36, of the annual value of £19,556 6s. 8d., are held by Irishmen ; and that of these, 4, producing £4,980 a year, are filled by Roman Catholics ; while 44 persons who are not Irish, take £62,001 2s. 6d. a year.

Inspecting these various establishments, a stranger's first impression is, that Ireland must be a country admirably well governed. Human ingenuity seems to have exhausted invention in providing departments and offices for the supervision, management, and encouragement of the affairs of this portion of the empire. Here is a viceroy, and a court, a formidable military and naval array, every description of fiscal and civil functionary, and boards, and commissions for all possible purposes,—for cutting canals, constructing rail-

† This does not include a charge of £1,213 14s. 6d. for extras.

ways, opening navigations, draining bogs, and making harbours, piers, and post-roads,—as well as for providing a police, protecting the revenue, promoting education, and managing and maintaining the lands, goods and chattels of the church by law established. Every improvement that can be desired, and every object that seems useful, is cherished and protected by a staff, appropriately salaried, at the public expense. Other bodies, not mentioned, might have been added—such as boards for paving streets, and a commission for gas-lighting. You might almost fancy that an Irishman could not snuff a candle without the advice and assistance of government. But the more we dwell upon this assumption of duties not properly governmental, and this extreme care of small things, a suspicion arises that the whole system is a mistake in politics; and as we proceed in our examination, we become convinced that it is an abuse also. In a word, political corruption is the aim and end of all, and never was corruption more successfully applied. No man approaches the government without being more or less infected by its contagion. Let the office be what it may, appointment to it is either the price of party services already rendered, or a bribe to others expected to be performed. Persons thus preferred, surrender, upon taking place, their own independence, and employ themselves while they fill it in overawing or undermining the independence of others. They find the power of the government paramount wherever it is admitted, or can penetrate, and the influence of the people in a variety of important respects insignificant, and in others a nonentity. Once engrafted upon the system, they imbibe its essential nature, and make it the subtle business of the rest of their lives, if not to put down the people as a nuisance whenever they come in contact with the government, at least to hold them in leading strings, and move them as so many docile instruments for accomplishing any measures it may suit the pleasure or the interests of their rulers to introduce.

How abundant the springs of open discontent and secret dissatisfaction thus poured upon the community—how much there

is in such a condition that must be irritating to contemplate, and galling to bear,—it would be long and wearisome to particularize. We are bound, however, to mark the course and action of some few of the larger streams into which they swell. There are three principal officers in the administration of Irish affairs—the Lord Lieutenant, the Lord Chancellor, and the Chief Secretary. All three are Englishmen; and the constant practice has been to appoint Englishmen to these high and profitable situations. From the year 1711 to the Union, James, duke of Ormonde, was the only Irishman who was lord lieutenant; and from the Union to the present day, only one Irishman, the late Marquis Wellesley, occupied that post. Thus, with two exceptions, Ireland has been governed, during a period of 156 years, by English peers. So of the lord chancellors; so, too, of the chief secretaries. By the following list, continued from Wakefield to the close of the year 1843, it will be seen that but very few of the persons who have filled these high offices have been either Irish, or possessed of estates in Ireland.

LORD LIEUTENANTS.

- 1760. *Duke of Bedford.*
- 1761. *Earl of Halifax.*
- 1763. *Earl of Northumberland.*
- 1765. **Viscount Weymouth.*
Earl of Hertford.
- 1766. *Earl of Bristol.*
- 1767. *Viscount Townshend.*
- 1772. *Earl Harcourt.*
- 1777. *Earl of Buckinghamshire.*
- 1780. *Earl of Carlisle.*
- 1782. *Duke of Portland.*
Earl Temple.
- 1783. *Earl of Northington.*
- 1784. *Duke of Rutland.*
- 1787. *Marquis of Buckingham.*
- 1789. *Earl of Westmoreland.*

CHIEF SECRETARIES.

- R. Rigby.*
- W. G. Hamilton.*
- Ditto, and Charles Earl of Drogheda.
- **Edward Thurlow.*
Viscount Beauchamp.
- Hon. J. A. Hervey.*
- Lord F. Campbell.*
- 1768. *Sir G. Macartney.*
Sir J. Blaquiere.
- Sir R. Heron.*
- W. Eden.*
- Hon. R. Fitzpatrick.*
- W. W. Grenville.*
- W. Wyndham.*
- Hon. T. Pelham.*
- T. Orde.*
- A. Fitzherbert, afterwards Lord St. Helen's.*
- R. Hobart, afterwards Earl of Buckinghamshire.*
- 1793. *Sylvester Douglas, afterwards Lord Glenervie.*

* Appointed, but did not serve.

LORD LIEUTENANTS.

1795. *Earl Fitzwilliam.**Earl Camden.*1798. *Marquis Cornwallis.*1801. *Earl Hardwicke.*1806. *Duke of Bedford.*1807. *Duke of Richmond.*1813. *Viscount afterwards Earl Whitworth.*1817. *Earl Talbot.*1821. *Marquis Wellesley.*1828. *Marquis of Anglesey.*1829. *Duke of Northumberland.*1830. *Marquis of Anglesey.*1833. *Marquis Wellesley.*1834. *Earl of Haddington.**Earl of Mulgrave, now Marquis of Normanby.**Lord Ebrington, now Earl Fortescue.**Earl de Grey.*

LORD CHANCELLORS.

1761. *Lord Bowes.*1767. *Hewitt, Lord Lifford.*1789. *Fitzgibbon, Earl of Clare.*1802. *Lord Redesdale.*1806. *George Ponsonby.*1807. *Lord Manners.*

CHIEF SECRETARIES.

*Hon. G. Damer, afterwards Earl of Dorchester.**Hon. T. Pelham, afterwards Earl of Chichester.**Viscount Castlereagh.**Ditto, and C. Abbott, afterwards Lord Colchester.*1802. *W. Wickham.*1804. *Sir E. Nepean.*1805. *N. Vansittart, afterwards Lord Bexley.**W. Elliot.**Sir A. Wellesley, now Duke of Wellington.*1809. *Hon. R. Dundas, afterwards Lord Melville.**Hon. W. Wellesley Pole, now Earl of Mornington.*1827. *R. Peel.**C. Grant, now Lord Glenely.**H. Goulburn.**W. Lamb, now Viscount Melbourne.**Lord F. L. Gower, now Egerton.**Sir H. Hardinge.**Lord Stanley.**Sir J. C. Hobhouse.**E. I. Littleton, now Lord Hatherton.**Sir H. Hardinge.**Viscount Morpeth.*

Ditto.

Lord Eliot.

LORD CHANCELLORS.

1827. *Sir A. Hart.*1830. *Lord Plunket.*1835. *Sir E. Sugden.**Lord Plunket.*1841. *Lord Campbell.**Sir E. Sugden.*

In the year 1172, when Henry II. made his first rude effort to establish the English interest in Ireland, he put an English lord lieutenant at the head of his half-formed government. In 1843, the principal instrument of Queen Victoria's administration of Irish affairs is still a lord lieutenant. In

this respect the progress of 671 years has not advanced us a single step in the way of improvement. The lord lieutenant, the lord chancellor, and the chief secretary hold all the power, patronage, and payment of the state at their disposal. These persons are now and have constantly been Englishmen; and their immediate retainers and followers are Englishmen also. Occasionally, it is true, an Irishman finds his way to a desk in the Castle of Dublin; but whenever that happens, his post is sure to prove an inferior one, and the salary comparatively small. That this style of administration ought to have been abolished at the Union, will strike the most casual observer: that it is, under the critical circumstances of the present agitation, as intolerable as it is impolitic, may be briefly demonstrated in the most convincing manner.

There are two capital defects in the appointment and structure of such a government. In the first place, its members, however capable and efficient, are, upon all occasions of emergency, overborne and neutralized by the cabinet in London. This imperative condition of a double administration produces its natural effect. It indisposes and diverts the local government from the consideration and promotion of the higher interests of the country, and sets them upon a lower range of duties. By allowing them but little to do, it drives them to find employment where their interference is injurious. They apply themselves actively to small things, which they strive to make great, in order to raise them to a level with their official dignity, because with things really great it is not found convenient in England to permit them to meddle. Thus they sink into the promotion of petty schemes of private ambition and party gain, and become the patrons and abettors of local interests and personal favours, and an endless variety of political jobs. Hence the origin of the numerous boards and commissions already spoken of, and the general absorption into the grasp of government of those enterprises and avocations which, when pursued and exercised by private individuals, vivify the industry and extend the resources of a country; but paralyze and waste the public energy and wealth.

when taken up by the state, and prosecuted to answer the narrow views of its immediate dependents.

This furnishes the first grave objection to the present order of things : one still graver remains to be brought forward. The mode of filling the offices is a passing injury : the existence of the offices is a permanent evil, for the reason just indicated, and this in addition—all great empires sway their dependencies and detached provinces in this very way. The Irish is a colonial form of government. This one fact is worth a thousand arguments. The English viceroy, with his English court—the English secretary of state—the English lord chancellor—the English commander of the forces, &c. &c. &c., are the living, palpable and conclusive proofs of a dependent and inferior condition. They point out with irresistible force the true nature of the connection between the two countries ;—they exhibit the Union as an unaccomplished theory—and leave the thoughtful Irishman perfectly convinced that there is as yet no thorough consolidation, and no substantial equality, between the two kingdoms. The lord lieutenancy of Ireland is the fountain head of the agitation for a repeal of the Union.

Honour, sound policy, and economy, suggest the abolition of this anomalous government and its courtly accompaniments :—honour, because all such establishments contravene the spirit of equality upon which the Union is based ;—sound policy, because while you goad a populous and high-spirited nation with a substantial proof of subserviency, you compel them to be disaffected ;—and economy, because you may thus retrench a series of expenses which are not simply unnecessary, but positively mischievous. The last is the weakest reason of the three, inasmuch as the good and contentment of so large a member of the united empire is not to be estimated by the common consideration of pounds, shillings and pence. And yet there is more than one set of politicians by whom the abolition of the present form of government would be strongly resisted. There is still, as there always has been, in Ireland, a faction to cry “ruin,” whenever any measure of retrench-

ment or improvement has been proposed for the common weal. It consists of persons who sustain existence by picking up the crumbs and small gratuities of the viceregal board, and who literally live upon the refuse of the existing system. There are others, vain of the paltry pomp of this second-hand royalty, who do not see that it is necessarily one-sided, and always fosters extreme party men and party measures, who feel no disgust when a fête is to be given in the Castle, at the huxtering that takes place to cheapen the price of ices and oysters, and are not sickened by the sour sherry that is served at supper.* Another and a less unreasonable class of objectors will be found amongst those who conceive that peculiar advantages are conferred upon Dublin by the presence of a court. This is a common but a certain mistake. They err fundamentally, who would maintain an office for the sake of the money it expends. Stately and costly establishments may be the consequences, but are never the causes, of national prosperity. The true and only lasting elements of a country's greatness are to be found in its natural resources, and the uses to which the industry of the inhabitants converts those resources. In this respect Ireland, depending upon herself, has nothing to apprehend. The real business of the country is transacted by the lord chancellor and the attorney general. All the other officials, however ostentatiously arranged, merely execute forms which may be safely dispensed with. Let the South, then, look at the North, and emulate Belfast;—let all Ireland mark Scotland, and Dublin in particular fix its attention upon Edinburgh. How has that city, and the whole country of which it is the capital, flourished? Not certainly by means of a viceroy and a separate government, but through the loss of both. And just so would it be with Ireland. To relieve that country, we should begin by removing the incubus of a lord lieutenancy, and with it the Castle faction—ever on

* Such a topic as this would be too contemptible for notice in a serious publication, but that being repeated *usque ad nauseam* everywhere in society, it serves to indicate the estimate formed by the upper classes of the true uses for which the viceregency is to be maintained.

the alert to promote its own advantage—never prone to consult the public interests. We should give free scope to the popular impulse for improvement. We should unshackle Ireland, as we have unshackled Scotland, if we would see her rise in the scale of moral dignity and national wealth. We should insure an open field for honest exertion, if we would divert the spirit and the power now abroad upon the island, to develop a new condition of things, render the inhabitants peaceful and happy, and make them the ornament and strength of the empire at large, and the envy of its less favoured parts.

Compare Scotland with Ireland, and how marked the difference between the two countries ! In Scotland, places are uniformly filled by Scotchmen. During the debate on Mr. Smith O'Brien's motion in 1843, the rule was critically proved by a solitary exception instanced by Sir Robert Peel, as if anxious to show that for once one swallow could make a summer, in the case of the Secretary of the Edinburgh Post Office, Sir E. Lees,* who happens, *mirabile dictu*, to be an Irishman ! In Scotland, further, the church of the majority is the established church ; while various educational institutions, including three universities, originally endowed from public sources, are liberally devoted to rear generation after generation in accordance with the principles and prepossessions of the great bulk of the community. In a word, public opinion and the will of the majority, in Scotland, prescribe and regulate the patronage of civil offices, and the form and efficiency of the ecclesiastical and educational establishments of the country. Does not this in a great measure account for the contentment, the industry, the wealth, the intelligence, and the moral character of the Scottish people ? Is there a man bold enough to pretend, that if Scotland was governed as Ireland is, her circumstances would not be the very reverse of prosperous ? We know how the Scotch dealt with the attempt to impose the Established Church of England upon them. They drew their

* Sir Edward, though an Irishman born, is the son of a Scotchman who emigrated to take office.

claymores, and put down episcopacy by force of arms. Suppose that attack upon the rights of conscience successful—suppose, too, the affairs of that country administered like those of a colony—ruled by an English viceroy, with a tawdry court full of cold and supercilious Englishmen, with a cringing train of schemers and jobbers, plotting, subverting, and abusing the leading national interests,—suppose all this, and then conceive the tone of the reclamations, the spirit of the agitation, and the strength of the resistance that would arise against the union between England and Scotland! Suppose this, and then ask, where would be the manufactures in which Scotland rivals, and the agriculture in which she surpasses, England? The answers to these questions will be too well understood by every reader to require distinct expression. Let us not inhale the indignation or the resentment they breathe. But let us take advantage of the salutary lesson they inculcate: let us no longer blindly deceive ourselves respecting the nature of the violent experiment we have hitherto been trying in Ireland: let us judge of the tree we have planted and reared by the fruit it bears: let us confess that where the consequences for ages have been fatal, the causes must be deadly: let us renovate our policy, and regenerate a nation: let us invoke for Ireland the system that has pacified, enlightened, and enriched Scotland: let us do by the one country as we have done by the other,—and we may reasonably hope to gain the same great ends; let us give the Irish people the benefit of the Queen's government directly, and not at second-hand; let us raise the condition and instruct the ignorance of the labouring classes; let us, without impairing the efficiency of the church established by law, associate with the state upon fair and respectful terms the church of the majority of the nation;—and at length we may find the people of the three kingdoms indissolubly united, because thoroughly identified in their interests, and equally participating together, in every respect, a common and undivided prosperity and fame.

In order to close this chapter as it began, statistically, a

summary is annexed, with the addition of some particulars not given already, and derived for the most part from the official documents already quoted.

In 1841, The people were	8,175,124
They pay an average revenue, in round numbers, per annum, of	£4,500,000
(Thus Ireland contributes much under one-third of the population and about one-twelfth of the revenue of the United Kingdom.)	
— The arable land in acres, is	13,464,300
— The waste ditto	6,295,738
— The number of houses	1,328,839
— The rental of land and houses	£21,394,675
— The live stock on the land was worth	£20,671,068
— The grain, meal, &c., exported to Great Britain	1,360,480 qrs.
— According to the average prices advertised in the <i>London Gazette</i> , this quantity represented a sum of	£3,530,285 6s. 11d.
— The official value of the Imports	£1,693,375
— Exports	£416,965
1843. The net produce of the Customs, Excise, Stamps, Post Office, &c.	£4,256,891
— The Circulating Medium	£8,000,000
1841. The number of Savings Banks Depositors	77,522
— Amount deposited	£2,243,426
— The National Debts of the United Kingdom and Ireland having been consolidated, their respective amounts are undistinguishable—but of the total National Debt of the Empire, there was held in the names of persons resident in Ireland	£34,099,219 14s.
— At an annual interest of	£1,183,845 18s. 4½d.
1843. The military force was, men	21,210
— Costing	£802,441 0s. 11½d.
— The naval force, vessels	11
— guns	233
— men	2,350
— Costing	£108,500
— Armed constabulary, men	9,043
— Costing	£512,605
— The charge of the Civil Establishments	£2,137,253 6s. 0d.

CHAPTER II.

STATE OF IRELAND AT THE PERIOD OF THE ENGLISH INVASION.

EVIDENCES OF THE ORIGIN OF THE INHABITANTS.—THEIR EARLY STRUCTURES.—CAIRNS, CROMLECHES, ROUND-TOWERS, AND STONE-ROOFED CHURCHES.—POLITICAL CONSTITUTION.—FIVE KINGS.—THE LAWS OF TANISTRY AND GAVELKIND.—INHERENT ELEMENTS OF INTERNAL DIVISION AND NATIONAL WEAKNESS.—DANISH SETTLEMENTS IN THE SEA-PORTS, THEIR SEPARATE TERRITORIES, PRINCES AND CHURCH.

THE exposition given in the preceding chapter of the present circumstances of the people and the government in Ireland, is a plain summary of the actual consequences of the connection of that country with England, during a period of seven centuries. To understand this condition of things thoroughly, we should be acquainted with the chain of events out of which it has arisen. A few broad outlines are thus rendered necessary of the state of Ireland at the period of the invasion, as well as of the progress and results of that unprincipled adventure. It is only by producing the leading causes of existing circumstances, and by developing the spirit in which they were set in motion, and the course of their action, that we shall be able to analyse with any clearness the true nature of the dominant evils—to indicate the most applicable remedies—and to sustain the policy which may prevent the future from being a counterpart of the past.

The primitive condition of Ireland and the Irish people supplies a theme full of curious interest: it is grave, varied, intricate, and suggestive of extraordinary speculations—falling short in its main features and properties of the romantic, which demands definite events and presentable heroes, but extending a roll of wonderful incidents and shadowy personages, which furnish the true characteristics of the mysterious.

Few persons can penetrate the surface of this difficult and comprehensive subject, without receiving a general impression, that the Irish are a most ancient people, and were distinguished by superior power and knowledge at a period long anterior to that in which we discover the clear sources of civilization amongst the leading nations of modern history. But the moment an attempt is made to explain the grounds of that impression—to trace it to an accountable origin—to fix it satisfactorily at some positive epoch—to apply to it a rational theory of cause and effect—we find ourselves plunged into impenetrable darkness, and are lost in the midst of confusion, uncertainty, clashing contradictions, and infinite mysticism.

The learning of ages has been sedulously applied to this question, without evolving a single account of the earlier inhabitants and institutions of the country which is not confused and perplexing in the extreme.* Three sources of information have challenged the particular attention of the many disputants and inquirers who have dealt with the subject. The first was found in the early annals of the Irish themselves, which, if not all as original and authentic as has been represented, are numerous and valuable; the second is composed of scattered notices in the classical authors of Greece and Rome; and the third consists of the relations of pious Christians who propagated religion in the island, or narrated its progress for the edification of other nations.† From the mouths of these streams of knowledge, we may perhaps be permitted to infer, without much exactness of detail, three principal occurrences as highly probable:—1st. Descending the current of classical antiquity, we trace our first knowledge of Ireland to the Phoenicians. Those surprising adventurers passed the Straits of Gibraltar, and, proceeding by the northern

* The first volume of Mr. Moore's "History of Ireland," in the "Cabinet Cyclopaedia," contains all the information that diligent research and patient criticism can contribute to throw light on the various theories propounded to explain the remote history of the country.

† Primate Usher and Mr. Moore are minute in the collection of authorities under this head, beginning with St. Cathalgus, an Irishman who went to preach the Gospel on the Continent, A.D. 100, and died Bishop of Tarentum in Italy.

shores of Spain, reached Cornwall and Ireland. They traded with the inhabitants. Who those inhabitants were, is another and more doubtful question. What commodities were imported, and what taken away from Ireland in exchange, it is still more difficult to determine. With Cornwall they traded in tin; but their commerce with Ireland we are at a loss to conjecture. They gave the island the name of Ierne, whence Erin. 2ndly. That an immigration of Spaniards took place seems nearly certain; not only is the event supported by common tradition, but the distinct features of such a race are to this day discernible in many districts of the South and West of Ireland. The Irish annalists assert that they were led by a chief named Milesius, and supplied a long succession of kings. The name Hibernia is supposed to have been adopted by this people from their own Iberia. 3rdly. From quite a different direction there rushed one or more Belgic races, by the Irish called Gaels and Firbolgs. Some, at least, of these seem to have preceded the Milesians, and were crossed and interrupted in their career by hordes from the North, Scandinavians and Danes. Upon no other supposition can we explain the early mention, by the oldest chroniclers, of the people called Tuatha de Danaans. Their particular derivation seems to be wrapt in impenetrable obscurity; so that upon the whole we are perhaps only safe in asserting that Scandinavians and Danes, from the north-west shores of the European continent, made frequent descents upon Ireland before the ninth and tenth centuries, when their enterprises became matter of authentic history. There is room, moreover, to assert of these marauders, that although upon their more remote as well as their more recent attacks they failed to conquer the country, they nevertheless obtained possession of some of the best places along the eastern shore, and held them by a precarious but uninterrupted tenure, until they were found exercising independent authority in them by the English in the year 1170.

These abstruse points of origin are not those only on which the primæval accounts of Ireland and its inhabitants open a

wide field of arduous controversy. The honours of a high state of civilization and learning, at a very remote period of antiquity, have been claimed for their forefathers by almost all Irish writers. Englishmen, on the other hand, have too often run into the opposite extreme, and affected to consider that little or nothing of value had been produced in Ireland before the English invasion. Between these conflicting statements it is, perhaps, less difficult to arbitrate fairly than in most cases of violent difference. It appears to be a fact, no less extraordinary than certain, that the Christian religion was cultivated, in a pure and almost apostolical form, with more eminent success in Ireland, in the sixth century, than in any other part of Western Europe. It also appears that the Irish church was at the same time self-governed, and independent of the See of Rome; and that scholastic establishments flourished in the country, to which pupils flocked from the Continent in great numbers. If we lay aside all that the Irish relate upon this subject, there will still remain other sources of information to place the matter beyond the pale of controversy. But it is equally true, that this was not a permanent state of things. The Irish did not sustain this precocious superiority over the rest of Europe. It is a curious feature in modern history, that Ireland in the sixth century had attained more than a liberal share of the principal elements of civilization and knowledge, and possessed in the tenth and eleventh centuries a humble rank in the list of European kingdoms. There seems to be no room to deny that Ireland, as *Giraldus Cambrensis* saw it, did not correspond with the same country as *Venerable Bede* described it. At the same time it is quite an error to suppose that all traces of the past had vanished—that none of the spirit of its former vitality survived—no fruits of cultivation were preserved—or that the monuments of civilization and all the institutions it creates had been wholly swept away.

Specimens of the official correspondence called forth by the political and ecclesiastical position of affairs, when the English attacked the country, have been preserved, and they induce

us to form no unfavourable opinion of the degree of information and intelligence prevailing at the time they were written amongst the upper classes. The state of knowledge is further illustrated by the state of religion, which again is exemplified in the number and description of the abbeys, monasteries, and places of divine worship, erected and occupied at the period. In the ruins of these and other public buildings we discover visible proofs of the extent to which civilization and the arts had proceeded. Various remains, such as arms and ornaments dug up from time to time out of the earth, and a few valuable relics preserved in private families, supply interesting additions to this testimony. Incidental notices of the commerce of Ireland are to be gleaned in cotemporary works, and when found throw a clear light upon the mode of living at that day. The laws of Ireland, the mode of government, and the ranks into which the people were distributed furnish the last link in the chain of evidence ; and it is to be remarked of it that our information upon this head of the inquiry is more full than any other, and that it also supplies us with a satisfactory explanation of the circumstances which rendered Ireland so distracted, weak, and unfortunate, and made it so easy a prey to the spoiler.

Sir William Petty seems to have led the way to the low estimate and incorrect opinions of modern English authors respecting the civilization of Ireland at the period of the English invasion.

"There is," says Sir William, in his "Political Anatomy of Ireland," "at this day, no monument or real argument that when the Irish were first invaded they had any stone housing at all, any money, any foreign trade, nor any learning but the Legends of the Saints, Psalters, Missals, Rituals, &c., nor geometry, astronomy, anatomy, architecture, engineering, painting, carving, nor any kind of manufactures, nor the least use of navigation, or the art military."

Admitting Sir W. Petty's authority to be, as it unquestionably is, not only eminent, but superior to his age, in statistics and political economy, the passage just quoted suffices to show that he is not to be implicitly followed upon the subject of

either Irish or English antiquities. His first assertion, that the Irish had “no stone housing at all,” is loosely expressed. If the meaning be private houses, it is unquestionably true; but in that case the observation will convey no reproach, because it is to the full as applicable to England as to Ireland. Architects admit it to be an undisputed fact, that no private residences of stone were erected in England before the reign of Henry VII., during which, moreover, brick, if not first introduced, was at best only revived after a long interval of disuse. Castles and ecclesiastical edifices were the only stone buildings in the country previous to that period. The evidence of this truth, to borrow the words of Sir W. Petty, is, that there is no monument or real argument of any private residences of stone or brick to be found in England of a date prior to the reign of the Seventh Henry. All private houses were built of wood and plaster up to that period. Country gentlemen and persons of substance only then began to build with stone and brick; while the majority of the people of England retained the lath and plaster house up to a much more recent period. Specimens of these erections abounded in London at the beginning of the present century, nor are they as yet extinct. If, then, lath and plaster formed the habitations of the English so late as the reign of Henry VII., it is unquestionably not a reproach to the civilization of the Irish that they had no better dwelling-places in the reign of Henry II.*

* Not only has the progress of refinement, generally speaking, been much slower, but the origin of many of these conveniences and comforts which in England are now universally diffused, has been much more recent than is commonly supposed. There is a passage in Holinshed which exposes the rude state of English living so late as two generations after Henry VII. in a remarkable manner. “There are old men,” says the Chronicler, “yet dwelling in the village where I remain, who have noted three things to be marvellously altered in England, within their sound remembrance;—one is the multitude of chimneys lately erected, whereas in their young days there were but two or three in the uplandish towns of the realm:—the second is the great amendment in lodging,—for, said they, our fathers and ourselves have lain full oft on straw pallets, covered with a sheet, under coverlets of dog’s wane and hop harlots, and a good round log under their heads as a bolster; if it were so that the father or good man of the house had a mattress or flock bed, and thereon a sack of chaff to rest his head upon, he thought himself as well lodged as the lord of the town; as for the servants, if they had any sheet upon them it was

This view of the question leaves us grounds for no other supposition than that Sir W. Petty must have understood by stone housing such buildings of stone as were to be found in England during the reign of Henry II., that is to say, castles and churches. That such edifices had been raised in Ireland before the English invasion, cannot be disputed. The real arguments—the monuments themselves—were not only extant when Sir W. Petty wrote, but exist to this day. Nor are we at a loss for equally sound proofs to show that substantial stone buildings were erected in Ireland at a very remote age—so remote, indeed, that it may be reasonably doubted whether England can exhibit architectural relics of greater antiquity.

The progress of building in Ireland, from an extremely distant age, is to be traced with clearness and certainty in a short compass. The architectural antiquities of the country, in the first or oldest class, consist of cairns, or tombs—cromlechs, or altars—and raths, also called moats, or military forts. These appear to have been the earliest constructions raised by the hands of man in Ireland, and well defined examples of them are still to be found scattered over the country in various directions. The cairn and the cromlech have been distinguished from one another—perhaps with no great reason. The cairn is considered to have been a burial place, upon which stones were heaped, in accordance with a custom common to all ages and nations, which honours the dead by commemorating the place of their interment. Upon this supposition, the Irish cairn and the Egyptian pyramid are to be regarded as taking their rise from the same feelings, and only exhibiting different eras of civilization and art. The Irish cairn is perhaps one of the rudest and most ancient modes by which the human race attempt to preserve the memory of the dead ; it consists, as now seen, of large blocks of stone, well, for seldom had they any under their bodies to keep them from the pricking straws, that ran thro' the canvass and razed their hardened hides :—The third thing they tell us of is the exchange of trene (wooden) platters into pewter, and wooden spoons into silver or tin ; for so common were all sorts of trene vessels in those times, that a man could hardly find four pieces of pewter in a good farm-house.”

sometimes five in number, placed side by side, and surrounded by a circle of smaller stones, of some thirty or more yards in diameter.

Assuming the cairn to be a burial-place, the cromlech is to be described as an altar; perhaps, however, they were both originally one and the same—places for the joint purpose of devotion and sepulture; between which, the difference now observable may be the result of nothing more than the greater degree of perfection in which the large stones of some remain, than others. In what are called cairns, the stones are small, broken, and in a heap. In cromlechs, they are whole and huge. We have an instance of the manner in which these rude masses may be displaced and become dilapidated, in the county of Waterford. In a field near the bridge of Couse-ma-Keal, on the old road from Waterford to Tramore, there is a cromlech, which the farmer occupying the ground was some years ago anxious to get rid of. He succeeded in displacing the incumbent stone from its resting-place at one end, but beyond that he was unable to move it—the immense weight defied his exertions. Nevertheless, it is not to be doubted, that in process of time even this huge mass will be further mutilated and reduced. The first injury has been done, and it seems to be the natural course of things in this world, that the work of ruin once commenced, always proceeds. The measure of the now incumbent stone is given in the Rev. Mr. Ryland's "History of Waterford," at 21 feet long, 18 broad, and from 1 to 3 feet thick.

If popular tradition may be relied on, the cromlech, which is also spelt cromleach, was a Druidical altar. On this, however, as on almost every other antiquarian subject, authorities disagree,—some referring them to a different people and an older age than that of the Druids. The etymology of the word is also disputed. By some it is derived from Crom, God, and leac, a flat stone; by others from the Punic crom, which has been translated bowing the body reverentially, and leacht, the bed of death. This version would not be incompatible with the human sacrifices encouraged by the priests of Pagan worship, who are also said to have constructed the

rude chairs of stone found in Ireland, in which they sat to dispense public justice,—a custom certainly observed by the Brehon, or Irish lawgiver, down to a recent period.

Perhaps our best evidence of the religious application of the cromlech originally, is discoverable in the very early location of churches in its immediate vicinity. We know that the founders of Christianity in almost all countries followed the sensible policy of seeking to win over the Pagan to the new worship, by adopting many of the customs and frequenting the sites which had previously been held sacred. It has also been remarked, that many of these cromlechs, like our Christian churches, lie directly East and West. There is a cromlech on Sugar-Loaf Hill, in the county of Waterford, the neighbourhood of which was selected as the site of a Christian church which has fallen into decay, while the older relic still lifts its stupendous piles to the sky, to all appearance as strong as when first it was devoted to the barbarous worship of false divinities. Strange sight and mysterious coincidence—the recent Christian temple a miserable ruin, and the primæval Pagan altar towering over it remains a perfect and undamaged whole.

The tumulus, called a rath, or moat, occurs even more commonly in Ireland than the cairn or the cromlech. In some districts raths are to be found as thick as mole-hills. There is a very well defined moat of the barrow, or earthen kind, at Ardamine, between Gorey and the sea-coast, in the county of Wexford. The top, or cap, is particularly well formed; the ravines or passes, which secured it as a place of strength, are distinctly visible. The adjoining churchyard of Ardamine testifies to the close succession of the Christian worship in the seats of idolatry; but here again, the church has fallen—the Pagan temple remains erect.

Another form of rath-moats with caves hollowed underneath, and vaulted with stone, has been carefully illustrated by Dr. Ledwich:—“About the year 1699, a Mr. Campbell, who resided in the village of New Grange, observing stones under the green sod, carried much of them away to repair a road; and proceeding in this work, he at length arrived at a broad flat stone, that co-

vered the mouth of the gallery. At the entrance, this gallery is 3 feet wide, and 2 high; at 12 feet from the entrance, it is but 2 feet 2 inches wide. The length of the gallery from its mouth to the beginning of the dome is 62 feet; from thence to the upper part of the dome, 11 feet 6 inches; the whole length, $7\frac{1}{2}$ feet. The dome or cave within the long gallery, gives the exact figure of a cross; length between the arms of the cross, 20 feet. The dome forms an octagon 20 feet high, with an area of about 17. It is composed of long flat stones, the upper projecting a little below the lower, and closed in and capped with a flat flag. There are two oval rock basins in the cave, one in each arm of the cross. On first entering the dome, not far from the centre, a pillar was found, and two skeletons on each side, not far from the pillar. In the recesses were three hollow stone basins, 2 and 3 feet diameter.”*

The rath caves examined by Mr. Crofton Croker, in 1829, at Garranes, in the parish of Carrigtohill, about nine miles east of Cork, are interesting remains. The information gathered upon the occasion tends to show that, numerous as the discoveries of subterranean chambers of this description have been, there are, in all probability, even still a greater number unexplored. The Garranes caverns are situated within a circular entrenchment, the diameter of which is 120 feet. At the third of that space, from the south side, appeared a circular pit, about 7 feet in depth, and measuring $5\frac{1}{2}$ feet in diameter. From this pit (which probably had been a chamber, the roof having fallen in) two holes, resembling the entrances to fox-earths, descended at an angle of about 20 degrees into chambers of a depressed beehive-like make, excavated from the soil, which is a stiff clay mixed with gravel. These holes or passages (in size barely sufficient to allow a man to creep through them) respectively led to a chamber, formed as just described, without any masonry; and from each of these a like communication led to a third chamber, from which there was a similar passage into a fourth. Here the passage into a fifth

* Ledwich's Antiquities, p. 44.

chamber was blocked up with large stones, two or three of which were removed ; the confined space the workman was placed in, made it impossible to open the communication without more time and labour than could have been devoted to the investigation, and the examination terminated.

The dimensions of the chambers varied from 7 to 8 feet in diameter, and in form they were between the oval and the circle. The plan and section of the entrenchment, with measurement published by Mr. Croker, present at a glance a better idea of their relative situations than can be conveyed by description. A considerable quantity of charcoal was found in these chambers when discovered, and the fragment of a quern or hand-mill.

Within a circle of five miles round Garranes, there are no less than fourteen circular entrenchments remaining. They are called by the country people, when speaking of them in Irish, indifferently, "Lis" and "Rath," and in English, "the Danes' Fort," or "the Old Fort." Mr. Croker thinks it probable that these works were thrown up by the native Irish, around their little wigwam settlements, as a defence against any sudden attack from an enemy or from wolves, and that subterranean chambers or cellars were formed for granaries, or as secure depositories in time of danger for their rude property.*

The military rath, or fortified stronghold, displayed no mean art, and could only have been erected by persevering labour. Two specimens of this style of building exist—one the Staig Fort in Kerry, of which there is a model made by the Dublin Society ; the other is on the summit of a small mountain, 802 feet high, on the eastern shore of Lough Swilly. The latter rath, which is called the Grianan† of Aileach, has been

* Solent et subterraneos specus aperire, eosque multo insuper fimo one-
rant, suffugium hiemi, et receptaculum frugibus, quia rigorem frigorū
eiusmodi locis molliunt; et si quando hostis advenit, aperta populatur,
abdicta autem et defossa, aut ignorantur aut eo ipso fallunt, quod querenda
sunt.—*Tacitus, De Moribus Germanorum*, cap. 16.

† Grianan has been variously translated ;—by some it is taken to mean
the Sun, in which sense as Aileach means a stone habitation—Grianan
Aileach would mean the Stone Temple of the Sun. Mr. Petrie, in the chap-

minutely described with considerable learning in the "Memoir of the Ordnance Survey of Ireland." There is a gradual ascent for about a mile from the base, terminating within a few hundred feet from the top in an apex, which is circular and precipitous. The view from this is extensive and imposing. The summit is approached by a road formed between two ledges of rock, and defining in its course three concentric ramparts, crowned by the *Cashel* or Keep, which consists of an area of 77 feet 6 inches in diameter, enclosed by a circular stone wall sloping inwards, which is from 11 to 13 feet in breadth, and now about 6 feet high, though conjectured to have been in its original state twice if not three times that height.

The remains of a well-formed gateway are seen at the entrance—the lintels of the doorways, though displaced, are lying in front. In what may be described the inner face of the keep, two hollow galleries have been formed in the thick wall, about five feet high. They are covered with flat stones, uncemented, and are entered from the area. In one, but not in both, is a recess with a seat: to reach their doors you pass, on the inside face of the wall, two flights of steps which lead to a terrace. The masonry of this building deserves attention; it is of uncemented stone, similar to that found in other Irish cashels or fortress keeps, and affords satisfactory proof that the stones, which average 2 feet in length, had been regularly prepared for the building, and squared with the hammer, though not chiselled.

Of the frequent attempts which have been made to affix a particular era to these works, it is not too much to observe, that a few are ingenious, many tiresome, all conjectural, and none satisfactory. We are safe in affirming that they are very old, and that, in all probability, the first rude efforts in stone building in Ireland were the flag-roofed caves—and the second the uncemented cut stone fort. It is hardly necessary to add, that both must have preceded the English invasion by many centuries. That, however, is not the thought which strikes

ter on Antiquities in the Ordnance Memoir, interprets Grianan as synonymous with Dun, fortress or palace, and calls Grianan Aileach a Royal Palace.

the mind most powerfully, while we pause to contemplate the remains and dimensions of these massive structures. How wild and mysterious the mode of life followed by the people, of whose strong hands these were the toilsome labours ! How multitudinous must not the nation have been, which furnished the heaps of bones still lying blanched and unconsumed under the scattered stones of the damaged but undestroyed cairn—and who required altars for their congregations so huge and elevated as the cromlech ! How powerful they who could have formed such retreats as these long subterranean vaults and such high defences as the Staig Fort and Grianan Aileach ! Imagine them now covering the hill side in the open face of Heaven, and bending under the natural impulse of the human heart to venerate God, and now crouching into their vaulted caverns to save life from violence and property from plunder ! How far removed the age and how primitive the people, whose habits and pursuits, whose devotions and warfare, are described in the vast ruins of these strange monuments ! How natural and excusable upon the part of their descendants, the boast of a high antiquity, and the pretensions to a degree of aboriginal civilization, not less wonderful for its grandeur than its rudeness !

Akin to these relics of obscure antiquity, are the round towers of Ireland, which mark another stage in the progress of architectural improvement. Of these buildings, so peculiar in their form, which appear all over the country in such numbers as to be distinctively national, and have suggested so many theories, and furnished so many occasions for antiquarian disputation, the balance of the evidence adduced inclines decidedly to the conclusion that they were Pagan monuments of sepulture and worship. Under the foundations of those which have been examined, a skeleton has been found stretched with the head to the East. Christian buildings they could not have been originally, however they may have been subsequently adopted as belfries, because no such style has ever been used in the edifices of that form of worship—a form, moreover, never known to indulge in fanciful novelties or national peculiarities, but to have held, wherever it penetrated, one catholic and uni-

versal rule in all things. At the same time these towers must have been religious in their objects or uses, or they would not be so often found in the immediate vicinity of the cairn. This fact seems to decide, and to a certain extent, their age as succeeding the cairn and preceding the church. They are all roofed with stone, a proof of building at a very early age. One of the smallest and most perfect of them is at Timahoe, in the Queen's County, where again the eye is struck by the succession of different religious edifices on the same site. Here the earthen rath, the cairn, the round tower, and the Christian church appear together—the rath and round tower perfect, the Christian church a ruin !

The next step in architecture was church building, which, beginning in wood, seems to have proceeded to uncemented stone walls with a thatched roof, and about the eighth century to have certainly reached mortared stone. Venerable Bede states that Finianus, a holy Irishman, built a church on Lindisfarne, for the bishop's see, which was formed, not of stone but of spliced oak, and thatched with reeds, after the fashion of his country,*—and Ledwich, quoting the opinion of Bishop Usher, who says that stone churches were unusual (*morem insolitum*†) amongst the British and Irish, refers to the old Chapel of Glastonbury, in Spelman, and to Greensted Church in Essex, as instances of the wooden and wattled churches of the ancient Irish. So far the natives of the two countries seem to have been on a level. The dimensions of these buildings were small. They were succeeded by the stone-roofed chapel, one of which, a venerable curiosity, is at Killaloe. Ledwich, following the general opinion, supposes that such small chapels were founded for the preservation of relics, and repeats the common observation, that the work is so good, and the stone so firmly embedded in well-made mortar, that even now no rain will penetrate through.

The small buildings in Glendalough show further advancement. We have here the stone roof style and other improvements, as, the church itself, the chapel for relics attached, and

* Bede, Lib. 3, c. 25.

† Usser. Sillog. 737.

a first approach to a steeple, modelled, perhaps, from the round tower. The size of the church is 22 feet by 15, height 20 feet, and the thickness of the walls 3 ft. 6 in. The elevation of the tower is about 50 ft.; the entrance door is 6 ft. 8 in. high, 2 ft. 5 in. wide at top, and 2 ft. 8 in. at bottom. There was one window of sculptured freestone, which was carried away and ground into powder for domestic purposes.

The stone-roofed church continued to be built until it had attained a high degree of architectural merit. Cormac's Chapel, which forms a principal portion of that noble pile of ruins, the rock of Cashel, affords decisive proofs of the correctness of this remark. Ledwich, whose motto should have been *Nil admirari*, is content to observe that this is a curious building—he would not have exceeded the truth if he had added beautiful. Simplicity, proportion, and finished workmanship distinguish the plan and all its parts in an eminent degree. The resemblance it bears to St. Peter's Church, Oxford, with Grimbald's crypt beneath, built about the end of the ninth century, was pointed out by Ledwich, who, ever on the alert to rank Irish antiquities in the lowest grade, thinks, however, that Cormac's Chapel must be more modern. Be that as it may, its high antiquity is shown in the plan, which is not cruciform; and as no one has been bold enough to deny its existence before the English invasion, it furnishes a bright link to the chain of evidence that shows the extreme incorrectness of Sir W. Petty's remark as to architecture and the arts of ancient Ireland.

The specimen of church building presented in Cormac's Chapel would be sufficient, if it stood alone, to induce a belief that the clergy of the church of Ireland were successful patrons, not of architecture simply, but of sculpture, painting, and the other ornamental works, the cultivation of which by the Roman Catholic church throughout Europe tended to liberalise the minds of men in so eminent a degree, and to facilitate the revival of letters and the fine arts. But we do not rest for satisfactory evidence upon this point upon conjectural

inferences or Cormac's Chapel only. In other parts of Ireland ecclesiastical remains are still visible, which show that sculpture, painting, and carving in wood and metals were no unfrequent means of embellishment in that country before the year 1170. Upon the present occasion it will suffice to illustrate the truth of this remark from a few distinct quarters,—the chief of which are, the ruins of Glendalough, just spoken of, in the county of Wicklow—the abbey of Knockmoy, in the county of Galway—and the old church of Ardmore, near the round tower of the same name, in the county of Waterford.

Glendalough is one of the most striking places in the three kingdoms. Deeply embedded on all sides between high mountains, which cast a peculiar shade of gloom over its cold recesses, is a solitary valley, in which are found the ruins of seven churches, one round tower, and distinct vestiges of a town, of which only some broken stones now challenge observation. This is Glendalough—the valley of

“The lake whose gloomy shore
Skylark never warbles o'er—”

And whether we revert to the past, and reflect upon the vicissitudes which have so completely swept away all the buildings and the people that in far gone ages made the now still and sequestered spot busy with life and knowledge; or whether we contemplate the lofty summits of those wide-spread mountains, with their dark sides of heath and turf, and their wild untenanted wastes, frowning silently upon the lake and little river below, the place is one every way likely to produce a deep impression. It breathes the air of religious awe—there are very few scenes more truly solemn or effectively sublime. It is equally great in its associations with bygone years—their piety and learning—and in the present beauties of a scenery almost perfect in its kind.

Glendalough and Knockmoy, having been visited and described by Cambrensis, are placed beyond the reach of denial as the labour of Irish hands. Every author who has noticed them, has commemorated the merits of the ancient relics with

which they abound. The hierarchy must have been rich who built these and other such structures. They did not, however, derive their wealth from the sources by which the Roman Catholic clergy were then commonly supplied. They were not formally subjected to the Roman pontiff before the synod of Kells in 1152 ; they paid his holiness no Peter's pence, and received no tithes before the English invasion. Their kings and chiefs appear to have inflicted violent wrongs upon them. Dr. Lingard says, that for more than two centuries the metropolitan church of Armagh was occupied by individuals of the same lineage to the number of fifteen, in regular succession. Of these only six were clergymen, the rest were lay chieftains who enjoyed the substantial emoluments of the see without discharging the episcopal functions.

Amongst the ecclesiastical antiquities of Ireland, no mean place is to be assigned to Psalters, and the carved boxes in which they were preserved. These have been made a subject of particular research by Sir W. Betham, Ulster King of Arms. His volume contains specimens of the style of these productions—as to their penmanship, the paintings that illustrated them, and the carved covers in which they were preserved. Of these covers or boxes, there is one in the Museum of Trinity College, Dublin, which has been described by General Vallency ; another belongs to the family of O'Donnell in Mayo ; two are in the possession of Sir W. Betham, and others are known to be preserved in different places. The former are respectively named Dimma's box, the Caah, and the Meeshac. Dimma's box is so called, because the manuscript it contains is subscribed by Dimma Mac Nathi, the son of Nathi, a relative of St. Colgan, and particularly mentioned in the life of that saint as a person distinguished for his skill in penmanship. This refers the manuscript to the beginning of the seventh century. Dimma's box is of brass plated with silver, and it contains an illuminated copy of the Gospels in Latin. The Caah is a brass box 9½ inches long, with a plate of chased silver inserted into one of brass at the top.

To these evidences of the extent to which the clerical body in Ireland promoted learning and the arts, long before the English invasion, others might be added. They are uncalled for here. It must not, however, be supposed that the mode of living and habits of the Irish people generally corresponded with the degree of civilization thus manifested. Stone castles had been built and inhabited by the native Irish sovereigns, but they were far from common; their chief palaces, not excepting that of Tara, were of slight structure, but extensive dimensions. Though built in the 12th century, of plastered wood, there was often a good deal of wealth in one shape or other collected within them. We may safely affirm, that if they had been formed of substantial materials, we should be able to trace more remains of their foundation than are known to exist.

It may not be amiss to make another remark while lingering upon the subject of the primitive church of Ireland. We have spoken of its learning and its piety—we have shown that it must have been wealthy, and that beyond all doubt a liberal genius and cultivated taste directed many of its labours and survive in its monuments; but it is not to be denied that the nation did not in these respects partake of the high character of the church. This has led some writers, ill read in the authorities which decide the question, to impugn the superior reputation of the ancient church. There certainly is an apparent inconsistency between the degree of civilization evinced by the Irish people, and the benefits the Irish church is known to have conferred by her schools, which were crowded with foreigners, and her missionaries, who spread religion and philosophy through distant countries.* If we reflect a little, however, we shall be able to

* Quos omnes Scotti libertissime suscipientes victum eis quotidianum sine præcio, libros quoque ad legendum et magisterium gratuitum præbere curabant.—*Ven. Bed. Hist. Eccles. Gent. Anglican.* lib. 3, cap. 27.

Dr. Ledwich, who, though an Irishman, was perhaps as depreciating a writer as ever treated of Irish affairs, took credit to himself for making it evident that the Irish attained uncommon eminence in the 7th and 8th centuries.—*Antiquities of Ireland*, p. 312.

reconcile a contradiction more apparent than real. All priesthoods are exclusive bodies—that of the Catholic church, particularly in the earlier ages of Christianity, was mainly influenced in its systems of education, and the forms of its collegiate foundations, by a desire to make its own members accomplished. Wherever schools were opened, they were intended to enlist and prepare recruits for the church, and were frequented by no others. The instruction prepared for such persons was very different from the information, simply religious, imparted to the public. The monk within his convent relieved and diversified the long hours of confinement and prayer with occasional study, became a scholar, and transmitted his learning to his successor; while the peasant outside the walls remained as ignorant of these pursuits, and as little benefited by the mental improvement thus attained and enjoyed, as if they had never found their way to the spot. In short, monasteries were schools of sanctity and erudition, but it was the peculiar policy of their founders to withdraw from the world, and rarely to exhibit or spread abroad in society the knowledge and virtue possessed and practised within their precincts, except as examples and inducements to procure neophytes. They led a secluded life, shared nothing with their fellow men, and retained their prizes to themselves, holding them out as objects of envy and ambition to swell the number of their followers by the distinction and immunities they conferred. As no acts were considered more meritorious than monastic gifts and endowments, so the institute gained everything, the country nothing, in the way of letters. The early church taught religion, not education—and all its colleges were model schools for priests. We should not be surprised, therefore, to find in Ireland, or any other country, during the middle ages, a learned church and an illiterate people. The learning of the cloisters was like the learning of our modern universities—an accomplishment never addressed to the people at large, and neither influencing nor improving their condition. What does the shopkeeper or mechanic of Oxford or Cambridge gather or imbibe from those seats of science and

scholarship! Are they more humane, accomplished, or enlightened than the burgesses and inhabitants of other towns? Even so may we look without surprise on the ignorance imputed to the ancient Irish; while their priests taught the learned languages to foreigners, and were apostles of science and religion for successive centuries.

The great ornaments of the primitive church of Ireland were monks called Culdees, eminent, according to all Catholic and Protestant writers, for exemplary piety and knowledge. It is difficult to fix the time of their origin—the flourishing period of their career was from the beginning of the 6th to the beginning of the 8th century. They are particularly distinguished as the founders of the great monasteries of Iona and Lindisfarne, and as the missionaries who converted the inhabitants of Scotland and Northumberland to Christianity. A host of writers, from Venerable Bede down to Archbishop Usher, bear testimony to their extraordinary merits. They preferred small islands as the sites of their establishments, of which Moanincha in Burros in Ossory was highly celebrated. They were independent of Rome, and differed in many forms and ceremonies from that See. The decline of their order may be dated from the period at which the papal influence began to be felt in Ireland. Other religious societies gradually supplied their place, without preserving the character for erudition for which they were eminent.

Our accounts of the political condition of Ireland are generally clear and sufficiently authoritative. When the English arrived they found five kings in the country—those, namely, of Meath, Connaught, Ulster, Munster, and Leinster. Of these the king of Meath was the chief, or king paramount, and was entitled to take precedence and receive tribute from the others. The form of a plurality of kings appears to have originated at an early period. The rank next to royalty was that of Tanist, or king elect. Next came the Carfinny, a prince or chieftain who held his province or petty principality subject to the local sovereign, but with distinct rights to administer justice and carry on peace and war. Judges, called Brehons, Seannachies, a

a body of historiographers, genealogists, and bards, who were poets and musicians, composed the remaining orders of society. The mass of the people existed in a state of abject dependence and distress. Some were Betaghs, a sort of slave-villein or adscripti glebae—others were freemen, but scarcely less miserable.

The character of the government, and the condition of the people, were determined by two principal laws which led and rode over all others, and kept the country ever restless, distracted and oppressed. These were, the law of tanistry, by which the kings and princes were made elective, and a land law somewhat similar to the gavelkind of England. According to the forms of tanistry, the reigning king or chieftain had no power over the succession—the son was not necessarily heir to the father, though the inheritance followed in the same blood. On the contrary, the king and tanist were elected together, the king to reign, and the tanist to guard the right of succession;—which generally meant, to succeed in the event of a vacancy, which he was too often tempted to create. All members of the family were eligible; and it is needless to add, that where the right to elect was given, the power to depose would be assumed. Incessant feuds and interminable wars flowed in a turbid stream and stormy succession from a law which was so well calculated to enable the cunning head and the strongest hand to carry all before them. The form of election, however, as has too often happened in the case of other institutions convertible to mischievous ends, is reported to have been peaceful and significant when duly observed. A public assembly was convened, generally on the hill-side; and the kings, chieftains, and principal men taking their proper stations, the new tanist was declared by acclamation. A chief then arose, and standing forth in the midst of the assembly, with a long white and unknotted wand in his hand, addressed the future potentate in such words as—“ Receive this auspicious emblem of your dignity, and remember in your life and government to imitate the rod in its white purity and rectitude—being straight and without knots—so that no evil tongue

may have room to asperse the candour of your actions with blackness, no corruption prevent your justice, and no ties of friendship make it partial. Take, therefore, upon you in a lucky hour the government of this people, and exercise the power here given you with perfect freedom."

The gavelkind of Ireland was about the worst of all laws : no people could possibly advance in civilization under such a system. By that law all property was a common holding in principle, but the division was made by the chief—so that whenever the head of a sept or family died, or, as oftener happened, was violently removed, his successor distributed all the lands anew, and naturally rewarded his own followers with large shares, to the prejudice of all who had supported his enemy. The general confusion and poverty inseparable from a tenure of property at once so precarious and arbitrary, requires no comment.*

Codes of the Brehon laws of Ireland are still in existence, and from them the leading features of the judicial system of Ireland have been diligently gathered by many writers. The brehons are conceived to have belonged to particular families. They sat on the hill-side on stone chairs to hear causes and see judgment executed. Their principles of morality were lax ; they admitted of compensation for murder and other crimes by a fine, called Eric ; recognized no distinction between legitimate and illegitimate children ; and caused the hair and beard to be shorn as ignominious punishments.

Of the remaining evidences of the condition of the Irish when invaded, the more striking are to be derived from English sources, and they are sufficiently clear upon the points to which they refer. In dress they appear to have been rather refined at an early period. We have no accounts

* These Irish laws of tanistry and gavelkind seem to have been fairly apprehended by the English Judges, who decided that the chief was seized of his territory as a lord of his demesne ; that the tanist by the custom of the country was also seized of certain lands; and that the custom farther was, that every kinsman of the chief had a parcel of land to live upon, and yet that no estate passed thereby ; but that the chief for the time being, by custom time out of mind, might remove the said kinsmen to other lands at his pleasure.

of half-clad Irishmen exposing their naked skin, barbarously punctured, like the inhabitants of the sister isle described by William of Malmesbury. The dresses of the kings, chiefs, brehons, bards, soldiers, and common people are preserved, and they are far from indicating poverty or a want of taste. Linen vests, cloaks, trowsers, and boots appear to have been common to all classes. They wear, says Cambrensis, moderate close capuchins, or hooded mantles, covering the shoulders and coming down to the elbows, composed of various colours and stripes, and for the most part sewed; underneath fallins or jackets, coloured trowsers and leather buskins called brogues for the feet, made of one piece, and tied with latchets round the ankles. They had long beards, and long hair behind, upon which they particularly prided themselves. Ledwich quotes an Icelandic Chronicle antecedent to the visit of Cambrensis, of the date, namely, of 1129, from Johnson's "Antiquities of the Celtic Scandinavians," by which it appears that the Irish dress at that period consisted of a shirt, trowsers tied with thongs passing under the feet, a mantle and cap.

Upon the whole, therefore, there seems to be abundant uncontradicted proofs to show that the Irish, when invaded, were by no means an uncivilized people in the article of dress. Of their mode of living, agriculture, and commerce, our means of information are not equally satisfactory. Their wealth was principally agricultural, and, as the natural fertility of the soil suggests, was of the simplest kind, being derived from pasturage rather than tillage. Their herds of cattle and flocks of sheep were, consequently, numerous and valuable. Their trade has given occasion to much disputation. It is certain that a people wearing linen and woollen cloths must have had an extensive commerce in those articles—but whether that commerce was internal and derived from native manufactures, or external and imported, it is not very easy to determine at the present day. More than one modern writer has contended that the Irish not only made but exported linen and woollen cloths. Unfortunately, there is scarcely a record or evidence upon this, as well as almost every subject illustrative of the

ancient state of the country, which has not long been swept violently away. In this respect, Ireland has suffered perhaps more severely than any other country in Europe. The Danes, in the predatory incursions they so frequently made during the 9th and 10th centuries, destroyed all the manuscripts and monuments that fell into their hands—and of the “works which escaped their ravages by far the greater part was consumed during four centuries of wars with the English.” In this general dearth of information, a few incidental matters related by Cambrensis are particularly valuable. The Welsh priest tells us that Dermod Mac Murrogh repaired to Bristol, “because it was a place of frequent commercial intercourse with Ireland.” Now the trade must have been considerable, which in that period would have supported a frequent intercourse. It is certain that the Irish imported slaves from Bristol: one of the excuses put forth to justify the English invasion, was the grievous extent of the Irish commerce in English slaves—a practice which had proceeded to such a height, as to be made the formal subject of ecclesiastical censure at Armagh. Are we to suppose, then, that the Irish exported cattle and imported slaves? Cambrensis also informs us, that when Fitzstephen, at the siege of Wexford, sought to intimidate the natives by burning the ships in which he arrived, he destroyed “a vessel, laden with wine and corn, lately come out of England.” The same writer further commands the abundance of Poictou wine he found in Ireland, as well as its excellent usquebaugh. Then we learn from other sources, that the Irish brewed ale and had corn mills at this period. The ecclesiastical muniments for the foundation and endowment of churches and monasteries, preserved in various publications, make frequent mention of the tithes on ale, and of the mills upon the lands so transferred.

The best numismatic writers concur in stating that we have no specimens of money coined by the native Irish, and that the only mints established in the country were Danish and English. All the old coins found in the country bear the stamp either of the Dane or the Norman. Nevertheless, it

appears certain that the Irish, though they may not have minted money, were rich in gold and silver. The old annalists and ecclesiastical writers often speak of ounces of gold and silver paid in large quantities, either by way of tribute, ransom, or gifts to the church. The Irish also had many ornaments wrought in the precious metals—such as gold chains, collars, bracelets, and rings. How far these were, either wholly, or in part, of Irish manufacture, it seems now impossible to establish by positive evidence. At the same time, the fair presumption, in the absence of all evidence to the contrary, unquestionably is, that the natives were skilled in the workmanship of metals, and made their own ornaments and weapons.

Brave as the Irish unquestionably were, they ranked as a military people, at the time of the invasion, behind the rest of Europe. Their arms were few, and their defences simple. They fought with the sword and shield, the spear and a battle axe, and wore no mail. This fact, more than any other, leads us to conclude that the intercourse between Ireland and the rest of Europe was by no means intimate. Had it been otherwise, we should be able to find some traces of chivalry amongst a people naturally so high spirited and enthusiastic; and we should also find the Irish warrior, who has never fought without honour, sometimes leading the van in the crusades. This, however, is not the case: the Irish appear to have had no chivalry, and to have taken no part in the crusades. They were thus cut off from the two great sources of European refinement during the middle ages; and it is in all probability to the wants which they sustained and the inferiority which they betrayed, when compared with the English in this respect, that we are to ascribe the low estimate formed of their civilization by all but native authors.

There is an accomplishment, however—music—in which the Irish have always been allowed to excel. Cambrensis dwells at great length, and with the highest praise, upon the state in which he found this art cultivated in Ireland. He declares that the Irish were incomparably before every other nation

with which he was acquainted, and eminently distinguished by their skill in symphony and execution.* In his time the instruments in use were the harp, drum, and a sort of bells called Crotals, which were chiefly used in the service of the church. The harp of Brian Boroih is preserved in Trinity College, Dublin; the very instrument used by the ancient Irish is thus to be judged of. The bagpipe, by general consent, is regarded as a modern invention, and it is curious to remark that the harp—certainly the national instrument—is no longer in common use. The bagpipe alone now furnishes the music of the country and the common people; the harp is scarcely ever met with out of the houses of the gentry, and even by them it is not practised as generally as its beauty and nationality deserve.

The high state of cultivation in which we find the art of music amongst the ancient Irish is not to be ascribed merely to the natural genius of the people. The bards were a privileged order of men, enjoying consideration in society, and specially retained as members of the state retinue of kings and chieftains. The influence which men thus honoured would naturally acquire in society, aided by the popular influence of their art, would necessarily stimulate them to great proficiency. In early ages, they were not musicians only, but poets and historians, delivering down from age to age the national annals, and the achievements of the great families, their patrons, in verses which they sung or recited to music. In this respect the Irish claim the same origin and occupation for their bards, which the early history of the poetry of almost all nations ascribes to a similar race of songsters. In Ireland, however, the bard retained his position and his power to a later period than in other countries. Spenser found the Irish bard in the sixteenth century an influential member of society, held in the highest regard. It was his “profession to set

* *Præ omni natione quam vidimus incomparabiliter instructa est. Mirum quod in tanta tam precipiti digitorum rapacitate musica seriatim proportio et arte per omnia indemni inter crispatoe modulos, organaque multipliciter intricata, tam suavi velocitate, tam impari paritate, tam discordi concordia consona redditur et completetur melodia.*

forth the praises or dispraises of men ; and none dared displease him, for fear to run into reproach, and be made infamous in the mouths of all men." Spenser caused their poems to be translated ; and he confesses that "they surely savored of sweet wit and good invention, but skilled not of the goodly ornaments of poetry ; yet were they sprinkled with some pretty flowers of their natural device which gave good grace and comeliness unto them." In other respects, the author of the "Faery Queen" is not so eulogistic of his brother poets. "They seldom," he adds, "choose unto themselves the doings of good men for the arguments of their poems, but whomsoever they found to be most licentious of life, most bold and lawless in his doings, most dangerous and desperate in all parts of disobedience and rebellious daring, him they set up and glorify in their rithms, him they praise to the people, and to young men make an example to follow." This character the bard continued to preserve for some time after the wars of Elizabeth's reign, but as the power of the old Irish families was broken, the glories of the bard faded away and became gradually extinct. Like the ivy, however, that continues green after the oak that supported it has lost life and sap, the bard survived for awhile the ruin of the families whose favourite he had been. We find him lingering on until the eighteenth century, when Carolan, the last of his order, flourished. With him, the only link connecting the ancient usages of Ireland with modern time, may be said to have passed away ; and it is pleasing to add, that both as a poet and a musician the last Irish bard was not unworthy of the race from which he was descended.

Upon the whole, the state of Ireland, when the English crossed the sea to seize upon the island, must be held to have been, in all the essential points of government, as well as in its civil and religious institutions, of a kind to render either greatness or happiness unattainable by the people, and a successful resistance to the invader impossible on the part of their pentarchy. The number of those eo-ordinate kings,*

* These different kingdoms, each ruled by its petty sovereign, will pre-

the absolute power of each, the dependence of the church upon their arbitrary will, the law of tanistry, which, as soon as a carfinny or chief was adopted by the popular voice, set up in the tanist elect, a rival panting to succeed, and therefore prompt to depose, the ruling authority; the Brehon law of gavelkind promulgating the doctrine of a community of property, but leaving the application of the rule to the strong hand of power—these laws and customs tended to keep some of the worst passions of human nature constantly in a state of excited action, to unsettle the best relations of kindred and property, and to involve all men and all things in the incessant swell and turmoil of apprehension, violence, and change.

It is as a consequence of this defective constitution of things—a constitution rife with the elements of internal division and national weakness,—and not through any want of bravery or strength in the great body of the people, that we find the Danes settled, when the English arrived, in the best parts of the island, and possessed of civil and religious powers and immunities, which the Irish resented, but could not refuse. The tenacity with which, under every change of cir-

bably suggest doubts to many readers of the validity of the pretensions to a high state of civilization in remote ages so minutely and complacently described by the Irish annalists. It might, perhaps, be contended that the same reasoning would also lead us to deny the claims to a high antiquity set up by the same authorities. But the second conclusion would not be equally legitimate with the first. Society may continue to subsist under very simple modifications and the rudest forms of government for an unlimited period. The inhabitants of a country are not necessarily shown to be new as a nation, and to possess no title to ancient descent, when their manners of life and mode of government are found to be wholly inartificial. But the case is altered when the question of refined civilization is raised. Of that the form of government and the character of the institutions of a country afford a fair and decisive test. All the accounts transmitted to us of the origin of nations impress upon the mind a belief that principalities constituted one of the earliest conditions in which mankind were brought under control, and rendered submissive to authority. At first, the principality, in point of fact, was little more than a natural extension of the rule of a father over his family. The number of principalities in a country may, therefore, be properly referred to as so many proofs that the people amongst whom they are found, although not therefore necessarily new, have at least profited but little by the general history of the human species, and the progress of civil institutions in realms beyond their own.

cumstances, those hardy pirates clung to the sea-ports, and retained a potent interest in Ireland, is one amongst the many curious incidents in the history of the country. Even Brian Boroim, famous for his victory over them at Clontarf, A.D. 1014, did not succeed in ejecting them from their old positions. Peter Walsh,* who wrote his "Prospect of Ireland" upon the authority of Gratianus Lucius and Keating, two very decided members of the patriotic school of authors, bears direct testimony to this fact. Separate lands appear to have been reserved as the territory of the Ostmen, who were ruled over by their own princes, and so far differed from the Irish church as to send their bishops to England for consecration. Important rights and privileges these, which it is not reasonable to suppose that the Irish would have granted if they could have withheld. The English found it prudent to ratify and continue them ; but ere long the Danes ceased to appear as a distinct race in Ireland.

* "About the end of Brian Boraimh's reign the kingdom of Ireland being all over in peace, and flourishing with all earthly blessings under him, and no more Danes in the land, but such a certain number of artificers, handcraftsmen and merchants in Dublin, Wexford, Waterford, Cork and Limerick, as he thought and knew could be mastered at any time if they should rebel."—*Prospect of Ireland*, vol. i. p. 347.

CHAPTER III.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION WITH ENGLAND.

THE INVASION. — PROPERLY SPEAKING, NO SUCH THING AS A GOVERNMENT IN IRELAND FOR SUCCESSIVE CENTURIES.—ENGLISH BARONS AND IRISH CHIEFS FOUGHT FOR ASCENDANCY, AND BOTH UNITED AGAINST THE CROWN WHENEVER IT INTERFERED TO REDUCE THEM TO ORDER OR SUBMISSION.—THE CHURCH OF ROME AND THE IRISH CLERGY ABANDONED THE PEOPLE IN THEIR STRUGGLE WITH THE INVADERS.—SAVAGE CRUELTIES OF BOTH ENGLISH AND IRISH.—STRONGBOW, FITZSTEPHEN, FITZGERALD, RAYMOND LE GROS, HENRY II., JOHN.—INJURIOUS DISTRIBUTION OF THE COUNTIES BY HENRY II., AND AGAIN BY JOHN, TO THEIR FOLLOWERS, WHOSE POSSESSIONS AND PRIVILEGES WERE INCOMPATIBLE WITH GOOD GOVERNMENT.

ALMOST all authors who have hitherto written the History of Ireland, have fallen into a common error. Because the History of England relates, in books and chapters, divided according to the successive reigns of the kings who ascended the throne, the acts performed, and the occurrences evolved while they were in power, it has been assumed that a corresponding distribution of events, and a constant recognition of the same governing rule of action, are to be observed with propriety in narrating the affairs of Ireland. But there is this radical difference between the cases of the two countries ;—in the one the king did reign and govern—in the other he did not. The facts themselves, and their spirit also, are completely falsified, when the history of Ireland is represented as a history of the administrations of the various sovereigns who held, for centuries together, the parchment titles of lords and kings of Ireland. The letter of the law, it is true, gave the right of sovereignty, and vindicated its assertion ; but the right, however formally set up, was long not really enjoyed. For generation

after generation, the kingly authority in Ireland, like the effigy in the sister country, which was placed by way of ornament upon the coffin of the deceased monarch, when his body lay in state, was no more than the unsubstantial type of nominal greatness, and the emblem of a power that no longer existed.

This first misconception as to the true materials and proper mode of treating Irish history, has, up to a very recent period, led to a long maze of error and confusion. Setting out with a false guide, and mistaking an hypothesis for a principle, writer after writer has gone blindly forward, and never fallen upon the right path. That there was no one, during the long interval comprised by the ages which have passed from the invasion to the present time, clear-sighted enough to penetrate the truth, is not to be supposed; but truth, when particularly disagreeable, is generally either suppressed altogether, or so mystified and distorted as not to be easily recognized. For an uninterrupted series of centuries, a correct narrative of Irish affairs would have detracted from the reputation of the monarch, and offended the pride of a great people: on that account no such narrative was presented by popular English writers.* During

* This general remark is not to be received without special limitations. The Baron Finglas, Sir J. Daves, and even Spencer,—but particularly Sir John,—bore memorable testimony to the true state of Ireland, and laid bare, with considerable ability, many pregnant causes of its misgovernment and distress. It may be doubted, however, whether their works were as well known as they deserved to be; and it is certain that they produced no immediate effect. Hume, who, however fairly he may be found fault with for inaccuracy of detail and occasional partiality, possessed extraordinary powers of comprehension and judgment as a political writer—taking, in all his views, the widest range of observation, and deriving from it inexpressibly correct and profound impressions—Hume unquestionably saw the history of Ireland in its true light; but he entertained an ill-concealed contempt for the subject, and evidently did not think it worth his while to develop it. In our own time, an admirable analysis of the legal history of Ireland has been drawn in a single chapter by the learned author of the "Constitutional History of England." Nor have the events of Irish history failed to meet with able modern authors: these have been correctly distributed, according to their true bearings, into correct epochs, by Doctor Cooke Taylor, in his "History of the Civil Wars of Ireland," a very meritorious little work, which condenses clearly the facts of Irish history, as they occurred, into a small compass. Later still, Mr. Moore, as observed in another note, has collected all the information that diligent research and patient criticism could bring forward to throw light upon the history of his country.

by far the greater portion of the period referred to, any man bold enough to assert that the king did not really govern Ireland, would have been seized as a disloyal libeller, and mutilated on the pillory, if not gibbeted at Tyburn, or beheaded at the Tower. What, nevertheless, are the plain facts? From the invasion of Henry II. to the usurpation of Oliver Cromwell, it is impossible to distinguish any thing that deserves the name, or answered the purposes, of a government in Ireland. The English barons, who obtained land in the country, fought for superiority over the Irish kings and chieftains, or against each other, and held a barbaric supremacy, now one and now another, as numbers, extent of possessions, violence, and stratagem happened to favour their quarrels. Force of arms being their first and common title to their estates, they recognized no other means of strengthening or increasing the stake they enjoyed than the sword which had carved it out; and they were ever ready to turn that weapon against the king their master, or each other, upon the slightest fear of injury, or the most distant hope of gain. Adventurer followed adventurer upon the teeming field of Irish attack and spoliation; and each in his turn, as he seized his tract of land, set himself up to be what the original Irish chief had been—the master of life and death upon his own estate, and the possessor of despotic and, often, royal power.

For no less a period than 400 years, the invaders, alike unable to reduce the native chiefs to submission, or to compose their own jealousies, continued to maintain a brutal warfare for the division of the plunder which it was impiously pretended that God and the church had given to their arms. The long reign of Elizabeth favoured the royal authority in an eminent degree, by enabling that vigorous woman to prosecute a series of well-aimed measures for the subjugation of the country and its various potentates. At one time the irresistible force of stern perseverance, and an unscrupulous sacrifice of blood and money, seemed to have reduced all parties and factions, indigenous and immigrant, to a comparatively decent state of allegiance; but the success was transitory and unreal. Vast

interests were destroyed—potent families crushed—and peace prevailed, but it was the peace of desolation. A general civil war broke out in a few years afterwards, in which the Irish chieftain and the English baron fought side by side as confederated opponents of the royal authority. The horrors of all former conflicts and insurrections were again repeated in their most aggravated forms; for religion, which during successive centuries of incessant violence does not appear to have ever once exercised the benignant influence belonging to her character, in composing dissensions, stopping the effusion of blood, or in succouring law and justice, had now been introduced as a keen and active promoter of the general insubordination. To the hatred of hostile races, the fierce jealousy of rival modes of divine worship was superadded, and the strife that had been savage became henceforward demoniacal. At length Oliver Cromwell, after laying monarchy a headless trunk in the dust in England, threw himself upon Ireland, at the head of an army of disciplined fanatics; and finding few friends, supporters, or well-wishers in that country, rushed over its devoted surface with the destructive rage of a fiery scourge, and swept all before him into general ruin. To him, the native Irish and English settler—the Catholic and the Protestant—were alike hateful and hostile; and he gave them, one and all, up indifferently to the sword, casting their goods to the flames, and their lands to the despoiler, with an indiscriminating cruelty and hardened impartiality unparalleled in history.

Thus prostrated, the Irish party suffered much, but the old English party more: in point of fact, the rude, domineering sway of the barons never recovered the deadening shock which Cromwell dealt it. But though greatly humbled and enfeebled, they were still powerful enough to prevent a perfect re-establishment of the king's government upon the restoration of Charles II. From that time forward we find them indefatigably employed in retarding the slow approach to constitutional order, which they no longer dared to resist with open force. This conduct, in process of time, led to an obdurate system, devised and maintained by the great possessors of

land, against which the royal authority, and the growing influence of the constitution, proved equally unavailing. The aristocracy banded themselves into a faction, and succeeded in rendering the country still a means of greatness to themselves, and of weakness to the empire. In this proceeding, a refined use was made of the last element of mischief that had been thrown into the agitated sea of Irish discontent ; and for three centuries, religious animosities—not yet, unfortunately, altogether appeased—convulsed the land, and afforded the leading members of a few great families an opportunity, of which they availed themselves enormously, to turn the dissensions of the people against the peace and prosperity of the country, and secure to themselves all the power and patronage that were to be derived from "*managing it*"—(for such was the expression)—for the ministry in London.

Certain families were recognized as "*undertakers*." The Boyles or Beresfords, for instance, having considerable interest and influence, undertook the office of governing Ireland upon certain terms, which were always matter of arrangement with the English cabinet. Once the compact was entered into, the latter abandoned the administration to the undertakers, and gave themselves no further concern in the affairs of the country. The more the religious sects, in contending with each other, committed crimes and follies, the more the great aristocratic job prospered, and entailed afflicting consequences. Heavy was the punishment which Ireland was doomed to undergo as the penalty of religious dissension, excited by severe task-masters, who, studious only of their own gain, cared nothing, while that was secured, for the country itself. They were men who never once laboured to bring out—but, on the contrary, sought rather to depreciate and keep down—the national interests. They perceived, that according to the degrees in which they suppressed and extinguished the rights and privileges to which the constitution gave a title, they retained more facile and resistless instruments of personal emolument and family aggrandisement. Thus, while the penal law prevented the Catholic from holding land, the commercial law

would not permit even the Protestant to trade abroad. On the same iniquitous principle, sharp restrictions and impolitic regulations were imposed upon manufactures and internal commerce, by which all ranks, sects, and interests were injured and depressed in common. In this way the grossest wrongs were accumulated upon the country, from which at last relief crept tardily in, as the administration of the central government and the legitimate influence of the British constitution began to penetrate the country, and extend itself equally into all places and amongst all classes. Of that great and generous work, desired for centuries, commenced many years ago, now far advanced, but as yet uncompleted, it is gratifying to know, that broad as is the line of demarcation between the two great parties into which politics have divided the statesmen and people of these dominions, each has nevertheless, of late years, contributed in a conspicuous manner its share of service towards the consummation which, it is to be hoped, we are, however tardily, at last approaching. In placing the Roman Catholics upon a constitutional level with their fellow-subjects in the other parts of the empire, the leaders and ornaments of both parties appeared so nearly agreed in the main principles upon which Ireland should be governed, that there is now little more required than a steady, moderate, and impartial application of the equal laws which all concur in thinking should be in force, to insure to Ireland the possession and profitable enjoyment of every advantage to which nature, circumstances, or their own energies can entitle, adapt, or advance her inhabitants.

That this happy condition might have been attained with ease ere now, can hardly be denied; for the causes which have stood in the way, and prevented its accomplishment, might at any time have been soon found, if they had been seriously sought for. They lie at the surface, and meet the eye upon a slight inspection of the ground. They are the last lingering remains of a system which no statesman will venture publicly to defend, though some do not scruple privately to uphold. To show how they come to be continued, it is necessary to

relate how they sprang up, and grew strong. They are the direct products of the peculiar form of misgovernment under which Ireland has suffered. They are to be deduced, with logical precision, from their premises ; and thus a short abstract and review of the history of Ireland becomes here unavoidable. According to the sense in which that history is read, will the actual state of the country be well or ill apprehended. He who understands the true nature of the policy upon which it has been governed, will perceive the reality of the effects it is the object of these pages to expose ; and he only will be qualified to judge with clearness and impartiality of the improvements most imperatively required, and, most essential of all, of the measures which we should be most careful never to reproduce.

We proceed to show then, that the history of Ireland is, in the main, the history of a few great families, originally holding independent principalities of a feudal character, rivalling each other in the extension of their extravagant immunities and unbounded possessions ; and as these were in the lapse of time wrested with difficulty from them, still forging bolts and barriers for the preservation of their power and ascendancy under a new form. By these men were the pits and channels dug into which the tide of Irish events was precipitated for ages ; and so strong and turbulent was the current, while choked as well as directed by their contrivance, that though broken in its course, and dispersed into many different streams, it absorbed and confounded, now in one torrent and now in another, the various fortunes of the first proprietors, and the fate of the country they strove to make their own.

While surveying this wild scene, another image forces itself strongly upon the mind. We are not only struck by the bold and irregular features of the landscape, but observe that the plan, as it were, of a fit mansion to crown it, and form the proper inducement to its reclamation, was formed at an early period. We mark the site chosen, the ground dug for the foundations, the scaffolding raised, and various materials of the best description brought abundantly together for the work. Yet after

the lapse of ages, no building appears : something of the plan has been preserved, and the scaffolding is still standing ; but further progress has not been made. During all this long interval, however, architects without number or interruption have been employed ; and one has varied the plan—another put up a shed : now an effort has been hastily made to construct one detached portion, and now another, as a favourable opportunity invited, or the pressure of circumstances demanded ; and around this irregular, incomplete, and unsightly piece of patchwork, the old scaffolding rotting into ruins is still to be traced, marking in its ruined outline how stately and perfect was the edifice contemplated by the original plan, and encouraged by the local circumstances.

The invasion of Ireland, like the siege of Troy, seems to have been intimately connected with an affair of gallantry. The story is characteristic : Dermot Mac Murrogh, a man powerful both as to extent of possession and personal qualities, who swayed the broad domains reaching from Dublin to Wexford southward and westward, as far as the bounds of Limerick, with the title of King of Leinster, fell in love with Dervorgal, the young and lovely wife of O'Rorke, an aged prince who governed Breffny (now Leitrim). Dermot appears to have been that description of person not unfrequently considered pleasing to the fair. He had a good figure, great bodily strength, was brave and boastful, and a favourite with the lower orders and the clergy, whose regard he conciliated by profuse liberality. Cambrensis,* who knew him, describes him

* The first account of the English invasion was written by Gerald Barry, a Welsh priest, who, after the fashion of his own and a later age, is generally known and quoted by the name of Giraldus Cambrensis. He was related to the Fitzgeralds, and visited Ireland twice,—once, out of curiosity, in 1171, in their company ; and afterwards as preceptor to John, when created, by his father, lord of Ireland. Altogether he spent eighteen months in the country, employing a friend, Bertrand, when he left it, to collect information for six months after. He occupied five years in writing five books, of which, when published, he confessed himself inordinately vain, anticipating from them fame throughout all ages.

“Ore legar populi, perque omnia secula, fama,
Si quid habent veri vatum præsidia, vivam.

As soon as they were completed he repaired to Oxford, and imitating

thus :—"Dermod was a man of tall stature and great body ; a valiant and bold warrior in his nation ; by constantly hallooing and crying out, his voice had become hoarse ; he chose to be feared rather than loved ; oppressed his nobility greatly, but greatly supported and advanced the poor and weak. To his own kindred he was rough and grievous, and hateful to strangers ; he would be against all men, and all men were against him." According to the manuscript in the library of Lambeth Palace,—hitherto, but no longer unanimously, ascribed to his secretary O'Regan,—he had invaded O'Neil in the North, Mac Colman in Meath, O'Carroll and O'Rorke in Breffny. From the three first he took hostages ; from O'Rorke, alone, he and his men suffered a defeat ; so that while he wooed the wife, he had cause to hate the husband. Having once entertained this passion, he appears to have been neither slow nor scrupulous in finding means to gratify it. He pursued his love so fervently, by letters and messengers, that in the end Dervorgal sent him word that she was willing to yield, and appointed a time and place at which she would be found. Dermod accordingly assembled his forces, and falling upon O'Rorke's territory during his temporary absence, carried off his wife. After spoiling the country, he returned to his

the style of the classical authors of Greece, he read the five books aloud in a formal meeting of the sitting, continued for three successive days, of the Faculties and the public. On each day he gave a grand entertainment,—the first was devoted to the public generally ; the second to the doctors, professors, and principal scholars ; the third to the scholars, military, and burgesses. Irish writers have covered this work with indignant censures, but it condemns itself ; the ignorance it displays, as that the Shannon empties itself northwards into the sea, and the fables with which it abounds, are such as no man of sense and reflection could put upon paper. The author himself gave the finishing touch to its fate, by publishing before his death a series of retractions. All this is commented upon with refined severity by the Abbé Mac Geoghan. Nevertheless, admitting the greater part of what has been urged against him to be true,—admitting moreover that he abounds in fables, ignorant mistakes, and strong prejudices,—there will still be found much in Cambrensis well deserving our notice. He knew most of the leading men embarked in the enterprise personally ; he witnessed many important events ; his description of the state of the country and its institutions is in many respects full of instruction ; and upon the whole, in the dearth of cotemporary authorities, he would be a self-sufficient writer who would altogether reject so direct a witness as the old priest of St. David's.

capital, Ferns, crowned with victory and love,* in both of which he rioted undisturbed. But O'Rorke was not disposed to bear his wrongs tamely. He addressed himself to Turloch O'Connor, the sovereign monarch, and complaining, full of grief and rage, of the wrong done to him, and the scorn that followed it, entreated help and vengeance. O'Connor favoured the suit ; and Mac Murrogh was compelled to restore the frail wife, and make compensation for his violence.

So far all was well ; but as peace never prevailed for any length of time, Dermot soon found himself congenially mixed up in new hostilities, from which, in the first instance, he derived considerable advantages. The sovereign king, Turloch O'Connor, died, and was succeeded by O'Lachlan, head of a rival family, whose partisans were immediately rewarded with large accessions to their territories. Amongst these, Mac Murrogh was especially favoured. Ossory, Meath, Dublin, Wicklow, Carlow and Wexford were declared to be his permanent dominions ; and he was preparing to attack O'Rorke afresh, and regain Dervorgal, when one of those revolting acts of mixed cruelty and treachery so characteristic of the period turned the odds entirely against his party, and led to unexpected reverses. O'Lachlan had ter-

* If Cambrensis is to be relied upon, our Irish Helen was of a very amorous temperament, and so warm as to be won with ease. She not only desired, but promoted the abduction, and "being fickle and inconstant as women always are," contrived to make herself an easy prey to the spoiler. "Rapta nimirum fuit, quia et rapui voluit. Et quoniam varium et mutabile semper foemina, ut prædoni præda fieret ipsa procuravit." The Regan account tallies with this :—she prayed him to come "so strongly that he might by force carry her away."

Apropos of abductions—the spirit of our Irish Helen does not seem to be altogether extinct. Amongst the witnesses examined before the Lord's Committee upon the State of Crime in Ireland, in 1839, was Mr. Tomkins Brew, a stipendiary magistrate, who stated, that reported abductions made a part of the crimes committed in Ireland, but that it is generally the girls that run away with the men. The girl, it appears, says to the man she fancies, "If you don't carry me off before such a day, Jack So-and-so will." Such evidently is the Cambrensis case of the Princess Dervorgal, who was "carried off, because she wished to be carried off." This witness added, that if he had permission, he could give a very laughable account of some of the abductions. We are not told whether this offer was accepted or not ; at any rate, no particulars of the proffered amusement have been made public by their lordships.

minated a quarrel with Dunlevy, prince of Ulad (now Down), by a formal treaty; notwithstanding which, he soon after seized upon the unfortunate man when unprepared for attack, threw him into prison, and there tore out his eyes. A host of chieftains, inflamed to vengeance by this savage outrage, flew to arms. O'Lachlan was slain in battle. His race became ingloriously extinct, and Roderic O'Connor assumed the chief sovereignty without a contest.

One of the first acts of the new monarch was to reward the attachment of the prince of Breffny, long the particular ally of his family, and an apprehensive observer of the recent enlargement of Mac Murrogh's dominions. In this operation, O'Connor met with cordial support from the immediate chiefs of the territories which O'Lachlan had added to the kingdom of Leinster. It is not to be supposed that much difficulty was experienced in prevailing upon these men to turn their forces against a superior for whom they cherished neither affection nor duty, and whose enlarged dominions were the spoil of their own domains. The odium in which Mac Murrogh's personal character had long been held, loosened from the bonds in which fear had restrained it, broke out with fatal effects. The combination against him seems to have been followed with universal success as soon as it was formed. The kings of Meath and Ossory, Hescuph Mac Turkill, the Danish prince of Dublin, and O'Byrne, head of the ruling sept in Wicklow—all Dermot's tributaries—were no sooner known to have united against him, than he found himself forsaken, not only by his other dependents, but also by his kinsmen, friends, and servants. Of this desperate condition, a distinct picture is suggested in the O'Regan manuscript, in which Mac Murrogh is described as taking horse to ride and speak to O'Byrne, as the only person likely to retain for him some feelings of regard and confidence. But the idea is quickly abandoned. Guilty and forlorn, he evidently feels that he is nowhere safe; and returning to Ferns, takes up his residence in the abbey there. He calls the abbot to his council, and procures him to write a letter to O'Byrne, soli-

citing a meeting. The letter is subscribed, and despatched by a monk. Mac Murrogh follows dejected and concealed. The monk discharges the trust imposed upon him so aptly that he finds O'Byrne at a wood-side, and places the letter in his hand. Mac Murrogh now shows himself; but the moment he is recognized O'Byrne menaces him to depart, or he will repent his visit; and the fallen monarch, hopeless of moving his irritated subject to succour or compassion, retires as he is bid. Despair, not unmixed with violent feelings of wanton revenge, now seized upon his mind. Fearing to be betrayed, and delivered up by his people to O'Connor, he resolves to abandon his country—sets fire to Ferns—and gathering the few followers, sixty in number, who remained faithful to him in these reverses, he flies with them and his secretary to the sea-side, and straight makes sail for Bristol. This was in the summer of 1167; and it is mentioned—as if to show how little the fugitive was respected, or rather how utterly he was repudiated by all classes of his subjects—that amongst the companions of his flight there was only one person of family or note. His name has been preserved,—it was Awliff O'Kennedy.

A man of Dermot's hot and overbearing nature ill brooked the loss of a kingdom and the inactivity of exile. He landed, with a ready scheme and prepared plan, resolved to solicit the aid of the king of England; and with that view left Bristol for Aquitaine, where Henry II. was then detained by the troubled state of his French possessions. For this step Dermot had several precedents: it was not an uncommon practice with the Irish monarchs, when defeated in the intestine wars they so frequently waged against each other, to fly abroad and induce foreigners, who were known to aspire to the conquest of their country, to become the abettors of a new revolution for the recovery of their lost power. How far the feudal king of Leinster, when he took this step, was aware of some views entertained by the politic sovereign of the sister country, it is not easy to determine with accuracy. It is, nevertheless, certain that Henry's ambitious eyes had been for some time

keenly fixed upon Ireland, and that he had already taken preparatory measures, designed and executed with singular foresight and ability, for the annexation of that kingdom to his other extensive dominions.

The nature and consequences of these measures do not appear to have attracted the attention their magnitude deserves. The comparative facility with which a few military adventurers obtained a footing in Ireland, which in a short time led to a general recognition of the English sovereign, is not less surprising than the difficulty which they afterwards experienced in turning their first advantages, so promptly obtained, into a substantial property. It did not occupy more than three years to carry out Henry's claim to the kingdom of Ireland, but it required more than four centuries to perfect the title. The solution of this problem is mainly to be found in the reluctance of the Irish clergy to support their falling countrymen, when resisting the English crown. Henry took his first title from the Pope; the Irish bishops and priests bowed to the head of their church, and for a length of time stood against the people in the disastrous contest that followed. Had it been otherwise—had the zeal of the national church and the influence of religion been brought to bear against the invaders—the victory, in all probability, would have been decided as it has been in almost every other instance in which those great auxiliaries have been heartily enlisted. As it was, the part taken by the Pope and the Irish hierarchy* in the

* Take, as proof of the effect produced upon the clergy by the Pope's interference, the conduct of Lawrence O'Toole, archbishop of Dublin at the time of the invasion, and afterwards a canonized saint in the Calendar of the Roman Catholic Church. The efforts of this prelate in opposing the English were energetic, until the papal bulls were brought forward at the Synod of Cashel, when he submitted to their authority, acknowledged the title of the invader, and renounced further hostility to his pretensions. The great change thus wrought in Archbishop Lawrence is noticed by Mr. D'Alton—"Lives of the Archbishops of Dublin"—who relates that, "upon the first invasion of the Welsh adventurers, Lawrence adhered firmly to the independence of his country, and encouraged the inhabitants of Dublin to a vigorous defence against the invaders." Again, when Hesculph the Dane, whom the English had expelled from Dublin, arrived in its harbour with 30 ships and a numerous train to reassert his rights, the

invasion, determined to a marked extent the fortune of the enterprise. We are led to this conclusion by a few but very decisive facts which particularly challenge the attention of modern statesmen. If, at the period of the first connection formed between the two countries, the crown and the church combined sufficed to effect the subjugation of popular princes and a whole people,—it may well be worth while to consider what may be the consequences of the union at present subsisting between the hierarchy of that church and the great majority of the people who are still in communion with it; how far its bishops and priests, if they persevere in the course they have of late so energetically pursued, are likely to succeed in atoning for the indifference shown by their order to the liberties of their country centuries ago, by now applying all their influence to obtain, not merely its political regeneration, but its independence also.

The church of Ireland, celebrated at an early age for learning and the piety of its members, was one of the last Christian communities of the world that became dependent upon the see of Rome. It was not until the 12th century that an apostolic legate was known to exist in Ireland; and the earliest investiture of Irish bishops by the Pope's pall took place at the Synod of Kells in 1152. Henry, well acquainted with the temper and policy of the See of Rome, turned these events to his account with great sagacity. He commenced a negotiation at Rome, of which the basis was—that he should possess Ireland, and guarantee to the Pope that supremacy over the Irish church, and revenue from the Irish people, from which

archbishop, "considering that much national good might result from opposing the power of the new invaders by that of the old, became most zealous in his appeals to the native princes to promote Hesculph's project; and his devoted patriotism and the sanctity of his character gave great weight to his exhortations. The people rose in arms to his call, collected all their strength, surrounded Dublin by land, while the Dane occupied the harbour, and threatened the hitherto victorious Strongbow with total annihilation. * * * * Even Archbishop Lawrence communicated the inspiration of his character to this cause, and gliding amidst the ranks of war, animated the several septs of his countrymen to the assertion of their common liberties."—*Memoirs of the Archbishops of Dublin*, by John D'Alton, Esq., pp. 56, 57.

his Holiness had been hitherto excluded. The contract was concluded by a bull of Pope Adrian, an Englishman, in 1156, which was explicitly confirmed after the invasion by his successor, Pope Alexander III., in 1172. The language used in both these documents is full and peremptory. "There is, in sooth," says Adrian, "no doubt that Ireland, and every island upon which the Sun of Justice, Christ, hath shone, belong of right to St. Peter and the most holy Roman church, as your Highness also acknowledges; and therefore we the more willingly ingraft upon them a faithful plantation, and the seed agreeable to God, inasmuch as we foresee, upon internal examination, that the same will be more directly exacted of us. You have signified to us, dearest son in Christ, that it is your wish to enter upon the island of Ireland for the purpose of subduing the people there to law, and extirpating its nursery of vice, and that you wish to pay to blessed Peter the yearly pension of one penny for each house, and to preserve the rights of the churches of that land untouched and whole; we, therefore, following your pious and laudable desire with concurrent favour, and meeting your petition with a kind assent, hold it fit and agreeable, that for the purposes of extending the bounds of the church, &c. &c., you should enter upon that island, and pursue what shall be for the honour of God and the salvation of the country; and let the people receive you honourably, and obey you as their Lord," &c.

Alexander was even less reserved in his language:—"Following," he says, "in the steps of the venerable Pope Adrian, we ratify and confirm the grant he made you of the dominion of the kingdom of Ireland, saving to blessed Peter and the most holy church the annual pension of a penny from each house, in Ireland also as in England—so that by cleansing away the impurities of the land, that barbarous nation, considered Christian in name,* may through your dispensation improve

* "The decrees of the Synod of Cashel, convened for the purpose of carrying these bulls into execution, do not, according to Plowden, D'Alton, and others, bear out the heavy imputations cast upon the character of the Irish church; but seem rather to indicate that the real defects which the establishment was conceived to labour under, consisted not so

its morals, and its hitherto unformed church being brought into form, the people may by your means, for the future, gain the name of professing Christianity with effect."

This second bull was issued in 1172, after the preceding one had been acted upon, and when Henry was in armed occupation of the grant which they both conferred upon him. During the same year, the Irish clergy assembled solemnly together, and voted away their country to the invader, without a dissentient voice, upon no better authority than that furnished by these foreign instruments.

In this bargain and sale of Ireland, we are at a loss which to condemn most severely—the iniquity of the acts performed, or the hypocrisy of the persons performing them. That Henry, in appealing to the Pope, was moved by religious zeal, or conscientiously recognized the right to temporal power assumed by the successors of St. Peter, no well informed man will believe. The whole proceedings of his reign contradict the supposition. That the Pope consulted his own interest, and sought to secure an addition to the revenues and an increase of the patronage of his see of Rome, is evident upon the face of the facts; and that the Irish clergy were won over to sacrifice their country, and betray their lawful rulers, by a grant of tithes, which, though imposed in 1152, were now definitively

much in a want of purity of doctrine, or in laxity of discipline, as in the absence of as much power, and as many privileges, upon the part of the ecclesiastics, as their order had obtained in other countries. Several canons were established for the prevention of marriages within certain degrees of kindred, the more solemn administration of baptism, the due payment of parochial tithes, the immunity of church lands and of the clergy from secular exactions, the distribution of the property of deceased persons according to their wishes solemnly avowed before death, with a priest as a necessary witness, or an equitable division in case of no such avowal, the administration of the last rites to the dying, the regulation of burials, and the conformity of Divine service in Ireland to that in England; while it is very remarkable, that notwithstanding the great reform which the Irish nation required, not only were all the bishops and ecclesiastics who were present upon that occasion natives, with the exception of three,—Henry's immediate chaplain and advisers,—but it was actually not deemed necessary to make any canons at this synod relative to religious doctrine, or even the more essential points of discipline, and some of the decrees are evidently of a political, rather than a religious tendency."—*D'Alton's "Archbishops of Dublin," &c.* pp. 61 & 62.

awarded as their exclusive property, is an inference which every impartial reader must reluctantly draw from the positive character and indisputable authenticity of the circumstances.

Looking back upon the transaction, and examining its details, we are struck by its enormity in every point of view : it violated, in the most unscrupulous and unwarrantable manner, every obligation which religion holds sacred, and law venerable—libel and robbery are published in the gross against a whole nation—every man's land and property usurped and transferred to foreigners—and all under the sacred pretence of mending the morals of the people and the discipline of the church ! From first to last, there appears nothing in this business which is not utterly despicable ; unless, indeed, we should except the sagacious foresight and able management of the English monarch, by whose penetrating diplomacy the victory was half won before the time came for striking a blow to gain it.

Henry received the fugitive king of Leinster with courtesy, and relieved his present wants with money. He listened to the story he told of his wrongs, and having his own hands too full of other weighty matters to do anything himself, granted him the following letters patent :—" King Henry of England, Duke of Normandy and Aquitaine, and Earl of Anjou, unto all his subjects, Englishmen, Normans, Scots, and all other nations and people, being his subjects, sendeth greeting : Whencesoever these our letters patent shall come unto ye, know that we have received Dermot, prince of Leinster, into our protection, grace and favour ; wherefore, whosoever within our jurisdiction will aid and help him, our trusty subject, for the recovery of his land, let him be assured of our favour and license in that behalf." Upon receiving this document, the runaway took the oath of allegiance, and did homage to Henry as his liege lord. The letter, it is to be observed, recognizes him as prince, not as king, and claims him as a subject.

Dermot now made his way back to Bristol, where he caused the king's letter to be frequently shown in public, and offered liberal terms to all persons willing to espouse his cause. He

remained for some time without a prospect of success. At last, Richard, earl of Pembroke and Chepstow, better known by the more familiar name of Strongbow, began a negotiation with him, which ended in a compact, by the terms of which Dermod promised the Norman earl his daughter Eva in marriage, and the succession to his throne, provided he came over with sufficient force to secure the prize in the following spring.

Having concluded this agreement, Dermod left Bristol, and sought the mountainous coast of Wales as the fittest place for a secret embarkation. His means were probably exhausted, for Cambrensis describes him, with all the longing of impatient exile, “ languishing and lying for a passage, and comforting himself as well as he might—some time drawing in and breathing as it were the air of his country, which he seemed to snuff and smell, sometimes viewing and beholding his native hills, which on a fair day a man may easily descry.”

While lingering in this anxious state, and probably not without his doubts of Strongbow’s sincerity,—for the earl, a wary man who had already suffered Henry’s displeasure, appears all along to have regarded the letter of license as not altogether sufficient warrant for the proceedings taken upon it,—Dermod made a second engagement with other parties. He fell in at St. David’s with two half-brothers, Maurice Fitzgerald and Robert Fitzstephen, sons of the Lady Nesta, a Welsh princess of great beauty, but defective virtue, who, having been mistress to Henry I., became the wife of Gerald Lord Carew, and relapsing into the state of free love, cohabited with Stephen de Marisco or Maurice, constable of Cardigan Castle. To these brothers—Fitzgerald the legitimate son of Lord Carew, and Fitzstephen the bastard of Stephen Maurice—Dermod agreed to give the town of Wexford and two cantreds, or hundreds, of adjoining land, in fee, for ever, in consideration of their immediate aid in the recovery of his rights.

Having made these arrangements, he resolved to return and prepare for the reception of his new allies. “ Weary,” says the

Welsh chronicler, “of his exiled life and distressed estate, and therefore the more desirous to draw homewards for the recovery of his own, which he had so long travelled for and sought abroad, he first went to the church of St. David’s to make his orisons and prayers; and then, the weather being fair and wind good, he adventured the seas about the middle of August, and having a merry passage he shortly landed, and with a very impatient mind hazarded himself through the middle of his enemies; and coming safely to Ferns, he was very honourably received by the clergy there, who refreshed and relieved him according to their means. Dissembling his princely estate, he continued as a private man all that winter amongst them.” But in the spring of the next year, counting in all probability upon the promised aid from England, he broke from the obscure inactivity so uncongenial to his nature, and made a rash effort to regain his kingdom. The chief monarch Roderic, and his old enemy O’Rorke of Breffny, soon met him in the field, and reduced him once more to extremity. On this occasion, however, he dissembled, and submitting to the sovereign monarch in form, became his vassal, as he had become the vassal of Henry, and accepted of so mean a portion as ten cantreds of land, which were allowed him for his sustenance. Having thus succeeded in imposing upon his antagonists, and in retaining a footing in his kingdom, he awaited the arrival of the Welshmen with subdued anxiety; prepared to take up arms and break faith again, the moment they appeared in sight.

The inhabitants of Wales were early invaders of Ireland. Somewhere about the time of the birth of Christ, they are reported to have set fire to the celebrated Palace of Tara, and to have burned to death Con the Great, king of Ireland, who had then reigned 60 years. Some 250 years afterwards, Bein Brit, a prince of Wales, is said to have led an army of various nations to replace Mac Con of Ulster upon the throne from which he had been exiled. In this encounter a king of Connaught, and seven sons of the usurper, were slain. The Welsh made other predatory incursions in the 8th and 9th centuries,

and must therefore be held to have been well acquainted with the way to Ireland.*

The month of May, 1170, witnessed the last and most memorable invasion of Ireland from the shores of Wales. In that month, Fitzstephen set sail from St. David's Head, and making straight across the Channel, in all probability with the opposite coast all the time in view—effected a safe and quiet landing in the Bann, south of the town of Wexford. His force consisted of 30 gentlemen, his own connections, 60 men armed in mail, and 300 chosen archers, sailing in three small vessels. Fitzgerald does not appear to have been present on this occasion—and Strongbow, also absent, was represented by a broken down adventurer, Hervey de Montemarisco or Mountmaurice,† who is described by Cambrensis as a man unfortunate, unarmed, and without all furniture.

The sun was setting ominous of departing greatness, when the mailed invader descended upon the soft and fruitful soil of the barony of Forth. The next day Maurice of Prendergast, a lusty and hardy man, born about Milford, arrived in two vessels, with 10 gentlemen and 60 archers. Dermod soon heard the news, and was able to send his illegitimate son Donald Kavanagh with 500 men to welcome and support his friends. Soon after, according to Cambrensis, “he followed in person with great joy and gladness.” Military operations were begun without delay. They attacked Wexford, and

* The English had also made incursions into Ireland, and according to some writers had even effected settlements there, long before the period now referred to. Bede says, Egfrid, king of Northumberland, descended upon Ireland in 694. A charter of Edgar, dated Gloucester, 964, recites that the greater part of Ireland, including the most noble city of Dublin, had been conquered by that king. Reasonable doubts are entertained of the authenticity of this document. There is a coin of Ethelred II. in Trinity College, Dublin, which is stamped as if struck in that city; others of Edred, Canute, and one of King Edgar, have been found in Dublin, with the name of the minter, evidently Irish. But these are rather hints for speculation than historical evidences. A more worthy subject of critical investigation is afforded by M. Thierry, who intimates, that the project had been entertained by William the Conqueror, and that even in his time the Normans were invited to the enterprise.

† This name is variably spelt in the old writers and rolls as Montmarais—Montemarisco—and latterly Mountmorris;—for the sake of uniformity, it will in this sketch be written Mountmaurice.

were met at first with gallantry. 2000 fierce and unruly men rushed out, and fought so well, that for a whole day the assailants were unable to gain an advantage. In the evening, however, struck by the superiority of the enemy in armour and discipline, they set fire to the suburbs and withdrew into the city; while Fitzstephen, to show a superior determination, gave the ships in which he had arrived to the flames, and thus publicly rendered retreat impossible. With conquest or death as his only alternatives, he prepared to renew hostilities in the morning; but the clergy, either won over by Dermot, or perhaps not ignorant of the designs of the Pope, interfered, and recommended submission. Thus checked, the people lost heart, and the town was given up. Thus too, at the onset, we find the ecclesiastical power holding out a helping hand to the invader. Fitzstephen and Fitzgerald received the stipulated price of the victory, and Mountmaurice was liberally endowed with two cantreds of land along the sea-side, between Wexford and Waterford. A formal treaty of the surrender of the town was drawn up, and as it was signed, according to report, in the Abbey of Selsker, it was, in all likelihood, the work of the clergy.

The second fight between the English and Irish took place in Ossory, and was easily won. The mailed invaders are described by Cambrensis as seizing and throwing down the undisciplined and ill-armed natives, and chopping off their heads with the battle axe. 300 bleeding heads, he adds, were presented to Mac Murrogh after the slaughter, who, discovering in one the features of a man he hated, seized it in his mouth, and bit off the nose and lips.*

* This and other anecdotes of savage disposition upon the part of the Irish chieftains have been acrimoniously resented by some authors, who do not hesitate to pronounce Cambrensis an atrocious libeller; while others continue to relate them as if they believed them to be true. That the Welsh bishop is in every respect credible, no person who has read his wild romance will venture to assert—but that he is, on the other hand, never to be believed, is a proposition which it would be to the full as unreasonable to maintain. For the sake of humanity, every writer would naturally feel indisposed to rely upon an anecdote like this. At the same time, if we are to judge of what Dermot could do by what he certainly did, we can but pronounce him a man animated by a host of untamed carnal passions, which he was accustomed to indulge without restraint—reared and exer-

Not long after the victory of Wexford, a third reinforcement arrived to the invaders, under the command of Maurice Fitzgerald, which consisted of 10 gentlemen, 30 horsemen, and about 100 archers and foot soldiers. While the English were thus strengthening themselves, a good deal of negotiation seems to have been carried on between Mac Murrogh and O'Connor, the chief king, in which there is ground for presuming that the former was willing to break faith with his English friends, and rid himself of their presence, upon receiving a clear title to his kingdom of Leinster. To prove his sincerity, he placed his only legitimate son as a hostage in the hands of his enemy; but soon violating the compact, the youth, after having his eyes cruelly torn out, was cut off by an ignominious

cised in deeds of treachery and violence—suffering and inflicting acts of revolting cruelty—wild, sensual, dissolute, and unprincipled; in prosperity insolent, in adversity mean—prone to the extremes of cowardice and courage—and capable of profound dissimulation. It is this last trait in his character, more than any other, that makes the *Cambreensis* anecdote colourable; for it will be generally found, that consummate hypocrites are prone to excessive hatreds, and the most furious revenge. These are general reasons; but if we were without them, enough, and that undisputed, is related of the habitual cruelties practised by these rude kings and tyrant chieftains, to induce a supposition of their being capable of committing the wildest excesses of atrocious revengeful passion. How treacherously Lachlan, the sovereign of Ireland, tore out the eyes of the prince of Ulad, has been already related; and it must be added, that scarcely a single page of the uncouth annals of the period is clear of the record of some dark crime or faithless cruelty. Men seeing and doing acts of this kind—and hardened by a state of society in which the most exalted members were precisely those who could least count upon the last, the highest and best wish of the heart—the consolation of a quiet and religious death-bed—were naturally, in moments of extreme exasperation, and when their fierce natures were roused by circumstances of uncommon provocation, not unlikely to forget the limited reason they had, and disgrace humanity. The English reader, in particular, should not forget that the Irish were not singular in acts of ferocity. If Dermot shocks us, so does Henry—not, it is true, to the same extent, but still to one so positively savage, that we are only left to compare the degrees of barbarism which appropriately belong to the Irish and English sovereigns. The following is the character of Henry, found in the *Chronicles*:—"He was irascible beyond measure, and could not be approached in moments of passion without danger;—when in one of those paroxysms, he was more like a wild beast than a man; his eyes blood-shot, his face like fire, his tongue abusive and blasphemous, his hands most mischievous, striking and tearing whatever came in his way. On one occasion he flew at a page to pluck his eyes out, and the boy did not escape without being severely torn."

death. This event is supposed to be the subject of an old fresco still visible upon the walls of the abbey of Knockmoy, in the county of Galway.

Thus easily was the invasion established, while Strongbow remained in Wales afraid to commit himself by participating in the achievement. At length he went to Henry, and solicited permission to head his party. The monarch, wary and reserved, returned an evasive answer, which the chafed soldier ventured to interpret as his desires and the prayer of his petition suggested. Accordingly, early in 1170, he sent forward Raymond Fitzwilliam, who landed four miles from Waterford, with 10 gentlemen and 70 archers. Fitzwilliam was the son of William, Lord Carew, Fitzgerald's elder brother. He was a large fat man, and on that account surnamed Le Gros, which corrupted into Grace, gave the name to a numerous and powerful branch of his descendants in the county of Kilkenny. At the present day, the name remains—its higher honours and vast possessions have died away and past in smaller parcels into other hands. The original founder, Le Gros Fitzwilliam, was a man of superior ability, an excellent soldier, and not without talent as a statesman. Strongbow has always enjoyed the reputation of having been the chief of the expedition; but it is felt that Fitzwilliam was his readiest adviser in all emergencies, and that being equally efficient in the council and in the field, he fully deserved the praise of Cambrensis, who styles him—"wise, moderate, and wary, nothing delicate in his fare nor choice in his apparel; having in him whatsoever appertained to a valiant soldier, but excelling in all things belonging to a good captain."

No sooner had this new party of English thrown up a small fort at Dundrone, or Dun-ile, where they are reported to have landed, than a tumultuous body of 3000 men, led by O'Fallon, prince of Decies, and O'Ryan of Idrone, poured from the city of Waterford to destroy them, and suffered an ignoble defeat. Fitzwilliam, having drawn his small force within the fort, let loose a herd of cattle, collected for their maintenance, which threw his assailants into such confusion that they fled

precipitately, leaving behind 500 dead and 70 prisoners. The latter were principal inhabitants of Waterford and were subjected to atrocious treatment. Cambrensis, no adverse witness on that side of the question, relates the fact, and adds, that "weary with killing," after the heat of the engagement had subsided and leisure for reflection and moderation had intervened, "the captives, like men condemned, were brought to the rocks, where their limbs having been first broken, they were cast headlong into the sea, and so drowned."

Such were some of the barbaric features of the first English invasion. They are so revolting, that every well-disposed writer would willingly avoid giving the pain their recital is calculated to inflict, by passing them over in silence; but their omission, if excusable on some grounds, is forbidden on others. The rude and sanguinary warfare exhibited in the Irish annals for a long series of centuries, demands our particular notice, because the faithless and cruel character it bore at the beginning, it preserved to the end. In the narrative we are startled over and over again with outbursts of vengeance and bloodshed, for which there often appears to have been no immediate provocation given. These are generally to be explained, and at times even to be extenuated, by reverting to similar deeds of violence committed against the offending party, and by reflecting how many of the rules of honourable war seem to have been shamefully violated, at the commencement of the struggle, by both the parties engaged in it.

At last the time arrived when the great author of the invasion was to appear in person upon the field. Waterford held out until September; but in the beginning of that month Strongbow mustered a superior force of 200 gentlemen and 1000 inferior fighting men, with whom he set sail from Milford Haven, and reached Ireland on the eve of the feast of St. Bartholomew, in the year 1170. "Strongbow," says Cambrensis, "was of a complexion somewhat sanguine and freckled. His eyes were grey, his countenance feminine, his voice small, his neck slender, but in most other points he was well formed

and tall. His temper was composed and even—neither elated by success, nor dejected by misfortunes ; in his manners he was frank and courteous ; what he could not acquire by force, he frequently obtained by his insinuating address. In peace he was more disposed to obey than to govern. His state and power were reserved for the camp, but were always upheld by a certain dignity of manner. He was diffident of his own judgment, and cautious of proposing plans of operations, but in executing those of others he was always undaunted and full of energy. In battle his person was the standard upon which his soldiers fixed their eyes, and by his motions they were decided to advance or retreat."

Le Gros Fitzwilliam joined his leader in the morning, and being named commander of the attacking force, by common consent, the city was invested without delay, and carried, notwithstanding a brave resistance upon the part of the inhabitants, who were aided by a body of Ostmen, the descendants of a Danish colony long settled amongst them, and led on this occasion by Reginald, who bore the title of Prince, and gave his name to the tower still standing on the city quay. Again the English disgraced their victory by a horrid carnage. "They entered into the city," says their own historian, "and killed the people without pity or mercy, leaving them lying in great heaps ; and thus, with bloody hands, they obtained a bloody victory."

While this scene of ruin was proceeding, Fitzgerald, Fitzstephen, and Mac Murrogh arrived. The latter brought his daughter with him ; and the nuptials of Strongbow and Eva were celebrated with uncouth pomp in the midst of slaughter and destruction. After Waterford, Dublin fell ; and so nearly in the same manner, that a particular account of its reduction is unnecessary. The Danes and the Irish here again combined their strength to no purpose. The latter, who were led by their own prince, Hesculph Mac Turkill, who also claimed the city by right of conquest, made a brave effort to repossess themselves of it ; but they were unsuccessful, and their prince being made prisoner and executed as a pirate, the metropolis of Ireland fell permanently into the possession of the English.

But where all this while was Roderic, the sovereign chief? Did the last Irish king make no effort worthy of the value of his native isle, the courage of his fellow countrymen, the supremacy of his rank, and the fame of the ancient line of crowned heads from which it was his boast to have descended? Alas, none! Roderic O'Connor seems to have been a prince of no greatness. When Dermod and the English, emboldened by the capture of Waterford, marched against Dublin, he assembled a numerous army to repel them at Clondalkin, but either wanted the spirit or the authority to prevent them from dispersing without an engagement. It is now vain to inquire whether he was unable or unwilling to meet the invaders in battle. He failed to fight, then tried to negotiate, and proved equally powerless in the cabinet and the field. He made Dermod the most splendid offers, and because they were not accepted, ordered the hostages given before the arrival of the English to be beheaded. The sentence was carried into execution, and amongst the sufferers, as already mentioned, was Dermod's son.

Other influences united soon after to prevent a kingdom from being lost without a single strong blow being struck to save it. There is one passage in the progress of the invasion marked in some degree with the interest and dignity which befit a national conquest; and we see at the head of it, not Roderic, king of Ireland, but Hesculph the Dane, and the church. Roderic was with them, it is true, but by no means proved the hero of the confederacy. The church, for once, proved the master spirit of determined opposition to the English. From that potent source the spirit was breathed which gave this effort superior influence and effect. The moment was opportune and cheering in the highest degree. Henry II., amazed at the progress made by a handful of adventurous soldiers in conquering a kingdom for themselves, had ordered them to return home, and the order had been disobeyed; Le Gros Fitzwilliam was at his court, vainly soliciting indulgence; Strongbow was in Dublin, destitute of supplies and in the lowest state of dejection; Fitzstephen, yielding to the entreaties of his leader, had sent forward succour he could ill

spare while fast besieged at Castle Carrig in Wexford. Then it was that Lawrence O'Toole, archbishop of Dublin, came forward and aroused his countrymen to make an effort worthy of the prize at stake, and to throw off the English yoke. He flew from province to province, entreating, exhorting, and commanding chieftains, clergy, and soldiers to avail themselves of the opportunity, and drive forth the common enemy. The appeal was answered with enthusiasm; a numerous army poured upon Dublin from all parts of the country, and Roderic O'Connor for once found himself at the head of a force befitting a monarch. This overwhelming muster seems to have awed Strongbow. He procured the intervention of the archbishop, and offered to capitulate and become the vassal of the Irish sovereign. But Roderic, as rash in prosperity as he was weak in adversity, refused to treat unless they would bind themselves to leave the country; and the latter, driven to despair by circumstances, resolved to surprise the enemy's camp by a sudden sally, which was triumphantly successful. Roderic and his troops fled in dismay, the Danes betook themselves to their fleet, and the invaders were released from the only formidable combination hitherto arrayed against them. Had the church repeated such exertions, the enterprise against Ireland might have had a different issue from that we have here to describe.

While Roderic was thus sinking into insignificance, Dermod was removed altogether from the scene of the troubles he had occasioned. He had admitted various proposals from Roderic, and is said to have assented to a proposition for turning out his new allies, and reigning again as king of Leinster, with enlarged dominions. But the progress of his fortune soon became too marked, and the inefficiency of his native sovereign too manifest, to admit of moderate views upon his part. He ultimately rejected all appeals and offers, and boldly announced that he would not stop his course until he became chief king of Ireland himself. But his race was run: a loathsome disease attacked him; he retired to his palace at Ferns, where he had founded an abbey

upon returning from England, by way of atonement for having fired the town when he fled from it in 1166; and there he died obscurely, in May, 1171. Having sacrificed his only son as already narrated, we lose sight of his name and family in the subsequent conflict. He was buried in the abbey, of which the ruins still exist, and the charter is preserved in the "Monasticon Anglicanum." It is a document of some interest: the bishops of Lismore, Leighlin, Ferns, Ossory, Kildare and Glendalough, together with the abbot of the last-mentioned place, were the attesting witnesses. The endowment was for Canons Regular of the order of St. Augustin, and various lands and tithes are specified which were assigned for its maintenance. A more ancient establishment is said to have existed on the same site—at any rate, Ferns appears to have been a place of considerable ecclesiastical power, and an episcopal residence from remote ages, as well as the capital of King Dermot Mac Murrogh, the first instigator, though not the principal instrument, in subverting the independence of Ireland.

The title of King of Leinster was now assumed by Strongbow in right of his wife. He took possession of Ferns, the capital of the province—indulged a regal state, and dispensed honours, rewards, and punishments at his pleasure. But at the moment his ambition was most highly gratified, it received a shock which threatened to overthrow all his past fortune. Henry II., ill pleased to witness the rapid progress of the invasion under circumstances so completely independent of the royal authority, issued a proclamation in which he forbade the sailing of any more ships or men to Ireland, and ordered all his subjects in that country to return home forthwith. This placed the invaders in a critical position: after giving the emergency their best consideration, they despatched Fitzwilliam le Gros to Henry, who was in Aquitaine, with letters pleading his permission for what they had done, and submitting themselves and their acquisitions humbly to his disposal. The monarch at first refused to see the emissary; and when he did admit him to his presence, continued obstinately bent upon enforcing the return of the adventurers. Strong-

bow despatched a second mediator, in the person of Hervey de Montmaurice. Henry, who seems to have come from France for the express purpose of paying serious attention to the state of Ireland, vouchsafed no further reply than that Strongbow should attend him in person. The latter lost no time in obeying this mandate, and arriving at Newnham in Gloucestershire, where Henry then resided, was at first denied an audience. The prudent sovereign and his successful soldier, however, soon came to an understanding. It was agreed between them that Dublin and all the conquered country should be given up to Henry, while Strongbow should retain the possessions he had acquired by his wife, as a subject of the crown of England.

No sooner were the terms settled, than Henry levied a scutage* throughout England, and with Strongbow and a swelling troop of other nobles and barons in his suite, 400 knights, and 4000 soldiers, set sail for Ireland in a numerous fleet collected for the purpose, and amounting to 400 sail. He landed near Waterford, October 18, 1171, and both his reception and progress were as peaceful and prosperous as his warmest wishes could have desired. At the very beginning a favourable opportunity prompted him to make one of those politic displays for which temper and habit well qualified him. Fitzstephen, the first invader, had been surprised into a capitulation, and was led before his sovereign in chains by the Ostmen and natives of Waterford. Henry received the fettered soldier with an air of haughty displeasure, and committed him a close prisoner to Reginald's Tower. He was kept in confinement while another act of the drama was in a course of performance. On the very day of his arrival, Strongbow surrendered Dublin and Waterford, and did homage for his own possessions. On the next, Macarty, prince of Desmond, gave up Cork, and agreed to pay tribute for his principality. This example was followed by O'Brien of Thomond, O'Fallon of Decies, and Fitzpatrick of Ossory. Henry then visited Lismore and Cashel, the principal ecclesiastical

* The Somerset House Pipe Roll, 17 Hen. II., contains the actual levy.

tical establishments of the South of Ireland, and after ingratiating himself with the clergy, proceeded to Dublin, receiving on the way the homage of the Leinster chiefs. Amongst these was O'Rorke of Breffny, the nearest friend and strongest ally of O'Connor, the sovereign monarch, who also followed humbly in the wake of general obedience. Roderic did not appear before Henry in person—he refused to stir beyond the Shannon; but two knights being sent to command his submission, he swore allegiance, became tributary, and put in hostages for his fidelity. Christmas was now approaching; and Henry resolved to keep the festive season in Dublin, and entertain his own captains and the Irish chieftains. His liberal hospitality and the splendour he displayed, must have been dazzling to all ranks of his new subjects. There being no place in Dublin capacious enough for the purpose, a temporary building of large dimensions was run up, after the Irish fashion, with wattles and mud, upon the site of the present College Green. These rude materials were soon turned into a magnificent pavilion: the walls were hung with Flemish tapestry, and the tables served with massive ornaments of plate of curious and costly workmanship. “On this occasion,” says Cambrensis, “many and the most part of the princes of the land resorted to Dublin to see the king’s court; and when they beheld the great abundance of victuals and the noble services, as also the eating of cranes, which they much loathed, being not before accustomed to them, they wondered and marvelled; but in the end, receiving places by the king’s command, they partook of the feast.”

To confirm the dominion thus easily acquired, two councils were held; one lay, at Lismore, which, according to Matthew Paris, provided for the extension of the English laws into Ireland; and the other ecclesiastical, at Cashel, where the Irish clergy promulgated the statutes for the reform of the church, to which reference has already been made.

The statute passed at the Synod of Cashel is given by Geraldus Cambrensis, and has been confounded by many writers with the charters by which the Irish prelates signed and sealed away, to Henry and his heirs for ever, the dominion of their country, as conferred by the Pope; but the statute of

Cashel neither contains a clause granting the kingdom to Henry, nor one conceding to the Pope the penny pension on each house, or the investiture of bishops' palls, which are well known to have been the considerations allowed to the See of Rome for the boon given to the English king. The statute of Cashel recognizes his title distinctly—not, however, as a present gift, but as a past acquirement and settled possession. It opens by reciting that the triumphant Henry had obtained the island; and it concludes by affirming, that as Ireland, by the Divine destiny, had received from England her lord and sovereign, it was meet and just that she should further adopt from that country a better model of living than she had previously observed; and this the more particularly, inasmuch as the Irish church and kingdom stood indebted to that sovereign for whatever of the blessings of peace or increase of religion they had hitherto obtained. From this language it is clear that other documents must have preceded the Cashel statute, and that the Pope's bulls were confirmed by some preceding act. Matthew Paris, it will be remembered, says that there was a council at Lismore as well as at Cashel; but perhaps the account given in Roger Hovenden's Chronicle will lead us more readily to a correct idea of the order of these proceedings. Hovenden is brief; he gives nothing but bare facts, and there is an air of exactitude in the manner of his statement, much more truthlike and convincing than the flowing periods and ornate style of Cambrensis. In the Chronicle of the former we are informed that Henry stayed *fifteen* days at Waterford, and that the archbishops, bishops, and abbots of all Ireland came to him there, and received him as king and lord of Ireland, swearing fealty to him and his heirs, and giving charters of his perpetual right to reign over them. The names of the hierarchs of Ireland are then correctly set out; and we are informed that from Waterford Henry proceeded to Lismore, where he remained *two* days, and thence, according to some, he went to Cork and Limerick, and by all accounts from Cashel to Dublin.* *Afterwards he*

* It has been remarked, and apparently not without point, that both

sent Nicholas and Radcliffe to a synod at Cashel, on the affairs of the church. Here we have distinct proceedings at different places ; and perhaps, comparing the two accounts together, we shall not be much in error if we assume from them some such a probable succession of events as the following :—Henry's first care upon his arrival would naturally be to secure, from the church of Ireland, a confirmation of his grant from the See of Rome, and for Rome itself an acknowledgment of those rights, upon the assertion of which, in its intercourse with Christendom, it had always insisted with jealous pertinacity, but to which the church of Ireland had not as yet submitted. If the fifteen days spent at Waterford were not occupied in negotiating these important matters, we shall be at a loss to account for the long delay made in that city.* Supposing the preliminaries to have been settled at Waterford, the two days at Lismore would be devoted to the execution of the deeds, for which Lismore, being a place of considerable reputation as a seat of learning and ecclesiastical power, was peculiarly fitted, inasmuch as it was the fashion, because the necessity of the age, to test and deliver documents of moment in abbeys and churches. Having thus secured his own title-deed and the Pope's terms, he would report progress at Rome, and entitle himself to the Bull of Confirmation from Alexander III., which does not appear to have been specially called for on any other view we can take of the circumstances.

In reviewing these memorable events, it is impossible not to admire the address with which Henry conducted the whole

in the port at which Henry landed, and in most of the places he visited, the Danes possessed independent authority, and were more powerful than the Irish.

* If, on the other hand, fifteen days are considered too short a term for the conclusion of such weighty matters, it should be remembered that Henry's arrival was no sudden event ; on the contrary, that it was preceded by ample notice—that he stayed at St. David's for some time before he sailed, and there received embassies and tenders of submission from various persons in Ireland. The terms of the treaty between him and the clergy would thus have been opened in Wales, and the heads of the church called together to meet him at Waterford, where, according to Hovenden, they did assemble, and doubtless not without notice.

affair. As far as he was concerned, abilities of the highest order were displayed. Taking care to be no direct party to any deed of violence, and dexterously availing himself of the consequences of Strongbow's connection with Mac Murrogh, he presented himself to the unresisting leaders of the Irish nation with an imposing but pacific front, produced a title to the kingdom which was pronounced sacred by the highest authority in it, and without striking a blow—without once drawing his sword—was hailed, wherever he appeared, with devotion by the church, with wonder by the mass of the community, and apparent, if not real loyalty, by the nobility and kings. Had circumstances permitted him to bestow upon the preservation of the interests thus created, the same keen attention he had applied to their acquisition, there is little room to doubt that Ireland would have soon become an arm of great strength to the English monarchy.

But this consummation was not destined to be realised. Shrewd as Henry's intuition and diplomacy unquestionably were, they abounded with faults of the gravest kind. Severely and most selfishly ambitious, he was little scrupulous as to the course he pursued, or the means he adopted to gain any object from which he felt once assured that advantage would accrue to himself. His plan for effecting the complete reduction of Ireland was as subtle as his policy for its first acquisition, and both were equally removed from morality and honour. It was not expounded in ordinances or proclamations, but it is to be intelligibly traced in his proceedings. He accepted the submission of the Irish kings and princes,* and confirmed them in their possessions—but at the same time he made large grants of their territories to the adventurers in his train who were bold enough to seize tracts of land, and strong enough to hold them. The seeds of ever-growing strife between the Irish

* "But what is to be censured, and what at all hazards they were bound to refuse, was the violation of their faith to the Irish princes, in sharing among these insatiable barons their ancient territories, which, setting aside the wrong of the first invasion, were protected by their homage and submission, and sanctioned by positive conventions."—*Hallam's Constitutional History*, vol. iii. p. 468.

and English were thus sown—and no doubt intentionally. Henry foresaw that he was laying the foundations of inevitable confusion between the English barons and Irish chieftains; but he also knew that he alone could be ultimately referred to as umpire in the strife, and he hoped that he should find it easy to dictate to the belligerents on both sides when their strength should be exhausted. In all this, however, if he did not overcalculate his own powers, he at least mistook the course of events, and the ability as well as the resources of his successors.

Henry left Ireland on Easter Monday, 1172, and his disposition of the country, unregulated and unchecked as it afterwards was by his presiding sagacity, or by commensurate talent upon the part of his successors, laid the basis of a series of disasters that for ages seemed interminable. Unwilling to add to Strongbow's greatness, he placed Dublin and the government of Ireland in the joint hands of Hugh de Lacy as chief governor, and Robert Fitzstephen and Maurice Fitzgerald as coadjutors; distributing at the same time to these and other barons in his train, as feoffees, the territories they had already snatched or only coveted from the Irish. To Strongbow he gave Leinster—to John de Courcy, Ulster—to Fitzstephen, a broad district in Dublin—to him and Miles de Cogan, Cork—to De Lacy, Meath. All these grants were accompanied with uncommon powers. The policy of this proceeding was obvious; he set one grandee up as a counterpoise to the other, and threw upon each the danger and cost of retaining possession of his respective fee. Collision with the Irish was, under these circumstances, unavoidable. There was no territory thus awarded to an Englishman, of which the native prince, having done homage for it, did not consider himself lawfully possessed. Hence mutual animosities and reciprocal aggressions the moment Henry departed. These entered so essentially into the composition of his arrangement of Irish affairs, that it is difficult to suppose that they had not been foreseen; in all probability, they had been not only foreseen but designed, upon the presumption, as just remarked, that the royal arm,

when stretched forth, would prove strong enough to compose the distractions so naturally to be expected, under such circumstances, amongst its tributaries and dependents.

As it happened, however, Henry obtained, and his successors for ages enjoyed, nothing more than the nominal sovereignty of Ireland. The testimony of Sir J. Davies on this point is decisive : summing up the incidents and effect of this royal progress, he says:—" Being advertised of some stir raised by his unnatural sons in England, within five months after his arrival, he departed out of Ireland without striking one blow, or building one castle, or planting one garrison among the Irish ; neither left he behind him one true subject more than those he found there at his coming over, which were only the English adventurers spoken of before, who had gained the port-towns in Leinster and Munster, and possessed some scopes of land thereunto adjoining, partly by Strongbow's alliance with the lord of Leinster, and partly by plain invasion and conquest." The donation of the Pope, he further adds, and the submission of the Irish kings, were but poor assurances of a kingdom.

So little in point of fact did events arise, as Henry in the summit of his prosperity must have anticipated, that ere long he had neither leisure nor inclination to turn his thoughts to the good government of Ireland, in which he was moreover compelled to weaken rather than to strengthen his party. The rebellion of his sons endangered his French possessions, to which he was always strongly attached, and compelled him to summon Strongbow and a large force from Ireland. This was the signal for a general effort, upon the part of the natives, to throw off a yoke which was pressing them more closely and grinding them more sharply every day. Jealous feuds amongst the English barons added to this danger ; and Irish affairs fell into such a state of disorder, that Henry was obliged to send back Strongbow, armed with the authority of chief governor. An incursion, under Fitzwilliam le Gros, who was again made commander in chief, took place into the domains of Macarty of Desmond. Offaly and Lismore were ravaged ; and the victor sought the hand of Strongbow's sister,

named Basilia, as the reward of his success. This was refused; and Le Gros, throwing up his commission, retired indignantly to Wales. Hervey de Mountmaurice now became general in chief, and endeavoured to push the advantages gained by his predecessor further into Munster: but he was unequal to the task, though aided by Strongbow, who made a diversion in his favour from Dublin. O'Brien, king of Limerick, surprised a body of Ostmen at Thurles, and slaying 400, compelled Strongbow to shut himself up in Waterford. The news of this reverse spread rapidly through the country, and another confederacy of the southern kings and princes was formed for the total expulsion of the English. In this extremity Le Gros Fitzwilliam was invited back from Wales; and returning with 30 leaders of his own kindred, 100 horsemen, and 300 archers, all hardy and well appointed soldiers, he gained an opportune victory, and soon after the hand of Basilia, who brought him a large portion of land. So potent, however, were the combined Irish, that for some time the reunited English were unable to make any impression upon them. But soon falling out amongst themselves, the arms of the invaders were again triumphant, and the chief king, O'Connor, seeing Limerick in possession of Le Gros Fitzwilliam, entered into a separate treaty with Henry, by which, to secure the sovereignty of his province, he did homage anew, and bound himself to enforce a tribute to the English crown of every tenth merchantable hide of land from all parts of Ireland—those excepted, of which separate grants had been made by Henry to his English subjects. The following is the Treaty, from Rymer:—

"Hic est finis & concordia, quæ facta fuit apud Windeshoveres in octavis Sancti Michael anno ab Incarnatione Domini MCLXXV. inter dominum Regem Angliæ, H. filium Matillis Imperatricis & Rodericum Regem Connactensem per catholicum archiepiscopum Tuamensem & Cantordem abbatem Sancti Brandani & magistrum Laurentium cancellarium Regis Connactensis silicet.

"1. Quod H. Rex Angliæ concessit prædicto Roderico, ligio homini suo, Regi Connactas quandiu ei fideliter serviet quod sit Rex sub eo paratus ad servitium suum, sicut homo suus.

"2. Et quod terram suam ita teneat bene & in pace, sicut tenuit antequam dominus Rex Angliæ intraret Hiberniam reddendo ei tributum.

"3. Et totam aliam terram & habitatores terræ habeat sub se & justi-

ciet ut tributum Reg' Angl' integre persolvant, & per manum ejus, & sua jura sibi conservent.

" 4. Et illi qui modo tenent teneant in pace quamdiu permanserint in fidelitate Regis Angliae & ei fideliter & integre persolverint tributum, & alia jura sua, qui ei debent, per manum Regis Connacti ; salvo in omnibus jure et honore domini Regis Angliae & suo.

" 5. Et, si quis ex eis Regi Angliae & ei rebelles fuerint, & tributum, & alia jura Reg' Angl' per manum suam solvere noluerint, & a fidelitate Regis Angliae recesserint, ipse eos justiciet & amoveat.

" 6. Et, si eos per se justiciare non poterit, constabularius Regis Angliae, & familia sua de terrâ illâ juvabunt eum ad hoc faciendum, cum ab ipso fuerint requisiti, & ipsi viderint quod necesse fuerit.

" 7. Et propter hunc finem reddet prædictus Rex Connact' domino Regi Angliae tributum singulis annis ; scilicet de singulis 10 animalibus unum corium, placabile mercatoribus, tam de totâ terra suâ quam de aliâ : Excepto quod de terris illis, quas dominus Rex Angliae retinuit in dominio suo, & in dominio baronum suorum, nichil se intromittet.

" Silicet Duvelina cum omnibus pertinentiis suis :

" Et Raida cum omnibus pertinentiis suis, sicut unquam Murchat Vamailethaclin eam melius & plenius tenuit, aut aliqui qui de eo eam tenuerunt :

" Et exceptâ Vesefordiâ cum omnibus pertinentiis suis, scil' cum tota Legenia.

" Et exceptâ Waterfordiâ, cum tota terra illa quæ est a Waterford' usque ad Duncarvan ; ita quod Duncarvan sit cum omnibus pertinentiis suis infra terram illam.

" 8. Et, si Hibernenses, qui aufugerunt, redire voluerint ad terram baronum Regis Angliae, redeant in pace, reddendo tributum prædictum sicut alii reddunt, vel faciendo antiqua servitia, quæ facere solebant, pro terris suis ; & hoc sit in arbitrio & voluntate dominorum suorum.

" 9. Et, si aliqui redire noluerint, & domini eorum requisierint Regem Connactæ, ipse cogat eos redire ad terram suam, ut ibi remaneant & pacem habeant.

" 10. Et Rex Connactæ accipiat obsides ab omnibus, quos ei commisit dominus Regis Angliae, ad voluntatem domini Regis & suam.

" 11. Et ipse dabit obsides, ad voluntatem domini Regis Angliae, illos vel alios ; & ipsi servant domino Regi de canibus suis & avibus singulis annis de præsentis suis.

" Et nullum omnino de quacunque terra domini Regis sit, retinebunt contra voluntatem domini Regis & mandatum domini Regis.

" Testibus &c."

To show that the style and the lands also of the petty kings were formally admitted and continued, we may take from Sir J. Davies the Tower Rolls grant made so late as Henry III. to the king of Thomond.

" Rex regi Tosmond salutem : concessimus vobis terram Tosmond quam prius tenuistes per firmam centum et triginta marcarum tenundum de nobis, &c."

Peace being thus restored, the victors began to quarrel and intrigue amongst themselves ; the king was appealed to

—interfered—and it is especially worthy of remark, that in this, the first instance in which the royal authority was brought to bear upon Irish differences, it was completely foiled. The circumstances were briefly these. Hervey de Montmaurice, jealous of Le Gros Fitzwilliam, reported various stories of his ambition to Henry, whose suspicious and selfish policy was always quick to take alarm at the idea of great power centered in an individual subject. He lost no time in sending over a royal commission, consisting of four members, two of whom were to bring Raymond to England forthwith, while the others instituted an inquiry into Strongbow's administration : but no sooner had the commissioners arrived, than a report of a new insurrection in Limerick was spread. Raymond prepared to obey the king's commands with apparent alacrity, but the troops, hearing of his intention, refused to march without their general. The royal commission, in this dilemma, was dexterously turned into an instrument against the power from which it emanated. The commissioners were informed that the existence of the English interest in Ireland was at stake, and must be sacrificed if Raymond was removed and Strongbow molested. Alarmed at these representations, they abandoned the idea of bringing Raymond to England, and ordered him to proceed against the enemy. This command he cheerfully and successfully obeyed ; and thus the first attempt made to meddle with the barons in their management of Irish affairs, proved vain, and seems not to have been persisted in.

Injurious to themselves as the jealousies of the English were, the feuds of the Irish were still more fatal to their party. Young Macarty of Desmond rebelled against his father, and threw him into confinement. The old prince appealed to Le Gros, who, glad to receive the call, reinstated him in his possessions, and received as his reward a valuable grant of lands in Kerry. From these operations he was unexpectedly recalled by a letter from his wife, which quaintly stated that the tooth so long aching had at last fallen out. This was an enigmatical intimation of the death of Strong-

bow, who was buried with great pomp in Dublin, where Archbishop O'Toole performed his obsequies, and a tomb was erected to his memory, some disputed remains of which are still to be seen in Christ Church Cathedral.*

As he left no son, and his heirs were in England, Raymond undertook to act as his representative, and immediately repaired to Dublin, entrusting Limerick, which had just submitted in form to the slippery faith of its native prince. The council at Dublin, pending the king's pleasure, chose Le Gros, as chief governor. The preamble of a statute passed in the reign of Richard, and referred to by Leland, warrants the opinion that in exercising this privilege the council acted upon a special provision, made by Henry for the emergency that had now arisen. The appointment appears to have been the fittest that could have been made; and had it

* The Irish, prone to superstition, ascribed Strongbow's death without an heir, to the displeasure of Heaven at his wrongful invasion of their country. He had a son, however, an unworthy recreant, upon whom, if tradition tells the truth, he acted the austere part of a Brutus in Norman chivalry. The tragedy, according to the tenor of the events, was enacted previously to Henry's arrival, and when Strongbow was on his way through the barony of Idrone, to relieve Fitzstephen, who was closely hemmed in at Wexford. During the march, Strongbow was briskly assaulted by O'Ryan and his followers; but O'Ryan being slain by Nichol the Monk, who shot him with an arrow, the rest were easily scattered. It was here that Strongbow's only son, a youth about seventeen years old, frightened with the numbers and wild cries of the Irish, ran away from the battle, and made towards Dublin; but being informed of his father's victory, he joyfully came back to congratulate him. The unbending general, however, having first reproached him with cowardice, caused him to be immediately executed, by severing his body in the middle with a sword. Justly punishable with severity as cowardice must always be held by military men—it is impossible to contemplate this unnatural act of cruelty without abhorrence. The truth of the anecdote, as far as the youth's flight is concerned, seems to be confirmed by the reproachful epitaph on Strongbow and his son, in Christ Church, Dublin, which also seems to imply a sad end :—

“Nate ingrate, mihi pugnanti terga dedisti
Non mihi, sed genti, Regnoque terga dedisti.”

Ungrateful Son, while fighting—from me fled—
Nor only me, but King and Country fled.

The story seems to derive some confirmation from the appearance of the stone which is pointed out as the son's monument. It adjoins the figure said to be the earl's, and is a rude representation of the upper part of a small body, with the lower half cut off, and wanting.

been continued, the difficult task might perhaps have been performed, of keeping the insubordinate barons under due restraint, and confining the impatient Irish to the terms of the treaties they had reluctantly contracted. But Henry, whose caution seems always to have opposed the elevation of a man already powerful, sent over, as head of the unsettled adventurers, William Fitzadelm de Burg, a relative of his own, and the founder of the powerful family of Burke, now represented by Ulick, marquis of Clanricarde.

De Burg was met by the Irish clergy at Waterford, who conciliated his favour by fulminating the severest ecclesiastical censures against all who should impeach the Pope's grant of the kingdom, or resist Henry's authority. This ceremony performed, he made an inspection of the king's forts and cities, and was received throughout his progress with due honours. But he neither gained adherents, nor inspired respect. As soon as his back was turned each man continued to act in his own possessions as he pleased. He was exposed to the counteraction of two unfriendly bodies, the native Irish and the English settlers, and adopted a double line of conduct. He affected to court the former, while he strained his utmost authority to humble the pride and reduce the power of the latter, by assigning new lands to them, and compelling them to transfer their original possessions and privileges to his immediate followers. The Fitzgeralds, Le Gros Fitzwilliam, and Fitzstephen were deprived of their estates in this way. In the fresh set of adventurers thus favoured, was Fitzwalter de Boteler, the progenitor of one of the most celebrated families in the South of Ireland—the Butlers, dukes of Ormonde. Discontent and insurrection, the natural consequences of these proceedings, still prevailed, when De Courcy, one of the most disaffected, led off a party to conquer Ulster, of which he had some time previously received the grant. A predatory incursion was made, large tracts were invested, and forts erected. While this bold baron strove vigorously, but in vain, to erect another petty kingdom upon the destruction of the ancient dynasty of the O'Neils in the North, Murrogh O'Connor re-

belled against his aged father, Roderic, the chief king, and ere long invited Miles de Cogan to enter Connaught in arms. This attack, contrary, upon the part of the English to express treaty, and to nature upon the side of young O'Connor, met with the fate it deserved. The old monarch was successful, and the English being compelled to retreat, the usurping son was abandoned to the resentment of his fellow-countrymen, who put out his eyes.

“ Little good,” says Campion, “ did Fitzadelm, and less was like to do, because he delighted to cross his peers, and was of them stopped in his government.” He was removed in 1179, when Hugh de Lacy, the original chief governor, was re-appointed. Another distribution of lands took place about this juncture, to appease the wrath of the barons with whose possessions De Burg had interfered. De Cogan and Robert Fitzstephen received the kingdom of Cork, Cork City, which was reserved to the crown, excepted. To Herbert Fitzherbert was given the county of Limerick, in like manner saving the city; Waterford, except the city, to Robert le Poer, from whom, through the female line, the modern Beresfords trace their titles and possessions; the greater part of Connaught to De Burg; Hugh de Lacy being confirmed in his former grant of Meath, and De Courcy’s claim to Ulster being left as it stood—a grant half realised.

In recording this fresh distribution of the country, we are led to notice the tragic extermination of one family, which describes in a single instance the state of general insecurity in which the invading barons lived—produced on the one side by rival jealousies amongst themselves, and on the other by the restless violence of the injured Irish, who rose ever and anon in sudden force to reassert their rights and regain the lands of which they had been despoiled. Cogan and Fitzstephen entered upon their new lands in Cork, and for a while resided tranquilly upon them. But they had been former rivals, and soon became jealous neighbours. Fitzstephen was somewhat broken in years and subdued in spirit by the loss of his eldest son, to whom he had been fondly

attached. To secure himself an undisturbed old age he united a second son in marriage with Cogan's daughter. This conciliated his younger and more imperious fellow-settler; the Irish princes lived upon good terms with them, and appearances seemed to promise that the veteran would die in peace and content. A treacherous crime dissolved the vision. Mac Tire, a native chief, invited Cogan and the young bridegroom, heir of Fitzstephen, to a feast, and murdered them at it. The princes of Thomond and Desmond, taking advantage of the crime, roused their followers and flew to arms. There was a general effort to expel the settlers. In this extremity Fitzwilliam le Gros marched from Wexford to relieve his uncle, and soon compelled Macarty to sue for a humiliating peace. Fitzstephen was freed from danger, but the boon came too late to be appreciated. His sufferings had deprived him of his senses, and he drew out the remainder of his life a confirmed lunatic. Such was the fate of two of the original invaders—Cogan and Fitzstephen; another, Hugh de Lacy, fell by the hand of a common assassin. Upon his tomb might not unaptly have been engraved the line so true and touching of the philosophic bard—

“ *Immemor sepulchri struit domos.*”

He was in Meath building a castle upon the ruins of an old abbey, when a man sprung from the works, and with an axe, which he had concealed under his mantle, severed his head from his body with a blow.

De Lacy's government has been generally commended, and seems to have been able and determined. He married a daughter of King O'Connor, and studied to link the Irish and English interests together. But his death defeated an aim which, even had he lived, the interference of the king would in all probability have as suddenly cut short.—The next governor was Philip de Bruce or Braosa, a man of whose fitness for so arduous a post it is enough to state, that having obtained a grant of lands in Limerick, he fled from the spot as soon as he found himself opposed, and could not be prevailed upon to strike a second blow for its occupation.

In 1175 a new expedient was resorted to : Prince John was created Lord of Ireland. This was one of those false movements into which Henry's want of confidence in his barons was constantly precipitating him. Conscious, no doubt, of the capital weakness of his Irish government—sensible that his possession of that kingdom never could be permanent or beneficial until some supreme and sovereign authority came to be concentrated, and obeyed in it,—he made choice of his son as the instrument to accomplish a policy hitherto so imperfectly and unfortunately developed. The Pope lent his aid as before to strengthen the appointment, and issued a bull granting the lordship to John, in the terms of his too partial father's disposition of it. The Irish clergy received the document with due ceremony and a ready support. But the prince was a boy only fourteen years old, when thus elevated to be the personal governor of kings made crafty by misfortune, and lords grown grey in arms and worldly knowledge. A few years, it is true, intervened by way of preparation, before he took possession of the lordship ; and he was accompanied to Ireland by some men eminent for prudence and ability. But however high their merits, and however quick Henry's perception of the points in which his Irish policy failed of effect, the instrument he made use of on this occasion proved so weak, as to render the new administration as little productive of good as any that had preceded it. John himself was constitutionally disqualified to govern any kingdom or people well ; and evinced at the very beginning of his career the infirm mind, wilful temper, and all the love of pleasure which characterized his whole life, and proved the bane of his subsequent government.

John entered Ireland with a peacock's tail, presented to him by the Pope as his token of investiture ; and the levity with which he conducted himself was characteristic of the emblem of his authority. The Irish chiefs who came in to do him honour were made sport of by the minions of his giddy court. Attired in their native dress of loose linen robes and flowing mantles, with long hair and hanging beards, they approached

to give him the kiss of peace, according to the custom of their country, but were haughtily pushed back. Their beards were plucked in derision, and they were thrust forth insultingly from his presence. These angry men retired to their homes burning with revenge. According to Campion, they reported abroad the rebukes and villany to which they had been subjected by their meekness; they complained that the lord they came to honour was but a peevish and insolent boy, governed by flatterers, youngsters, and prowlers; and they asked, not without reason, if despite and dishonour had so soon been offered to them who were frank and tractable, what the state of Ireland had to look for should the English once yoke and pen them in their clutches? Thus exasperated they were soon in arms. Macarty of Desmond attacked Cork, where, on the eve of victory, he was slain by Fitzwalter; but this advantage was counterbalanced by the death of Robert le Poer, who fell in Ossory. Gerald Barry and his troop were slaughtered at Lismore; other reverses were sustained, and general insecurity prevailed throughout the English settlements. It was to protect himself from these dangers that John built the castles at Lismore, Tibroughney, and Ardfinnan—some ruins of which still remain.

The necessary recall of the beardless ruler after an eight months' government replete with mischief and misfortune, led to the appointment in his room of De Courcy, a man not unsuited to so difficult a command. But John, being continued lord of Ireland during the reign of his elder brother Richard, who seems never to have bestowed a thought upon that country, quickly displaced not only De Courcy, but governor after governor in such rapid succession that every year witnessed a change.

Amongst these was De Lacy, son of Hugh the original invader, who held the post twice; and William, earl marshal of England, who had married Isabella, a daughter of Strongbow. In 1197, Hamo de Valois became chief governor. According to common report he was a private gentleman from Suffolk. Being reduced to the utmost straits for want of money, he

seized upon the property of the church, which was at that time under the authority of Archbishop Comyn, a prelate ill-disposed to allow such a freedom to pass without condign punishment. To complete the general disaffection, Comyn laid the country under the ban of excommunication with all the pomp and display peculiar to that once formidable ceremony. This sealed the fate of Valois, who was recalled in disgrace, fined, and then restored to his possessions. Meyler Fitz Henry, natural son of Henry, and one of the early invaders, became the next representative of the royal authority. A few facts will give an idea of the respect in which it was held at the period.

De Lacy, twice governor, was twice in arms against the crown. He, De Burg in Connaught, and De Courcy in Ulster, were all three at war as independent powers; and not against each other only, but against their sovereign; while different chiefs in Munster and Connaught sprung into repeated insurrections. Fitz Henry, however, was equal to his situation. He brought De Burg to terms, and detaching De Lacy from his alliance with De Courcy, set those two barons into hostilities one with another. But he had scarcely reduced all parties to a state of passing submission, when John, taking affront at the independent power which De Lacy and De Braos had acquired as victors in the recent struggles, paid Ireland a second visit in 1210.* The objects of his anger fled to France, where, after a temporary concealment, they made the clergy their friends, and were restored to

* The weak and fretful sovereign is said to have undertaken this journey to revenge himself of a woman's tongue. When threatened by the Pope with excommunication, he thought to make sure of the attachment of the great barons, by demanding their sons as hostages. Amongst others, he applied to De Braosa, who, besides his large grant in Thomond, held land in Wales. The wife of De Braosa, with more point than discretion, retorted that her children should never be entrusted to one who could murder his own nephew. Stung by the sarcasm, John vowed vengeance against the whole family, and he fulfilled it direly. The husband and wife separated, and for awhile the mother and children found concealment in Ireland. They afterwards fled to Scotland; but being dodged by the tyrant's emissaries, were seized and committed to Bristol Gaol, where they are reported to have died of want and persecution.

their lands and titles upon paying a fine. John received the homage of various Irish chiefs—in number 20 according to some accounts, and 70 according to others—who went through the ceremony as an unmeaning form, and immediately after defied his authority. He visited Limerick and Waterford, and after a short stay of three months returned to England in no respect more powerful than when he left it.

John's second visit is principally memorable for the attempt made under his auspices to introduce civil institutions and some English laws into Ireland. The plan, being sadly defective and one-sided, proved a failure. Nor was it by any means so well defined or comprehensive as many writers have represented. There are legal records to indicate that some of the counties which John is said to have formed did not exist for years after. The district, such as it was,—or rather, so much of it as the English could from time to time retain hold of,—henceforward bore the name of the Pale, and was regarded as the proper territory of the invaders. Sheriffs and officers of justice and assize were appointed, and the common law of England established, with some grave exceptions. By a fatal error, its benefits were not extended to the natives. The five principal septs—the O'Connors of Connaught, Macmurroghs of Leinster, O'Lachlans of Meath, O'Briens of Thomond, and O'Neils of Ulster, declared free by Henry of the statutes of England, were still to retain the privilege, but neither protection nor justice was provided for the mere Irishman: the law even declared that he might be killed with impunity.*

* “The Irish had originally stipulated with Henry II. for the use of their own laws. They were consequently held beyond the pale of English justice, and regarded as aliens at the best, and sometimes as criminals in our courts. Thus as by the Brehon customs, murder was only punished by a fine, it was not held felony to kill one of the Irish race, unless he had conformed to the English law.”—*Holland (“Constitutional History”)*—who, after Davies, quotes from the Assize at Waterford, 4 E. II. (1311), the following pleading, of which a translation is here offered to make the rule of law intelligible to every reader.

“Robert de Wayless, charged with the death of John, the son of Ivor Mac Gillemory, feloniously by him killed, &c., comes and well knows that he killed the said John—says, nevertheless, that he could not commit felony by killing the said John, because he says the said John was a pare

Two separate races were thus constituted legally distinct in rights and privileges,—a mistake of the first magnitude, and the more to be regretted inasmuch as the circumstances of the country were in other respects favourable to that liberal comprehension of all the people under the protection of the king's government, which was the true policy of the conjuncture. Roderic O'Connor, the chief king, after having been driven by his rebellious sons an involuntary recluse into the monastery of Cong, had expired after a forced confinement of 12 years. His heirs fighting impiously amongst each other had wasted their strength as they had dishonoured their blood, and it would have been more equitable as well as

Irishman, and not of the free blood—and when the lord of the said John, whose Irishman the said John was, for the day on which he was killed, shall seek quittance for John his Irishman so killed, he the said Robert will be prepared to answer as to the said quittance, as justice shall persuade. And thereupon came one John le Poer, and says for our lord the king, that the said John the son of Ivor Mac Gillemory, and his ancestors of the cognomen aforesaid—from the time at which Henry the son of the empress, formerly lord of Ireland, the great grandfather of the now king, was in Ireland—should have the English law in Ireland to this day, and by that law be judged and arraigned."

So much for killing a mere Irishman. Another plea, quoted in Dr. Taylor's "Civil Wars," shows how an Irishman's land might be ravished with impunity. It occurs among the Rolls of Pleas 28 Edw. III.

"Simon Neal complains of William Newlagh, that he with force and arms, on the Monday after the Feast of Saint Margaret, at Clondalkin, in the county of Dublin, broke the said Simon's close, and his herbage, with oxen, calves and sheep, consumed and trampled, contrary to the peace, &c., whence he says that he is damaged to the amount of twenty shillings, and thereof &c.

"And the aforesaid William comes now and says, that the aforesaid Simon is *an Irishman, and not of the five bloods*; and asks judgment if he be held to answer him.

"And the aforesaid Simon says, that *he is one of the five bloods*, to wit, of the O'Neales of Ulster, who, by the concession of the progenitors of our lord the king, ought to *enjoy and use the liberties of England, and be deemed as freemen*; and this he offers to verify, &c.

"And the aforesaid William says that *Simon is an Irishman, and not of the O'Neales of Ulster, nor of the five bloods*; and thereupon issue is joined &c. Wherefore let a jury &c.

"Which jurors say upon their oath, that the aforesaid Simon is of the O'Neales of Ulster, and is of the five bloods; which, by the concession of the progenitors of our lord the king ought to enjoy and use the liberties of England, and be deemed as freemen; and they assess the damages at ten pence. Therefore it is considered, that the aforesaid Simon should recover against the aforesaid William the damages aforesaid, and that the aforesaid William should be committed to jail until &c."

humane upon the part of John, to have availed himself of the acts of homage performed to him by Roderic and so many others, and have claimed the whole kingdom by right of that allegiance, than to have left the greater part of it a prey to the wild ambition and uncouth attacks of his English feudatories. The privileges granted to those individuals, and the extraordinary powers they already possessed, would have made this, doubtless, a difficult policy to carry into effect. Nevertheless the assertion of the principle was not the less expedient. As it was, the English settlers, who enjoyed their grants with baronial franchises, and afterwards as county palatines, limited the range of English law to the narrowest bounds. In by far the greater portion of the king's territory the king's writ could only run and his judges enter, as Mr. Hallam testifies, within the lands of the church—while the baron held exclusive civil and military judicial authority, enfeoffed tenants to hold by knight's service of himself, and took by escheat the lands of those attainted of treason. These were almost royal rights, and legally possessed. We have seen how quickly they who held them were to forget that they were subjects, and to act with sovereign independence by making, like the great feudatories of France and Germany, peace and war at their own pleasure. Thus all the evils of the primitive tenure of lands peculiar to the Irish were confirmed and perpetuated; while others were superadded, which aggravated the general wretchedness of the land, and made the people the slaves of an iron oligarchy.

Strongly as we are led to this conclusion, it is at the same time proper to observe, that ideas of a better state of things seem to have prevailed, and that some efforts were made to realise them. The patents of Henry and John to individuals, as well as the charters of incorporation granted by them to the chief towns of Ireland, contained the provisions usually inserted in the corresponding English documents, for mitigating the rigour of the baronial power, by introducing courts of justice. Thus, De Lacy, De Courcy, Fitz Stephen, Cogan, and the others, received their estates hereditarily, upon the

established terms of homage and military service ; and they were also to hold courts for deciding controversies and punishing delinquents. So far, therefore, as the feudal law may be considered the common law of England at this period, Henry and John appear to have been well disposed to make it a constituent part of every authority set afoot by them in Ireland. This, however, can by no means be held to constitute a grant or extension of the laws of England to Ireland. De Courcy, for instance, may have appointed his seneschal, constable, chamberlain, and other officers in Ulster ; and he may not only have heard and adjudicated, but may have endowed other bodies with the power of hearing and adjudicating all pleas and suits between his tenantry, not excepting those of murder, theft, fire, and blood ; and so, too, for instance, the first charter incorporating the citizens of Dublin may have conferred upon them “the laws of Bristol and free trade ;” but it will still be necessary to show, that the Dublin merchant was at any time allowed to become a free trader, or that there was a court in Ulster to which every Ulster man, injured in property or limb, could carry his complaint, and obtain justice. Proof will also be required, if we are to suppose any laws, limited or comprehensive, to have been introduced, that they were either regularly or systematically put in force. Perhaps, the more we read with this view before us, the more likely we are to think that the rights and liberties conferred, constitute one subject of inquiry, and that those exercised and enforced constitute another. The privileges of the Five Bloods were acted upon to some extent at least, as appears by a Tower Roll of the first year of King John, referred to in Lynch’s “Feudal Baronies,” where Richard Gille Michel pays 66 marks for permission to compound the appeal which Owen O’Brien had brought against him for the death of his father. But this evidence disproves the case set up by those who contend for a grant of English laws,—exhibiting, as it does, a special and not a general application of them—and leaving the mind still depressed by the belief, that but little justice was ever ordained, and still less was administered.

Equally weak is the pretension of another class of writers, who, finding the word "parliament" recurring frequently in the oldest Irish muniments, venture to declare that a deliberative and potential body was created and continued by Henry II. and John, and thus that the third great estate of the constitution flourished in Ireland before it came into existence in England. The truth is, that the Irish had the name of parliament, but certainly knew nothing of the reality.* Henry appointed a commune consilium, or common council, of the chief governor, the archbishop of Dublin—and their peers, and to this body Henry and John addressed the royal ordinances which they deemed laws. Some consulting and executive functions may thus have accrued ; but it is an abuse of language to describe such an institution as the parliament of Ireland, in the modern sense of the word. In short, we can discover, by diligent search into the papers connected with the Irish expedition, here and there a few traces of a design superior to the execution, and the faint records of some partial attempts to establish law, to administer justice, and erect the institutions of civilized society ;—but, equally at the council chamber and in the baronial court, the ruling authority for ages will be found to have been the drawn sword, and the passions of him who had most strength to wield it cruelly. Hence a long reign of tumult, oppression and bloodshed, in which we should lose sight of the people altogether, but for the frequent occasions on which we are called upon to count the number of their dead bodies covering the field upon which their hard and haughty lords decided their monstrous quarrels.

How idle, then, to talk of settled laws, an established go-

* "Before that time the meetings and consultations of the great lords with some of the commons, for appeasing the dissensions amongst themselves, though they be called parliaments in the ancient annals, yet, being without orderly summons, or formal proceedings, are rather to be called parleys than parliaments :—which must be thought a very mild term by every unprejudiced reader of their performances, who will, I think, feel inclined not improperly to define them conspiracies for the gratification of the most angry passions, the promotion of private ends, and the legalizing of the most atrocious robberies and murders."—*Davies' Discovery*.

vernment, and a constitution, where, generation after generation one fight followed another in hot succession, only to decide who, from among the host of struggling magnates—all strong, but equally rash and unstable—by which every small district was convulsed, should snatch an insecure hold of temporary dominion ! Not one person is seen to move upon this bloody theatre of perpetual war, from the king of England down to the pettiest chieftain, who does not appear in a constantly shifting and simulative character—sometimes seeking to evade the exercise of the powers he claims as positive, but oftener striving to exceed and augment them. The English monarch, styling himself Lord of Ireland, recognizes and upholds a number of Irish kings. By a Close Roll in the Tower of London, Henry II. ordered a tallage of the barons of Ireland; and the kings of Connaught, Thomond, and the other kings of Ireland. Even so late as the reign of Edward, we have an address from no less than five Irish kings. Here the inferior title possesses the superior power,—a condition incompatible with order, strength, and prosperity in a community. But more fatal still was the state of the English barons, which, being the most definite, ought to have been the most constant, and was the most abused. During the iron-bound centuries in which those antagonistic autocrats pushed forward their terrible career, it is as vain to look for the operation of settled laws, established government, or a constitution in the country, as it would be to travel over the dismal wastes of an Arabian desert with the hope of meeting with flowing waters and a luxuriant herbage.

CHAPTER IV.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION WITH ENGLAND—*continued.*

GRADUAL SETTLEMENT OF THE ENGLISH IN IRELAND.—THE FITZGERALDS, EARLS OF KILDARE AND DESMOND; THEIR AGGRESSIONS UPON THE MACARTYS, CHIEFS OF DESMOND, AND THE O'BRIENS, KINGS OF THOMOND.—THE SECOND MAURICE, REPEATEDLY LORD DEPUTY, COMPROMISED IN THE DEATH OF RICHARD EARL OF PEMBROKE; HIS EXPLOITS AND CHARACTER.—ORIGIN OF THE DE BURGS; ACQUIRE CONNAUGHT AND EXTINGUISH THE ROYAL FAMILY OF O'CONNOR; WARS BETWEEN THEM AND THE GERALDINES, MACARTYS, AND O'BRIENS.—MAURICE FITZMAURICE FITZGERALD IMPRISONS THE LORD DEPUTY, AND RICHARD DE BURG PUTS O'BRIEN ROE TO DEATH.—UNNATURAL FAMILY WARS OF THE O'BRIENS.—QUARREL BETWEEN JOHN FITZTHOMAS FITZGERALD AND WILLIAM VESCEY, LORD DEPUTY.—THE LAWS IMPROVED WITHOUT AVAIL BY THE LORD DEPUTY, SIR J. WOGAN.—CAREER OF THE RED DE BURG.—INVASION OF THE SCOTCH UNDER BRUCE.—DECLINE OF THE DE BURGS AND PARAMOUNT ASCENDANCY OF THE GERALDINES.

THE progress of Irish history subsequent to the English invasion exhibits little more than a rude account of the dispossessing of the native chiefs by the English adventurers, who threw themselves fiercely upon the country in quick succession for many years after that event. A gradual course of systematic encroachment—at times insidious, but more generally violent—enabled a few great leaders to fix themselves upon the land, and seize extensive tracts of it, with various rights and privileges, some real and others assumed, which may be shortly and not inaptly summed up and described as a general licence for unlimited oppression. Intermixed with the narrative are intricate details of inveterate rivalries and exterminating feuds amongst the spoilers. For, in proportion as the predatory knights succeeded in their attacks upon the inhabi-

tants, they grew jealous of, and sought to overturn each other. The enmities thus engendered amongst the victors produced contests as desperate and disastrous between them as were any of those which they themselves carried on against the Irish. Thus two great contending movements agitate the body of Irish history, and overcharge it with action without increasing its interest. During the course of these odious proceedings, many were the knights and barons who fought and won lands and founded families. Of the whole number, two or three for several centuries usurped paramount importance, and may be said to have levied war for absolute dominion in their own part of the country—which, when gained, made them dictators also of the sovereign in England. These were, the Fitzgeralds, afterwards earls of Kildare and Desmond ; the De Burgs, afterwards marquises of Clanricarde ; and the Butlers, afterwards earls and dukes of Ormonde. Thus, the history of Ireland, in point of fact, resolves itself into a recital of the feuds and fights by which three powerful families gained supreme ascendancy over their own peers and the native chiefs. The Fitzgeralds and De Burgs were the first to engage in a struggle for tyranny ; and when, after many vicissitudes, the Fitzgeralds triumphed, the Ormonde family stood forward to dispute the advantage ; and after a long conflict succeeded in completely destroying the power and in extirpating the race of their rivals—men who, for extent of possessions and barbaric sway, were perhaps unmatched by any family established during the concurrent period in the civilized portions of the globe.

Amongst the earliest English adventurers who landed in Ireland at the head of hostile forces, the fourth in rotation was Maurice Fitzgerald, second son of Gerald de Windsor, Lord Carew. The circumstances under which this family came to push their fortune on a fresh soil were every way favourable to their advancement, and the men themselves appear to have been endowed with all the qualities most fit to enable them to turn their rank and position to profit. Maurice was Fitzstephen's half-brother. Raymond le Gros, who, if

Strongbow must be accounted the head, was certainly the hero of the invasion, was his nephew, and soon became intimately connected with Strongbow by a double tie—first, through his marriage with Strongbow's sister; and next, by the marriage of his own son and heir, either to another sister, or some near relative whom it is now impossible to identify. In every part of Ireland into which the English arms penetrated, Maurice Fitzgerald was present, and bore a manly share of the dangers and sufferings of the expedition. He acquired lands in the extreme South-east and West—in Cork, Wicklow, Wexford, Kildare, and Sligo,—and stood high in reputation amongst his comrades. The Chronicles observe of him, that “as he was of birth and parentage nobly and worshipfully descended, so was he in condition, and for natural prowess, every way renowned.” He was named one of the joint governors to whom Henry II. committed the charge of the kingdom, but died within seven years after his arrival in Ireland, and was buried outside the walls of Wexford.

According to Cambrensis, his contemporary and kinsman, Desmond—from which the Fitzgeralds afterwards took one of the titles by which the family is principally distinguished in Irish history—was an extensive territory spreading from Waterford to Kerry, and ruled, at the time of the invasion, by the Macartys, a powerful native family who enjoyed the rank of independent princes, and occupied Cork as their chief city. Their estates were vast, and their consequence, judging from the accounts furnished* by the local histories, supported by high prerogatives. They numbered, we are told, amongst their tributaries, the several septs of O'Sullivan, Macdonough, O'Donnough, O'Keiffe, O'Callaghan, and Magauley; from whom the dues and services exacted, so late as the reign of Elizabeth, were by no means inconsiderable. O'Sullivan Bear, for instance, when taking out a patent for his estate in that reign, found it necessary to recite in the deed that he was

* Smith's Cork, vol. ii. p. 42.

bound to aid Macarty in war with all his forces ; to render him five gallowglasses ; a beef, or 6s. 8d. in money, for every arable plough land on his estate ; to pay a toll of half-a-crown for every ship that came to fish in his harbours ; to entertain Macarty, together with his train, whenever he visited Dunboy ; to provide him hounds and spaniels to sport with, and perform various other obligations of a like kind. It may be added here, by way of further evidence of the consideration in which the Macartys were held down to a late period, that two members of the family were peers during the reign of Elisabeth ; namely, the Macarty More, or head of the family, who was created Baron Valentia and Earl of Clancare ; and the Macarty Reagh, who received the title of Baron Muskerry.

When Henry arrived, Dermod Macarty was the reigning prince of Desmond, and one of the first of those who did homage. A few years after, when his son revolted, he claimed and obtained, by virtue of that submission, the succour of Le Gros Fitzwilliam, and was restored to his principality by English arms. For his services on that occasion, Macarty endowed Le Gros with an extensive tract of valuable land in Kerry, which is retained by his general heirs to this day. Cambrensis says, that Macarty, upon being released from confinement, clapped his son in his place, and cut off his head. That seems doubtful ; it is certain, however, that the old prince himself met with a violent end, and from his new allies. It was in 1177* that the English restored him to his principality, and almost immediately afterwards, a grant from Henry to Cogan and Fitzstephen stripped him of it all. He appears to have struggled for a time against his fate, but in 1179 compounded for liberty to retain 24 cantreds of land, at a small annual rent. A compact so unequal in its effects, was not likely to be respected. Unable to reconcile himself to the harsh terms of intruders, who never ceased to trespass and disseize, Dermod joined more than one insurrection during the course of 1185. In one of

* Giraldus Cambrensis, and Smith, Histories of Cork and Kerry.

these, after laying waste several English settlements, he marched against Cork. A parley was agreed upon as soon as the besiegers approached the city, which, however, was broken by the garrison, who sallied unexpectedly from the walls, and put the assailants to flight at the first charge. The next year a conference of the Irish chiefs was invited at the same city, where Dermod had a quarrel with Theobald Walter, who slew him with his own hand.* Quickly as these misfortunes succeeded each other, they did not exhaust, however they may have lessened, the strength of the family. Dermod was succeeded by Donald Macarty in Carra, so called from a river of the same name in Kerry—who, when the southern chiefs took up arms upon the murder of Cogan in Cork, was foremost in the field; but he came to terms with the English in 1196,* enduring severe conditions as the price of temporary rest.

Desmond† adjoined the territory of the O'Briens, kings of Thomond, a warlike race, who, in resisting the invaders, exhibited a valour fully equal to the great name and possessions they inherited from a long line of ancestors. Contiguous properties and a common interest often united the Macartys and O'Briens as allies, and many of their operations were eminently successful. In Limerick and at Thurles, the king of Thomond matched his strength gallantly with the English; and while William Earl Marshall was governor, Limerick was assaulted and ceded to Desmond. But the fame of these triumphs was destined to be overcast by terrible reverses. In 1219, the Macartys, engaging in hostilities with the chief governor, were forced to submit; and ere long a collateral event, with which they were altogether disconnected, had considerable influence in precipitating their downfall, and transferring their large possessions to the race of the invaders.

* Giraldus Cambrensis, and Smith, Histories of Cork and Kerry.

† “Turloch, monarch of Ireland, father to Roderic O'Connor, king of Connaught, reduced Munster, and divided it into two parts, viz.—Desmond and Thomond, or North and South Munster: the first he gave to Donough Macarty, who founded the kingdom of Cork; and the other he conferred on Connor O'Brien.”—*Smith's Cork*.

Maurice Fitzgerald, the fourth in succession of the family who settled in Ireland, was now lord deputy, and in that capacity received a writ from Henry III., by which the large estates of Richard, Earl Pembroke, were declared forfeited to the crown, and distributed amongst various barons, amongst whom, the lord deputy himself, the De Burgs and De Lacy's were the chief. The unfortunate nobleman thus marked for ruin, was the heir of Strongbow, and through his wife the descendant of the Leinster kings. Young, impatient, and too confident in the strength he derived from his vast possessions to be overloyal or respectful to a weak sovereign, Pembroke had become obnoxious to Henry, and his wanton favourites in England, by the opposition he had somewhat boldly offered to their impolitic measures. Not being strong enough to overcome his power themselves, they sought to destroy it by offering it as a prey to the rapacity of the Anglo-Irish barons, whose swords were quickly drawn to carve it into pieces..

One of their number, Geoffry de Maurisco, added the crime of treachery to the general guilt of the party. When Pembroke, hearing of the meditated spoliation, repaired to Ireland to defend his lands and castles, this infamous adventurer met him as he landed, and while commiserating his wrongs and applauding his efforts to redress them, volunteered to make common cause with him—exhorted him to proceed with energy and terrify his enemies by brisk hostilities. This subtle advice, congenial alike to the ardent temper of youth and the bold character of the times, was adopted without hesitation. Maurisco accompanied the earl on several expeditions, which it is said were allowed to be successful, as premeditated feints to lure the victim into closer toils and irretrievable destruction. The barons retreated before him until they had concentrated their strength, and then proposed a truce to adjust their differences. The Curragh of Kildare was the place fixed upon for the meeting, and the unsuspecting earl made his appearance with Maurisco upon that broad plain at the appointed time. Certain terms of accommodation were proposed to him, and rejected, at the instigation of his crafty adviser. The

barons then insisted upon deciding the dispute in a pitched battle upon the spot. The earl consented: at this critical moment the false Maurisco marched his forces over to the barons, and abandoned the young earl, with only 15 followers, to resist 140 chosen warriors. Nothing daunted by these great odds, the gallant Pembroke stood his ground with a spirit worthy of his warlike race and descent, until his small band was overpowered by numbers. He was thrown from his horse, and as he fell a coward stuck a dagger into his back, which inflicted a mortal wound. His attendants carried him to Kilkenny, where he was left to expire, and was buried with his brother in the church of the Black Friars, which was the foundation of his father.

Upon his tomb, according to Hanmer, the following monkish verses were inscribed:—

*“ Hic comes est positus Richardus vulnere fossus
Cujus sub fossa Kilkennia continet ossa.”*

According to the same authority, the monument itself, as well as the building in which it stood, remained in good condition until the period of the general suppression of those establishments by Henry VIII., when the Black Abbey was violated, and the tomb of Richard, Earl Pembroke, with eighteen others belonging to his family and their contemporaries, was totally destroyed. His fame was long preserved by the common people, who have a peculiar affection for melancholy fancies, and gave the name of Ryder na Curragh, or the Curragh-killed Knight, to a solitary grave really erected to one of the Cantwell family, which escaped the general destruction. Some ruins of the Black Abbey still remain, and were lately shown by a Dominican friar, whom pious associations had settled in a small house adjoining the spot where the brethren of his order flourished centuries before in wealth and reputation.

For awhile the victors ravished Pembroke's estates with impunity; but at length the indignation excited by the crimes of which he had been a victim, roused the king of Scotland, who had married his sister, to demand the restoration of the in-

heritage to his brother Gilbert. Henry III., as fickle as he was false, threw the blame of his destruction upon the bishop of Winchester, and tardily acquiesced in this imperfect act of reparation. Fitzgerald, when called to account, took an oath that he was innocent of the earl's death, and professed to atone for his share of the outrage according to the fashion of the age, by engaging to found a monastery.

The services of this Maurice Fitzgerald are adverted to in favourable terms by Matthew Paris, Holinshed, and other writers. He discharged the high functions of lord deputy at three distinct periods, each of which endured some years. He made three journeys out of Ireland to Henry III.—once at the head of a strong force to aid the king beyond seas; next to clear himself of the death of the unfortunate Pembroke; and lastly into Wales, with a train, which, though considerable, was thought to have been reluctantly brought into the field. A suspicion of disloyalty thus suggested, led to the appointment of another deputy in his place. His character, as preserved by his admirers, is a high one. He was, we are told, a valiant knight, a very pleasant man, inferior to none in the kingdom, having lived all his life with commendation. When dispossessed of office he returned to the South of Ireland, and renewed those predatory incursions into the territories of the devoted Macartys, by which his family had already so fiercely distinguished themselves, and so largely profited. After wresting considerable property from that sept, he turned religious, and died a monk. He had begun to build a castle at Youghal; and passing by the work upon the eve of some festival, while the men were laying the foundation, was asked for money to drink his health, which he promised, and desired his son to give. But the latter, instead of obeying, abused the workmen roughly, and probably not in words only; for his father was so grieved at his behaviour, when it was described to him, that he converted the projected castle into a friary for Franciscan minorites, and afterwards taking the habit of the order, was buried there in 1257. He also figures in the "Monastieon," as the founder of the Dominican monastery at Sligo; and he

strengthened the family possessions in the North by building two castles—one at Armagh in 1235, and another at Sligo in 1242.

He was succeeded by another Maurice Fitzgerald, who acquired large estates in Kerry by marrying the daughter of Sir William Maurice, and survived his father only three years. The augmented inheritance of this wealthy marriage descended upon John Fitzthomas Fitzgerald, who followed the example of his sire in making Hymen, more than Mars, administer to the advancement of his fortunes. His wife, too, was a great heiress, Margery, daughter of Sir Thomas Fitzanthony, by whom he obtained the custody of Dungarvon Castle, and the lands of Decies and Desmond, with all their bailiwicks—princely possessions, from which one of the two great branches of his descendants took the titles by which they are most distinguished in the annals of Ireland. John Fitzthomas continued hostilities with the Macartys, who became desperate the more they were pressed to extremities. Upon one of these occasions, Fitzgerald and his son Maurice, at the head of a powerful body, consisting of 8 barons, 15 knights, and a proportionate force of inferior followers, set out upon an expedition planned to carry signal consequences. But the Macartys, who were assisted by several neighbouring septs, posted themselves in considerable numbers in an ambuscade upon the Geraldine line of march, near Callan, in Kerry, and falling unexpectedly upon their advancing lines, routed them with terrible slaughter. Of all the leaders—Fitzgerald himself, his son, the 8 barons and 15 knights—not one escaped the vengeance of the incensed natives.

The Fitzgeralds, father and son, were buried in the Franciscan friary at Youghal, already described as the foundation of Maurice, the second lord deputy; and it may be worth observing that Fitzgerald Callan—for the place of his death was made to supply him with a surname—married an Irish-woman, Honora, daughter of Hugh O'Connor. His son, slain with him, is memorable, like others of his family, for the property he gained in marriage with Juliana, heir of John Lord

Cogan, whose estates at Carrigiline, Carrigrohan, Castlemore, Moyallow, Rathrogan, &c. in the county of Cork, were thus brought into the Desmond branch of the Fitzgeralds.

This heavy blow struck down the growing power of the Geraldines during a long interval. They were so weakened by it, that none of the family, according to the historian of the county of Kerry, "durst put a plough in the land for 12 years." The heir, a child only nine months old, narrowly escaped the fate which his father and grandfather had shared. He was lying in his cradle at the Castle of Tralee, when the news of his father's slaughter arrived and struck terror amidst the household and dependents. The victorious Irish were supposed to be pressing upon the heels of the breathless messenger; a sudden panic arose—every one fled to provide for his personal safety—and in the midst of the general confusion the child was forgotten by its nurse. At this moment a pet monkey, fed in the family, caught him in its paws, and ascending to the castle battlements, dandled him in the air, with all the skill in mimicry peculiar to its species. There it amused itself by playing the part of nurse, while the people below, arrested in their flight, looked up in astonishment and fear. After a while the animal descended of its own accord, and replaced the child uninjured in his cradle. Nappagh signifies an ape in Irish, and in memory of this escape the surname of Nappagh has always been given to this Thomas Fitzmaurice Fitzgerald, grandson of John of Callan. To this anecdote, moreover, are referred the apes which form the crest and supporters of the armorial shield of the Fitzgeralds, dukes of Leinster.

While Nappagh was yet a boy, the pretensions of the family to take a leading part in the affairs of their adopted country were well sustained by his grand-uncle, Maurice Fitzmaurice Fitzgerald, youngest son of that Maurice who repeatedly filled the office of lord justice, from 1229 to 1245. The power possessed by this nobleman was considerable, and the feats he performed were proportioned to his power. Like his relations last spoken of, he seems to have had a due sense

of the value of rich matrimonial connections. He obtained for his daughter the hand of William, earl of Clare, a nobleman of great wealth and bravery, who fought with him in all his wars, and contributed largely to the success that distinguished his arms. Two formidable rivals, a De Burg and an O'Brien, were reduced to extreme distress by his prowess.

The first De Burg—the name originally was De Burgo, and it is now Burke—who came to Ireland, was William Fitzadelm de Burg, mentioned in the preceding chapter, where Campion's opinion of him is quoted. Cambrensis, his contemporary, was still more severe, adding—"He was covetous, proud, malicious, envious, a favourite of wine and women, and good to none but his back and belly; and by his back he understood his kindred, and by his belly he meant his children, for he opposed himself most enviously against the Geraldines, Fitzstephens, and Barrys, the first most valiant conquerors of the land." Personal resentment unquestionably overcharged the colouring of this portrait. The painter was a Barry, related to the Geraldines, and a Welshman: We are bound also to remember that the great aim and main policy of De Burg's administration was to break the power of the Welsh noblemen in Ireland, who had already formed the nucleus of a strong aristocratic faction, and ranked the Geraldines amongst their ablest and most determined leaders.

Fitzadelm de Burg, like the rest of the military men amongst whom he lived, was a liberal patron of religious establishments. Constantly committing acts which the mind in its calmer moments could not bear to reflect upon, the heroes of that rude age were too glad to compound with their consciences by bestowing a portion of the produce of their violence upon the church, which accepted the offering as an atonement for the outrages they had inflicted upon human nature. De Burg ranks as the founder of two monasteries in Ireland. The first, by Henry's command, was the famous monastery of Thomas à Becket, near Dublin, called Thomas' Court, for canons regular of the order of St. Victor; the charter of which received the king's confirmation at Oxford,

and continued in force until the dissolution of religious houses in the reign of Henry VIII. On his proper account, in 1200, he raised the abbey of Athassil, in the county of Tipperary, for canons regular of the order of St. Augustine. In this abbey Fitzadelm was buried about the year 1204, leaving by his wife Isabel—natural daughter of Richard I., and widow of Llewellyn, prince of Wales,—a son Richard, who received from King John, in 1215, the fee of his father's possessions in Connaught, at the yearly rent of 300 marks.*

Fitzadelm was succeeded by Richard, and Richard by Walter de Burg. Richard served the office of lord lieutenant, and received from King John, in 1215, a grant of all the land of Connaught held by his father. This grant was confirmed in 1218 by Henry III., after the death of Roderic O'Connor. Walter, marrying the heiress of Hugh de Lacy, thus became earl of Ulster, as well as lord of Connaught,—titles which, descending upon his eldest son, Richard, surnamed, from the colour of his hair, the Red Earl, made him the most powerful man in Ireland.

The proceedings by which this family succeeded in establishing themselves in their vast possessions were marked in the strongest manner by all the violence and faithlessness so characteristic of the daring party of whom they were leading members. We have seen how Fitzadelm, as the king's representative, received the homage of Roderic O'Connor, and as the king's favourite a grant of Roderic's kingdom. Thus in the one capacity he was the agent to guarantee the independence of possessions which in the other he was the instrument of violating. While such an example, instead of standing by itself, recurred in almost every case, what chieftain could place confidence in the king of England or his lords? Roderic's family rebelled against him, as already related, and after driving him into a monastery as the most suitable retreat for an inactive sovereign in dangerous times, began to fight one with the other for his fatal inheritance. The recklessness with which the De Burgs sided alternately with these unnatural combatants, would be as inexplicable as it is scandalous, but for

* Pedigree prefixed to "Memoirs of Ulick, Marquis of Clanricarde."

the obvious advantage always accruing to the man who can weaken by dividing the strength of those upon whose ruin he seeks to prosper.

In the contest between the O'Connors, Cathal, surnamed the Bloody Hand, defeated his cousin Carragh, and assumed the style of king. In the vigour of manhood, hot of temper, and quick in action, he called upon the principal natives to combine, and give effect to the spirit of vengeance burning within their bosoms against the despoilers of their lands and power. So congenial an invitation was answered promptly and vigorously : Macarty of Desmond, O'Brien of Thomond, and Mac Lachlan of Hy-Neal, successively joined the league, which was soon distinguished by a series of victories. The gallant Armoric St. Lawrence, hastening with a troop of 250 foot and 50 horse to assist De Courcy in Ulster, was surprised in an ambuscade, and perished with all his companions. The earl marshal was defeated near Thurles, and Limerick and Cork were captured. The English were without a post of strength in Munster, when the O'Connors, falling out with the sept of O'Neil,* broke up the union of the native chiefs. At this crisis the De Burgs stepped energetically forward ; and now acting with, now against, the O'Connors, ceased not until they had destroyed the lingering remains of the strength and influence of the royal family of Ireland. Obtaining the custody of the lands presented to Braosa in Thomond, Richard de Burg retook Limerick, and erected anew the dominion of the English in Munster. As his triumphs increased, the ascendancy of Cathal, or the Bloody Hand, declined ; and the party of Carragh O'Connor renewed their exertions to put their favourite in his place. In this movement De Burg took part : Cathal was dethroned, Carragh set up in his stead, and De Burg accepted from the king he had thus helped to make, a portion of that Connaught, the whole of which had been granted to him by King John. The Bloody Hand fled without desponding. He found refuge with the O'Neils of Ulster, courted and gained the support of De Lacy and De Courcy, and

* This name was originally Hy-Niall, and afterwards O'Neale : the modern way of spelling it will be adopted throughout this work.

brought them down to fight by his side a hard battle with his competitor Carragh and De Burg. The latter carried the field,—it were a waste of language to dwell upon the shameful light in which it exposes the English adventurers,—and again Cathal was abandoned by his followers, as one doomed to defeat. Even now he did not despair ; but with an energy as subtle as it was restless, he contrived to win over to his side the rapacious De Burg, who had already begun to complain of the poor return made of the lands ceded by the new king for the services which had raised him to his uncertain dignity. A second engagement ensued, in which De Burg's co-operation again decided the victory. Carragh was killed ; and the Bloody Hand once more swayed the broken sceptre of his ancestors. But even when his point was carried, he proved as loth as his late rival to fulfil his magnificent promises to his mercenary ally. De Burg, thus doubly deceived, mustered his forces, gave Cathal battle, and sustained a defeat. At last the lord deputy Fitz Meyler, finding his master's subject making not peace and war only, but even kings, as his caprice or his avarice suggested, put himself at the head of a strong force, and marching upon Connaught, reduced him to submission, without, however, depriving him of the means of renewing his unprincipled aggressions against both English and Irish.

Following, for the sake of a connected narrative, in detached parts, the progress of the De Burgs, we trace the rapid fall of the royal O'Connors, and find the king's authority, special charters and protections, insufficient to preserve them from destruction. This fact is attested by a string of records extant in Rymer, and quoted by Leland. Cathal, as a last expedient, relies upon the majesty of the English crown. He enters into a treaty with John, and becomes his vassal, surrendering two thirds, and binding himself to pay 100 marks a year for the remainder. He renews the engagement, and does homage in person ; but nothing avails to preserve the rights or the persons of his family. Upon his death his subjects meet, according to prescription, and elect his son Turloch as

his successor. The lord deputy sets up another son, Aed ; while the De Burgs put forward a third, Fedlim O'Connor. Turloch is soon removed, Aed is killed in a broil amongst the English, and at last the diminished kingdom is held by Fedlim. This prince is described by all the authorities as a prince of spirit and sagacity ; but he suffered not the less from the aggressions of the De Burgs, who brought forward a brother to supplant him. His loyalty to the English crown seems unimpeachable, and equally so the earnest remonstrances he addressed to England with reference to reiterated violations of the treaty by which the remnant of their inheritance had been guaranteed to his house. But they were always sufferers, and lost alike in rebellion and in loyalty. At last we find Fedlim —the son of Cathal, according to some historians, and the grandson according to others—marching to join in the rebellion of Bruce, and meeting a soldier's death upon the field of battle. With that event the career of the O'Connors terminates in the annals of their country.

But the De Burgs, while thus accomplishing the extinction of the race of native kings, were not themselves exempt from a large share of the extreme reverses by which the intemperate age in which they flourished is so strongly characterized. Two of the family, Hubert and Richard de Burg, served the office of lord justice successively in 1227. This preferment, it will be remembered, was within the period during which, as already described, the second Maurice Fitzgerald swayed the chief authority in the kingdom ; and it in all probability proceeded from the implacable dissensions between the two families. In this instance they both lost the royal favour ; but of the two, De Burg's disgrace, according to Hammer, was the more severe. Created earl of Connaught, and attached to the king's person with the office of lord justice of England, and the additional title of Earl of Kent, Hubert de Burg fell into utter disgrace—deservedly, if it be true, as related, that he intrigued against the king, and took 5000 marks from the queen of France to defeat his sovereign's projects. Henry's rage on discovering this perfidy was ex-

casive : he upbraided De Burg violently, called him an old traitor, and rushing upon him with his sword, attempted to run him through the body, but was stopped by the earl of Chester and others who happened to be present. Escaped from this scene, Hubert sought refuge in the chapel of Bradwood in Essex, but was afterwards taken and sent to the Tower. The end of his career is summed up by Hanmer, from Stow and Holinshed, in a passage much superior to the ordinary style of his Chronicle :—“ All his friends forsook him ; none answered for him but the archbishop of Dublin ; wherein we may see as in a glass the disposition of feigned friends in former ages ; who, in the spring of a man’s felicity, like swallows will fly about him ; but when the winter of adversity nippeth, like snails they keep within their shells. At length this Hubert was so far reconciled to the king’s favour that he was enlarged, yet banished the court ; lastly, he ended his miseries at his manor house of Bansted, in Surrey, and was buried in the church of the Friars Preachers, which was then in Helborn.”

Richard, the son of this Hubert, was the person upon whom, as already mentioned, Maurice Fitzmaurice Fitzgerald fell foul. The circumstances are worthy of notice. Fitzgerald had excited the displeasure of the lord justice, Sir Richard de Rupella—the family name has since become Roche—who levied an army against him, and obtaining the aid of the De Burgs, marched into the South to vindicate the royal authority. Fitzgerald, arranging his proceedings with judgment, surprised the justice and his followers at Castle Dermot, took him and Richard de Burg prisoners, and marched them away to his own district, where he held them for some time in close confinement. To encounter the king’s troops in battle, and defeat them, was no rare occurrence at this time amongst the settlers in Ireland ; but this Fitzgerald appears to have been the first who exceeded the license his order had previously assumed, by subjecting the representative of the crown to the indignity of close imprisonment. Nor did he soon repent of his daring : on the contrary, we are told that it was not without great

difficulty, and the strong entreaty of other noblemen, that he was at last induced to give the lord justice his liberty, after a parliament had met and passed a solemn order for the purpose.

The proceedings which led the unfortunate De Rupella into this quarrel, were, a campaign undertaken by Fitzgerald against the O'Briens, and the complete subjugation of their kingdom of Thomond, which he treated as a personal conquest. This achievement must have called forth the exercise of considerable military talent as well as a large army; for, of all the great Irish families who resisted the invaders, the O'Briens in the South, like the O'Neils in the North, by the extent of their possessions, the enterprise and valour of their successive chiefs, and the respect which ancient lineage, courage, and piety,—the commanding virtues of the age,—so naturally inspired, were the race who most distinguished themselves in the wars of the English barons. With a spirit which repeated reverses could not break, and a lively valour which, even when worsted, seemed to rebound from the field with as much energy as victory imparts to others, they harassed their opponents for ages, held out to the very last, and ultimately took a rank in the British peerage, to which the antiquity of their descent and the fame of their actions fairly entitled them.

When the English came to Ireland, the O'Briens were kings of Thomond—a large district, which, with Limerick for its capital, included all the county of the same name, Clare, and parts of Kerry, Tipperary, and probably other counties. The power and pretensions of the family may be judged of by the fact of their having recently been chief sovereigns of the whole kingdom. This, however, like every other Irish claim with which we are acquainted, was violently disputed. The dissensions it involved proved an ever-flowing source of bloodshed and weakness to all parties concerned. At this very moment, when the union of all the strength and resources of the country were required to expel the English, a fierce contest raged between Donald O'Brien, king of Limerick, who

disputed the sovereignty with Roderic O'Connor, and by dividing the general means of national defence, left the detached forces of the different chiefs an easy conquest to their well-appointed opponents.

Donald had married Urlacan, daughter to Dermod Mac Murrogh, and through his influence procured two of the earliest invaders—Robert Fitzstephen and Maurice Fitzgerald—to march with their followers into Thomond, and repulse O'Connor, who had overrun a considerable portion of that kingdom. From this relationship with Dermod Mac Murrogh, and the opportune aid rendered by his English friends, a steady alliance might be supposed to have subsisted between O'Brien and the latter. But of all the strange and perplexing features presented by the history of Ireland—and more particularly in its early portions—there is none which recurs more frequently, and is more unaccountable, than the double part which almost every man who occupied a prominent station seems to have performed. We have, in point of fact, two sides to almost every conspicuous character. The career of Donald O'Brien supplies more than one proof of the truth of this remark. We have seen that he sought and received assistance from the English: yet when Henry, at the instigation of Mountmaurice, sent over commissioners to bring Raymond le Gros Fitzwilliam before him, and to call Strongbow to account for the manner in which he was governing the country, Donald rushed upon the city of Limerick, and so distressed the garrison by a close siege, as nearly to starve them into a surrender. At this intelligence the troops in Dublin were no doubt purposely stirred into a mutiny, and Raymond was detained, as the only person fit to extricate the English from the distress in which they found themselves. Raymond accordingly made choice of his men, and marched to Limerick, while O'Brien, raising the siege, advanced to Cashel with more valour than judgment, and met the enemy half way. A battle ensued at the pass of Cashel—a place naturally very strong, and on this occasion rendered apparently invincible by trenches sunk, and

thick hedges of raised trees interwoven together. The English entered the field, reinforced by a body of Irish under the prince of Ossory, who, long at variance with O'Brien, forgot the cause of his country, like so many others, and seized upon this opportunity to gratify a personal resentment. The incident is related in the English Chronicles ; and certainly, if the speech put into Ossory's mouth upon this occasion, or anything like it, was ever spoken, we are not to be surprised that such a man was not patriotic—anything less generous, less gallant, or more sheerly politic than the following plain address, it would be difficult to conceive. Both sides were ready to begin the battle, when the Irish prince stood forward, and turning to the English forces, is stated to have delivered this harangue :—" You worthy, noble, and valiant conquerors of this land.—You are this day valiantly to give the onset upon your enemies, which if you do after your old and accustomed manner, no doubt the victory will be yours ; for we with our sparthes, and you with your swords, will so sharply pursue them, as they shall very hardly escape our hands, and avoid our force. But if it so fall out—which God forbid—that you be overthrown, and have the worse side, be you assured that we will leave you, and turn to our enemies, and take part with them. Wherefore be of good courage, and look well to yourselves, and consider that you are now far from any fort or place of refuge ; and therefore if you should be driven to fly, your flight will be long and dangerous to you. As for us—ye may not trust in us, for we are determined to stick to them who shall have the victory, and to pursue and be on the juckles of them who shall fly and run away ; therefore, be no longer assured of us than whilst ye are conquerors."

Inflamed at these words, proceeds Hanmer, Meyler Fitzhenry entered the pass suddenly like a blast of wind, pulled away the bushes, and broke down the hedges ; the pioneers made plain the way ; and so with no small slaughter of the enemy they marched without any peril to Limerick, where they relieved the army and set things in order.

One of those hollow truces so often made, and so seldom kept,

was now entered into, and Donald remained inoffensive until the death of Strongbow recalled Raymond le Gros to Dublin. Though he seems to have doubted the fidelity of the king of Limerick at this crisis, Raymond paid him the compliment of appearing to rely upon his honesty. Accordingly he sent post for him, and proposed to surrender the town to his keeping as a feudatory of the English crown. Donald, according to Cambrensis, accepted these terms gladly, and ratified them with strong oaths, the most solemn vows, and several hostages. But the English force had no sooner marched over the bridge that crosses the Shannon, than he broke it down behind them ; and declaring that none of their race should any longer remain within his territory, resumed for another brief interval the dominion of his ancestors.

But perhaps the power of the O'Briens is shown more by the munificence of Donald in building and endowing abbeys and churches, than in his military exploits, several of which were conducted on a large scale, particularly one against the castle of Ardfinnan, in 1185. He enjoys the credit of having erected the cathedral of Limerick, and a church at Cashel ; of having founded the abbeys of Kilmonay, Corcumro, and Innis Clua Ruda in Clare ; and the celebrated abbey of Holy-cross in Tipperary,—great and expensive undertakings for one man to engage in at so early and unsettled a period.

King Donald died in 1194, leaving two sons, Donogh and Murrogh, of whom the first assumed the style of king, and the second that of prince of Limerick. Jealous of each other, these barbarous brothers pursued different policies—the former inclining to the English, and the latter opposing them. In 1207, Murrogh was seized, at the instigation, as is said, of his brother, by the English, and deprived of his eyes. Donogh O'Brien, in common with many other of the great evil-doers of his age, was a large benefactor to the church. The cathedral of Cashel was enriched by his gifts, and the convent of Friars Preachers at Limerick founded by him in 1227. He was succeeded by his second son, Connor O'Brien, who revived the old feuds with the O'Connors, and engaged in several encounters

with that sept, the last of which cost him, and a son named John, their lives.

This calamity was aggravated by the unnatural strife, so peculiar to Irish families of rank, which continued to rage amongst his descendants. The sovereignty ought to have descended on Turloch O'Brien; but a junior heir, Brien Ruad, was preferred by a rival party. They drove Turloch to arms, and he succeeded in defeating and deposing the usurper. Such was the distracted state of Thomond, when, as already mentioned, Maurice Fitzmaurice Fitzgerald married his daughter to Thomas de Clare—a descendant of Strongbow, whom Edward I. had just thought proper to invest with a large tract of land in Thomond. Upon arriving at Cork, with a strong body of followers, to take possession of his grant, and finding a rejected claimant to the local throne, De Clare entered into a prudent agreement, by the terms of which he undertook to replace Brien Ruad in his kingdom, and Brien engaged to ratify the king of England's grant, by conferring upon De Clare a tract extending from the city of Limerick to Ardsolas. Both sides performed their parts of this agreement—Brien Ruad was reinstated in the sovereignty, and De Clare entered into possession of his lands, upon which he built Bunratty Castle, of which some remains are standing to this day.

But this success was soon turned into defeat. Turloch O'Brien applied for succour to his old enemies, the O'Connors; and they, making friends at the spur of the moment, espoused his cause with vigour, and plunged resolutely into the war, which was fiercely prosecuted on their side. At length a pitched battle was fought at a place called Magh Gresian. Fitzgerald and his son-in-law, De Clare, with many knights, veterans in arms, led a strong and well-appointed body. But the impetuosity of the united O'Briens and O'Connors was irresistible—the English were routed with considerable slaughter, and in the pursuit exposed to many cruelties. Smarting under the disgrace of defeat, and the sufferings it entailed, they turned upon O'Brien Ruad,* and put him to death,—a

* The death of Brien Ruad is specified in the Irish Remonstrance to Pope John XXII., quoted by Mr. Hallam from Plowden's History,—a

scandalous and atrocious outrage, which only aggravated their distress. The whole country rose indignantly against them—they retreated into fastnesses and mountains, but were closely pursued; detached parties spread themselves over the country, and finding their strongholds unprotected, assaulted one castle after another, and thus carried Bandon, Athleek, Roscommon and Sligo. Still the English, though reduced in numbers, and harassed by a superior force, preserved themselves from being taken by keeping to the mountains, until the Irish found means to corrupt some stragglers in Offaly. By their treachery both Fitzgerald and De Clare were betrayed, and compelled to capitulate upon mortifying terms. The Irish held them prisoners until, agreeing to make satisfaction for the death of O'Brien Ruad, they gave hostages for the observance of the compact, and delivered up the castles of Bunratty and Roscommon, together with the lands De Clare had received from Edward as the price of his unfortunate interference. With this disaster, the career of Maurice Fitzgerald may be said to terminate—the only remaining information preserved of him being, that he died at Ross, in 1286, leaving a son, Gerald, who followed his father to the grave the same year without issue. Here again we are

document which charges other crimes of the same treacherous description against the English. The English, it says, who inhabit our island, and call themselves a middle nation (between English and Irish), are so different in their morals from the English of England, and other nations, that they can with the greatest propriety be styled a nation, not of middle, but of extreme perfidiousness; for they have long followed the abominable and nefarious custom, which is becoming more inveterate every day by repetition, of inviting a nobleman of our nation to dine with them, and in the midst of the entertainment, or in the unguarded hour of sleep, spilling the blood of our unsuspecting countrymen; and, after concluding their detestable feasts with murder, selling the heads of their guests to the enemy. Just as Peter Bruinicibane, since called the treacherous baron, did with Maurice de S——, his fellow sponsor, and the said Maurice's brother, Calnacus—men much esteemed for their talents and honour amongst us. He invited them to an entertainment on the feast of the Holy Trinity, and the instant they rose from table murdered them, with 24 of their followers, and sold their heads at a high price to their enemies. He was arraigned before the king of England, father of the present king of England, but no justice could be obtained against so nefarious and treacherous an offender. In like manner, Lord Thomas Clare, the duke of Gloucester's brother, invited to his house the most illustrious Brien Roe O'Brien of Thomond, his sponsor, &c.

struck by another of the many forcible proofs constantly presenting themselves to remind us of the correctness of the view already taken of the true nature of the English hold of Ireland, and its false and feeble government. More than a century had elapsed since the invasion, and we behold one of the settled barons potent enough to wage successful war with the king and imprison the viceroy, but beaten in his turn, and broken down himself, by the combined forces of the outraged Irish.

Had it been at all compatible with the wild nature of Irish kings and chieftains to compose their personal animosities and harmonize intestine broils, a conjunction had now been reached at which unanimity and energy might have effected great ends for their country. But the opportunity was lost. It is useless to ask whether this proceeded from the vice of old habits, or some constitutional perversity : the fact appears to be as incontestable as it is reprehensible, that the Irishmen of former ages never either agreed amongst themselves, or acted together against their common enemies, for any length of time. Had the O'Briens and O'Conors—who still retained the rank, power and popularity of legitimate independent sovereignty so long enjoyed by their ancestors—cemented in the present instance the alliance which had so recently proved auspicious to their arms, and persevered in joint operations, the result, in all human probability, would have been signal. The O'Briens, however, forgot their real foe, in the rancorous excitement of family contentions, which broke through all the bonds of relationship and trampled on all the principles of patriotism. The son of Brien Ruad contested the sovereignty with Turloch, and succeeded, with the aid of the Macartys of Desmond, in displacing him for an interval from power ; but was himself soon after defeated in battle, and lost his crown and his life on the same adverse field.

Meantime Fitzgerald of the Ape,—or, as the Irish called him, Nappagh,—the head of the Geraldines, had grown up to manhood, and now stood forward to sustain the character and pretensions of his house on the troubled theatre of his country's

polities. His possessions and power were so considerable as to gain him the popular title of prince of Munster : he was constituted lord justice in 1295, and died the year after ; but is particularly memorable as the father of two fortunate sons—Maurice and John—respectively created earls of Desmond and Kildare, from whom the family branched out into two great arms, which for centuries overspread the South of Ireland ; and of which the latter still subsists in the person of the only duke in the Irish peerage—his Grace of Leinster.

Passing over—because they exhibit only such features as the reader of Irish history must now be too familiar with—some campaigns waged between the Geraldines and De Burgs, on account of the reiterated complaints of oppression made by the O'Connors in England, and in which the latter seem by the king's direction to have been assisted by the Geraldines ; our attention is challenged in an especial manner by the bold success with which one of the Ape's sons bearded the king's deputy in the plenitude of his authority, and so hardly sustained his pretensions in the presence of the king himself, as to procure the degradation of his opponent, and afford another proof of the irresistible influence of his overbearing family. The particulars of this broil, so descriptive of the character of Irish history, are circumstantially related by the English chroniclers, who report at length the set speeches said to have been delivered by the disputants before the king, and furnish a story, which, whether for the quaintness with which it is told, or the incidents it embraces, is not a little curious.

The lord deputy who met with this signal discomfiture was William Vesey, a Yorkshireman, whose integrity and steadiness, according to some accounts, had recommended him to Edward as a fit person to allay the discontent produced in Ireland by an attempt to obtain payment of an ecclesiastical grant, which the Pope had undertaken to cede to the crown, by way of aid towards an expedition to the Holy Land. The Irish church protested with religious energy against this interference with its property ; and it was ultimately agreed, that instead of a tenth of the revenues of the

refractory clergy, the king should receive a fifteenth of the effects of the more patient laity.

The difficult task of conducting this heavy negotiation to an agreeable issue was intrusted to Vescey. An Irish governor, placed in such circumstances, became obnoxious in proportion as he was able and well disposed. The cause of the discontented barons found a ready champion in John Fitz-thomas Fitzgerald, who embroiled himself fiercely with the deputy. This, too, was but natural : to enforce the king's demands it was necessary to expose the exactions so long committed by the barons with habitual impunity, and to insist upon a better order of things for the future. The Geraldines, as the chief of those who had so freely indulged the license of doing whatever they pleased, could hardly avoid resenting proceedings, which operated at once as a punishment of the past excesses of their ambition, and a check upon their further continuance.

Vescey, according to the plain-spoken Campion, was a stern man and full of courage, but rash and imprudent of tongue. After some time wasted in fruitless remonstrances, he summoned Fitzgerald before him, and openly charged him with rioting, with ranging unseasonably with his followers through the country, and preying inordinately upon the community—not for the advancement of the public weal, but to gratify his malice and the grudge he bore his private enemies. Stung by this language, Fitzgerald, we are told, retorted :—" By your honour and mine, and by King Edward's hand, you would, if you durst, impeach me of plain felony. I have the title and you the fleece of Kildare. I wot well how great an eye-sore I am in your sight :—if I could be handsomely trussed up for a felon, then might my young master, your son, become a gentleman !"

" Gentleman !"—retorted the deputy, losing his temper,— "since you dare me, I will surely break your heart—thou art a notorious thief and murderer !" This, we are given to understand, being more than the Geraldines could endure with patience, they fell upon the deputy's train—swords clattered, the soldiers

on both sides engaged, and at last each leader was obliged to interpose and appease the anger of his followers. Vescey, leaving his lieutenant behind him, hastened over to complain to the king, and charged his opponent with felony. Fitzgerald followed at his heels, and retorted with an accusation of high treason. They met upon a sort of trial before Edward, and are represented to have entered upon their respective cases in elaborate harangues. Vescey denounced Fitzgerald as the root and crop of all the late enormities in Ireland—as having attended secret meetings, encouraged the disaffected to spoil his majesty's peaceable subjects, and made him, the king's governor, an object of hatred—and of all this he engaged, if a short adjournment was allowed, to produce such clear proofs, as, if his face were made of brass, he should not be able to deny one article booked against him.

Fitzgerald's answer, if the *Chronicles* may be relied upon, was a torrent of insulting eloquence, winding up with this peroration :—“ Yea, I bear such a stroke with the Irish, as that upon any quarrel I am able to annoy them ! What then ? Because the baron of Offaly can revenge his private injury without the deputy, therefore the deputy may not vanquish the weak and naked rebels without the furtherance of the baron of Offaly. Now the contrary ought to be inferred, as if a private man can tame the Irish, what may not the magistrate do that hath the prince's pay ? But indeed it is hard to take hares with foxes. You must not think, Mr. Vescey, that you were sent into Ireland to dandle your trulls, to pen yourself within a town or city, to give the rebels the gaze, to pill the subjects, and animate traitors, to fill your coffers, and to make yourself, by marring true men, to gather the birds whilst others beat the bushes, and after to impeach the nobility of such treasons as you only have committed. But, forasmuch as our mutual complaints rest upon the one's yea, and the other's nay, and that you would be taken for a champion, and I am known to be no coward ; let us in God's name leave lying for varlets, bearding for ruffians, booking for scriveners, pleading for lawyers, and try with the dint of the sword (as becomes

martial men to do) our mutual quarrels : therefore to justify that I am a true subject, and that thou, Vescey, art an arch traitor to God and my king, here in the presence of his highness, and in the hearing of this assembly, I challenge the combat."

The king, it is asserted, admitted the combat ; lists were provided ; but when the time arrived, Vescey did not appear. "He was slipped away," we are told, to France—whether by choice or stratagem is not explained ; was disinherited ; and his lands in Kildare bestowed upon the daring Geraldine.

A triumph accompanied with so many marks of personal honour and gratification was not calculated to inspire Fitzgerald with humbler notions than he had formerly cherished of his own consideration and the influence his family commanded. He returned to Ireland not only flushed with the heat and pride of unusual greatness, but insolent with success, and assumed a lofty air and determined bearing, which showed that he meant to brook no equal. In this humour, pretexts were soon discovered for a fresh quarrel with the old rivals of his house, the De Burgs, who had, on their parts, not been much behind the Geraldines in accumulating lands and distinctions by the same arts and practices.

It has been briefly stated in the preceding chapter, that when the veteran De Courcy overran Ulster, and obtained the earldom of that province, the government, jealous of the power he might thus have the means of founding, instigated his former companion in arms, De Lacy, to attack and wrest those large possessions from him. In this his last encounter, neither extraordinary personal valour nor superior experience in arms availed De Courcy—defeated in battle, he was betrayed in his retreat, imprisoned, and deprived of his lands and title, which were awarded to his victor.* In 1243, this

* A few lines sufficed for this great transfer. The following is King John's Grant of Ulster to Hugh de Lacy, A.D. 1205. Patent Roll, T. L. 6 John.—"The King to Meyler Fitz Henry, &c. and the Barons of Ireland, &c. Know ye that we have given and granted to Hugh de Lasey, for his homage and service, the land of Ulster, with the appurtenances, to have and to hold as John de Curcy held the same the day on which

splendid fortune passed to the De Burgs, upon the death of Hugh de Lacy the younger, whose only child, Maude, had been married to Walter de Burg. The head of the Burges thus became earl of Ulster as well as the actual possessor of nearly one half of the whole country.

This enormous inheritance descended to Richard de Burg, son of Walter by De Lacy's daughter, who from the colour of his hair was called the Red Earl, and took rank in the Irish parliament, and on all public occasions, as the first nobleman in the land. The Red Earl led a long and active life, during which he appears to have borne his vast honours in several, though by no means in all, instances with a proper spirit and becoming effect. He undertook some considerable expeditions on the king's service into Scotland; engaged, like all others of his race and rank, often with the Irish; was also frequently embroiled with the Geraldines, and was more than once worsted and made prisoner by them. The blow struck by the latter on the first of these occasions was followed by measures of unusual boldness. They felt that they were now raised decidedly above their late competitors for power, and resolved to retain fast hold of the advantages they had acquired until the consequences they had long sought for were fully realised. They resisted all overtures for the release of their prisoner with so fierce a pertinacity, that the lord deputy, Sir John Wogan, was obliged to summon a parliament in Kilkenny for the purpose of composing the feud. In this instance the deputy, a man of talent and discretion, succeeded in vindicating the authority of government. He impeached Fitzgerald, who submitted to the king's mercy. The Red Earl was released, and the Geraldines were disseized of their lands and castles in Sligo.

The composition of this strife was not the only service rendered by the same Hugh overcame him in the field, or the day preceding: Saving, however, to us the crosses of the same land:—and know ye, that we do retain with us the aforesaid Hugh, and are leading him with us in our service; and therefore to you we command that his land and all his you preserve, maintain and defend as our demesne. Witness myself at Windsor, the 2nd day of May."

dered by this able deputy for the better government of Ireland. In the same parliament,—to which, for the first time in that country, the return of two knights for each county and liberty was directed,—he proposed and carried a series of measures, conceived with equal vigour and prudence, for the suppression of the harassing evils which the factious barons were always fomenting. These enactments suggest distinct ideas of the extremely disorganized state of the country. A new and more equal division of the counties was made, and to each a sheriff was ordered. A lord marcher, with a proper train, was directed to maintain the necessary wards in each county, under a penalty of forfeiting his lands if he failed in the duty ; all tenants were ordered to arm themselves according to their station ; all lords were forbidden, on the one hand, to levy war without the king's mandate, or a license from the chief governor ; or, on the other, to make any but general and equal truces with the Irish ; and a truce once concluded on fair and general terms, insidious hostilities or molestation of the natives was expressly forbidden. To repress depredations of this kind, every lord was declared responsible for the acts of his kerns and retainers, and two lords in every county and liberty were invested with full powers to conclude such negotiations with the natives as should suffice to protect their district from vexation or attack. The growing propensity amongst the English to adopt the dress and observe the usages of the Irish, was noticed and visited with specific penalties ; and, altogether, a code of laws was ordained, which reflected honour upon Sir John Wogan, and showed that he was intimately acquainted with the condition of Ireland, and eminently gifted with the talent required for devising means to relieve it from some portion of the oppression under which it had so very long groaned.

But difficult as it is generally found to obtain good laws, it is often still more difficult to prevail upon governments to carry good laws, when made, into effect. In this instance the lord deputy applied the high qualities of his mind to no purpose. Statesmanlike and firm as his views and proceedings were, his

statutes remained upon the rolls of parliament, records of his capacity, and of the doom of the country in which they were destined to remain a dead letter. The lords could not dispute his propositions with any show of reason, and they agreed to register them as legal enactments,—well knowing that no authority existed in the country strong enough to compel them to observe any ordinance whatever, to which it was their interest or their pleasure to refuse obedience.

The failure of this statute, which was passed at Kilkenny, in giving the forms of civil government to Ireland, was quickened by the recall of Sir John Wogan, who, although appointed to his office no less than five times in a period of thirteen years, was never left in it long enough to give his measures a fair trial. Amongst others to whom he was made to give way, was Piers Gaveston, the favourite of Edward II.—a man who, however reprehensible his conduct may have been in England, displayed considerable enterprise in Ireland, and enforced the respect of the Irish chieftains, against whom he carried on several vigorous expeditions, resulting in temporary tranquillity. But as it always happened that, in proportion as the king's deputy exerted ability or gained success, he was sure to become obnoxious to the lords, Gaveston excited their envy and resentment, not solely because his government was effective, but also because it was sustained with unusual parade and magnificence. The Red De Burg, who conceived himself the most powerful as well as the first in rank of the Irish nobility,—who had himself assumed the style of sovereignty—keeping court at Trim, and conferring knighthood on his followers,—took especial umbrage at the manner in which the favourite displayed his authority; and was actually preparing to defy him in arms, when the impatient partiality of his master called him back to England, and left De Burg no other field for hostilities than the old territory of Thomond. In that miserable kingdom two O'Briens—Donogh and Dermot—were again contending for the bloody honours of its petty sovereignty. The Red Earl espoused the pretensions of Donogh, which was a challenge to

the Geraldines to join their forces with his rival. Scenes of outrageous violence and desperate contention ensued, ending in the signal defeat of De Burg, who was again captured, with many of his adherents. In this extremity Sir John Wogan resumed the office of deputy for the last time, and applied himself anew to the wholesome labour of pacifying these ancient foes. On this occasion the circumstances of the case were by no means so favourable to De Burg as they had formerly been. He was compelled to submit to terms dictated by his conquerors; but the lord deputy had the address to soften the mortification of concession by the ties of relationship. He negotiated a marriage between two of De Burg's daughters and Maurice and Thomas Fitzgerald, afterwards created earls of Kildare and Desmond; and thus enjoyed the satisfaction, as he vainly imagined, of laying the basis of lasting amity between two families which had been enemies for ages.

A memorable event now occurred, which diversified the course of military affairs in Ireland, and for an interval threatened a new order of things altogether. Bruce, the patriot king of Scotland, having achieved his great victory over Edward II. at Bannockburn, despatched his brother Edward, with an army of 6000 men, to claim the sovereignty of Ireland. This bold measure produced the liveliest excitement amongst all parties in that country. De Burg was married to the sister of King Robert Bruce. The connection, amongst so malignant a body as the Irish barons, his compatriots, could hardly fail to raise a suspicion that the Red Earl favoured the pretensions of the Scotch invaders. It is proper therefore to notice the circumstances handed down to us which contradict the imputation. De Burg not only led his own troops against the Scotch, but roused the O'Connors to join him in the war, and presented a prompt and formidable resistance to the invaders. Too confident, however, of his own resources, and too vain of his pretensions, he insolently refused the proffered co-operation of the lord deputy; and having sustained a defeat, and also lost the alliance of the

O'Connors,—whose recent attachment to the English crown was not proof against the visions of resentment and regeneration excited in their bosoms by the Scotch incursion,—the country was left open to the ravages of Bruce's army, who overran it with excessive violence. In the midst of these disasters the people of Dublin seized the Red Earl as a traitor, and clapping him into prison, insisted upon his confinement for a length of time, although the English government did not hesitate to declare itself satisfied of his innocence.

While the honour and prosperity of their formidable rival were thus overclouded, the Geraldines distinguished themselves by their efforts to defend the English monarchy. Combining their utmost strength when Bruce penetrated into Munster, they presented the first successful opposition to his progress; and being opportunely aided by a force from England under Roger Mortimer, they turned the tide of the war, which ultimately terminated in the death of Bruce and the destruction of his army. The services performed by the Geraldines in this contest—which, though briefly related here, extended itself over a period of three years—were the more signal, inasmuch as, until they rallied their resources in Munster, Ireland seemed to be lost to the English. The O'Connors, who had first opposed Bruce, afterwards joined him with all their strength—the O'Briens of Thomond and the native princes of Meath and other territories following their example, swelled the Scotch army to a force that carried all irresistibly before it, until the Geraldines at a critical moment stopped its progress in the South. For this eminent service John Fitzthomas Fitzgerald, who led the family during the progress of these campaigns, was created earl of Kildare. The victors, when the war was over, beheld themselves the lords paramount of all Ireland.

The punishments that fell upon the Irish chiefs who had espoused the Scottish cause, or the exactions by which the country generally was reduced to the severest distress, are painful and uninstructive points, upon which it is needless to enlarge. The independence of the ancient house of the royal O'Connors now received its final shock; the O'Briens suffered

heavy losses ; and the De Burgs—though they had signalized their loyalty to the English throne by various energetic and successful diversions against the Irish in Thomond and in Connaught—were nevertheless so keenly pressed by the watchful vigour of the active Geraldines, that a period was put to their further advancement. In process of time the Red Earl took advantage of a parliament held at Kilkenny, to retire in form from public life. The style in which this act was performed showed the greatness of his wealth, and was not unaccompanied with dignity. He invited all the nobility attending the parliament to an entertainment, and after having regaled them with a magnificence never before equalled, he took a respectful and friendly leave of them, and retired to a monastery, in which he died during the same year, at an advanced age. An only son survived him, whose sole heir was foully murdered by his retainers ; upon which event the earldom of Ulster passed with a female heir into the royal family, in the person of Lionel, duke of Clarence. The remaining De Burgs, adopting the manners and customs of the Irish princes whom they had supplanted, no longer appear to claim their former rank or power amongst the titled nobility who aspired to the office of being governors of the country. They assumed Irish names, and for more than two centuries—from about the year 1300 to 1530—disappear from history as leading members of the English interest in Ireland. In the reigns of Henry VIII., Charles I. and Charles II., however, they resumed their former position, and contributed two eminent men to the service of their party, with the titles of earl and marquis of Clanricarde,—which are still retained by their descendant, Ulick Burke, marquis of Clanricarde, and lately ambassador at the court of St. Petersburg.

CHAPTER V.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION
WITH ENGLAND—*continued.*

RISE OF THE BUTLERS, EARLS OF ORMONDE.—FAMILY CHARACTER OF THE BUTLERS AND GERALDINES CONTRASTED.—ACCOUNT OF THE MARISCOS.—EDMOND BUTLER STEMPS THE SCOTCH INVASION UNDER BRUCE, AND IS CREATED EARL OF CARRICK.—GENERAL FEUD BETWEEN THE GERALDINES, BUTLERS, AND BERMINGHAMS ON ONE SIDE, AND THE POERS AND DE BURGS ON THE OTHER.—THE IRISH PETITIONS FOR ENGLISH LAWS REJECTED.—COMPLETE TRIUMPH OF THE GERALDINES IN THE CAREER OF MAURICE FITZTHOMAS FITZGERALD, FIRST EARL OF DESMOND.

ABOUT the period at which the De Burgs had reached the height of their political prosperity, another family* sprung up,

* Perhaps as clear a view as any other that can be reached within a short compass of the political consideration enjoyed by the different barons who settled in Ireland, is to be obtained from the list of persons who served either as lord deputy or lord justice, from the reign of Henry II. down to that of Charles I. By examining the contributions of each family to the roll, we perceive how far each stood pre-eminent in the government of the country. And if in taking this brief survey we also bear in mind that rank in the council, during the several centuries embraced in the period referred to, was the index of territorial estate—and that, although personal merit bore its weight in the competition maintained for office, still that ability, however commanding, never advanced a man, however accomplished, to place, when unaccompanied by landed possessions—we shall have no incorrect idea of the extent to which property and power were amassed by a few hands, and of the mode by which, when amassed, they were maintained. Of the first invaders it will be remembered that Strongbow left no son, and that an heir male soon after failed the Earls Marshall of Pembroke, to whom his grants principally descended. De Courcy, the next person endowed with a whole province as the reward of his services in the expedition, was despoiled and driven out of the kingdom by the son of his old commander, De Lacy. His family, though not extinguished in the male line, never recovered the shock of his fall; and thus the Geraldines, De Burgs, who took the inheritance of De Lacy, and Butlers, proved the only leading members of the original band who produced lines of descendants to preserve the excessive estates they respectively obtained and augmented, and who were fortunate enough to be able to found upon them a political influence proportionably overwhelming. The extent of both is indicated by the number of members out of each family filling the office of lord deputy or lord justice from the Invasion to the Commonwealth, in the following list:—

which not only filled the void created by their disappearance during a long interval from the roll of office, but efficiently supplied their place in resisting the licentious pretensions of

FITZGERALDS.	DE BURGS.	BUTLERS.
1172. Maurice Fitzgerald appears with Archbishop Henry de Londres in the first commission issued by Henry II.	1177. William Fitz-adelm de Burgos.	1215. Sir Edmund Butler.
1219. Maurice Fitzgerald.	1227. Hubert de Burg.	1247. Theobald Butler.
1229. Maurice Fitzgerald.	— Richard de Burg.	1312. Sir Edmund Butler.
1232. Maurice Fitzgerald.	1333. Sir Thomas de Burg.	1315. Sir Edmund Butler.
1272. Maurice Fitzmaurice Fitzgerald.	1650. Ulick Burke, Marquis of Clanricarde.	1329. James Boteler, Earl of Ormonde.
1295. Thomas Fitzmaurice Fitzgerald Nappagh.		1359. Ditto ditto.
1320. Thomas Fitzjohn Fitzgerald, Earl of Clare.		1364. Ditto ditto.
1326. Thomas Earl of Clare.		1377. Ditto ditto.
1355. Maurice Fitzthomas, Earl of Desmond.		1384. Ditto ditto.
1367. Gerald Fitzmaurice, Earl of Desmond.		1392. Ditto ditto.
1371. Maurice, Earl of Kildare.		1405. Ditto ditto.
1375. Maurice Fitzthomas, Earl of Kildare.		1407. Ditto ditto.
1405. Gerald, Earl of Kildare.		1408. William Fitzthomas Butler, Prior of St. John, Jerusalem.
1455. Thomas, Earl of Kildare.		1419. James Butler, Earl of Ormonde.
1461. Ditto.		1424. Ditto ditto.
1463. Ditto.		1426. Ditto ditto.
1468. Ditto.		1440. Ditto ditto, two commissions in the same year.
1478. Gerald, Earl of Kildare.		1443. Ditto ditto.
1480. Ditto.		1450. Ditto ditto.
1483. Ditto.		1521. Pierce Butler, Earl of Ormonde and Ossory.
1484. Ditto.		1528. Pierce Butler, Earl of Ossory.
1496. Ditto.		1643. James Butler, Marquis of Ormonde.
1503. Ditto.		1648. Ditto ditto.
1509. Ditto.		1661. James, Duke of Ormonde.
1513. Ditto.		1664. Thomas Butler, Earl of Ossory.
1515. Ditto.		1665. James, Duke of Ormonde.
1519. Sir Maurice Fitzgerald.		1668. Thomas, Earl of Ossory.
1526. Gerald, Earl of Kildare.		1677. James, Duke of Ormonde.
1526. Sir James Fitzgerald.		1682. Richard Butler, Earl of Arran.
1529. Gerald, Earl of Kildare.		1684. James, Duke of Ormonde.
1532. Ditto.		
1534. Thomas Fitzgerald, Lord Offaly.		

the Geraldines to fashion the course of Irish events at their pleasure. This was the family of the Butlers—a strong and steady race, somewhat slower than some of their contemporaries in putting forward their pretensions to lead in the administration of affairs, but who maintained their high position, from the first moment they obtained it, upon the whole, with a remarkable degree of firmness and moderation. They became many years afterwards marquises and dukes of Ormonde, and were ultimately the destroyers of the Desmonds, whom they fought to the last extremity, beat from their castles and lands, drove out of Ireland, and dogged in exile, until the last of that once mighty and memorable lineage became ingloriously extinct. The Butlers survive in John, marquis of Ormonde, now a lord in waiting on her majesty.

With the exception of these wars with the Desmonds, the general career of the Ormondes, when compared with that of other settlers, appears temperate and creditable. Their intercourse with the native Irish partook largely of the evil out of which it originally proceeded. Nevertheless, it must be admitted, that however censurable and cruel many of the enterprises were in which we find them engaged, not a few were positively forced upon them, while some were indispensably necessary to their existence. Placed as the family was with respect to rival adventurers, there was often no alternative to choose between complete conquest and implicit submission to the empire of their lawless usurpations—an empire enforced with a spirit which prided itself in showing, that as its founders put no limits to the extent of their territories, so they recognized no restraints upon the exercise of the vast power derived from them. Making a fair allowance on this score for different outbursts and atrocities which disfigure the campaigns of the Ormondes against the Desmonds, and admitting that in their intercourse with the Irish they were far from blameless, the history of their house is to be followed with considerable satisfaction. We do not trace in it invariable instances of unprovoked aggression and unprincipled spoliation. Instead

of always gaining land by fraud or force, and defending the insecure produce of rapine by fresh outrages, we find their estates increasing at a very early period by legitimate contracts, by equitable purchases and civil settlements ; we observe them, too, in the wild commotions of successive ages, generally ranged on the side of law and government ;—and lastly, in reviewing their full history, we see them contributing, far more liberally than their compeers, to the public service, men who acquired and merited the honours of a local and also of a national reputation, and who hold to this hour a high rank amongst their cotemporaries, not of Ireland only, but of Great Britain and the world.

Another peculiar feature in the history of the Butlers is that, late as they were in taking up a pre-eminent station, they were created earls before either of the great branches of the more warlike Geraldines obtained that distinction. The men who could thus stand out from the engrossing vices of their age, and prove themselves superior to their order in the higher labour of obtaining by the force of intellect advantages which manual violence might have more readily placed within their grasp, deserve no common praise. They did not, however, follow the more legitimate path to ambition with a pure and unstained character. If the rash and impetuous Geraldine rushed upon his object, spilling blood and destroying life whenever an impediment was thrown in his way ; the staid and careful Butler was also prone to his evil practices, and has been held not to have achieved his fame without committing deep offences. He is often represented as being covetous, insincere, fraudulent and unjust, recovering after defeat the advantages of victory, by persevering craft and double-faced address ; and as little scrupulous in the covert practices of diplomatic injury, as his rivals proved unrelenting in the infliction of open wrong. “As fair and false as Ormonde,” has so long been a proverb with the Irish, that we find it difficult to regard the stigma it has left upon the reputation of the family as the light impression of unprovoked resentment. Like the Geraldines, they present themselves

before us with characteristic blemishes ; but of the two races appear thus far the less censurable—that they preferred the more peaceful arts of ambition, and offered least violence to society and the state in making themselves great.

The family name of the Butlers has been a subject of dry investigation, upon which very conflicting opinions have been pronounced. From the general summary prefixed by Carte to his “History of the Life of James, called the Great Duke of Ormonde,”—perhaps the most laborious and erudite tribute to the historical fame of an individual exhibited in the ample range of English literature,—it appears reasonable to believe that the original name was Walter, and that Butler was an addition, assumed from the office of Boteler, that is, butler or cupbearer—one very ancient and honourable at the king’s court, which was filled by the heads of this family, under William the Conqueror, Henry I. and Henry II.

Popular as well as family tradition, and some emphatic legal documents, concur in representing the Butlers as blood relatives of the celebrated Thomas à Becket, archbishop of Canterbury, through a sister, Anne Becket. Carte denies the derivation by blood, but conjectures * that the two families were united by a marriage, which, however, produced no issue. This theory seems as probable as any other it is now possible to adduce. That the families were once intimately connected appears to be nearly certain, but by what particular link it is now hardly worth while and would be vain to try to discover.

Theobald Walter, the first of the family located in Ireland,—a man of high station and considerable estates in England,—was bred under a maternal uncle, Randolph de Glanville, lord justice of England, and was conspicuous in the more peaceful portion of the invasion of Ireland. He came over, and probably returned, with Henry II., as he appears in the train of Fitzadelm de Burg, when appointed chief governor in 1177. From Henry he received several baronies in Tipperary and the adjoining counties, usually denominated the lands of

* History of Life, &c., vol. i. Introduction, p. xii.

Ely O'Garty and Ely O'Carroll. Carte supposes the description of Theobald de Hely, which occurs in cotemporaneous documents, to have been adopted from Ely O'Garty. Being already butler of England, Henry made him butler of Ireland also, and soon after gave him the prisage of all wines imported into the country—a lucrative sinecure, which suggests some interesting views of the condition and commerce of Ireland at an early period. The grant was two-fold : 2 tuns of wine out of every ship carrying 18 tuns which broke bulk in any trading port of Ireland ; and proportionably for any lesser quantity when the cargo contained only 9 tuns, or a fee of £2 on each tun imported. This produced, according to a Pipe Roll of 11. Edw. I., £1,798 for the year 1282.

Amongst the various anomalies characterizing the English connection with Ireland at this early period, there is none, perhaps, more calculated to surprise us than the concurrent admission and contempt of the royal authority habitually manifested by the barons. We constantly see them in the course of the same proceeding resisting and recognizing it as the great source of their honours and possessions ; and when driven to extremities, submitting to it almost invariably as the true centre and legitimate depositary of power. The dependence of the Irish barons upon the English crown is proved, in point of fact, by little else than a succession of rash and rebellious outbreaks upon the one side ; followed by a series of weak, undignified, and inefficient pardons upon the other. But the aspect of this state of things, perplexing as it looks at first sight, assumes distinct features when closely examined. It must be admitted that the tendency of the feudal system, and the spirit of a large portion of the more brilliant actions to which it gave rise, had practically the effect of giving might the dignity of right. Many a potentate, great and petty, was prompted to deeds which would never have been attempted, but for the prevalent impression of the age—that gallantry, no less than policy, warranted a prosperous soldier in daring to do all he was strong enough to defend with success. While the half-formed minds of men were actuated by such opinions, proceedings the

most extravagant were sure to be hazarded upon the slightest pretexts. Fired by his lust for adventure and the passion to become as absolute as others in a bold age of reckless ambition and arbitrary power, the feudal baron seized the royal writ which awarded lands and castles to his arms, without pausing to reflect, that when he had wrested them from his enemy, a similar patent of dispossession might be issued against himself; and the monarch was weak enough to encourage a practice in reality most injurious to the stability of his power, because it flattered his vanity, and often gratified the interest of the day. In short, the feudal baron was loyal to the king, not as an absolute sovereign, but as the head of the aristocratic body of which he was himself an independent member. As the king stood above him, so there ranged under him others with inferior titles and more restricted powers; while one and all rested upon a common basis, and held together upon a graduated scale of licensed oppression, which allowed every man to tyrannize according to his degree.

The Butlers, like others, were occasionally made the sport of this many-headed tyranny; and the instances in which they suffered under it furnish us with clear proofs, that however obstinate may have been the misconduct of the Irish barons to the crown, it was not always wholly unprovoked. The family, as already stated, had its first grant of land from Henry, during his progress through the country. Of that property, however, they were afterwards disseized by John, who, according to Hovenden, sold for 4000 marks, to Philip de Braosa, all the lands of Philip de Wircester and Theobald Walter in Ireland. Nor was this a solitary case. When Fitzadelm de Burg, seeking to break the fast growing power of the first settlers, drove such of them as were not prepared to resist, from their more valuable holdings, and assigned them instead, other but less advantageously circumstanced lands, he took from the sons of the first Maurice Fitzgerald the castle and dependent lands of Arklow. These and others were given to Theobald Walter; but John, who seems to have

disliked the founder of this family as strongly as his father had liked him, snatched them away again, and assigned them to William, earl marshal. Facts so little at variance with the practices of the day would perhaps hardly deserve to be minutely specified, but for the evidence they supply of the character of moderation developed by the Butlers, even at the early date of this rude age. Theobald Walter, instead of flying to arms, as probably every other man of his rank and means would have done under similar circumstances, and taking back by force what the presumption of superior force had wrested from him, entered into a negotiation with the new grantees, and compounded for re-conveyances, which were successfully concluded in both cases for moderate sums.* In these transactions the advice and influence of his brother Hubert, a man of the highest reputation and steady conduct, who was lord chancellor and treasurer of England, would naturally have availed him much. The education he had himself received under the Lord Justice Granville would also have disposed his mind to rise above the level of his age, and to appreciate the surpassing advantages of civil policy over martial prowess in a transaction, which it requires no great penetration to perceive ought never to rest upon military defences. On this supposition the character of a whole race may have been formed in the mould cast by the superior education of an individual.

The benefactions of Theobald Walter to the church of Ireland were commensurate with his rank and wealth; consisting of the monastery of Arklow, for Cistercian monks; that of Nenagh,† in the county of Tipperary, for Augustin canons; and the abbey of Owney, now Abingdon, in the county of Limerick, where he was buried in 1206, and a

* The money given for the recovery of the estates in Tipperary is said to have been 500 marks.

† The foundation of the abbey or hospital of Nenagh was on a noble scale. Its lands were extensive, and at least thirteen beds were required to be furnished in it for sick persons, who were to have a loaf and a sufficiency from the cellar, with a dish of meat from the kitchen, daily — *Archdale's Monasticon*.

tomb was raised to his memory. He had an only son, Theobald, who was not more than six years old when his father died, and appears to have been put in possession of his estates July 18, 6 Henry III. Of this second Butler we know little more than that he was nominated lord justice in 1247, and died the year after. His wife was Joan, sister and co-heiress of John Marisco or Mountmaurice, whose estates, in default of male issue, fell to the Butlers during the reign of Richard II. With this family the Butlers seem to have been politically allied at an earlier period. In 1215, Geoffry de Marisco and Sir Edmond Butler were lords justices, and apparently retained the office for some years together. The old writers preserve details of the extinct family of Marisco, which justify us in describing them as being, of all the bold bad men engaged in the invasion of Ireland, the very boldest and the worst. Events already adverted to indicate the peculiar character of the race. Cambrensis describes the first who came over as an outcast. Another, as already stated, plotted against Maurice Fitzgerald; and a third was the betrayer of the gallant Richard, earl of Pembroke. An account of their crimes has been collected by Hammer from Mathew Paris and Mathew of Westminster, which it may be worth while to recapitulate, with a prefatory observation or two.

The barons who settled in Ireland are distinctly portrayed in their actions. Descendants of the race who, sallying from Normandy, conquered England from the Saxons, they regarded the invasion of Ireland less as the repetition of a fortunate example, than as the extension and consummation of one and the same glorious enterprise. Living in armour, ignorant of books, and bound by little more than the pomp of religion, they had no heart, no sympathy with the humanities of life, no relish for repose. Animated by inordinate ambition and an insatiable greed for the acquisition of land, which was then the sole, as in our time it is a principal, foundation of titles, political power, and influence in society, they lived for no other purpose but that of winning estates; and as all men are prone to erect those qualities into a standard of honour,

which are most conducive to their worldly interest, they valued their possessions most highly when they were the rewards of military success. Judged by their own measure, they were men of a frank humour, firm purposes, and strong minds; neither mean nor sordid in their habits, and seldom hypocritical and deceitful. They marched straight upon an undisguised object, and pursued it with unscrupulous and obdurate vigour. When the body had become bent and the hair grown grey, many a stout heart, reflecting upon these inhuman courses, must have sunk with sadness. Old age must have shaken the fortitude of many an ancient victor with grief and fear. Religion then stepped opportunely forward to console him: at her dictation he built churches and founded monasteries, and died in peace, hopeful at last that he had appeased the wrath of Heaven, by satisfying the importunities of its ministers on earth.

Assuming this, upon a calm review of the character and conduct of the body, to be a fair description of the English barons who settled in Ireland, it is to be observed that the Mariscos differed in a marked and odious degree from their compeers. Jealousy, mistrust, envy, intrigue, duplicity and treason, darkened the career and shut out pity from the misfortunes of that wicked and worthless family. Geoffry stood charged with deeper crimes than his betrayal of the young Pembroke. He served the office of lord deputy; but fell into merited disgrace, if it be true, as asserted, that he was base enough to instigate his own son to murder the king. William, the youth thus unnaturally prompted, is said to have made his way privately to Woodstock, while the king lay there, and to have attempted, but failed, to reach his person at midnight. Upon being detected, he fled, and eluded pursuit. His father, hearing of the transaction, repaired to London, to defend his own conduct. At court he met a priest, named Clemens, who was said to have been sent from Ireland to divulge the particulars of the conspiracy he had entered into. As the surest means of closing the informer's mouth, and defeating the purport of his mission, he slew him in the

king's presence, and effected his escape to Ireland. Meantime his son, conscious of his insecurity wherever the king's authority was recognized, took possession of the Isle of Lundy, near Bristol, then uninhabited, and formed a band of pirates, whose captain he became. In this lawless pursuit his offences grew notorious : he plundered in all directions, until at last being seized, with seventeen of his confederates, he was taken to London, and having been dragged, with his whole party, to the gibbet, at horses' tails, he was hung, drawn and quartered. His father, whether struck with horror at his fate, or, more probably, warned of some confessions made before he suffered, left Ireland precipitately, and sought concealment in Scotland ; but being soon after driven out of that country too, he stole through England, and reached France a beggar : there, pining away with grief and shame, he wished for and ere long came to his end. Once amongst the most noble of Ireland, he closed a guilty and unfortunate life, in the words of Hamner's Chronicle, who relates his story, "dying pitifully, yet not to be pitied."

Besides the property obtained by the Butlers, through the marriage of the second Theobald with the co-heiress of John de Marisco, considerable additions to their estates were effected by the matrimonial engagements of his immediate successors. The wife of a third Theobald was Margery, daughter of Richard de Burg, with whom were acquired, besides other lands, the manors of Ardmaile and Killmorackill. A fourth Theobald increased his patrimony by a peaceful purchase, in 1297, of the large estates of Philip de Rupella (Roche), amongst which were the manor of Bru, with all the lands of the Bruins in the county of Dublin, the cantred of Omany in Connaught, and the lands of Crom.

Relying upon the accuracy of Carte's assertion, that four and not five Theobalds preceded the first earl of the family, we have now before us the progress of the pedigree and the principal additions to the property of the Butlers, down to the period, so nearly fatal to the English interests in Ireland, of the Scotch incursion under Edward Bruce. A leading part

in averting the dangers of that onslaught was performed by Edmond Butler, the first of his family who took the commanding political position in Irish affairs which his successors maintained with decided ability and increasing effect, until, after the lapse of centuries, they made themselves decidedly the most powerful men in the kingdom. So fully did this Edmond Butler stand upon an equality with the greatest of his cotemporaries, that if, in reading the particulars of his career, we change the dates and names of persons and things, the account will differ in no marked respect from those already given of the dominant nobility of the land. Thus we find him, after receiving the honours of knighthood in London, from Edward II., in 1309, joining John Fitzgerald to suppress a rising in Offaly and Connaught; and three years afterwards forcing, in his office of lord justice, those hardy septs, the O'Byrnes and O'Tooles, to submit to the king's government. He emulated the ostentation of De Burg, in giving splendid feasts and creating knights. Being re-appointed lord justice in 1314, he obtained a fee of 500 marks per annum for the expenses of his office; and by the address with which he secured the co-operation of the Fitzgeralds, and the energy with which he turned to account a subsidy granted by the parliament in Kilkenny, gained the chief honours of defeating the Scotch under Bruce, and was rewarded with an earldom, the highest title at that period conferred in Ireland. The patent, dated September 1, 1315, names him Earl of Carrick Mac Griffyn—it is now called Carrick-on-Suir—in the county of Tipperary. According to a cotemporaneous record, he was further enriched with the return of all the king's writs in the cantreds of Oreman, Ely O'Garty, and Ely O'Carroll, in Tipperary. Two years afterwards he received a grant of the lands of William de Carran, in Finagh and Faymolin, in the county of Waterford. These rewards stimulated further services, which, however opportune, call for no specific praise. They consisted of engagements with several of the Irish septs, amongst which were the O'Moores, O'Tooles, and O'Byrnes, against whom he was generally successful. As he advanced in years, he grew

religious, and was seized with a fit of penitential enthusiasm. This agreed with the prevailing fashion of the times, which made pious perorations of the kind no infrequent consequences of a life of bloodshed and crime. Butler, like many others, would naturally feel disposed to soothe, in his old age, a mind chafed, no doubt, and sore with the recollection of many wrongs and sufferings, to which, in the hot career of arms and ambition, he must often have been a party. In this state he undertook an expiatory pilgrimage to the shrine of St. John of Compostella in Spain ; and returned, it is to be hoped, with a lightened conscience, to London, where he was soon after taken ill and died, September 13, 1321, leaving behind him, upon the whole, a fair reputation.—The first earl of Carrick was fully equal, if not superior, in personal character, attainments, and achievements, to his contemporaries of the same rank, amongst whom he obviously rose to eminence by seizing promptly and acting vigorously upon the spirit of the age. His body was carried to Ireland and interred at Gowran, in the county of Kilkenny, for many years the chief seat and burial-place of the family.

The Irish church presents itself to our notice about this period, busy with one of the few attempts to gain political sway of which we find traces in the early annals of the country. But Roger Outlaw, prior of Kilmainham, was now lord lieutenant, and the aspiring pretensions of the church were effectually suppressed by a churchman. As the particulars will be more appropriately explained under the head of religion, we shall proceed to relate that Roger had no sooner escaped undamaged from this clerical assault, than a commotion which the barons had for some time been agitating, broke violently forth. So excessive was the fury with which it raged, that his utmost skill and energy were heavily taxed to restrain it.

As it usually happened whenever the constituted authorities of the country were fiercely resisted, a Geraldine led the opposing force, and outran his compeers in lawlessness and presumption. The origin of this insurrection, for such an age,

was curious. Maurice Fitzthomas Fitzgerald, having borne a gallant share in the repulse of the Scots under Bruce, and broken the strength of the old rivals of his house, the De Burgs, had married, as already related, one of the Red Earl's daughters, and pushed the exorbitant power of his family still higher in the scale of fortune. His extensive estates in the county of Waterford adjoined those of Lord Arnold Poer*—

* Lord Arnold le Poer was the direct successor of Sir Roger le Poer, who came over with Strongbow, and is thus eulogized by Giraldus Cambrensis. "If it might be said without offence, there was not one man who did more valiant acts than Roger le Poer; who, although he were but a young man and beardless, yet he showed himself a lusty, valiant, and courageous gentleman; and who grew into such good credit that he had the government of the country about Leighlin, as also in Ossory, where he was traitorously killed (1189). Roger le Poer distinguished himself eminently in the reduction of Ulster under the brave De Courcy, and married a niece of Sir Amory St. Lawrence, ancestor of the earl of Howth, by whom he had a son, Sir Eustace. He succeeded to the estates in Waterford, and was the father of Lord Arnold, whose highest praise it is that he appears to have been the only member of the family who sustained the reputation of his ancestor, Sir Roger, and made a figure in the history of his adopted country. He held a command in the army which defeated Bruce.

The Poers were among the first of the English in Ireland who sat in parliament by writ of summons. They rank therefore amongst the original peers of Ireland. The family had also the title of Baron le Poer of Curraghmore, created 13 December, 1535; and Viscount Decies, earl of Tyrone, created October 9, 1673, upon the marriage of Richard, Lord le Poer, to Catherine, sole heir of John Fitzgerald of Dromana. These latter honours became extinct in the person of James, earl of Tyrone, who died August 19, 1704, and was buried at Carrick-on-Suir. There a tomb was erected to his memory, which—the parish church falling to decay—was lately removed to the chapel of Clonegam, near Curraghmore, where it may still be seen. James left an only daughter, the Lady Catherine Poer, married, July 16, 1717, to Sir Marcus Beresford, Bart., who having been made a lord by George I., was advanced to the earldom of Tyrone by George II., July 18, 1746. The more ancient title of Baron Poer of Curraghmore was claimed by his lady in fee from the Irish House of Lords, and allowed in 1767; but her right to this honour has been generally disputed, because the heirs male of her direct ancestor, John, Lord Poer, father to the first earl of Tyrone, are held to survive in the family of the Powers of Rathcormack.

The Poers of Curraghmore have been commended for the peaceful lives they led, and the good condition in which they kept their property. Lodge and Archdale quote an interesting account, given by Sir Henry Sidney, of a visit he paid to Curraghmore in 1575. In this despatch, strong testimony is borne to Lord Poer's honourable and plentiful style of living. His superior cultivation of a comparatively barren soil is also favourably contrasted with that in Decies and Kilkenny, and thus

otherwise memorable as the victim of episcopal persecution. Poer, in the struggle with Roger Outlaw, to which a reference has just been made, it seems, called his neighbour a "rhymer;" and the term—whether used as a casual expression of contempt, or applied to any real exercise of the gentle art of minstrelsy on the part of this rude aristocrat—was deemed so reproachful, that he took up arms to punish the insult it conveyed. Had the quarrel lain between these families alone, it would have soon ended; for Poer, being unequal in point of possessions, strength and resources, to his enemy, was easily driven from his estate. But by one of those strange combinations of circumstances which sometimes give the highest importance to events in themselves of but little moment, every great family in the South of Ireland took up the quarrel, and sided with one or other of the belligerents. A long and bloody civil war ensued, in which the land was laid waste in every direction, and the most furious excesses were committed by all parties. The king commanded them to desist, but his authority, never respected when their interests were concerned, was despised while their passions were excited. Fitzgerald had the Butlers and Berminghams on his side; while his old rivals, the De Burgs, took part with Le Poer. Amidst all this tumult, the native Irish arose, and availing themselves of not a few opportune moments of revenge, struck some fierce and well-directed blows upon their common enemies. Their active hostility compelled the barons to feel that they were engaged in a

accounted for:—"In Power country, they suffer no idle man, and are oppressed with them in the other." Lodge paid another compliment to the Poers, which ought not to be overlooked. "It is very remarkable, that in so long a succession, and in a country continually disturbed and torn by rebellion and civil wars, not one of this family was ever engaged in any rebellion against the crown of England, nor was there ever a forfeiture in the family during the space of 600 years that they have been planted in Ireland. They at this day enjoy the old family lands, and reside in the same place that they were originally settled in, in the county of Waterford."—*Archdale's Peerage of Ireland*, by Lodge, vol. ii. p. 307. A similar instance of peaceful occupation, uninterrupted by rebellion or forfeiture, is found in the neighbouring family of the Walls of Coolnamuck. The original deed of King John, granting the estate, is said to have never been out of the possession of the family.

work of self-extinction. Roger Outlaw had been for some time addressing himself with creditable zeal to establish peace amongst them; and as the native chieftains, having gained no advantages of a permanent character from their constant struggles, offered to submit themselves anew to the government, he ultimately succeeded in his object.

So far the administration of the prior of Kilmainham was effective and commendable. A prospect of order seemed now to open upon the country, and hopes of peace and prosperity began to spring up anew. It was at this auspicious juncture that the Irish petitioned the parliament in Dublin for a general statute, which should extend the laws of England to all Irishmen, without requiring them to purchase a special charter for the purpose in every instance. But this reasonable prayer, though moderately urged, ill accorded with the baronial system of policy; and after having been remitted to another session, was pronounced injurious to the English interest in Ireland, and ultimately rejected.

As not one but two petitions of this kind were rejected, it will be worth our while to take the facts from Leland. "An application was made," says that careful writer, "to Ufford, the chief governor, and eight thousand marks offered to the king, provided he would grant the free enjoyment of the laws of England to the whole body of the Irish inhabitants. A petition, wrung from a people tortured by the painful feelings of oppression, in itself so just and reasonable, and in its consequences so fair and promising, could not but be favourably received by a prince possessed with exalted ideas of policy and government, and, where ambition did not interfere, a friend to justice."—"But Edward was assured that an immediate compliance with his commands was not possible in the present state of things; and that the kingdom was in too great ferment and commotion. The great English settlers found it more for their interest that a free course should be left for their oppressions; that many of those whose lands they coveted should be considered as aliens; that they should be furnished for their petty wars by arbitrary exactions; and in their rapines and

massacres be freed from the terrors of a rigidly impartial tribunal."—About fifty years after, the natives, "addressing themselves once more to the throne of England, petitioned that all those odious distinctions, which had so long deluged the land with blood, should at last be abolished, and that the Irish inhabitants should be admitted to the state and privileges of English subjects." The petition being remitted to the chief governor, Darcy, was by him referred to the Irish parliament, and, as usual, defeated.*

Thus driven from the pale of the constitution, and repeatedly informed with deliberate rigour that their fate was sealed beyond the relief of justice and all hope of grace, the Irish rushed impetuously to arms, and conspired to make their vengeance commensurate with their despair. The chief under whom they now ranged themselves was Murrogh O'Brien—a general well versed in the furious wars of that period, having gained the kingdom of Thomond by the murder of Donogh, son of the victorious Turloch, whose exploits against the earl of Clare have been already commemorated. Under this fit leader the irritated Irish began a series of attacks, the progress of which was frightfully marked by massacre and desolation. Marching upon the town of Tipperary, they reduced it to ashes; then routed the Butlers and their followers at Mullingar; and at Balbriggan slew Bermingham, earl of Louth, 8 knights and 200 men-at-arms, on the field of battle.

One anecdote will suffice to give an appropriate idea of the remorseless character of this campaign. A body of English settlers flying before the destroyers, took refuge in a church. Finding the sacred edifice no protection, they offered to surrender upon one condition—the simple one of having the life of their priest, who was with them, spared. But even that

* The hardship did not end here. The English, after refusing to incorporate with the Irish as fellow subjects, took pains to compel them to remain rebels or slaves. "By an act of the Irish parliament, in the eleventh year of Henry IV., it was ordained that no Irish enemy should be permitted to depart from the realm."

was refused—the clergy had never sided with or supported the people against the English ; the English, moreover, had been the first to violate the sanctity of the church ; and they now experienced a terrible proof of the spirit in which such examples were to be followed. At the very altar did this infuriated band slay the priest, and trample the sacraments under foot, after which they massacred the whole party, and left the church a ruin.

The English garrison at Wexford, and the Butlers along the line of their territories, were able to hold the Irish at bay, when the lord deputy appealed for support to Maurice Fitz-thomas Fitzgerald, who had lain unassailed and unmoved with-in his strong possessions in the South. The terms demanded by Fitzgerald as the conditions of his adherence to the crown, proved the extent of his power and the value of his aid. He obtained the title of Earl of Desmond, and a patent for consolidating his territories into a county palatine. As the pro-due of the Irish revenue was unequal to the cost of the war, and no dependence was to be placed upon the promises of money made to him by the government to defray the charges of his troops, he revived the old Irish custom called Bonaght, which, under the odious name of Coigne and livery, exacted free quarters for his followers wherever he marched—or, as the old writers forcibly express it, took horse meat, man's meat, and money from the king's subjects without any satis-faction. Upon these terms the defeat of the Nolans, Mac-murroghs and Dempsies—troublesome septs, at that period in a state of insurrection—was not a matter of great difficulty to the thousand trained men whom he led into the field.

The bold Fitzgerald now approached the summit of the wild ambition which had been for years the aim of his indomitable family. The lawless power they had so long usurped was confirmed, legitimized, and enlarged ; the state, privileges, and authority of independent petty sovereigns were conferred upon them in form ; they were allowed to govern as they pleased a principality within a sovereignty—and the

anomalous tyranny developed, with a fatal promptitude and crude abundance, every possible evil by which a people can be wronged and a country ruined.

This state of things should be fully understood. "Those absolute palatines," says Sir John Davies, "made barons and knights, exercised high justice in all points within their territories, erected courts for criminal and civil causes; made their own judges, seneschals, sheriffs, coroners, and escheators; so that the king's writs did not run into those counties, which took up more than two parts of the English colonies—but only in the church lands lying within the same, which were called 'the crosse,' wherein the king made sheriffs."

"Coine and livery," Baron Finglas, author of the "Breviate of Ireland," tells us, "would destroy Hell if used there—never since then did the Geraldines or Butlers obey the king's laws in Ireland, but continually allied themselves with Irishmen, whereby all the land is now of Irish rule, except the little English pale within the counties of Dublin, Meath, and Uriel (Louth), which pass not thirty or forty miles in compass. For the lack of punishment by the ministration of justice, the great lords of Munster, by their extortions and other abuses, have expelled all the English freeholders and inhabitants out of Munster, so that in fifty years past was none there obedient to the king's laws, except cities and walled towns, and so hath been the decay of Munster."

If we had no corresponding description of the misery entailed by this odious system upon the native Irish, we should not much err if we assumed that abuses which goaded the English so sharply, must have pressed still more severely upon them. But Sir John Davies is not less graphic in his exposure of all the mischiefs arising out of this wicked custom, the consequences of which, he shows, were grievous in the extreme. "This extortion," he says, "was originally Irish, for they used to lay *bonaught* upon their people, and never gave their soldier any other pay. But when the English had learned it, they used it with more insolency, and made it more intolerable; for

this oppression was not temporary, or limited either to place or time ; but, because there was everywhere a continual war, either offensive or defensive ; and every lord of a county, and every marcher, made war and peace at his pleasure ; it became universal and perpetual ; and was indeed the most heavy oppression that ever was used in any Christian or heathen kingdom. And therefore *Vox oppressorum*, this crying sin did draw down as great or greater plagues upon Ireland, than the oppression of the Israelites did draw upon the land of Egypt. For the plagues of Egypt, though they were grievous, were but of a short continuance ; but the plagues of Ireland lasted 400 years together. This extortion of coigne and livery did produce two notorious effects. First, it made the land waste ; next it made the people idle. For when the husbandman had laboured all the year, the soldier in one night did consume the fruits of all his labour. *Longiq; perit labor irritus anni.* Had he reason then to manure the land for the next year ? Or rather might he not complain as the shepherd in Virgil,—

‘*Impius haec tam culta novalia miles habebit ?
Barbarus has segetes ? En quo discordia cives
Perduxit miseros ! En quis consevimus agros !*’”

It is obvious, upon the face of these and many similar passages which it would be easy to cite, from writers of indisputable authority, that the English interest, being the more susceptible of injury, must have suffered most acutely. Wherever the practice was introduced, the principal settlers, after a vain effort at resistance, were driven from their lands, and returned to England. On their grounds Desmond quickly seated a mixed body of retainers, English and Irish, upon terms so beneficial to himself, that he is said to have raised his rental from 1,000 marks to £10,000 a year—an enormous sum in the 14th century.* Abusing the powers conferred upon him as earl palatine, he abolished the administration of English justice, and substituted many of the more congenial, because more

* Annals of Dr. Dudley Loftus, in Marsh’s Library, quoted in Smith’s “History of Cork.”

arbitrary, forms of Irish law—thus establishing a barbarous system, compounded of the worst parts of one code, fenced in and supported by the perverted forms of the other.

A career like that of Desmond, gratifying as it did, in an eminent degree, the strongest passions by which human nature can be moved, and conferring power and wealth to an unbounded extent; was sure to be warmly regarded and imitated by those who were in a condition to act upon so inviting an example. His kinsman, the earl of Kildare, and the head of the Butlers, created earl of Ormonde in 1326, also threw off the restraints of dependence, and in a short time the number of palatinates amounted to no less than nine,—Desmond, Ormonde, Ulster, Meath, Kildare, Leix, Kilkenny, Wexford and Carlow,*—in all of which, separately or conjointly, a harsh and wasteful tyranny was established, hostile to public order and the royal authority, and only grateful to the despots who enjoyed it. And yet these men, so rude and violent, have found their eulogists. John Lynn, the friar, of Kilkenny, draws a favourable character in his annals of the earl of Ormonde, son of Butler, first earl of Carrick, assuring us that he was a liberal, amicable, facetious, and comely person; who dying, January 6, 1337, in the flower of his youth, was buried at Gowran. Perhaps a secret motive for this praise may be traced in the fact, that the Minorites Friary at Carrickbeg, on the banks of the Suir, in the county of Waterford, in which Lynn spent some years of his life, was founded by the earl the year before his death, and endowed with his castle and estate at the opposite side of the river.

The spirit by which these palatines were animated soon broke out into overt acts, and the government found it no longer possible to overlook the glaring fact, that the great body of the lords were in a state of revolt. There was, it must be admitted, no indisposition on the part of those who represented the king's government to repress their excesses. The lord deputies of this period were men quick in perceiving, and bold in executing rigorous measures, whenever proper means were

* It is to be observed, that of these, several had been previously erected.

available for the purpose. But they were destitute of the first and most necessary resources of an efficient government in moments of violent confusion. They had neither troops nor money. While the earl of Desmond lavished his ample income upon the indulgence of his ambition, the king's exchequer in Dublin was so reduced, that a deficiency of £2,000 a year plunged the administration into a condition of helpless distress;* and thus it was, that although the zeal and ability of successive deputies occasionally sufficed to vindicate the royal authority by detached efforts; they were wholly unequal to any long-continued or well-sustained movement for the preservation of the public peace and general order. Roger Outlaw, seeking to check the career of the palatinates, summoned Desmond and Ulster to swear fealty to the crown, and met with a peremptory refusal. He was nevertheless able to lay hold of several of the recusants, and to commit the principal to the custody of the marshal of Limerick. From this restraint Desmond found means to escape; but an officer of equal ability, and still greater determination of character—Sir Anthony Lucy—having succeeded the prior of Kilmainham; Desmond was retaken and again confined; upon which he bound himself by a solemn oath of fidelity to the king, and was set free, but did not long enjoy his liberty.

Lucy proceeded to tame the barons by energetic measures. He called a parliament to take the dangerous state of the

* Some particulars have been preserved of the charges of the Irish government, about this period, which are not uninteresting. The cost of Ireland to the English crown in the 29th Edw. III. appears to have been £2,285 beyond the revenue, which was increased the year after to £2,880. In the 50th year of the same reign, the excess of expenditure over income amounted to £1,808;—during the reign of Richard, the revenue produced never defrayed the charges upon it. Smith, in his "History of Cork," vol. ii. p. 22, quotes this information from a manuscript in Trinity College Library, Tab. 3, No. 8, p. 28. A manuscript in Lambeth Library gives the salaries of the chief officers of state at the beginning of the reign of Edw. III. as follows:—Lord Justice, John, Earl of Kildare, the first who ever received a fixed sum, £500; Lord Chancellor, £40; Justice for Pleas before the Lord Justice and Council, £40; Justice Itinerant, £40; Chief Justice of King's Bench, £40; Chief Baron of Exchequer, £10; Chancellor of Exchequer, £10; King's Serjeant, £10; Engrosser of Rolls, 5d. a day, while the exchequer was open; Usher, 1½d. a day; Chaplain of the Castle, 50s. a year, and 2s. for wax.

country into consideration ; and finding his summons disregarded by the leading offenders, he seized upon their persons, and put the law in force against them. Desmond was confined in Dublin Castle, and kept there for 18 months, while a formidable body of his followers were imprisoned in Limerick. A more rigorous fate befel his ally, Sir William Birmingham, who was tried for treason, and being convicted, according to all accounts, upon clear evidence, was publicly executed in Dublin. Meantime a party of Desmond's followers sought to make an impression upon the government by attacking the castle of Nenagh. They were repulsed, and withdrew in confusion. The party in custody at Limerick rose against the constable, whom they put to death. They met with some temporary success, seized the castle, and thought to carry the city. Bamberry, the mayor, however, put himself bravely at the head of the citizens, recovered the castle, and finally stopped the insurrection by a total destruction of the Geraldines. As these proceedings clearly indicated the superior strength of government, the nobles interfered to procure Desmond's discharge. He was released upon heavy securities for his good behaviour, and ordered by the parliament* to justify his conduct before the king in person. A fall from his horse, however, by which his leg was broken, delayed his journey. Upon his recovery he went to court, and, strange to say, is described in all accounts as having met with a gracious reception. We next find this extraordinary man fighting on behalf of the government against his neighbour Fitzmaurice, the fourth lord of Kerry. Whether this service originated in a feeling of gratitude for the indulgence shown him by his sovereign ; or sprang from that insatiable passion for war which gives his career all the changing characteristics of a military panorama, it would now be hard to determine. Certain it is, however, that he performed on the occasion an act very acceptable to the king's government, and in the end not a little advantageous to himself.

The Fitzmaurices, barons and earls of Kerry, were lineal descendants of the celebrated Raymond le Gros Fitzgerald, who married Strongbow's sister Basilia. Raymond left two

* Marlborough's Chronicle, A.D. 1333.

sons, but whether by Basilia or not, is a disputed point.* The eldest settled in Kerry upon the large tract of land given by Dermod Macarty as the reward of the expedition by which his kingdom was recovered from his rebellious son. On this property Maurice Fitz Raymond Fitzgerald became so powerful, that his name was associated by way of distinction both with the district in which he lived and his own branch of the family—this being called Fitzmaurice, and that Clan Maurice. Three and twenty peers in succession prolonged this noble race until the year 1818, when the direct line became extinct in the person of Francis Thomas Fitzmaurice, who married the divorced wife of Peter Daly of Quansbury, in the county of Galway, and died without issue. A large and inelegant monument in Westminster Abbey commemorates the last of this long line. His estates passed to the more modern family of Petty, marquis of Lansdowne, who has taken the name of Fitzmaurice, and obtained the title of earl of Kerry.

Upon the lands given by Strongbow as his sister's marriage portion, of which Idrone, Fothard, and others in Leinster were principal portions, Raymond Le Gros settled a second son, by name Raymond, from whom sprung a numerous family of considerable repute—the Graces of the county of Kilkenny—whose possessions were at one period so extensive, as to pass by the name of Grace's Country.

Maurice the son, and Thomas the grandson, of Raymond le Gros, were fortunate enough to augment the tract given by Macarty—the former by a grant from Richard I. of five knights' fees in Cosmange and Molahiffe in Desmond, and the latter by a grant from King John of ten knights' fees in Ivefforna and Iveyfarba in Kerry. This Thomas married Granny Kavenagh, grand-daughter of Dermod Macmurrogh; and is to be particularly commemorated as the founder, in 1253, of the abbey of Ardfert, one of the noblest structures of the kind ever raised and endowed in Ireland, and famous above all others for its miracles.

Maurice Fitznicholas Fitzmaurice, great-grandson of

* Lodge, *Giraldus Cambrensis*, Archdale, &c.

Thomas, the founder of Ardfert, and Granny Kavenagh, was the individual against whom Desmond took up arms upon his return from England. There is nothing in the account preserved of the fourth Lord Kerry to raise any strong sympathy for the severe fate to which he was doomed. His mother was an O'Brien, and he rushed into blood with the characteristic impetuosity of that rash and implacable family. He had a quarrel with Dermod, son and heir of Macarty More; and meeting him upon the bench with the going judge of assize, in 1325, he slew him in full court. For this outrageous murder he was tried and attainted by a parliament in Dublin, but not consigned to the executioner. His lands in Desmond and Molahiffe, however, being seized, he became a formidable malcontent—married Honora O'Connor, and was a noted “associate of the Irish and disturber of the peace.” It was in 1339 that he led the great revolt which Desmond counteracted. The use made of this victory was barbarously severe. After 1400 of his men had been slain by the Geraldines, Kerry was taken prisoner and placed in close confinement. Desmond, whose first wife, the daughter of the Red Earl of Ulster, was dead, now proposed to marry his prisoner's daughter, and obtained with her hand the lands of Rathivoe, Killury, Ballyheige, and others as dower. When this forced match was celebrated, Kerry's diet was reduced to so spare an allowance, that he died within the year!

Subsequent events were destined to exhibit Desmond's unbounded arrogance and vast resources in a still more striking point of view. Edward III., who occasionally turned his attention to the state of Ireland, and seldom without some expressive demonstration of the vigour and determination of his character, issued an ordinance in 1341. This was meant to give a fatal blow to the undue power of the military barons—men properly regarded as the main causes of the alarming evils by which the country was convulsed. By this document any past remissions of debts to the crown were declared null and void; and all monies due were ordered to be levied forthwith. The privileges and grants of land made by the king and his father were revoked; and every person holding office in Ireland, who

had not an estate in England, was recalled. The Anglo-Irish married and settled upon their estates in Ireland, were pronounced unfit to conduct the public business of that country. Englishmen, therefore, having possessions and revenues in England only, were, for the future, exclusively to form the class of persons by whom offices were to be held in Ireland. So arbitrary a disqualification naturally excited a violent ferment; and as if there had not already been conflicting interests enough to distract the country, a new division of parties was now formed to contend together—the English by birth, and the English by blood.

A formidable body soon drew together for the support of the old English interest, of which the earl of Desmond, supported by his kinsman, the earl of Kildare, and most of the resident lords, took the lead, and gave undoubted proof that they were resolved to follow no half measures in vindicating the rights and privileges they had so long enjoyed. Sir John Morris, the lord deputy, summoned a parliament in Dublin; and Desmond, not content with disobeying the writ, called a rival parliament in Kilkenny, which met and was numerously attended by lords and commons. The proceedings of this independent assembly corresponded with the occasion to which it owed its existence. They styled themselves the prelates, nobles, and commons of the land, and drew up a petition of grievances, which they forwarded to the throne—not without some contemptuous references to the lord deputy, who, being only a knight, was despised by the rude noblemen he had been vainly sent to rule. They asked how a realm of war might be governed by one both unskilful and unable in all warlike service?—how an officer under the king, who entered very poor, might in one year grow to more excessive wealth than men of great patrimony and livelihood in many years?—and pointing—most pertinently of all—to the notorious loss which Ireland entailed upon the English crown, they inquired how it chanced that, since they were all called lords of their own, the sovereign lord of them all was not a penny the richer for them?

The remonstrances of this powerful and determined body, however illegally convened, appear to have had considerable

effect. It is but natural to suppose that men of their rank and knowledge of the country found it easy to set forth abuses and prove corruption, when they began to complain against the government. These, Edward was not indisposed to redress, as the numerous patents for the appointment of new officers, and various ordinances for the improvement of the government, now issued, sufficiently indicate. But while ready to punish guilty placemen, and correct the evils which had crept into the administration of Irish affairs, Edward was not the less steady to his original purpose of reducing the extravagant power and too extensive possessions of the nobility.

With the honest view of carrying out his views of improvement in this respect, Sir Ralph Ufford, a man more than commonly vigorous in mind and conduct, was appointed chief governor in 1343. Under the peculiar circumstances in which he was placed, it was hardly possible for Ufford to be otherwise than highly unpopular. With two contending parties, and both offenders also, before him, every movement towards impartial justice was sure to be regarded as an injury to one or the other. His wife, the countess of Ulster, a lady of harsh temper and covetous habits, was thought to instigate him to measures of additional rigour, and this increased the odium in which he was held by English and Irish. With Desmond, as will be readily supposed, he soon became desperately embroiled. But he was a man equal to the circumstances of the times. He summoned a parliament to assemble in Dublin, June 7, 1345; and when Desmond not only refused to attend, but, relying upon the success of his former experiment of the same kind, convened a counter meeting at Callan, in the county of Kilkenny, Ufford lost not a moment in bringing the great energies of his own character and the utmost resources of the government to bear against this arrogant disloyalty. He issued a proclamation forbidding all persons to attend the illegal convention; and hoisting the royal standard, marched directly into Desmond's territory, where he drove all before him, took Inniskisty and Castle Island, and seizing three knights, the earl's principal captains in arms, condemned them to immediate execution. Their names were Sir Eustace Poer, William Grant,

and Sir John Cotterel, and they were all hung. These measures compelled Desmond to fly. The successful governor confiscated his lands, and let them out to new owners at a fixed rent payable into the exchequer. In this extremity, 26 noblemen and knights, with the earls of Kildare and Ormonde, came forward as sureties for Desmond's appearance on a certain day. Their bail was accepted; but as he failed to render himself, the recognizances were forfeited, and of the whole number only five ultimately escaped ruin by the estreat of their estates.

Having rendered these uncommon services to his sovereign, Sir Ralph Ufford, to the great joy of his enemies, whose hatred was measured by his success, was removed from his government by death. The event was celebrated with bonfires and festivities all over the country; and affairs, under the feeble management of his successors, soon reverted to their former confusion. The council, without waiting the king's instructions, elected Sir John Fitzmorris deputy, who called a parliament, which Desmond, pleading the loss of his rank and privileges, refused to attend. Fitzmorris, unable to master the difficulties of his position, was removed; and his successor, Sir Walter Bermingham, as if to rid the Irish government of so embarrassing a question, was induced to allow Desmond a safe-conduct to plead his rights before Edward in England. There the earl once more managed his cause with a success which could hardly have been attained without some display of talent. Fortunately for him, the king was at this juncture anxious to levy troops for his wars in France—a circumstance which led him to treat Desmond with a degree of distinction corresponding with his military resources. He gave him a friendly audience, entertained him liberally, and allowed him 20*s.* a day to pay his expenses. These favours Desmond improved with such address, that in 1352 he obtained full satisfaction for Ufford's severities, and was restored to all his estates, titles and privileges. In consideration of this courtesy to his kinsman, the earl of Kildare agreed to follow the king to the French wars with a train of gallant followers, who took a distinguished part at the siege of Calais.

When the town was won, Kildare received the honour of knighthood from the king's hand, and returned home flushed with honour and success. Nor did the Geraldine tide of fortune stop here. As if to consummate the triumph of his extraordinary career, Desmond was soon after appointed lord deputy for life, and entering upon that high office, took up his residence at the castle of Dublin, from which the civil and military authorities of the kingdom had so repeatedly and so unavailingly been extended to destroy him. But he was not reserved for a long enjoyment of this unexampled fortune ;—his course was run ;—before a year elapsed, he died at the seat of government, (January 25, 1353,) and was buried in the church of the Friars Preachers, in Tralee.

From this sketch of the life of Maurice, first earl of Desmond, direct and striking proofs are to be drawn of the correctness of the view of Irish history taken in the earlier part of these outlines. It is impossible to reflect for a moment upon the exploits of this original character, without feeling that no mistake can be greater than that which supposes Ireland to have been a country ruled, at this period, by the government of the king of England—that a faithful knowledge of the progress of Irish affairs is to be gained by attempting to link a chain of national events from reign to reign, or that their movement is to be explained by a reference to the ordinary sources of public law and general authority. Nothing, on the contrary, can be more palpable than the fact, that the annals of Ireland are vexed and broken narratives of precarious struggles for barbaric sway between the heads of a few great families; who, ingrafting upon the hardened turbulence of the conquering barons from whom they sprung, the impetuous characteristics of the wild chieftains whom they displaced, formed a mixed and degenerate race, distinguished by few moral virtues and little mental refinement; but remarkable for every excess to which the animal passions of human nature can be pushed by the gratification of irregular ambition and the license of unrestricted power. To some show of religion, more politic perhaps than sincere, they added the honours of personal bravery in an eminent

degree, and an unceremonious hospitality, which was as profligate as it was profuse, because it was, in the main, unscrupulously sustained by exaction and plunder. Beyond the few good qualities comprised in this brief enumeration, they offer no claims to our praise or gratitude,—leaving us astonished at the unexampled height to which they advanced their worldly fortunes, without the instrumentality of superior virtue, or the aid of any very extraordinary circumstances in their favour.

The career of Maurice, first earl of Desmond, exhibits a broad view of the peculiar character of the body of men amongst whom he stood supreme. In his case, the history of Ireland, and the defects of its government for a series of years, are literally expressed in the life of an individual. In him, more conspicuously than in any other, we behold the invasion successful. He embodied its bold spirit in his own person, and elaborated energetically from it all the enjoyment, dominion, and distinction it was capable of attaining. Not an armour-bound knight or baron crossed the Irish Sea during the reign of Henry II., who did not paint to his imagination the bright perspective of a triumphant future, such as the first Desmond came to bask in—who did not hope to grasp a principality over which he and his descendants should reign paramount for ages—who did not expect to live to become the dictator of his own laws to his own retainers, rendering incidentally an ill-defined homage to a distant sovereign, and exacting from all around unlimited obedience to his greatness and pleasure. It was on these terms that the feudal principle had spread over Europe, and impressed its rigid forms on the soil of France, Germany and England. It was thus that dukes, marquises, and counts, under the nominal restraint of vassalage, had broken up large empires into separate territories, which they frequently governed with an authority more substantial, in many of its effects, than was enjoyed by the monarch under whom it was held.

It was for this dazzling prize, won by his forefathers on the Continent and in England, that troops of brave captains staked their lives in Ireland; but, of all who challenged it, the Fitz-

geralds alone seem to have carried it off, and to have appropriated it to themselves, in the full sense and undiminished lustre of its greatness. They gained a power only less than royal, and transmitted it from heir to heir for generations: they fought for a century before they were able to establish it; and several centuries passed before their rivals and the crown could wrest it back and beat them down. There were others, no doubt, amongst the descendants of the first invaders, who seized very large possessions, and usurped the same license; but their possessions were never extended and consolidated, nor was their license preserved with the same effect or for an equal period. The prosperity and duration of other houses appear moderate and ephemeral, when compared with those of the Geraldines—the only men in Ireland who fully realised the feudal system. While their compeers drew together and fenced themselves from danger within the narrow limits of the English pale, they pushed their independent territory over the South-west of Ireland, relied upon themselves for its defence, and maintained the supremacy they had thus acquired absolute and complete for ages.

It would be difficult to quote, from any history, the instance of a second family, bounding with the same athletic vigour into the highest seat of power, and there maintaining themselves for a length of time by the exercise of no other force than that which sufficed to place them in it. In this, more than in any other respect, the character of the Geraldines seems original. A race so true to itself—so identical for successive years, in habits, disposition, and practices—so slightly modified by time or circumstances—it would perhaps be impossible to find elsewhere. Their course and bearing were always the same—wayward, unrefined, overbearing, insolent and irresistible; and when at last that course was run, they fell—broken, but unchanged,—exhibiting, in extreme adversity, the spirit and feelings unaltered, which they displayed at the first blush and dawning of their career.

In another point of view this family attracts particular notice. Not only were the Desmonds always the same men

—identical in character and career for centuries,—but their dynasty, long as it endured, cannot be said to have effected any good, however partial, or mitigated any evil, however excessive. It seems to have been a distinctive quality of that ascendancy, as well as a substantive result of the violence upon which it was founded, that, far from being the means of improving the country, or benefiting the condition of any portion of the people, it dried up all the softening influences of civilization, and turned the most fruitful resources into a barren waste.

Another remark here suggests itself. The Irish barons, in their insubordination and licentiousness, imitated, and followed up the equally turbulent ambition of their Norman compeers in England ; but there were different circumstances in the two countries, which prevented this similar conduct from producing the same results in both. In England as in Ireland the nobility were in the constant habit of setting the crown at defiance, whenever they could discern a way to indulge their interest or their passions with impunity. In England, however, the monarchy having been raised on a strong foundation, the monarch was generally able to sustain his prerogatives with a strength which, if not always adequate to the occasion, was continuously exerted. The crown and the aristocracy were thus directly opposed; and the scale, however at times violently agitated and displaced from its equilibrium, was often fairly balanced between their contending pretensions. But this never occurred in Ireland : the royal authority in that country appears to have been set up only as a form, and never used but as a veil or apology for abuses which otherwise could not have been so conveniently committed. In England, moreover, from the earliest times, the principles of the constitution, though not always reduced to exact practice, were acknowledged on all hands ; its forms, too, were more or less faithfully observed under almost every change of circumstance ; its machinery, except at intervals, was kept in action, and a spirit nourished and encouraged, which, though not always strong and agile enough to resist

the tyranny of the sovereign, was yet in its nature sufficiently hale and vivid to outlive the occasional outrages offered to it, and ultimately to secure the liberties of the commonalty, and the prosperity of the country.

In Ireland, such a thing as the cause of the country or the community, distinct from and superior to every other, was neither known nor felt for many centuries. The life of the first Desmond exhibits the truth of this observation plainly, and shows the origin and progress of other anomalies too numerous to specify, and too gross to describe. In him, the steady valour of the Norman baron ran wild, and threw off in a rapid series of movements all its original characteristics, until, at last, no relic of a great virtue was left behind. The constant cautious, strong adventurer completely changed his nature ;—his constancy turned to rashness—his caution to self-confidence—his strength to bravado. Having carried his first project, and been successful at the main points—having made himself completely master of his own fortune, by a series of daring achievements,—he soon began to fancy himself without a superior, and indulged in a dangerous imitation of royal power. But his triumph, great as it was, had heavy drawbacks. The native enemy, though defeated, were not subdued : they rose at every opportunity, and vexed his dominion with ceaseless attacks. Thus irritated, he became desperate, and plunged into enormities disgraceful to humanity. The many contests, so fraught with danger and reward, in which he was involved with the bold and hearty chieftains of the land, incited them never to let him rest, and taught him the subtle practices of dissimulation and intrigue. The bad qualities thus acquired he played off with no mean skill against his own sovereign. Whenever he felt himself too weak to demonstrate his purpose overtly, he prepared a way by temporizing and making fair professions, to fling off the irksome pressure of authority at the first favourable opportunity ; and when completely discomfited and overthrown, he never hesitated to tender an unconditional but insincere submission, to save the rem-

nants of the scattered force on which he relied as the means of rising again, and ascending to his old pre-eminence.

To such a man everything was welcome that extended his resources, or added to his power. The license of the Irish chieftain and the franchises of the Norman baron were his by grant and acquisition, and he adopted and blended together, without any scruple or regard to consistency, so much of each as seemed either to suit his policy, or gratify his humour. A crude and ill-digested system was thus unskilfully fashioned, in which incongruous principles and conflicting usages found awkward places, but which, administered as they were by a headstrong will and iron hands, a spirit that never quailed and a pride that never bowed to a superior, must necessarily have been indomitable. When we review these details, we cease to wonder that the haughty head of such a body—the individual forcibly described by Sir John Davies as “the only author and first actor of the mischiefs which gave the greatest impediment to the full conquest of Ireland,”—should think little of bearding the king’s deputy in his palace, of fighting him in the field, or flinging him into a prison when defeated. We are less surprised to find him counteracting the king’s parliament by a parliament of his own; and we own, with a regret not unmixed with interest, though free from admiration, that he whom no prison could detain, no sureties bind, and no governor govern, accomplished a consistent consummation when he secured to himself, for life, the chief command of a country in which he had so hardily made himself supreme.

CHAPTER VI.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION WITH ENGLAND—*continued.*

FEUDS OF THE ENGLISH BY BLOOD AND ENGLISH BY BIRTH.—THE ORMONDES TAKE THE LEAD IN OFFICE.—CONCURRENT HISTORY OF THE DESMONDS.—DUKE OF CLARENCE LORD LIEUTENANT.—STATUTES OF KILKENNY.—ANATHEMAS OF THE CLERGY.—RICHARD II. AT THE HEAD OF A NUMEROUS FORCE.—CONTERS KNIGHTHOOD ON MACMURROGH AND OTHERS.—FRESH INSURRECTION.—EARL MARCH SLAIN.—RICHARD, BAFFLED BY MACMURROGH, IS SUCCEEDED BY HENRY IV.—CONTEST OF TALBOT, EARL OF SHREWSBURY, AIDED BY HIS BROTHER, THE ARCHBISHOP OF DUBLIN, WITH THE FOURTH ORMONDE.—THE LOVE-MATCH OF THE SIXTH DESMOND.—ACCUSATION, ACQUITTAL, CHARACTER, AND RETIREMENT OF THE FOURTH ORMONDE.—SECOND ADMINISTRATION OF TALBOT, EARL OF SHREWSBURY, NOW CREATED EARL OF WATERFORD, AND REWARDED WITH EXTRAORDINARY GRANTS AND PRIVILEGES.

IRELAND seems to have been destined from a remote period to violent experiments in government. These, moreover, if not always unjust in principle, have commonly been either so imprudently or so unskilfully applied, as to have proved tantamount to injustice in the effects they produced. Amongst the more frequent causes of discontent and insurrection, was the attempt to compensate for long intervals of neglect, by sudden fits of sharp efficiency. A principal grievance of this latter kind is observable in the ordinance which gave rise to the feud between the English by blood and the English by birth, referred to in the last chapter. That feud had been no sooner provoked, than the pressure of its impolitic results led to a gradual relaxation of its severity to all but the unchartered Irish. The injury was thus left to lie most heavily upon those who had the strongest claims to exemption from

such an enactment, while the great and powerful were afforded an additional proof of the advantages to be gained by a forcible resistance to the mandates of the government in England, whenever they happened to be distasteful to their prejudices, or obnoxious to their interests.

Amongst the men who had acquired a temporary popularity in the midst of the confusion evolved by these alternate restraints and concessions was Sir Thomas Rokeby, who filled the office of lord justice in 1349, and distinguished himself by a temperate virtue, a simplicity of character without any infirmity of conduct, and such perfect purity in the discharge of his various duties, as to be deservedly esteemed the mirror of good governors—"a man of sincere and upright conscience," says Campion, "who would have been deemed a precise fop in our days." His style of living was frugal, and so little costly or ostentatious, as to challenge observation; upon which he declared "that his homely cups and dishes paid truly for what they contained; and that he preferred drinking out of wooden vessels and paying gold and silver for his liquor, than drinking out of gold and making wooden payment."

The death of Maurice, the great earl of Desmond, and the connection formed by James, the first earl of Ormonde, with the royal family of England, through his marriage with Elenor, second daughter of Humphrey Bohun, earl of Hereford, by Elizabeth, seventh daughter of Edward I., facilitated the introduction of the Butlers to the highest offices for a series of years, during which only one Desmond appears to have been either lord justice or lord deputy, namely, Gerald, third son of the first earl, who was lord deputy in 1367, and two years afterwards succeeded to the family title and estates after the deaths of two elder brothers. Gerald, accordingly, was fourth earl of Desmond, and claims a word of passing praise, for having earned the name of the Poet Earl—no slight distinction in an illiterate age and amongst the unstudious race to which he belonged. The general account preserved of his attainments is highly creditable. He is described not as a poet only, but also as very learned, and so good a mathema-

tician as to have been thought a magician by the common people. Few men eminent for literary acquirements have been great in war : the Poet Earl was as unfortunate in the field as many more distinguished men of letters. In the middle of 1370, the O'Briens of Thomond and the O'Connors of Connaught joined their followers together, and made a bold attack upon his estates in Limerick. The force which Gerald, with the aid of Lord Kerry and other kinsmen, brought into the field, was inferior to that of the assailants ; nevertheless he ventured upon an engagement with them, but suffered a total rout, being made prisoner himself, with Lord Kerry, Lord Thomas Fitzjohn, and other persons of distinction. Some ties of friendship must now have been knit between Fitzgerald and O'Brien ; for we find in 1388, that Richard II. granted the earl a license to send his son James into Thomond, to be there brought up as long as it should so please him by O'Brien, notwithstanding the statutes which forbade connection or gossipry with the Irish. His death was mysterious : in 1397 he lay encamped near Kerry Island, and strolled out alone, but was never seen afterwards. No clue to the cause of so sudden a disappearance appears to have been discovered. Strange to add, his son and successor John, the fifth earl, also met with a violent death. He was a brave soldier, had served in Scotland, and had been knighted. Returning to Ireland, he renewed the family quarrel with the Butlers, although his mother was Elenor, daughter of James, the second earl of Ormonde. Against his first cousin, the son and heir of that James, the fifth Desmond, careless of the claims of consanguinity, marched with a large force into Tipperary. The two earls—for James was now third earl of Ormonde—met near the monastery of Innislaught, where a parley ensued which led to a reconciliation, and they agreed to live in peace and amity. Desmond took his way homewards with his army, and crossing the Suir at the old pass of Ardfinnan, fell into the river and was drowned, either late in 1399, or early in 1400.

Amongst the events which now contributed to put the

Butlers at the head of affairs, was the change which had taken place in the government of Ireland in 1361—a change involving other important relations for a series of years. Edward III., after a long experience of the poor results produced even by able men, when charged with the administration of that kingdom, resolved to send over his second son, Lionel, duke of Clarence, who, by his marriage with the grand-daughter and sole heiress of the Red de Burg, earl of Ulster, had acquired the titles and principal property of that powerful nobleman. By establishing a government with the highest claims to respect, and with sufficient strength to insure obedience to its commands, Edward hoped to repress the insubordination of the natives and the arrogance of the settlers. This policy was not unsuited to the circumstances of the country, but it was over acted : the duke appeared in Ireland, surrounded with Englishmen by birth, who, knowing well that the main object of their leader was to reform the colonists, and make them obey the English law and magistrate, cared not to hide the contempt they felt for men who were obnoxious because they had degenerated. These, in their turn, concluding that the slights offered to them indicated a disposition in the new governor to enforce the spirit of his father's former proclamation against them, withdrew their support from his administration, and abandoned him unaided and unadvised to fight the Irish enemy as best he might. Lionel advanced into Thomond, where the O'Briens, retreating on purpose, led him into the more intricate recesses of the district. Ignorant of the locality, and inexperienced in the mode of warfare to which he was now exposed, the royal duke found himself inextricably involved, if not assisted by the offended lords. This was no sooner applied for than it was efficiently rendered. The barons not only freed him from his difficulties, but enabled him to gain some advantages over the Irish. Having thus experienced the superior power of the body he came to subdue, Clarence returned foiled and discontented to England, leaving the feud between the English by blood and by birth waxing stronger

and more desperate every day. Thus another effort upon the part of the crown in England to administer affairs upon an improved policy, was defeated by the Anglo-Irish barons, who afforded a fresh proof of the fixed determination they had come to, either that the doomed country should be governed according to their views and behests, or not governed at all.

After an interval of a few years, Lionel was induced to resume his office. He called together, in 1367, a parliament, to consult upon the state of the nation, which met accordingly at Kilkenny, and was more numerously attended than any other upon record. Several new provisions were brought into action, which became famous in the subsequent annals of Ireland, under the name of the Statutes of Kilkenny. Sir John Davies's account of these laws and the circumstances by which they were called for, is, that the English at that time in Ireland "were become mere Irish in their language, names, apparel, and all their manner of living; had rejected the English laws, and submitted themselves to the Irish, with whom they had many marriages and alliances, which tended to the utter ruin and destruction of the commonwealth. Therefore alliance by marriage, and nurture of infants, and gossiped with the Irish, are by this statute made high treason."

"Again, if any man of English race should use an Irish name, Irish language, or Irish apparel, or any other guise or fashion of the Irish—or if he had lands and tenements, the same should be seized till he had given security to the Chancery to conform himself in all points to the English manner of living; and if he had no lands, his body was to be taken and imprisoned till he found sureties, as aforesaid."

"Again, it was established and commanded, that the English, in all their controversies, should be ruled and governed by the common law of England; and if any did submit to the Brehon law or March law, he should be adjudged a traitor."

"Again, because the English, at that time, made war and peace with the bordering enemy at their pleasure, they were

expressly prohibited to levy war upon the Irish, without special warrant and directions from the state."

" Again, it was made penal to the English to permit the Irish to creacht, or graze upon their lands; to present them to ecclesiastical benefices; to receive them into any monasteries or religious houses; or to entertain any of their minstrels, rhymers, or news-tellers; to impose or cess any horse or foot upon the English subjects against their wills, was made felony. And because the great liberties or franchises spoken of before, were become sanctuaries for malefactors, express power was given to the king's sheriffs to enter into all franchises, and there to apprehend all felons and traitors."

" And lastly, because the great lords, when they levied forces for the public service, did lay unequal burdens upon the gentlemen and freeholders, it was ordained that four wardens of the peace in every county should set down and appoint what men, and armor, every man should bear, according to his freehold or other ability of estate."

Upon these enactments, in which some little good and much evil are prominently mixed together, it is hardly necessary to enlarge. There is no room to doubt the wisdom of the policy which sought to prevent the English baron from sinking into the unenviable state of the persecuted Irish chieftain; still less is there an apology to be offered for the iniquity of the attempt to shut the great mass of the Irish people out from the pale of law, civilization and religion. The cruelty of conquest never broached a principle more criminal, unsound, or unsuccessful. It is now easy enough to see that the proper care of the statesmen of that period ought to have been the union and improvement of both races, and that this great object was only to be accomplished by elevating the native Irish to a level with the best of the English settlers, instead of degrading them into a lower caste than was to be found within the range of European society. Unfortunately, however, for both English and Irish, no enlightened views appear to have presented themselves to the eye of the legisla-

tors of those days. It is proper to add, that a late authority, Lord Chancellor Clare, has regarded the evils of the statute of Kilkenny as so much greater than the good, that he pronounced it in the parliament of his country, "a declaration of perpetual war, not only against the native Irish, but against every person of English blood who had settled beyond the limits of the Pale, and from motives of personal interest or convenience had formed connections with the natives, or adopted their laws or customs: and it had the full effect that might have been expected; it drew closer the confederacy it was meant to dissolve, and implicated the colony of the Pale in ceaseless warfare and contention with each other, and the inhabitants of the adjacent districts."

One bold feature in this transaction is painfully remarkable. The eager spirit in which the clergy supported the English party, and directed the hottest censures and most formidable punishments of the church against the opposing Irish, has more than once been adverted to. Upon the present occasion they came forward with unabated vehemence; and not content with contributing their united influence to carry the statute of Kilkenny through parliament, they promulgated, as soon as it became law, the extreme sentence of excommunication against all who violated its directions: they even had the intemperance to proclaim everything Irish abhorrent to God and man. The motives by which the clergy were actuated in these unchristian proceedings and opinions, were as censurable as the excesses themselves:—The Irish, though zealous Catholics, had always been opposed to tithes and ecclesiastical taxes, which were never recovered in the districts ruled by the native chieftains under the Brehon law. It was for this steady resistance to clerical exactions, in the tenderest and most highly prized elements of its greatness—the emoluments of office, the sources and supplies of pomp and luxury,—that the Irish were visited with the indignant anger of men whose principal care and study appear to have been the gratification and extension of their own privileges and powers.

These are the startling passages in Irish history which

move the heart most powerfully, and impel us at once to extenuate and forgive the failings and enormities with which the natives have been so unsparingly charged. Be their faults and offences what they may, a people more scandalously abused, or more cruelly sacrificed, has never existed. We here behold them despoiled and trodden to the earth, years after the English invasion, with no claim to property and no security for life ;—the very altar, to which a Christian would fly for refuge, in the midst of the despair inspired by this most comprehensive and penetrating persecution, declared a spot to which it was felony to resort ; the pastors of their faith—the men of all others whose solemn duty it was to succour them, who had bound themselves by vows registered in heaven to live for them and comfort them—not only abandoning them in their extremity, but zealously co-operating with their oppressors to add the keenest torture of the mind to acute bodily wretchedness, and render that death, to which their destitution precipitated them, doubly frightful, by the absence of religious consolation. Contemplating a whole nation thus injured, outraged, and anathematized, pity, abhorrence, and indignation arise successively in the bosom ; but subside and yield to an astonishment, not unmixed with pleasure, when we reflect, that, after all, these native Irish were not wholly overcome,—that they withstood and outlived the terrible inflictions of Church and State,—and that, though still claiming justice, they are growing in numbers, in freedom, in power and in prosperity.

Sir John Davies and some others are, or affect to be, of opinion, that the statute of Kilkenny worked essential improvements : if that was the case, the benefits produced by it must have been of slow growth, and not of a very prominent description. Ten years after it had become law, the Irish parliament, when called upon to vote a subsidy, declared that they were too poor, and negatived the motion. For a series of years, the expenses of the government still exceeded the revenue. The truth is, that Sir John could see clearly enough the faults of preceding governments, and remain at the same time

blind to the errors of the government he served. The prostration of the influence of the crown, and the ascendancy of a rampant oligarchy, was, down to the reign of Elizabeth, a prominent cause of the failure of the invasion. A greater evil, and one of much longer continuance, was the total neglect of the people, who constitute the foundation and mainspring of all national power.

At the present moment the urgency of the case suggested an extraordinary expedient—no less than a sort of Irish parliament in England. Writs issued to the barons, clergy, the counties, cities and boroughs, calling upon the bishops to return two of the clergy from each diocese, the counties two persons from each, and the cities and boroughs also two each—to meet at Westminster, as informers or commissioners, to treat with the king on the affairs of Ireland. Thither, accordingly, they repaired, but not to answer the main object for which they had been summoned. The king was known to stand in need of money, and his prelates and people of Ireland, in sending him advisers of their condition, and representatives of their opinions, specially instructed them to vote no money. There were a few exceptions, in the trading towns, such as Cork, Youghal, and New Ross, which gave their deputies unrestricted powers; but this proved an unavailing liberality when set against the opposing voices of the majority.

During this period, the Butlers, as well by the force of their own abilities and resources, as by their opportune relationship with their sovereigns, appear more frequently in the enjoyment of official power than any other family. Edward III. particularly, towards the close of his reign, and the unfortunate Richard II. bestowed many lands and honours upon James, the second earl, a man who by various qualities acquired a high reputation. He is often called the Noble Earl, says Lodge, on account of his descent from the royal family; and by the Irish, James the Chaste, on account of his modesty and virtue. He was repeatedly nominated lord deputy and lord justice—offices in which his services have been particularly commemorated, not only for exploits against the native Irish—

the vulgar merit of several ages,—but for many regulations devised and circulated in his proclamations and ordinances, for the sustenance and advancement of the English interests. When Lionel, duke of Clarence, came over as lord lieutenant, James the Chaste was one of the great men who formed his escort. The style in which he travelled on the occasion is indicated by the account of the sums allowed for the payment of his retinue, which has been preserved, and was 4*s.* a day for himself, 2*s.* each for 2 knights, 1*s.* each for 27 knights, 6*d.* each for 20 armed, and 4*d.* each for 20 unarmed hobellers.

When the duke of Clarence returned to England, he left his authority in the hands of the chaste earl, as lord deputy. The latter was vigorous in the administration of his office, successful against the insurgent Irish—amongst whom the followers of Mac Murrogh, at Feigstaffen, principally suffered from his arms—and sedulous to improve the administration of affairs. But the radical evils of an imperfect scheme of government had penetrated too deeply, and spread too widely, to prevent the expenses they occasioned, and the troubles they excited, from being frequent matters of sore complaint in England. It was under these arduous and unpromising circumstances that Richard II. undertook to pacify the country in person. It is curious to observe, that the weakest English monarchs have been those who imagined themselves equal to the labour of composing the agitated affairs of Ireland. Richard II., like John, came to Ireland with an imposing force, and all the apparent means to insure success. Some accounts, probably exaggerated, assign him an army of 4,000 men at arms, and 30,000 archers. With all this force, however, he effected nothing—he landed at Waterford in October, 1391; marched through the country with great military pomp; and received the homage of English barons and Irish chieftains, who rushed with promiscuous eagerness to throw themselves at his feet. The Irish who did homage before him were 75—a large number—offering the strongest possible proof of the complete failure of the policy adopted to subdue them. To their professions on this occasion, no weight ought to have been at-

tached ; they were—as the events soon proved—too politic not to assume an air of respect and loyalty, when a different bearing would have insured their destruction. Flattered by these appearances of devotion and easy triumph, Richard arrived in Dublin with a train, such perhaps as had never before gathered round the person of a monarch in Ireland, and held a festival of extraordinary magnificence. O'Neil, O'Brien, O'Connor and Mac Murrogh, as the heads of the Irish chiefs, having been prevailed upon to accept knighthood, were installed in the cathedral of Christ's Church, and then entertained at his own table. The Irishmen appeared decked in robes of scarlet, provided for the ceremony by Richard ; but they submitted reluctantly to the honour imposed on them, and expressed their contempt of it when conferred. Knighthood, they said, was no novelty or particular distinction to them : on the contrary, it was usually conferred upon the son of every Irish king upon attaining his seventh year. They talked, accordingly, of refusing the offer, and were only induced to yield a sullen assent to it by the entreaties of the earl of Ormonde, who spoke their language, and took pains to show them that it was proper to gratify the king. The truth was, that the Irish had no chivalry ;—they had borrowed the form of knighthood from the English, and wore armour after their fashion ; but the spirit of romantic enterprise, the soul and life-blood of the order, were never strong, and hardly felt or understood amongst a set of undisciplined military men, whose exploits bore a close resemblance to the uncertain outbreaks of the Spanish guerilla of modern times—and whose greatest expeditions were plundering forays of cattle and goods, the conflagration of a castle, or a combat of revenge. Such men would look for some more substantial favour from the English sovereign than the vain ceremony which lasted for an hour, and was forgotten the next day. They had long-standing wrongs crying for redress, disputed rights demanding adjustment, and fierce passions to quell. Knighthood from a king's hand, and a dinner at his table, were poor substitutes and paltry diversions to

satisfy men so critically circumstanced. Accordingly, when they left the royal board and presence, they carried back to the wild homes his government had driven far into the mountain and morass, no more attachment to his person, or duty to his deputy, than they had brought with them. Convincing proofs of this were soon afforded.

Richard, according to an anecdote of the period, was instigated to undertake the Irish expedition, in order to give a practical refutation to some foreign taunt that he was no warrior. And a warrior he certainly was not, however anxious he may have been to appear one. Some pains seem to have been taken to gain him the credit of a triumph by securing the submission of the Irish, amongst whom the most powerful chief, or monarch, as he was styled by his followers, was Arth. Mac Murrogh, of the family of Kavenagh, to which Dermod Mac Murrogh had belonged. From his portrait, given by Strutt, we are enabled to judge of the style and appearance of the royal Irish of that period. He surrendered his sovereignty formally by deed, and received in return a pension of 80 marks per annum, which appears to have been paid down to the reign of Henry VIII.. Amongst other memorials of the local power and extent of the possessions of the family of Mac Murrogh, are the ruins of Clonmines Abbey, agreeably situated on the banks of the Bannow, in the county of Wexford, which was founded in 1385, ten years before the surrender of the sovereignty. A castle adjoined, the remains of which indicate a similar age, and suggest a belief that this must have been a principal seat of Mac Murrogh's greatness. There is an engraving of it in Grose's "Antiquities."

Deeming this vain progress a sufficient demonstration of his military character and resources, Richard returned to England, making his cousin, the earl of March, lord deputy. The new governor naturally looked to the Irish for a fulfilment of the conditions of the late treaty, the principal of which was that they should withdraw themselves altogether from Leinster. But a bare hint to that effect was enough to rouse them to arms, and place the pensioner Mac Murrogh at their head.

In one of the fights that ensued, the earl of March was slain, and Richard, incensed at so quick a proof of the emptiness of his triumph, hurried back to Ireland, resolved upon extreme revenge. His second expedition, though somewhat more warlike, was in no respect more successful than the first. He took the field against Mac Murrogh and the Irish, who, spreading their wild forces in great numbers amidst congenial and familiar haunts, the mountain recesses of Wicklow and Wexford, appeared and disappeared at will ; and left their followers, the fatigued and famished English, to contend against the insuperable difficulties opposed by an inaccessible and unprovisioned country. Vexed and worn out by this unequal contest, Richard, as impetuous as he was weak, vowed not to leave the country unsatisfied—retreated—negotiated—found his terms rejected—and made hot and indignant preparations for a new campaign. But a more formidable enemy was on foot ; his throne was already undermined ; and having experienced disgrace and defeat in Ireland, the hapless king set sail to encounter the greater losses of his crown and life in England ; having first, however, afforded another instance of impotent sovereignty, by ordering the sons of Lancaster and Gloucester, who were with him, to be closely imprisoned in the castle of Trim.

The advancement of the Butlers during the course of these events had been steady, and so great as to raise them high above the Desmonds in power, and enable them to act the part of patron to some leading members of that family. James, the third earl of Ormonde, was a man of a large frame of body, and of considerable personal strength and skill in arms. He deserves especial notice as one who cultivated those peaceful and constitutional modes of improving his estate, by which his family had been honourably distinguished at an earlier age. He served under the earl of March in the Leinster expedition, which cost that young nobleman his life, and took Teigue O'Carrol, dynast of Ely, prisoner. His principal residence was the castle of Gowran, long the chief seat of his family, the buildings and fortifications of which he completed. Having thus effected for one residence all it seemed capable of

receiving, he addressed himself to the establishment of another, destined in after years to eclipse the former in strength, durability, and distinction. This was the celebrated castle of Kilkenny, originally built by William, earl marshal, founder of the Black Abbey in that city, who came to Ireland as heir of Strongbow, in 1207. From his heir again, Sir William le de Spencer, earl of Gloucester, James, third duke of Ormonde, purchased the castle of Kilkenny, with divers adjoining manors and lordships in 1391.* A bastion supposed to be part of the original fortification is given in Grose's "Antiquities."

The third Ormonde was deeply imbued with the spirit of politic ambition so characteristic of his race: nor was he without skill in the arts best fitted to make it prosper. Although distinguished by the unfortunate Richard II., who stood godfather to his second son, and twice nominated to the chief government during his reign—namely, as lord deputy in 1384, and lord justice in 1392—he espoused the pretensions of Henry IV., and in return was specially favoured by that usurper. Both kings conferred extraordinary powers upon him: Richard declared him by special commission keeper of the peace in Tipperary and Kilkenny, and Henry by a subsequent writ enlarged the bounds of his authority by adding Wexford, Waterford, Cork, and Limerick to the former counties. He held a parliament in Dublin, which confirmed the statutes of Dublin and Kilkenny, and the charter of Ireland; and died, after making an attack upon O'Connor's County, September 7, 1405, at his castle of Gowran. He was buried amongst his ancestors in the abbey there, of which some traces are preserved in Grose—and has

* Ledwich, in Grose, specifies the honours and dependencies of the castle of Kilkenny conveyed by this extensive purchase. "The castle itself and mills; the borough of Rosbercon and mills; the manors of Dewfert and Kildermos; the sergeancy of Iverk; all his tenements of Callan le Hill; 33*l.* 15*s.* 3*d.* in Callan, and the advowson of the church; with all the lands, tenements, advowsons, and knights' fees in Iverk, Rosbercon, Logheran, Killaghy, Rossana, Knocktopher, the new town of Jerpoint, Killamery, Ardeston, Lysdoufry, Kilfeacamauduff, and Thollena-brogue."—*Grose's Antiquities of Ireland*, p. 38.

been styled in the Annals, the "Chivalry of Ireland,"—which kingdom he governed to the content of the king and the good of his subjects.

His eldest son and heir, James, the fourth Ormonde, closely resembled him in character, and rose to even higher consequence. He served early in life against his countrymen, and also in the French wars. During the latter he received the honour of knighthood in company with Henry VI., then a youth, from the hands of John, duke of Bedford and regent of France,—the last of the heroic race belonging to the blood royal of England, who sustained the military glory of their native land upon the continent of Europe. This Ormonde seems to have been not indisposed to encourage the spirit and feats of knighthood in Ireland. He patronized the senseless practice which the force of chivalry had partially engrafted upon the common law of England, of settling private disputes by single combat. Landing from England at Waterford in 1420, he found two of his cousins—no uncommon thing with the junior members of noble families in former days—contending for rank and property; and ordered them to decide their differences by an appeal to arms, which was maintained with so much valour and obstinacy, that one of the combatants fell dead upon the field, and the other was carried away sore wounded to Kilkenny.*

The life of the fourth Ormonde was a series of official employments, civil and military, and all of an eminent character. He is commemorated for repeated engagements with Macmurrogh and the O'Nolans; with the Burks and O'Carrols; with O'Reilly and Macmahon; with O'Cavenagh and O'Neil—against whom he was generally successful, though at times his forces suffered a surprise and were severely punished, as in 1421, near the castle and monastery of Leix. The expenses of these expeditions were met by votes of money from the Irish parliament, which were in all probability obtained without much difficulty, as he generally presided over their

* Marlborough's Chronicle.

sittings—having, either as lord justice to the lord deputy for the time being, or as lord deputy in person, held the government of Ireland in his own hands oftener than any other person during the reigns of Henry V. and VI. For these high purposes he appears to have received no less than six distinct commissions. A man so eminently successful and highly honoured, naturally provoked rivals of no mean power or abilities, in an age of fierce passions and in the favourite land of encroachment and dissension. These, as Ormonde advanced in years, pressed their opposition so closely and vigorously, as to require him to make extraordinary efforts to preserve his influence with the king, and retain his accustomed sway in the government. His chief competitor for power was a man of the highest merit and reputation, whose exploits abroad were of the noblest character, and whose services in Ireland—a less glorious theatre—were not inferior to any achieved by his cotemporaries.

Amongst the soldiers who acquired fame by the skill and gallantry with which they devoted themselves to sustain the declining empire of England in France, during the reign of the imbecile Henry VI., he who ranked next to the regent, Bedford, was Sir John Talbot, created earl of Shrewsbury. His family had long held extensive possessions in Ireland, though they do not appear to have taken an active part in the affairs of that country before the period now under notice. To Sir John Talbot belongs the rare merit of having preserved the possessions of the English crown in France, during a term of four and twenty years, by a succession of the most renowned exploits—possessions retained while he lived, but lost when at last he was killed in their defence at the battle of Chatillon. It was in Ireland he “fleshed his maiden sword in victory;” constituted lord lieutenant in 1413, by Henry V., he overran the insurgent districts in a rapid series of successful movements. Having reduced to the king’s peace, in a few years, the Byrnes, O’Tooles, and Cave-naghs in one direction—the O’Mores, O’Farrels, and O’Connors in another—and the Macmahons, O'Reillys, and

O'Neils in a third—he completed his services by the capture of Donald Macmurrogh, whom he carried off prisoner to London, and delivered to the king. The lords of the Pale forwarded a written statement upon this occasion, of the sense they entertained of the value of his government, which concluded with a prayer for its continuance. But a wider field of glory had opened to his ambition : he was made general of the army in France, and remained prominently employed in that country for several years. His influence in Ireland was well sustained during this interval by his brother Richard, who obtained the archbishopric of Dublin in 1417, served as lord deputy during a part of 1419, as lord chancellor in 1428, and was subsequently lord justice on three or four distinct occasions, the last of which occurred in 1447. During all this period, James, the fourth Ormonde, and Talbot, first earl of Shrewsbury, represented by his brother, the active and able archbishop, were direct competitors for the ruling power in Ireland ; and it was through a link in that chain of politic alliances, by which interest led each party to strengthen his own side to the utmost of his resources, that Ormonde became, as already mentioned, the patron and ally of the Desmonds, so long the great opponents of his family.

The history of England is diversified about this period by an interesting piece of biography. The young Lord Clifford, when only seven years old, was hid from his enemies by his mother, in Yorkshire, and being thence driven, by the vindictive search made for him, into Cumberland, was reared as a shepherd, in the lowliest garb and mode of living—never taught to write more than his name,—and yet became, in after-life, when he had recovered his title and fortune, distinguished for the study of the sciences, and of astronomy in particular, a love of which had grown upon him while gazing upon the stars as he watched his flock. A corresponding romance, more interesting perhaps because more tragical, and to the full as authentic, is met with in the cotemporary annals of Ireland. The only son of Thomas, the fifth Desmond, drowned,

as already related, in the Suir, was a youth of tender years when that accident occurred. We have no other means of judging of his character than those furnished by the public incidents of which he was the victim ; and they suggest the idea of his having inherited few of the stern qualities by which his family had achieved their greatness, and preserved it whole and undiminished throughout successive ages of passion, corruption, and violence. Contrasted with his predecessors, the sixth Desmond seems to have been a man kind and gentle, and of so susceptible a temper, as to be unequal to contend with severe trials or to sustain adversity. Unfortunately for one so constituted, his nearest relative, an uncle named James, was, in frame of mind, in disposition, and attachments, his extreme opposite—in short, a genuine Geraldine in all the worst peculiarities of the race. Bold, restless, presumptuous, vehement, and ruthless—he seemed born to devise deep and daring plans, and carry them into execution with a vigour that never wearied or relaxed, and a heart that never pitied or repented. It is easy to conceive the feelings with which a person of this character—himself the next heir—would have seen the unmatched power of a long line of flourishing ancestors descend into the quiet hands of a youth content to enjoy them without oppressing others, and satisfied with a store more than ample for all the purposes of legitimate pleasure.

Men of an ambitious bent will make a cause, where they do not find one, to push their fortunes. The pretext laid hold of by James of Desmond to attack his nephew's inheritance, was slight in the extreme, but, in his unscrupulous hands, more than sufficient for the purpose. The young earl, returning from the chase, happened to be benighted near Abbeyfeale, the residence of one of his retainers, by name William Mac Cormac. Claiming and receiving hospitality for the night, he saw for the first time, and fell violently in love with, the daughter of his host, a young and beautiful girl, whose name was Catherine. He declared his passion—it was dis honourable, and rejected. Unable to subdue the feelings she

excited, he afterwards made her his wife—but the reward of virtue entailed fatal consequences. His immediate connections, regarding the marriage as an inferior alliance, pronounced it a degradation. The irritation of their false pride was artfully fomented by James, who soon after called upon the bridegroom to renounce a title and estates which, as he alleged, had been dishonoured by his acts. The amorous earl was ill fitted to cope with such an antagonist. Recourse having been had to arms, he was twice able to resist with some effect; a third attack, however, decided his fate. James gained the countenance of Ormonde, who saw in him a fit supporter and ally in the factious contest he was himself maintaining with the Talbots. A formal meeting took place in 1418, at Callan, in the county of Kerry—the memorable scene of a calamity suffered by his ancestors—at which Ormonde and other noblemen attended in person; and the unfortunate earl was constrained to surrender his title and estates to his uncle. By his wife, the fair cause of these reverses, he had now two children, both sons; and all he was able to procure for their maintenance were three manors—Moyallow, Broghill, and Kilcolman. Without fortitude to bear these reduced circumstances, the debarred earl withdrew to France, where he pined for some time in obscurity, and ultimately sinking under the weight of his misfortunes, died at Rouen in 1420, and was buried in Paris. Henry V. then ruled the capital, as king of France and England, and his victorious sovereign, as compassionate as he was brave, attended the funeral, as a mark of respect for the family and fate of the expatriated Desmond. During the same year Ormonde became lord lieutenant, and secured the triumph of the usurper, by sanctioning an act of parliament which confirmed the title and estates to him and his heirs for ever.

A man elevated to power by such means as the seventh Desmond had practised, was not likely to stop short in the career he had so successfully pursued. He effected a large addition to his property by producing a grant, suspected not to be genuine, of an extensive district, the inheritance of

Miles Cogan, then known as the kingdom of Cork, upon which, after expelling the families of De Courcy and Carew, he lived with all the coarse pomp of affected royalty. In this, as in the former piece of injustice, his own hardihood and Ormonde's countenance still befriended him. He received other marks of regard, which only tended to inflame his insolence. Amongst them was a license—obtained, doubtless, with a view of curing defects in the title of his new acquisitions—to purchase and hold whatever lands he pleased, notwithstanding any contrary terms of service by which they might previously have been held of the king. He was nominated governor of the counties of Kerry, Cork, Waterford, and Limerick, by one patent; and, by another, was expressly licensed to absent himself from parliament whenever he saw fit, and to send a proxy in his stead. Thus flattered and favoured, it only remained for him to give the last touch to the extraordinary character of his life and fortune, by turning upon the hand that had been so instrumental to his success, and showing that, as he never respected the rights of others when prosecuting a favourite object, so, when his ends were realised, he could spurn the patron and the policy which he had affected to value while his objects were yet distant and unattained. At the head of armed bands, the reckless followers of his daring fortune, and the rough props of its elevation, imbued with a kindred spirit of lawless adventure, and prone by habit to excess, he soon gave rise to so many and such well-grounded complaints, that Ormonde—every other appeal having failed of effect—was, at last, obliged to march all the force of government against him. A desultory campaign ensued; after which Ormonde, apparently more pressed by the intrigues of the adverse faction than by the superiority of Desmond's arms, found it expedient to bend to the authority he had assumed, and conclude with him a truce for one year.

The defection of Desmond—a man whose aid it seemed to have been the principal aim of Ormonde's policy to secure—was a signal to his enemies that his fall was approaching.

They redoubled their opposition to his government, and being abetted by Deamond, took care, while the lord lieutenant was in arms in the South, to forward the strongest expressions of discontent and remonstrance to England. These schemes produced the desired effect. Upon returning to the seat of government, Ormonde found a groom of the bedchamber waiting with a letter under the sign manual, commanding his immediate attendance in London to explain his conduct. He met the crisis with temper and address. There was an old expedient to resort to. Summoning the lords of the Pale to meet at Drogheda, he announced to them, that after having governed Ireland for three years and a half with diligent loyalty, he had been ordered, notwithstanding the dangerous state of the country, to defend himself to the king in person; but that before he obeyed the mandate he had invited the parliament to declare to the messenger whether he had committed any extortion, or been remiss in executing the laws. By thus appearing to challenge a public scrutiny, he sought to demonstrate that he was the victim of private accusation; and so won upon the lords present, that after going through the form of reviewing his conduct, it was resolved that no one there could bring forth matter of complaint against him, but, on the contrary, that all were thankful to him for a good and gracious administration of affairs. After bearing this testimony in his behalf, they further prayed the king, if he should still insist upon his presence in England, to grant him a safe conduct; and, under any circumstances, to allow his departure to be delayed until after Michaelmas, when the harvest would be gathered in: this, they added, would be to them a great comfort, and to their enemies a great confusion. These sentiments being echoed in other petitions from some of the clergy and different corporations, the order for his attendance in England was countermanded, and he continued in office for two years longer.

In 1446, however, the opposition had gained such force, that lords and commons petitioned for his removal,—setting forth specific charges of a grave character;—that he was old

and feeble, and had lost many castles because he was unable to defend them ; that he had procured the return to parliament of his own creatures, for the purpose of defending his guilty courses, opposing the king's service, and the passing of good laws ; that he had taken money from several lords for leave to absent themselves from parliament ; and had imprisoned many loyal subjects for the purpose of getting large ransoms for their release.

Having formally and in the most public manner carried these heavy accusations, the Talbots succeeded to power without much difficulty. They failed, indeed, to convict their rival of any offence ; but they had organized so strong a party, and repeated one impeachment after another with so much pertinacity, that, on the whole, Ormonde must be considered not a little fortunate in having escaped from their toils with only the loss of office. He was removed, but neither punished nor censured ; which so little satisfied his adversaries, that they twice set up a charge of high treason against him,—the last urged by the prior of Kilmainham, who went over to London, and challenged him by his champion. Lists were proclaimed in Smithfield to decide the charge by knightly combat, but the king, or rather his ministers, interfered, and very properly put a stop to a quarrel which had evidently been greatly magnified by factious resentment. In the end, honourable testimony was borne to Ormonde's character and administration in the highest quarter ;—the proceedings instituted against him were cancelled—while a writ, dated September 20, 1448, recited that he was “faithful in his allegiance, meritorious in his services, and untainted in his fame ; that no one, on pain of the king's indignation, should revive the accusations against him, or reproach his conduct ; and that his accusers were men of no credit, nor should their testimony be admitted in any case.”

No acquittal could have been more triumphant, or more soothing to the feelings of a retired public man, particularly as the writ was issued during the lieutenancy of his successor and great rival, the earl of Shrewsbury, and tested by the most in-

veterate of his personal enemies, Talbot, archbishop of Dublin. He survived this event four years, and found some further occupation in those never-ending engagements with the Irish, which formed part of the customary avocations of men of his rank. He died at Ardee, August 23, 1452, and was buried in St. Mary's Abbey, Dublin.

It would not be very easy—and even if it were easy, it would hardly be useful—to investigate the long public life of the fourth Ormonde closely, and discover how far there were real grounds for the charges brought against him; whether he was superior to or no better than his compeers and accusers; and whether the firm zeal by which he and his father had signalised their attachment to the house of Lancaster, may have tended, in the scales in which he was ultimately weighed, to turn the balance in his favour. At this distance of time, and under such very different circumstances, the example—whether of good or ill, which cannot be repeated—is obsolete and valueless. There are, however, some traits in his character, and a few passages of his government, which admit of no second opinion, and redound highly to his credit. He did much to civilize and refine the civil institutions of his country. He was the first to found a College of Arms in Ireland—no mean or tasteless improvement in such an age—which he endowed with lands for its support. He was fond of antiquities, a student of history, and a patron of men of letters. To his influence in this respect we may trace some of the oldest polemical disputations connected with the history of his country. One of these was addressed to himself by James Young, under the title of “*Precepts of Government*”—another was written by Giles Thornton, treasurer of Ireland, upon the subject of his government,—and a third, strongly inculpatory of it, by Archbishop Talbot, which is cited by Ware, and headed, “*De Abusu Regiminis Jacobi Comitis Ormoniae dum esset locum tenens Hiberniae.*”

The return of the Talbots to power was signalised by the re-appointment of the celebrated chief of the family to the lord lieutenancy, and his personal assumption of the office. He came over in 1446 at the head of 700 English troops; but his

administration, though not deficient in tact and energy, can hardly be considered equal to the reputation he had gained as the successful general of the French wars. He fought O'Connor, and compelled him to enter into submissive terms of peace, and pay a large ransom for his son, whom he had taken prisoner. Further, it can only be remarked of his second administration, that if the natives were not completely reduced, their commotions did not increase. He sent over to England, as evidence of his success and their subjection, a number of Irish black cattle, which were slaughtered for the king's kitchen; and having obtained the earldom of Wexford, received the additional dignities of baron of Dungarvan and earl of Waterford, to which were annexed some high privileges and very valuable grants. The city and county of Waterford, the castle, lands, and barony of Dungarvan, with *jura regalia* over all, a right of wrecks, &c. from the city of Waterford to the borough of Youghal—the bounds of the county—were conferred upon him and his heirs for ever. He and his heirs were at the same time made stewards of Ireland, to do and execute all things to that office appertaining, as fully as the steward of England executed his office for the sister country. A year having passed in this grateful manner, Shrewsbury returned to England, leaving his brother, the archbishop, lord deputy in his stead. Another year put a period to the career of that equally active churchman and politician, who was buried in St. Patrick's Cathedral, after having sat in the archiepiscopal see for three and thirty years. Ere long the triple earl was recalled to France, the true theatre of his fame, where he found a soldier's grave at the battle of Châtillon, in 1453, at the advanced age of 80 years. None of his descendants appear to have sought to maintain the eminent station he had occupied in Ireland, and henceforward the Talbots, as the chiefs of a party, or an influential family, cease to hold a conspicuous rank in the history of the country. Rising suddenly on the tragic stage of Irish contention, and vanishing from it as quickly as they appeared, they must be held to have owed their elevation as much to Archbishop Tal-

bot as to the triple earl of Shrewsbury, Wexford and Waterford. Possessed of no common talents for intrigue and management, and deriving from the primacy considerable influence for keeping his party well together, that dexterous prelate offered, in his brother, the strongest of all attractions in political contests—a head and leader with a great name and reputation. He was the first Irish politician with whom we are acquainted who laboured to improve the government of his country by his writings; and, singular enough, his Tract, already mentioned, on the abuses of the earl of Ormonde's administration, was followed up, even at that early age, by ready pamphleteers. Giles Thornton, treasurer of Ireland, wrote on the same subject, as did Jordan, bishop of Cork and Cloyne, whose epistle to Henry VI. has been preserved by Sir James Ware.

CHAPTER VII.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION WITH ENGLAND—*continued.*

IRISH AFFAIRS FOR THE FIRST TIME AN INTEGRAL PART OF THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND.—THE CIVIL WARS OF YORK AND LANCASTER EXTENDED TO IRELAND.—RICHARD, DUKE OF YORK, CHIEF GOVERNOR.—DEVOTION OF THE ANGLO-IRISH TO HIS CAUSE.—EXTRAORDINARY ASCENDANCY AND FALL OF THE EARLS OF KILDARE.—TWO LORD DEPUTIES AND TWO PARLIAMENTS MAKING AND EXECUTING LAWS TOGETHER.—LAMBERT SIMNEL CROWNED KING OF IRELAND.—SIR E. POYNINGS AND HIS LAWS.—IMPRISONMENT AND DEATH IN THE TOWER, OF GERALD, EARL OF KILDARE.—EXECUTION OF HIS SON AND FIVE BROTHERS AT TYBURN.—PERSECUTION OF THE HOUSE OF DESMOND.—THE TEN YEARS' WAR AGAINST GERALD, EARL OF DESMOND.—HIS MISERABLE DEATH, CONFISCATION OF HIS PROPERTY, AND EXTRIPLATION OF HIS RACE.

We have now to treat of a period during which the affairs of Ireland constitute, for the first time, an integral portion of the history of England. The civil wars of York and Lancaster involved in their disasters the principal families settled in Ireland, and made them eager parties to the bloody quarrel that had nearly depopulated both countries. These unquestionably were new ingredients in Irish politics; but they produced no lasting effects. We find the old leaven working its way, ere long, to the surface; and bringing back all the rude characteristics, which, for a brief interval only, had ceased to present themselves.

The usurpation of Henry IV. was not a wrong to the unfortunate Richard only—for the act supplanted an elder branch of the heirs of Edward III. While King Richard yet lived, he had recognized the next heir to the crown, Mortimer, earl of March, who fell, without glory, during the incursion

into Leinster narrated in the last chapter. Mortimer's title passed to his sister Anne, who married the earl of Cambridge, beheaded by Henry V., leaving a son, Richard, duke of York. In him, therefore, there was an heir to Philippa, daughter of the duke of Clarence, second son of Edward III. Henry IV., being the issue of the third son of that monarch, could have no just pretensions to the throne while the heirs of the elder branch survived.

It has already been stated, that the duke of Clarence, progenitor of the house of York, acquired, with the earldom of Ulster, and other titles, large possessions in Ireland, by his marriage with the grand-daughter and sole heiress of the Red de Burg. That inheritance, and others even more extensive and valuable in England, fell, when the earl of March was slain, to Richard Plantagenet, duke of York, then a boy only 14 years old. At a time so rife with deadly animosities, and so fruitful of desperate crimes, the youth of the rightful heir to the crown was the best security for his life. He was bred to arms, and became an accomplished soldier, holding the king's lieutenancy in France. He was sent over to Ireland as his predecessor, the earl of March, had been, because his presence in England was thought to offer to the discontented lords of that agitated realm too formidable a head for the rebellion they were suspected to be well inclined to engage in.

This event occurred in 1449, and produced striking consequences. The terms upon which the duke of York consented to become lord deputy betrayed as much the anxiety of the English court to remove him, as the sense he entertained of his own importance. The period of his government was fixed at ten years—it was agreed that he should receive the whole revenue of Ireland, without accounting for his expenditure of it—and further, that he should let the crown lands, place and displace all officers, and levy forces as he should think proper. 2000 marks were paid in advance, to meet the costs of his outfit; and a pension of 2000 more was settled upon him, to cover the expenses which a vigorous administration in the existing state of Ireland was considered to require.

These royal powers and liberal resources were well calculated to attract attention : but the duke of York had personal qualities still better adapted to win a legitimate popularity. Brave without temerity, and possessed of talents and a judgment which rendered him equally distinguished in the council chamber and on the field of battle,—a good speaker, and as courteous in his expressions as he was polished in his manners,—he was further recommended to all hearts by a natural goodness of disposition, which the stern character of the age had seldom exhibited in men of his rank. His government, commended by all historians, was on a large and imposing scale, corresponding with the extent of his authority and the splendour of his wealth. Numerous tenants, from his Irish estates, crowded to his court ; and as he stood clear of party distinctions, and leaned to none of the baronial factions by which the country had been so violently harassed, he escaped envy and resentment. All were glad to pay respect to a prince who entertained all with equal cordiality and magnificence. To so nice a point did he carry the observance of this even-handed policy, that when his second son, George, duke of Clarence, was born in the castle of Dublin, he chose the rival earls of Desmond and Ormonde to be his sponsors. Nor was his conduct to the native princes less worthy : he observed the conditions of the treaties in force with a degree of faith not always displayed ; and expressed an anxiety for improving the condition of the occupiers of the soil, which gave his authority a paternal character unknown in the previous annals of the country. Thus endeared to every rank, peace and prosperity became the companions of his government ; and the White Rose, taking root in the affections of the people, long survived the reverses which soon after beset its principal hero.

Admirably as the duke fulfilled his engagements, the English court does not appear to have kept with him the faith he observed with others. An interesting letter, preserved in Campion, tells us that the large salary promised to him soon fell into arrear, and that his means of keeping the country tranquil were much straightened.

Right worshipful, he begins, and, with all my heart, entirely

beloved brother, I commend me to you as heartily as I can. May it please you (the tenour and not the particular expression or order of the letter is here quoted) to know that since I wrote his highness our sovereign lord the king, Mageoghehan, the Irish enemy, with three or four Irish captains, associating with a great fellowship of English rebels, have, notwithstanding their allegiance, maliciously and revengefully burnt a large town of mine, Rhamore, in the county of Meath, together with other villages thereabouts, murdering and burning men, women, and children, without mercy. These enemies are still assembled in woods and forts watching their opportunity to molest the king's subjects. For this reason I now write to the king's highness, beseeching his good grace to hasten my payment for this country, according to the warrant lately given to the treasurer of England, so that I may wage a sufficient number of men to resist our enemies, and so punish them, that others who would do the same, if unresisted, may take warning. For, doubtless, if my pay be not received in all haste to procure men for the defence and safeguard of this land, my power will not stretch to keep it obedient to the king, and very necessity will compel me to come into England and live there upon my poor livelihood. I had rather be dead than any inconvenience should be felt from fault of mine. It shall never be chronicled, nor remain in writing, by the grace of God, that Ireland was lost by my negligence. I therefore beseech you, right worshipful brother, that you will hold to your hand instantly, that my payment may be had at this time, eschewing all inconveniences. I have been taught by examples in other places to dread shame, and to acquit my truth to the king's highness, as is my duty. I pray and exhort you, my good brother, to show this to his good grace, and that you will be so good as to have my language recorded in the present parliament as my excuse in time to come, and that you will be good to my servant, Roger Roe, the bearer hereof.

Written at Dublin, the 15th of June.

Your faithful true brother,

RICHARD YORK.

This appeal, in all probability, had the desired effect, as we find the duke soon after leading a force against Mac Geoghan, and dissipating the apprehended danger. The Abbé Mac Geoghan boasts that his tribe kept to their arms and fastnesses, and could not be reduced ; but it is certain that the chief entered into a treaty, and finding the terms of it honourably observed by the duke's officers, took care to offer no provocation on his part for a renewal of hostilities. He was content, says Leland, to boast to his followers, that he had given peace to the king's lieutenant.

Sir John Davies, who generally writes with impartiality, and reasons correctly upon the events he narrates, dismisses the administration of Richard, duke of York, briefly, and in rather disparaging terms. Speaking of the courses taken to reform Ireland, he says, “Albeit, in the time of King Henry VI., Richard, duke of York, a prince of the blood, of great wisdom and valour, and heir to a third part of the kingdom at least, being earl of Ulster, and lord of Connaught and Meath, was sent, the king's lieutenant into Ireland, to recover and reform that realm, where he was resident in person for the greatest part of ten years ; yet the truth is, he aimed at another mark, which was the crown of England. And, therefore, he thought it no policy to distaste either the English or Irish by a course of reformation, but sought, by all means, to please them, and, by popular courses, to steal away their hearts, to the end he might strengthen his party when he should set on foot his title.”

This account does not present a fair view of the duke of York's character and conduct. He unquestionably aimed at the English crown, and neglected no honourable act likely to favour his attainment of that great object. At the same time, there appears no ground for believing that he carried popularity by base practices, or made a rampant party in his favour, by allowing any one set of men a license to abuse the rest of the community. On the contrary, there is room to observe of him more pointedly than of many others, that he had the good sense to perceive how easily a smooth path to

popularity is opened by simple justice. It is certain that no one could have gathered to a cause a greater number of supporters than the duke won to his; and there is no evidence to prove that unworthy means were resorted to for the purpose. In the two parliaments he held, one at Dublin, and one at Drogheda, different Acts were passed to curb the privileges and punish the exactions of the great lords and landowners, and to prevent grievances in the administration of the law. It was not, therefore, by indulging the views or tolerating the enormities of the aristocracy, that he drew adherents round him; for he aimed strong and effective blows against many of those who were the most likely to minister to his ambition. It was by a mild exercise of authority, by a gracious deportment to men, who being proud, were quick to appreciate uniform urbanity in a superior, and by an impartial recognition of every just claim to distinction, that he was enabled to add to the comfort and security of the mass of the people, and concurrently to make sure friends of the very magnates who had previously been in the habit of using that mass as a body of vassals created and subsisting, like the beast of the field, for their profit and enjoyment. In the still more difficult task of composing the jealousies of the leading families around his person, he was equally successful. The Geraldines and Butlers were alike distinguished at his court; and though Ormonde was well known to favour the house of Lancaster, no obstacle was offered by the duke to prevent a parliament at Drogheda from voting the king an address of thanks for his late acquittal of that earl. When soon after the duke returned to England, he left Ormonde in the chief command as his deputy.

The influence acquired by such an administration, excited, ere long, the natural fears of the court of England. It was then contended that every step taken by the duke was studiously directed to party purposes; he was denounced as being deeply involved in plots to secure the crown,—was accused of instigating Jack Cade's insurrection, and declared to be preparing an army for a descent upon England. So formidable did

the reports to this effect appear in London, that letters were despatched to the sheriffs of Wales, Shropshire, and Cheshire, calling upon them to oppose his landing. The duke, however, did land, but not at the head of a hostile force. He came peaceably and privately to vindicate himself to Henry, and as if to show how little of mischief he meditated in Ireland, Ormonde, as just stated, a decided partisan of the House of Lancaster, was the person he deputed to govern in his absence. This frank proceeding led to an apparent reconciliation, after which the duke retired to his estates in Wales. Ormonde being soon after summoned over to England, his place as deputy was successively filled by John May, archbishop of Armagh, and Sir E. Fitz-Eustace, a military commander of high character, who vindicated his fame by defeating the sept of O'Neil in a fierce engagement at Ardglass, with the loss of 700 slain.

The duke of York's retirement cut asunder the ties of peace in both countries. A prince of Wales was born, and his friends lost all patience. The king's imbecility, it was asserted, incapacitated him from governing, and parliament appointed the duke of York protector and lieutenant of the realm. Both parties now hastened to test their pretensions by force of arms, and a battle was fought at St. Albans, in which the duke, carrying the field, obtained possession of the king's person and all the authority of government.

The victor was not slow in turning this advantage to his best account. He adopted decided measures to strengthen his interests in every direction. Displacing Fitz-Eustace in Ireland, he gave the administration of that country to the earl of Kildare, a devoted ally and an implacable rival of Ormonde, who led the Irish Lancastrians. Complete success would, in all probability, have crowned the efforts of one so able and accomplished, had not Margaret, queen of Henry VI., been a woman of superior capacity and amazing spirit. She rallied her husband's party, and defeating the duke at Blore, regained the ascendancy, and made a precipitate return to Ireland his best policy.

No conqueror could have been welcomed with more joy than the discomfited governor. All the natural enthusiasm of the Irish heart, and that lively, inextinguishable devotion, which the people have, in all ages, been celebrated for lavishing upon their favourites and benefactors, burst forth with a generous warmth. They thought not of the defeat their hero had sustained—they knew he needed countenance, support, and followers, and these they resolved to give promptly and energetically. While a parliament in England attainted him in form, and proclaimed his adherents rebels and traitors, another parliament in Ireland passed an Act confirming the patent, by which the king had made him lieutenant of that country, and declared it treason to imagine, compass, or effect his destruction or death. The king's writ was sent over to seize and bring some of his followers to justice, but the authority was disregarded, and one messenger, an agent of the earl of Ormonde, who ventured to act upon it, was seized, tried, and executed as a traitor.

This devotion was triumphantly rewarded. A fortunate diversion in the duke's favour resulted from the battle of Northampton, in which his partisans were victorious, and he took his departure from Ireland, escorted by so numerous a throng of barons, knights, gentlemen, and soldiers, that the country was said to be literally drained of its occupiers. At the head of this body he reached London, where the parliament, awed by the presence of his party, declared him successor to the crown. Thus far the Irish had full cause to be proud,—they had restored their benefactor to the rights of his blood, and elevated a prince to the throne.

But the indomitable Margaret was still busily engaged. She roused the beaten friends of the house of Lancaster, and brought together a force in the North of England, which grew so rapidly in strength, that the duke found it necessary to hasten from London to encounter it. The Lancastrians now amounted to 20,000, while the York party mustered no more than 5,000, principally Irish. Hoping to overcome the disadvantage of greater numbers by superior

valour, the duke gave battle, and was overwhelmed. The field bore conclusive testimony to the gallant spirit by which he and his small army were animated. Scarcely a man survived. So utter was the slaughter of the Anglo-Irish, that for years after, their lands lay unprotected; and the native chieftains, taking advantage of their defenceless state, fell upon the few who still occupied them, and found it an easy matter to compel them to pay tribute, and to purchase peace on any terms.

The council of Ireland, upon recovering from the consternation produced by the defeat of their chivalry, and the death of their hero, proceeded to elect a chief governor, pending the king's pleasure, as it was termed. True to the spirit by which the whole country had been so vividly animated, their choice fell upon Thomas, earl of Kildare, the boldest and most active member of the York party in Ireland. He was in many respects well suited to hold the highest post at such a juncture. Head of the Geraldines of Kildare, and nearly as powerful by the extent and value of his possessions as his cousin, the Geraldine of Desmond, he was particularly distinguished by rough natural talents, and a hearty courage, that imparted a certain air of dignity to its wildest excesses. Taking the lead now of all other Irish lords in directing the affairs of Ireland, he ran one of those terrific careers, such as the race to which he belonged so frequently entered upon—a career insolent and irregular, big with tragic vicissitudes, chequered by repeated reverses and elastic recoveries—now bright with the purple and gold in which triumph arrays her favourites—now crimsoned with the blood by which, in evil days, success is achieved and upheld—and now dark with the horrors of failure, disgrace, and punishment. His heirs sustained his character and position for a long period: thus the history of one family again becomes the history of the whole country for full a century. This ascendancy was preceded by a short and unfortunate interval, during which a kindred Desmond swayed the island.

Edward IV., upon ascending the throne, confirmed Thomas,

earl of Kildare, in his office, but soon after gave it for life to his own brother, George, duke of Clarence. The latter appointed Sir Roland Fitz-Eustace, now created Lord Portlester, as his deputy; but he was soon after required to make way for Kildare's relative, who had gained a singular and sanguinary advantage, on the king's behalf, against the Butlers. The cause and circumstances of this quarrel were of the old character. James, fifth earl of Ormonde, created earl of Wiltshire in the English peerage, by the late king, had been seized and summarily beheaded, as a rebel, by the followers of the house of York. His brother, and heir, Sir John Butler, took up arms to revenge this party cause, and being supported by some Irish septs, and many Lancastrian fugitives from England, presented so formidable an array to the deputy, as to render it prudent for the latter to solicit the aid of Desmond. This was readily granted: it was a point of family honour with the Geraldine to fight a Butler whenever an opportunity offered. Desmond marched forth, at the head of an irregular force, from Shannatt Castle, where he maintained his barbaric court. A desultory campaign of varying fortunes ensued, until the English allies of Sir John Butler, worn out by the harassing fatigues of a service carried on over bogs and mountains, entreated their commander to try their valour in the open field. The two forces met near Wexford—the Geraldines relying on their spirit and numbers, the Butlers on English discipline and their own courage. Here the strength of the Geraldines proved irresistible: after driving their enemies from the field, they proceeded to Kilkenny, seized and plundered Ormonde's castle and the principal towns of his territory, and compelled the surviving remnants of his routed retainers to take refuge in distant forts and obscure fastnesses. It was to reward this sweeping victory of the house of York over the Lancastrians, that Desmond was nominated lord deputy. But for this high office he had few befitting qualities. Hurried on by the characteristic ambition of the absolute palatine of Desmond, he despised the proper duties of a royal governor, and was vain, rash and impolitic. His first en-

terprise as lord deputy was mortifying. The native septs invaded Meath: he proceeded to repel them, and was taken prisoner, but rescued by a steady ally, O'Connor of Offaly. The O'Briens of Thomond next provoked his arms, and he terminated his contest with that fierce band, as illegally as ingloriously, by promising to pay them tribute. In less formidable quarters his exactions were enormous, and his plunder of the people ruthless. So wild and lawless was his career of extravagance, that Sherwood, bishop of Meath, sent emissaries to England to complain of his outrageous government. Desmond took prompt steps to counteract this attempt to subvert his rule. Calling a parliament at Wexford, he obtained flattering testimonials of his public services, and leave to appoint a vice-regent, while he repaired to defend himself before the king in person. On this mission he was completely successful, and felt so grateful for the reception given him by his sovereign, as to cause several statutes to pass in the next parliament he summoned, for the better defence of the Pale, for the improvement of its inhabitants, both in manners and habits of life, and a closer approximation to English institutions.

Notwithstanding these grateful measures, the innate pride of his family ere long precipitated his downfall. The king married Elizabeth Grey, and Desmond, boastful of his own high descent, indulged in some contemptuous remarks upon her majesty's low origin, which were quickly reported at the English court. Out of this gossip, as we are told, arose the nomination of Tiptoft, earl of Worcester, as lord deputy, who was peremptorily instructed to scrutinize with strictness the acts of Desmond's administration, and to punish with severity any charges which could be sustained against him. A parliament was soon formed to meet the views of the new governor. They began their work with an act against paying tribute to the Irish, which would have been proper enough, if many of its authors had not made themselves notorious by their violation of its principle. They proceeded to enact, that as the kings of England held the lordship of Ireland by grant from the Holy See, all archbishops and bishops should, after a monition of forty

days, excommunicate all disloyal subjects as heretics ! This done, they crowned their servile labours by attainting the earls of Kildare and Desmond, with E. Plunket, Esq. Desmond, indignant at such treatment, came boldly forward to face the danger, and was beheaded without trial ! Kildare was made prisoner, but contriving to escape to England, profited largely, either by the force of his appeal, by the indignation universally felt at the violation of all the forms of justice in his cousin's violent death, or by the peculiar effect, which had so often proved irresistible in the case of many of his ancestors, produced upon the royal mind by the originality of his appearance and address. Not only were his titles and estates restored, but he was replaced in his former office of lord deputy ; while Tiptoft, doomed to suffer the fate which has so commonly and so justly befallen the creatures of tyrannical power, returned to England discomfited and discontented, and there joining a new conspiracy, soon after lost his own life as he had taken the life of Desmond.

Kildare signalized his second administration by an act of no mean political ability. He founded a military order, called the Fraternity of St. George, consisting of the great landowners of the Pale, and a chosen body of knights, esquires, and archers, amongst whom thirteen persons of the highest consequence in the four counties of Kildare, Dublin, Meath and Argial, took the lead. The earl himself, Lord Portlester, and his brother, Sir E. Fitz-Eustace, stood for the first ; Lord Howth, Sir R. Dowdal, and the mayor of Dublin for the second ; Lord Gormanstown, Edward and Robert Plunket, and Robert Taaf for the third ; Sir Lawrence Taaf, Richard Bellew, and the mayor of Drogheda for the last. They were to assemble annually on St. George's day, to express their zeal for the English government, and to choose their captain, who was to have a train of 120 mounted archers, and 40 other horsemen, each with an attendant. For the support of this troop the fraternity received authority to levy twelve pence in the pound on all merchandize sold in Ireland, except hides, and any goods be-

longing to the freemen of Dublin and Drogheda. The avowed objects of this institution were the defence of the Pale and the maintenance of the English interest ; but its real purport was the muster of an array strong enough to defeat the native Irish, and also to control the king's government. Had the founder of this body been allowed sufficient time to train it to the different uses it seems to have been calculated to render, his ambitious authority, fortified by so formidable a sustaining force, might have long endured supreme ; but his plans were interrupted. While he was acting in Ireland, John Butler, heir to the last attainted earl of Ormonde, animated by the spirit of antagonism which had always distracted the two families, was recommending himself to the royal friendship, and undermining his rival's influence at the English court. Backed in this artful line of conduct by the complaints of unprincipled abuses and cruel wrongs which never ceased to pour from Ireland, and by the vacillation which never failed to accompany the English policy, he ultimately effected the appointment of Sherwood, bishop of Meath, as lord deputy. The bishop was Kildare's personal enemy, and therefore Ormonde's friend. Summoning without delay one of those factious parliaments ever ready to meet when extreme measures were to be carried, he repealed the acts of attainder against Ormonde, and gave him back the earldom and estates enjoyed by his ancestors.

This sudden change threw the whole kingdom into confusion : in all quarters the family feud of the Butlers and Geraldines raged with desperate fury ; in vain the king commissioned the archbishop of Armagh to act as a mediator, and compose the general discord ; no law, authority, or dominion, but those of arms and brute force, prevailed, when, fortunately for all parties, Ormonde, impelled either by remorse or devotion, proceeded on a pilgrimage to Jerusalem. Soon after his departure Kildare died, leaving the Geraldines evidently predominant both in England and Ireland, for his son Gerald, the eighth earl, became deputy.

Ere long, Edward felt the usual distrust at the administration of an Irish deputy, and sent over his brother-in-law, Lord Grey, to assume that office. It was now that the haughty chieftain of Kildare, displaying at its full height the ascendancy acquired by his father, rivalled his kindred of Desmond in the temerity of his proceedings and his unlimited contempt for king and laws. He led the Irish lords to except to the form of the king's appointment, and then flatly refused to obey the royal letter in which it was given. Grey, nevertheless, proceeded to act upon his commission, at which Kildare, nothing daunted, continued his own office, and summoned and prorogued parliaments as if still the unremoved and undisputed representative of the crown. There were now, therefore, two lords deputies, and two parliaments ; and both of them were making laws and carrying them into execution. Portlester, the chancellor, supported Kildare, and carried the mace before him ; while Keating, the turbulent prior of Kilmainham, and constable of Dublin Castle, fortified the walls against Lord Grey, and repelled him from the gates by force of arms. Grey's parliament annulled the acts passed by Kildare's body, and cancelled the great seal retained by Portlester.

While this contention was still raging, the duke of Clarence died ; and King Edward giving the succession to the duke's son, George, an infant, declared Lord Grey his deputy. The opposition parliament met this appointment by a counter-proceeding. They assembled together boldly, styling themselves his majesty's council, and unanimously elected Kildare as his deputy.

Worn out, at length, by this obstinate resistance, and the general turmoil created by it, Edward summoned Kildare, the archbishop of Dublin, and others, to explain matters before him, and take his own instructions as to their future conduct. At about the same time Lord Grey returned, and was succeeded by Lord Gormanstown. This latter step pleased Kildare's party, for Gormanstown was an original member of the Fraternity of St. George, who were plainly bent upon making Ireland their own.

Kildare experienced the usual success at court. Either his excuses appeared so fair, or his power seemed so formidable, that it was deemed useless to continue the altercation with him. Young Clarence had died, and his brother Richard, duke of York, was now lord lieutenant. To him Kildare was declared deputy for four years, and allowed a train of 140 horsemen, and a maintenance of £500 a year; and if the Irish revenue should prove unequal to the payment of the money, the deficiency was to be made good in England. No victory was given to either of the rival parliaments. A selection of the statutes passed by each was made, and these it was determined to re-enact in a new parliament, with an unobjectionable title.

The earl of Kildare now enjoyed a pre-eminence which, if not unprecedented, had never been surpassed. The confidence reposed in him by Edward, and the powers expressly vested in him by the parliament, which he convoked, to carry out the instructions given him during his recent visit to England—and which he seems to have fairly observed—made him even more than king. He ruled absolutely within the Pale by the royal authority, and out of it by the respect, denied to other English lords, but yielded to his office by the native Irish. Inconsistent as Kildare's observance of the royal advice and pleasure may at a first glance appear, it agreed perfectly with the policy which he, his party and predecessors, had always acted upon. As it was their main object to be the actual governors of the country, a colourable subordination to England was not disagreeable to them. On the contrary, it suited their scheme to yield to that authority, when they were enabled, by so doing, to establish one still more absolute. The men who enjoyed frequent opportunities to commit enormous abuses, without being rebuked or punished, could not always refuse to comply with the demands of the crown: they would even yield occasionally to encroachments upon their own rights, while privileged to encroach still more upon the rights of others.

In this unusual state of high interest at the English court, and strong influence over both races in Ireland, Kildare continued to govern without interruption during the remainder of

the reign of Edward IV., during the short reign of Edward V., and the usurpation of Richard III. He was, in point of fact, too powerful to be interfered with or removed. It was upon this conviction, no doubt, that Henry VII., notwithstanding his strong attachment to his own house of Lancaster, retained Kildare at the head of the Irish government. A similar feeling had led the accomplished Ormonde, when recovering the English title of earl of Wiltshire, held by his father, and obtaining a seat at the privy council, to abandon the troubled theatre of Irish contention, and confine his residence to England. Kildare thus stood single and supreme. But political appointments, when they do not rest on the basis of mutual confidence between the patron and the servant, and are only recommended by the suggestions of expediency, are of an uncertain tenure.

Rumours of insurrection, and intimations of conspiracy in Ireland, began to be busily circulated through the English court, all pointing to a romantic tale of the escape of one of the children of Richard, duke of York, from the hands of assassins in the Tower, who was to appear in Ireland at the head of the old friends of his ancestry. By degrees the story gained ground, and so moved the king, that he called upon Kildare to appear and render an account of the state of the country. The lord deputy, however, seems to have been fully apprised of the difference between the characters of Edward IV. and Henry VII., and to have apprehended that the invitation might be an artifice contrived to destroy him. In this difficulty he imitated the example, now centuries old, set by one of the most famous of his ancestors, Raymond le Gros. Convoking his barons formally together, he laid the royal mandate before them, with an expression of his anxious desire to obey it. Against such a step the council remonstrated in form, upon the ground that the government would be perilled, if the lord deputy should leave the country. Henry either felt, or affected to be, satisfied with the excuse, and Kildare was not long in affording overt proof of disloyalty. Lambert Simnel reached Ireland, and, after having been en-

tertained by the deputy with sovereign pomp, was proclaimed king in Dublin, and was crowned in the cathedral. Parliament was summoned to appear before him, under the title of Edward VI., when the arrival of some German troops to aid his cause, raised the hopes of his sanguine partisans to so high a pitch, that they determined to invade England.

Two brothers, of the house of Fitzgerald, were despatched to lead their fellow countrymen, who, ere long, came in contact with the royal army at Stoke, near Newark. The high and ardent passion with which the Irish cherished the house of York, was displayed upon that field with unabated vigour. Though opposed by superior numbers, and more lightly armed, the victory was long doubtful. Driven from their position they rallied, charged anew, and when again beaten, died almost to a man upon the spot rather than seem to abandon the White Rose in flight.

Henry not only pardoned this daring act of rebellion in the lord deputy, but continued him in his office. It was not generosity nor mercy that dictated this forbearance, but caution. He felt that he was not yet strong enough to act as he desired with perfect security. He still required the strength of the English settler to keep the oppressed natives in subjection; and he prudently resolved to bide a better time. A royal deputation traversed from Kinsale to Dublin, and received afresh, as subjects, all those who gave assurance of their repentance by swearing fealty. Kildare held back awhile, and sought to evade the oath; but he ultimately took it upon the consecrated host. Soon after he repaired to Greenwich with other lords, and did homage to the king in person. Henry entertained the party with ostentatious magnificence, but indulged in a piece of contemptuous revenge, by producing the mock King Simnel to his late admirers in the character of a scullion from the royal kitchen serving the sideboard.

New dangers at length compelled the king to propound measures for an improved system of government. In the year 1493 Perkin Warbeck made his appearance at Cork in the

character of Richard Plantagenet, and was hailed forthwith by the earl of Desmond. Before there was time, however, for active hostilities, Perkin was invited into France, and hastened to consult the more powerful ally.

Such was the juncture at which Henry resolved to place the royal authority in Ireland upon a new footing. So little had the course of action tolerated by his predecessors either weakened the strength of the native Irish, or extended the English power, that, in an old tract, entitled “*Pandarus sive Salus Populi*,” there were now enumerated no less than sixty districts, each held by an independent native chieftain, upon a mixed scheme of government, partly made up of ancient usages, and partly the will of the actual ruler. The kingdoms and larger native principalities had long ceased to exist in form or substance, but in their stead remained the numerous small fragments, into which they had been broken up, each opposing its sharp and uneven edges in every direction to the progress of peace and consolidation. Such was the state of a large portion of the country more than three hundred years after its connection with England. In several others the barons and principal settlers had given up English customs and institutions, and adopted by degrees the language and many of the worst peculiarities of Irish society and jurisprudence. When their followers were numerous and active, no enterprise was too bold for their arms; and when they were entrusted with the administration of affairs, they passed, through the instrumentality of their creatures in the miscalled parliaments of the period, such statutes as a sense of interest or a spirit of revenge happened to dictate.

The effects of an example so easily imitated were conspicuously developed. The heads of the old Irish principalities bearded the English nobility in the very heart of the Pale, assumed the title of king, and treated independently for war and peace: they had been as little reduced to subjection as the English lords to order. Baron Finglas, Sir J. Davies, Dr. Leland, and writers of equal authority, dwell with significant regret, while relating the affairs of this period, upon the

reduced and narrow limits of the English Pale, and they dilate upon the fact as evidence of the decay of the English interest: but a broad line of distinction is to be drawn in every view of the Pale between the English interest in Ireland and the dominions of the crown. We shall generally be correct enough when we speak of the limits of the Pale as the bounds of the royal authority. They were not, however, the confines of the English possessions or English influence. The Pale was for ages no more than the extent of territory over which the lord lieutenant of the day exercised positive jurisdiction, and the king's judges went circuit regularly. The English interest had a very different range, embracing the lands, rights and pretensions of the Desmonds in Munster, and the Butlers in Tipperary, and other barons, such as those of Lixnaw in Kerry, who, however anxious to withdraw their persons and their castles from the power of the crown, always held themselves not only distinct from but superior to the party of the natives. These men stretched out their feudal and palatinal pretensions boldly, and maintained them at the highest pitch. At all times, therefore, when considering the English interest in Ireland, we should not confine our observation to the extent of the king's acknowledged dominions, but include the possessions of all the English settlers and their descendants.

But whatever view may be taken of the state of the country, and the degree of its dependance upon the crown of England, it will be admitted on all hands that ample room was to be found for improvement in both respects. The proceedings adopted by Henry VII. partook of the character for talent awarded to him by most historians. The first step was to choose an efficient governor; the next to send over with him a force sufficient to command respect; and the third to appoint new men as the best instruments for carrying out the reforms now at length to be seriously undertaken. In Sir Edward Poynings, who landed in 1494, and whose name continued so long conspicuous in the annals of the country, Henry found a deputy eminently qualified, both in the field and

at the council table, to render the new era effective, and to subdue the oligarchy, whose dominion had so long been equally insulting to the throne and oppressive to the people. Poynings arrived with a force of 1,000 men, with a new lord chancellor, the bishop of Bangor; a new lord treasurer, Sir Hugh Conway; and a train of English lawyers, who displaced the former judges.

Although disposed to think favourably of the policy now resorted to, we cannot withdraw from observation the many points in which it was unsuitable. The plan, abstractedly taken, was well calculated to realize the end proposed—if it could have been promptly reduced to practice. Its great defect lay in the difficulty of working it. The overgrown power of the barons stood every where in the way, and impeded its action. Poyning began properly enough with active measures. The O'Hanlons had taken up arms in the North, and he marched against them. But no sooner had he left the seat of government, than Kildare's brother seized and fortified the castle of Carlow. This diversion upon the part of the English interest compelled the deputy to conclude a treaty in haste with the Irish insurgents, and return to the Pale. Making Kildare prisoner upon a charge of complicity in the brother's designs, he laid siege to Carlow Castle, and in a week obtained its surrender—upon formal articles, however, which placed punishment and example out of his reach.

In fourteen months after his arrival, the lord deputy summoned, at Drogheda, the parliament, which passed, amongst other statutes, the well-known "Poynings' law." The chief of these enactments were, 1st. An act authorizing the treasurer of Ireland to make officers account in England for the receipts of the king's revenues. 2. The chancellor, treasurer, judges, and all officers were to be appointed, not as heretofore, for life, but during the king's pleasure. 3. The acts of every future parliament were to be first approved by the king and council, in England, and only proposed in Ireland when certified under the stamp of the Seal of England. 4. All English statutes against provisors to Rome were to be executed in Ireland.

The statutes of Kilkenny were confirmed, except that against the use of the Irish language, which had now become so general in the English settlements, that it was tolerated of necessity. 5. No store of military ordnance was to be kept in any house or garrison without a license from the deputy. 6. Born Englishmen only were to be constables of castles. 7. A better custody was provided of the records of the earldoms of March, Connaught, Trim, and Ulster. 8. Lords of parliament were ordered to appear in robes, as in England. 9. No peace or war was to be made without a license from the chief governor. 10. The new manner of coine and livery was abolished, and the rate declared at which soldiers in time of hostility should pay for meat and drink. 11. Family war-cries were forbidden, as Cromaboo, the battle-shout or warison of the Geraldines, Butleraboo of the Ormondes, Lambblaideraboo of the O'Briens. 12. All statutes made in England for the common weal were to be accepted and executed in Ireland, and the acts of the parliament held at Drogheda by Lord Gormans-town were repealed.

Comprehensive as was this series of statutes, and indicative of deliberate reflection and superior intelligence, the capital omission in them of all mention of the people of the country ought not to escape our notice or our censure. In all his provisions, Poynings never once seems to have regarded the community governed by the English as proper objects for legislation. By giving the sovereign and his ministers in England a decisive voice in the direction of Irish affairs, and by insisting that every law should be approved in England, and ratified in Ireland, before it became binding—he believed that a master-key had been found to unlock the rusty bolts of the king's government. And perhaps, if the scheme devised could have been brought into active operation, it might have availed in some degree to mitigate the anarchy and desolation, which had imparted so harsh and dismal a character to the history of the connection between the two countries. But when political evils happen to be the growth of ages, the lapse of ages is generally required to eradicate them. In the instance before us,

at least, as we shall presently see, this proved to be the case. Poynings, having passed his acts and dismissed his parliament, divided the administration of civil and military affairs between different officers, and pronounced his work perfect. Returning then to England with the reputation of having reduced the barons to order, and firmly established the king's government, he received the order of the Garter as a reward for his services.

Before he departed, however, Perkin Warbeck, led by Desmond, marched to besiege Waterford ; while the Butlers, impelled by their double hatred of the Geraldines and the White Rose, advanced to relieve the city. Upon this, Perkin betook himself to Scotland, and the Lancastrians, denouncing Kildare as a party implicated in the treason of his kinsman Desmond, pressed the deputy to hand him over for summary execution. Poyning was satisfied to send the earl a prisoner to Henry. The issue of this proceeding was singular. When admitted after some time to confront his accusers in the royal presence, Kildare carried his cause triumphantly, by that mixture of frankness and confidence, the novelty of which had proved so often irresistible in the persons of several of his ancestors. Treating his accusers, who dealt in generalities, surmises, and suspicions, with the sternness of a superior, as if still in Ireland, and on his own domain ; he appeared to Henry in no respect the subtle and dark conspirator he had been represented, but a blunt artless man ; unrefined, it was true, yet sincere and unaffected ; easy in his demeanour, and nothing daunted by the charge brought against him or the royal presence. The king warned him to provide himself with able counsel, as he feared his case " might require no less."—" That I will," replied the earl, quickly seizing the royal hand, " and the very ablest in the land—I will have no less than your highness ; you shall be my counsel against these saucy fellows."

As a specimen of the accusations, we cannot pass the well-known anecdote as to sacrilege, by burning, in one of his lawless excursions, the cathedral of Cashel to the ground. " Yea," said Kildare, cutting short the tedious detail of evidence, " I did set fire to the church ; but I thought the

bishop had been in it." The simplicity of this avowal was hailed with a shout of laughter, in the midst of which the accusers avared, that "all Ireland could not govern this earl." To this, pleased perhaps with an opportunity of closing an extraordinary scene with a display of his own wit, Henry retorted, "This earl, then, shall govern all Ireland;" and he kept his word: Kildare was restored to his estate and honours, and made lord deputy. Desmond, at his recommendation, was pardoned; and the government of Ireland proceeding in the old spirit, the improved enactments of Poynings were wholly disregarded. Kildare, however, made his administration effective after his own fashion. His name, we are told, was terrible to the Irish enemy, and formidable to the English rebel. Every Irishman who appeared in arms, was hunted down with unremitting vigilance and unrelenting severity. In Thomond, Waterford, and Ulster, he fought and conquered. In a word, his pre-eminence was so complete, that Ireland seemed to be held by England wholly through him. Henry rewarded his exploits by making him a Knight of the Garter.

The extent of Kildare's power is further displayed by the alliances he contracted for his family, which comprised all interests. Giving one daughter to Piers Butler, the rival of James, earl of Ormonde, he divided the family of his foes. Piers, emboldened by his connection with the Geraldine, slew James, and stepped into his power and possessions. Other daughters were married to Irish chieftains—as Macarty, prince of Carbery, and O'Donel, lord of Tyrconnel and all Donegal. The case of one of his grandchildren, daughter of Piers Butler,* now earl of Ormonde, and wife of Ulick Burke of Clanrickarde, the great lord of Connaught, may be referred to as affording conclusive proof that the new Knight of the

* Leland, and others after him, say that Ulick Clanrickarde's wife was Kildare's daughter; but, according to the pedigree of the De Burg family, in Archdale's edition of Lodge, (vol. iv. p. 21,) Ulick de Burg, first earl of Clanrickarde, had only one wife, Margaret, daughter of Piers, eighth earl of Ormonde, by Margaret, daughter of Gerald, eighth earl of Kildare, (vol. iv. p. 21.)

Garter still regarded the government of Ireland as a feudal possession, and not a public trust. Lady Clanrickarde, ill-treated by her husband, applied for help to her father. The interests of government, says Leland, had nothing to do with this family quarrel. Kildare, nevertheless, took the field on his grand-daughter's behalf, as if engaged on the king's service, in all the state of a chief governor, and with the usual attendants of his court. The lords of the Pale and the O'Neils and other Irish septs, allies and followers of the Geraldines, flocked to his standard. On the other side, the Burkes, summoning the O'Briens to their aid, offered a determined resistance. These forces met at Knocktow, near Galway, where the deputy gained a decisive victory over the "English rebel and Irish enemy" united together. With the exception of some of the O'Neils in Ulster, and the O'Briens in Thomond, there were none who now disclaimed allegiance; and we may judge of the spirit of the times by the observation of Lord Gormanstown at the close of this battle. "Now we have slain our enemies; but to complete the good deed we should get rid of our Irish friends."

Thus triumphant in all quarters, still retaining the undiminished confidence of the English crown, and continued as chief governor by Henry VIII., Gerald, the eighth and greatest earl of Kildare, took suddenly sick, and died September 3, 1513. The consternation produced by this event was extreme. The army disbanded of its own accord; and the government, so long dependent upon him alone, was left as it were without defence or support.

The council, disregarding Poyning's statutes, which made the treasurer lord deputy under such circumstances, quickly elected Gerald, ninth earl of Kildare, to the vacant office: their choice was confirmed by Henry VIII. Animated by all his father's boldness and irritability, the new governor proved nearly as potent, but far less fortunate. Pursuing the example under which he had been reared, of keeping the Irish in subjection, by waging constant war against them, he recommended himself highly in the earlier part of his

career to the favour of his sovereign, and received as his recompense a patent grant of the customs and other profits arising out of the ports of Strangford and Ardglass, in the county of Down.

But though he strengthened himself with an English interest, by marrying the marquis of Dorset's daughter, and gratified Henry by attending with a wild retinue at the "Field of the Cloth of Gold," he found his vigilant rivals of the house of Ormonde still vexing and undermining his supremacy. His father had thought to allay that eternal feud by marrying his daughter Margaret to Piers, the eighth earl; and further, by going to war, as already related, with Ulick de Burg, to resent his ill-treatment of his wife, a daughter of Ormonde by that marriage. The present lord deputy accordingly was Lady Ormonde's nephew: her husband, however, was not the less the foe of the Geraldine in Ireland, and his censor at the English court. Wolsey was now at the height of his power; and Ormonde, by paying court to the great cardinal, sought to influence the administration of affairs in Ireland, and ultimately to supplant Kildare. In this part he had considerable, but not complete, success. Ormonde was at the head of the government twice during the reign of Henry VIII., but on both occasions was constrained to make way for his overbearing competitor. Thrice was the hardy Geraldine summoned to England to vindicate his conduct—twice imprisoned in the Tower—and thrice declared lord deputy. On the last of these occasions his exaltation appeared to have given entire satisfaction. Allying himself to the Irish chiefs by the marriage of two daughters with O'Connor and O'Carroll, respectively styled dynasts of Offaly and Ely O'Carroll, a third native and kinsman, Con O'Neil of Ulster, carried the sword of state at his inauguration. Thus hailed with the joint acclamations of the Irish chieftains and the lords of the Pale, and freed by the downfall of Wolsey from his weightiest enemy at the English court, he gave way to displays of power so wild and excessive, as to lead to a suspicion of his insanity.

A strong and determined party was soon formed to bring his rule to an end. Allen, the lord chancellor; his connection, Piers Butler, who, having resigned the title of Ormonde to Queen Ann Bullen's father, was now earl of Ossory; and others, sent a deputation to London with a heavy catalogue of specific offences, at which the king took fire, and ordered the earl to appear before him in terms so peremptory that he feared to disobey. At this point he seems not to have apprehended the particular fate by which he was overtaken. But that he felt himself in some danger, and apprehended that it would be necessary to resort to arms, was evident, from the quantity of ordnance which he removed from the king's stores to his castle at Maynooth, despite an express mandate to the contrary delivered in the king's name.

He deputed his son Thomas (then about 21 years of age) to govern in his absence, and, repairing to London, was sent to the Tower. After an examination by the king in council, it became evident that something more than his removal from the government was contemplated. Reports to this effect were transmitted to Ireland, which being exaggerated by the Butlers and other enemies of his race, it was soon asserted that he had been beheaded, and that his son Lord Thomas, and all his uncles, had been sentenced to the same fate. Subsequent events lead to the conclusion that rumour in this instance did not exaggerate the designs of the English monarch and his advisers. Surprised and indignant, the Geraldines called upon Lord Thomas to take up arms as his only means of preservation. Vain, fiery, and inexperienced, the youthful deputy inconsiderately adopted the rash counsel of his party, and resolved to defy the tyrant. It is impossible to read the accounts handed down to us of his short and disastrous career, without being touched with sympathy for his sufferings. Bearing in mind the state in which he had been reared, the consequence enjoyed by his father and by his grandfather, and the customary license so long permitted to his family, most readers will probably discover more to pity than condemn in his rebellion.

He had no sooner determined upon rushing into extremes, than he also resolved to proceed in a manner befitting the pride and dignity of his family. There was a wild spirit of chivalry in his course, which fills it with interest. Summoning his guard of 140 men, with their music, and the Geraldine bards, he marched in state to Dublin. The council was sitting at St. Mary's Abbey : he entered amongst them, and advancing to the table, threw down upon it the sword of state, and announced to the astonished lords that he resigned at once his office and his allegiance. "He defied," he said, "the king and his ministers ; declared the goods of his subjects forfeited ; and was resolved to kill or banish all the English by birth, and to wrest the kingdom of Ireland from Henry and his heirs." In vain did the Archbishop Cromer rise from his seat, and taking the impassioned youth by the hand, implore him, in the most affectionate terms, not to bring ruin on his country and race. A bard in his train struck up a rhapsody on the past glories and still more splendid destiny of the Geraldines, and the heir of all their honours rushed madly to the field.

Once in arms, Lord Thomas committed many outrages, amongst which the murder of Archbishop Allen, as he was seeking safety in flight, was one of the foulest. There is too much reason to suspect that he was a participator in this crime, if not present at its perpetration. After craving aid of Pope Paul III. and the Emperor Charles V. for the conquest of Ireland, which he offered to hold of them for ever, he ravaged with fire and sword the earl of Ossory's district, wasted the suburbs of Dublin, besieged the castle there, and defeated at Clontarf the first forces sent over to reduce him. But this success was not long maintained. While he passed into Connaught, to levy aid amongst the Irish, Skeffington, the lord deputy, compelled the Geraldines to abandon Drogheda. Skeffington was superseded by Lord Leonard Grey, a man of fierce energy, who received a strong reinforcement from the English government. By him Lord Thomas was proclaimed a traitor ; and after various attacks,

all advantageous to the constituted authorities, the castle of Maynooth, then accounted, for the abundance of its furniture; one of the richest houses under the crown of England, was besieged. It was powerfully garrisoned, and stood out for fourteen days, when it was betrayed into the hands of the lord deputy by the treachery of Lord Thomas's foster-brother.*

The Geraldine army now dispersed, and its leader was driven from Rathangan, and his other castles, to the woods. Even then he fought gallantly, though day by day some of his principal adherents were taken and executed. At length a compromise was effected: he was admitted to a parley with Lord Grey, and, acknowledging his offence, solicited the king's pardon. Positive assurances of safety and protection were given to him, and extended to his five uncles, by Lord Leo-

* This fellow's name—Christopher Parese—suggests the hope that he was not an Irishman. Taking advantage of some small success gained in a sally,—and which was probably preconcerted,—he made the garrison drunk at night, and then gave the signal to the English, who scaled the walls, and, meeting no resistance, took possession of the place with ease. The spoil was considerable. Parese was not slow to present himself before the lord deputy. A few minor matters having been attended to,—such as the case of two singers, who came and “prostrated themselves, warbling a sweet sonnet, called *dulcis amio*,” and whose harmony so won the favour of Chief Justice Aylmer, that at his request they were pardoned,—the deputy next addressed himself to Parese, and told him that the service he had done in saving charge and bloodshed to the English, should be taken into consideration. For this purpose it was desirable first to ascertain what benefits he had been in the habit of receiving in the service of Fitzgerald. Parese, conceiving that his reward was to be measured by his baseness, detailed the advantages he had reaped from a long course of unremitting generosity and affection on the part of his master, and fully unmasked the heartlessness of his treachery. As already stated, he was Lord Thomas's foster-brother: he owed his station and all he possessed to that nobleman's kindness and munificence. He was held, as he now confessed, by his confiding regard, in the first place of trust and honour among his people: “And how, Parese,” said the deputy, “couldst thou find it in thy heart to betray so kind a lord?” Parese stood confounded: but he was not long allowed to ponder on his position. “Go,” said the lord deputy to the officer in waiting, who was named Boyce—“go, Boyce, see him paid the price of his treachery, and then, without a moment's delay, see his head cut off.” Parese had the coolness to observe, “Had I known this, your lordship should not have had the castle so easily.” The deputy was silent; but Boyce exclaimed, “Too late!” and the words passed into the proverb, “Too late, says Boyce.”

nard ; but with a degree of perfidy inexpressibly base, though far from rare amongst the servants of the house of Tudor, the lord deputy transported the whole family in custody to England. There the unfortunate Lord Thomas had the terrible mortification of learning that the unhappy earl, his aged father, had not been beheaded, but, oppressed with grief, had died in the Tower, December 12, 1534. Henry fell upon the prisoners with the ferocity of a tiger thirsting for blood. Not only Lord Thomas, but his five uncles, some of whom are admitted to have taken no part in his revolt, were hurried to Tyburn, where the six were ignominiously executed as traitors, February 2, 1535.*

After Lord Thomas, or rather Earl Thomas, suffered, a sharp inquiry was set on foot to discover his surviving brother, Gerald, then a boy only ten years old, and lying sick of the small-pox at Donore in the county of Kildare. He was in the charge of a tutor, Thomas Leverous, foster-brother to his father, and afterwards bishop of Kildare. According to Lodge ("Peerage of Ireland," vol. i. p. 93,) Leverous lost no time in conveying the child to his sister, the Lady Mary O'Connor of Offaly, where he remained until perfectly recovered of his disease. He was then removed, for better protection, to his aunt Elinor, who resided in her husband's territory of Tyrconnel. With this lady he spent about a year ; but large sums being offered for his apprehension, he was sent with his tutor disguised to Scotland. Henry demanded him of the king, and he was hurried into France and Italy. He lived abroad until after the death of Henry VIII., supported by Cardinal Reginald Pole, a kinsman by his mother's side, and also by Cosmo, duke of Florence, who made him master of his horse. Returning to London in the train of some foreign ambassador, he was present at a ball or masque given by King Edward VI. ; and being handsome in his person and accom-

* The old earl was buried in the Tower chapel, where his body was found fifty-six years after, in a chest, with this inscription :—
"Here lies the corpes of the L. Gerald Fitz Gerald Earl of Kildare (who deceased the 12th of December in the yere of oure Lord a.m.ccccc.xxx.III) on whose sole Jesu have mercy."

plished in his manners, he captivated Mabel, the second daughter of Sir Anthony Browne, Knight of the Garter. By his marriage with her, and the intercession of Cardinal Pole, he was received into Edward's favour, who knighted him in 1552, and restored him to the lordships and manors of Maynooth, Portlester, Moylaugh, Rathangan, Kilkea, &c. Queen Mary renewed his other honours, of earl of Kildare and baron of Offaly, in 1554.

The hot blood of the Kildares was effectually cooled by the summary vengeance of Henry VIII. The recovery of their titles and estates did not rekindle the fiery pride which had long rendered them equally formidable to the English, the Irish, and the sovereigns of both nations. With a slight and transitory exception or two, and the recent case of Lord Edward Fitzgerald, no descendant of that powerful branch of the Geraldines took further part in the tragic action of Irish affairs.

The Desmonds, as well as the other leading barons and Irish chieftains, stood unmoved for a time by these events. The ruling Desmond, though comparatively inactive for years, had rendered himself particularly offensive to his sovereign. Accustomed to the state and forms of independent authority, claiming and exercising the privilege of exempting himself from serving in parliament or entering any of the king's fortified towns, surrounded by a numerous array of vassals and armed retainers, he was solicited by Francis I. to enter into an alliance, offensive and defensive. Although the capture of the French king at Pavia prevented Desmond from acting upon this treaty, it was a principal charge against Kildare, who was lord deputy when it was contracted, that he did not punish the presumption and disloyalty of his kinsman in leaguing with the king's foreign enemies. When the latter Geraldines fell, their fate was doubtless regarded as a warning by the surviving branch in Munster.

Henceforward Leonard Lord Grey appears to have been resisted only by the Butlers, who openly assailed him in arms,

without, however, being held to have levied rebellion. Perhaps some indulgence in excess upon their parts was necessary, by way of natural satisfaction for the overthrow of their old antagonists, the Geraldines. They next appear, rather strangely, amongst the earliest opponents to the government measures for introducing the reformed religion into Ireland,—measures which it will probably surprise the reader, not well informed with the history of that period, to learn, were at first conducted in Ireland without much either of excitement or resistance. As it will be convenient to treat more fully of this important movement at a subsequent stage of its progress, we shall here touch lightly on a concurrent incident or two.

The See of Rome at this period found a champion in O'Neil, the chieftain of Ulster, who mingled the cause of religion with personal ambition. It is said, and perhaps truly, that his devotion was simulated. Be that as it may, he undertook a stately progress to Tara, the old seat of the extinct monarchy of his country; and gave Lord Leonard battle at Bellahoe, on the borders of Meath, where he was defeated with the loss of 400 men. By one of those surprising turns which are frequent in Irish history, we next find this same O'Neil submitting "himself and his nation" to Henry VIII., and accepting the title of Earl of Tyrone. His example was followed in this respect by other dynasts—by Murrogh O'Brien (created earl of Thomond), and Bernard Fitzpatrick (made baron of Upper Ossory), and by Ulick de Burg, already mentioned as the leader routed by the great Kildare at the battle of Knocktow, who became earl of Clanrickarde. In short, while Henry assumed, without reclamation or discontent, the style of king of Ireland, the progress of the Reformation seemed to mark distinctly the commencement of a better era. Even the intractable Desmond was won over; and not only rejected the overtures of France to form a new treaty, but renounced his privilege of exemption from parliamentary duties, and gave up his heir to be educated in England after the courtly fashion of the age.

Measures were now concerted for the government of all these new subjects in Munster and Connaught—provinces formerly divided into shires, and inhabited in a great part by English settlers, but in which the laws of England had been in disuse for two hundred years. In the ordinances of state made by parliament for the regulation of these districts, we find provisions in no respect consonant with the English law. They were meant to induce the gradual reformation of those “who were not so perfectly acquainted with the laws, that they could at once be governed by them;” but they only proved incentives to irritation and discontent. Similar reservations are practised to this day, with the same results. The law of England and Ireland has uniformly been held to be one and the same; but England, by a sort of Irish equity, now pleading the force of temporary circumstances, and now the pressure of some local obstacles, has been always prone to the introduction of grave exceptions, and made the constitution in theory and in practical application essentially different in the two countries. Among these ordinances, one—“that laymen and boys should not be admitted to ecclesiastical preferments”—shows something of the condition of the church at that time; while others,—that manslaughter and robbery be punished by a fine—half to the king, half to the chieftain of the district; but that wilful murder be punished capitally,—indicate something of the state of civil society. The earl of Ormonde and the earl of Desmond were associated as guardians throughout Munster, and declared commissioners, with the archbishop of Cashel, for the execution of these ordinances. Though no attempts were as yet made to introduce any new system of jurisprudence into other quarters of the island, yet a number of commissioners were appointed for each province, who were to exercise the “office of the ancient Brehons,” or national judges, to hear and decide occasional controversies, or to refer them to the deputy in council in cases of difficulty. The policy of breaking up the various clans seems now to have been strongly felt, and to have been sharply urged against the anomalous dependencies of the inferior

chieftains, at least, and their retainers. The doctrine, too, of depending only on the king was broached to the great body of the people. Unfortunately, however, to reach the king, they had to resort to his deputy; and in that dignitary, and his various dependents, they generally found more than one strong interest actively at work, to suppress their complaints, and uphold the multiplied injustice against which they cried out.

In looking back to find the disturbing causes of this flattering calm, neither much of toil or discernment is required. The English crown itself proved the destroyer of the advantages it had produced. The house of Tudor broke the feudal power of the peerage completely down in England, and reduced it in Ireland into a state of obedience and respect. But in both countries the Tudors erected a tyranny as cruel and overbearing as ever had existed, and by a sweeping career of intolerable despotism prepared the downfall of royalty in its turn, under the succeeding house of Stuart. Henry's intemperance shook the confidence of all men in royal gratitude, by recalling the efficient agent of these reforms—Lord Leonard Grey,—and visiting him with the traitor doom, imprisonment and death, to which he had been so instrumental in consigning the Fitzgeralds. Sir Anthony St. Leger, the first lord deputy appointed by Edward VI., quickened the relapse into the old disorders. Finding the exchequer empty, he tried to enforce a new scheme of taxation, which, being clearly illegal, met with strenuous opposition from James, ninth earl of Ormonde. The dispute being referred to the king, both Ormonde and St. Leger hastened to prosecute it in London; where the latter, with 18 of his followers, were poisoned—not without strong suspicion of foul play—at Ely House, Holborn.

Sir Edward Bellingham took St. Leger's place, and disgraced a short term of office by an act of base treachery. The O'Moores of Leix, and the O'Connors of Offaly, had been charged with the commission of some depredations, and driven back to their fastnesses by the government troops sent against them. At this moment, it was suggested to the chiefs of both

septs, that they should adopt the precedents set in the cases of O'Neil and O'Brien, and accommodate all differences by taking peerages from the king. The Irishmen, lending a credulous ear to these representations, betook themselves to the English court. But far from receiving the expected honours, they were there perfidiously thrown into gaol as traitors, while writs for the seizure and confiscation of their estates were despatched to Ireland. O'Moore died in prison, bequeathing to his sept the bitter vengeance of a prince betrayed. O'Connor lingered hopelessly in captivity until Mary became queen. Under her reign, the confiscation both of his lands, and those of the O'Moores, was formally carried into effect, contrary to the immemorial usages of Irish law recognised and re-established by her father. The lands, as both the Irish brehons and the English judges had uniformly held, were the estate, not of the chief, but of the sept. The latter remonstrated in terms the most proper, and with arguments which ought to have been irresistible, inasmuch as they were unanswerable. But justice was not to be rendered. An overpowering force was sent into the district ; the wretched people were driven forth with the sword ; "and the fires of their burning huts having been slaked in the blood of the inhabitants," two new counties were erected in honour of Philip and Mary, called the King's and Queen's Counties : 918,839 acres changed owners on this occasion.

The history of Ireland for a number of years henceforward is principally occupied with two events—the extirpation of the house of Desmond, and the destruction of the O'Neils. Other deeds of violence and blood were frequently perpetrated—but these stand out and overbear the rest by their enormity. The Desmonds fell under the persevering malice of their slow but steady rivals, the Butlers ; the O'Neils, by the aggression and faithlessness of the Butlers and various lord deputies. In order to mark distinctly the final triumph of the house of Ormonde over the Geraldines of the South, it is necessary to refer to the biographies of the two families.

James Butler, ninth earl of Ormonde, who was poisoned,

as already mentioned, at Ely House, Holborn, in the year 1546, was succeeded in his titles and possessions by his son Thomas, who thus became the tenth earl. When his father died, this Thomas was only 14 years old. He was educated at the English court, where he and Edward VI. were fellow scholars. That youthful monarch, amongst other proofs of regard, made Ormonde a Knight of the Bath at his coronation. After serving with approved gallantry as a volunteer under the duke of Somerset in an expedition against the Scots; and distinguishing himself by his activity and courage as a lieutenant of horse on the suppression of Wyatt's rebellion; he repaired to Ireland in the year 1554, as the true source of his greatness and the proper theatre of his ambition. The extent of his possessions may be estimated by a glance at the map of Ireland. Along the banks of the Suir, the Nore, and the Shannon; at Carrick, Cloghmel, Tybroughney, Rosbercon, Kilkenny, Carlow, Maryborough, Roscrea, and Nenagh, were the principal sites of the castles and fortresses which marked the general outline of his broad domains, styled the Palatinate of Ormonde. Of the powers held both by him and his predecessors, in addition to the customary palatine rights and immunities, an idea is to be gathered from the terms of more than one special commission, quoted in Lodge, which authorized his father to levy and lead men through the counties of Tipperary, Waterford, Cork, Kerry, Ormonde, and Desmond; to imprison as he saw fit; to pursue and take rebels into protection, and "so to quiet the country." Still larger were the territories of his rival Desmond. By measuring from the curve of the river Suir at Carrick to Nenagh, near the Shannon, in one direction, and thence sweeping to the town of Maryborough, and descending again by the Nore to Rosbercon, we find how wide was the district of Ormonde: If we proceed from Dungarvan on the Atlantic to Kinsale; and thence crossing to Tralee, we follow the sea-shore to Limerick, and return from the Shannon to Dungarvan again, we travel the expanse of the palatinates of Desmond. In an angle to the south-west of Desmond lay the country

of the Fitzmaurices, earls of Kerry ; and north of Ormonde were spread out the princely estates of the earl of Kildare. When Thomas, tenth earl of Ormonde, left the English court, and took service in Ireland, James, fifteenth earl of Desmond, was closing a career, in the latter part of which he appears to have evinced a sincere desire to live upon good terms with the government, and discharge the duties of the peerage with punctuality and effect. His inheritance was disputed by two sons, Thomas and Gerald, the issue of different wives. A bold contest was raised ; but Gerald, to whom the earldom had been left by will and other settlements, so bravely defended his cause, that he at length prevailed, and took his seat in the parliament held at Dublin in January, 1559. It would accordingly be in this assembly that the tenth Ormonde and fifteenth Desmond met for the first time.

Long accounts have been given of the rebellion, which ended so fatally for Desmond ; but they are highly coloured, and omit so many important incidents, that the real character of the individual, and the intolerable persecutions to which he was subjected, are not easily discovered in them. A passage or two from the life of this magnate is all we can find room for in support of this opinion. He was first provoked to quarrel with Ormonde by some disputes as to the right of prisage of wines at Youghal and Kinsale, for which both earls held patents ; and also as to the true line of boundaries between the two palatinates. Battles, as a matter of course, were fought to settle the litigated questions, which, however they may have carried defeat or victory, never brought conviction. It was in one of these *méleés* that Desmond, being wounded and taken prisoner, was borne from the field by some of Ormonde's men, who made a litter for the purpose, which they slung across their shoulders. "Where now," asked the victors, "is the great earl of Desmond?"—"In his proper place," retorted the Geraldine, witty as he was wild—"on the backs of the Butlers."

At length Ormonde, having visited England and renewed his favour at court, proposed to refer the dispute to the Lord Deputy Sidney, who, after a deliberate inquiry into the cir-

cumstances, gave judgment for Desmond. This, Ormonde said, was partiality, and appealed to Elizabeth. Her majesty, without taking the trouble to ask any questions, returned the papers, with a letter, in which sharp rebukes and unprincipled suggestions were strangely mingled ;—telling the arbitrator plainly to make a difference between tried and false friends—never to let the good services of well-deservers be rewarded with loss ; but with such thanks as may encourage others to strive for the same ; and warning him that Desmond's deserving deeds were far wide of his promised words—that he was not to be trusted out of sight,—and praying God that the old strange sheep, late returned to the fold, might not wear her woolly garment on her wolfy back. Sidney's manner of dealing with this prejudiced missive was not devoid of manly spirit. He protested to Cecil, that if he served the cruellest tyrant that ever lived, and knew him affected on one side or the other, in a case between party and party, referred to his judgment ; he would rather offend that tyrant than his own conscience, by not standing to the judgment which he believed to be God's. As the memorable style of this language plainly showed that the deputy's opinion remained unaltered, the hint he threw out was taken. Other commissioners were joined to outvote him ; the former decision was reversed ; and Desmond was ordered not only to give up the lands in dispute, but to pay damages to his rival for the time they had been overheld.

That the head of the Geraldines should refuse to yield to so monstrous an abuse of justice, will surprise no reader. He did not, however, fly to take the field against the royal authority —on the contrary, he served it by defeating the neighbouring sept of Macarty, which had been proclaimed as rebels. Meantime, he and Ormonde fought on. At length Sidney marched into Munster, and was shocked by the vestiges of ruin which met him at every step of his progress. Take as an instance his description of the state of Cork. “One of the pleasantest counties,” he writes, “ever seen, but miserably waste and uncultivated ; the villages and churches burned and ruined ; the castles destroyed, and the bones of the murdered

and starved inhabitants scattered about the fields. Irritated by the frequent recurrence of these sights ; irritated also by Desmond's haughty reliance upon the legality of the palatine rights, by which unquestionably they had been produced ; assuming, moreover, that the earl was “a man void of judgment to govern and will to be ruled ;” he determined to seize upon his person, and appoint his brother, John Fitzgerald, whom he knighted for the occasion, to govern the palatinate, while its lawful ruler was detained in custody.

Desmond, thrown into prison in Dublin, continued to repeat proofs of innocence and remonstrances until he constrained the deputy to conduct him to England, and submit his case to Elizabeth. His brother, Sir John, so late set up in his stead, accompanied him on the journey. Other lords and chieftains were led over at the same time—some as witnesses, some as supporters, and some, like himself, as defendants. Many of these were made welcome ; but the Geraldines were refused a hearing, and cast into the Tower, where they pined for two years without trial or judgment. The law and sound policy having been thus wantonly violated, there appears nothing strange in the correspondence with the Pope, which afterwards formed the ground of the heavy persecution carried on against the several members of this family.

To these instances of individual wrong—if we are to convey even a slight idea of the general state of the country—must be added some proof of the arbitrary manner in which the ruling powers now disregarded, at their pleasure, the unquestioned rights of the local parliament. The insufficiency of the revenue of Ireland to maintain the English power in that country, had always been a subject of complaint at court. When Sidney took office, he was obliged to stipulate for an allowance of £20,000 a year from the English exchequer, in aid of his ordinary receipts. Desiring to improve these, and finding that it had been usual with his predecessors to require from the English districts a certain contribution of provisions for the royal garrisons and the governor's household, he conceived the idea of converting this subsidy into a permanent revenue

by exacting a regular assessment from all the inhabitants, without distinction. The court approving of his plan, Sidney issued a proclamation to dissolve such liberties as had at any time claimed an exemption from the charge of purveyance. He next proceeded to impose the new tax, by the mere authority of his council and the queen's prerogative. General and violent discontent was the just and natural consequence of this arbitrary measure. A deputation of lords proceeded to appeal to the queen, but instead of insisting, as they were bound, that there existed no power of taxation but in the grand council of the realm alone, they so dreaded Elizabeth's temper, and the violent character of her government, that they pleaded the poverty of the land, and contented themselves with praying that the impost might be moderated. The queen herself seems to have seen the matter in its true light, exclaiming, "How much I fear, lest it may be too justly said to me, You, yourself, are in fault, who have committed the flock, not to the shepherds, but to wolves." So jealous, however, was she of her prerogative, and so impatient of the slightest remonstrance against her manner of displaying it, that she sent the deputation to the Tower; and only discharged them upon their explaining, with equal humility and untruth, that they had no intention of impeaching her just prerogative, and that they had been undutiful in their mode of proceeding.

But Desmond was not maltreated in his person only—his palatine rights also were unceremoniously invaded. Amongst the establishments introduced during the reign of Henry VIII. were a sort of permanent courts martial, with an extended range of power to try and punish offences, called Presidency Courts. They were three in number—one for Munster, one for Connaught, and one for Ulster. At the head of the Munster court, the lord deputy, Sir Henry Sidney, had placed as president Sir William Drury, an officer who, in an age of severity, had made himself remarkable for harshness while governor of Berwick, on the Scottish border. Without regarding the patent rights and chartered grants which gave Desmond the power to hold his own courts, Drury, says Leland, deter-

mined to extend his authority into Desmond, where the earl maintained, of his own name and race alone, at least 500 gentlemen in his retinue. Desmond at first remonstrated; but finding the president determined to persevere, contented himself with entering a protest against the proceeding,—and that done, assured Drury that he should be received in Kerry with hospitality and respect. At the same time he invited him to his palace at Tralee. On the arrival of Drury, with a train of 120 men-at-arms, a body of Desmond's band, tall, active and vigorous soldiers, turned out to do him and their lord honour. The president, unacquainted with the customs of the district, and led away by the unjustifiable suspicions common to the English stranger, hastily concluded that he had been betrayed, and was to be surrounded and hewn to pieces. Without waiting for parley or assault, he commanded his followers to charge; and the Geraldine troop, confounded by this unexpected violence, dispersed precipitately at the first onset, without returning a single blow. The countess of Desmond, who seems to have felt the indignity with proper spirit, thought it well to assure Drury that the flight of her men was by no means the effect of cowardice, but of astonishment, at being thus greeted while performing a feat of honour; and Drury, probably ashamed of his groundless fears, declared the affair a mistake, and proceeded to execute his office within the liberties of Desmond without further control or opposition upon the part of Desmond, and also without any lawful authority.

Such was the recklessness with which person and property were injured, both by her majesty and her officers in Ireland, when Desmond's family combined to take a course which he long declined to follow. The majority of writers, in relating the events of this period, distort their true character, by announcing them under the sounding title of the rebellion of Desmond. "Ingens rebellibus exemplar," cries one, although the miscalled rebellion was, properly speaking, a civil war, springing out of incompatible, but not, on that account, illegal rights on the side of both the contending parties. Against Desmond, moreover, a persecution was directed, as fierce

and unrelenting as the history of any country exhibits. The facts are shortly these :—Desmond and his brother, Sir John, had been confined for two years in the Tower, and then removed to Dublin, where they were still detained in custody. After a time they effected their escape, and reaching Munster in safety, entered into a confederacy with their friends, July 18, 1574. The contracting parties bound themselves solemnly by oath to spare neither life nor fortune in the earl's defence ; upon which, conscious that he had been driven to desperation, the government made terms with him. He renewed his allegiance, and was permitted to resume his former rights and privileges. This fact must not be forgotten : it had been repeatedly felt and expressed in the strongest manner, that no reformation of the disorders of this ravaged province could be effected while the palatine authorities were allowed to continue in existence ; and yet this opportunity of resuming them was not turned to account.

Desmond in this respect did not stand alone. Amongst the Anglo-Irish, on whom Elizabeth so often vented her anger, was James Fitzmaurice, of Kerry. Him she imprisoned in the Tower, without judgment or trial, for a length of time. Upon regaining his liberty, he determined to take signal revenge for the dishonour and the wrongs heaped upon him by his sovereign. He went to France, and to Rome, and to Spain ; and exposing at the court of each the tyranny of Elizabeth, and the sufferings of his fellow-countrymen, importuned assistance for a war to save his own family, and to uphold the Roman Catholic religion. There seems to have been a warm disposition, but no means whatever, to promote these objects, either at Madrid or at Rome. All that Fitzmaurice could obtain, after a persevering suit, was a handful of men, 80 in number, and positive promises of a further reinforcement and money. With this troop he reached the Shannon. His advisers were two ecclesiastics, by name Allen and Saunders, who met with miserable deaths. The shadow of forthcoming evil soon fell on his path. He had scarcely landed when an English ship hove in sight, and burned the vessels in which he had

arrived. His first appeal was to Desmond; but although the earl seems no longer to have entertained a hope that his rights would be respected, or his estates preserved from the hungry wolves who were panting to possess them, he peremptorily refused to join in the insurrection. Davels, a messenger, sent by the deputy to test his disposition, was received with cordiality, and unhesitating assurances of fidelity. He was urged to prove his loyalty by coming out and fighting his brother and the Spaniards; but he declined the service, protesting, not without reason, that his shot, though good enough to bring down wild ducks, was not suited to the attack of such a fort as Smerwick, garrisoned by old soldiers. Yet this conduct enraged Fitzmaurice, who now betook himself to the earl's brothers, and reproaching them with the timidity of the degenerate head of the race, prevailed upon them to take up arms. Discourteous by their brother, they were only able to raise a few men. With some of these Sir John Fitzgerald attacked the house in Tralee, at which Davels was residing, and slew him and a companion in their bedroom.

Fitzmaurice was soon shot through the head in a skirmish; but Sir John Fitzgerald, being fully committed to the encounter, sought help and men in every direction, and was able to give the English more than one repulse near Slievelogher. He was defeated in his turn by Sir Nicholas Malby at Killmallock. The distress to which his proceedings had by this time reduced his brother the earl was extreme. That nobleman had not only abstained from hostilities, but publicly condemned the insurrection of his relatives. He was not the less suspected and maltreated. The murder of Davels brought Sir W. Drury into Munster, at the head of 400 foot and 200 horse. Amongst the noblemen summoned to rendezvous with their troops at Drury's camp was the earl. He attended with a strong company, and having thus placed himself in the power of his enemies, was first shamelessly committed to custody upon suspicion, and then set at liberty. By this intemperance and indecision another insult was added to the many already rankling in his breast. Being again called to attend the de-

puty with his force, he naturally avoided an officer who had proved that he was not to be trusted. He sent his countess forward with an apology, and tendered his son as a hostage. The crisis of his fate was now drawing rapidly near.

When Malby routed Sir John Fitzgerald at Kilmallock, Allen the priest was killed. Some letters found on his person showed that he had been corresponding with Desmond. We are told, that when Malby obtained these documents, he wrote to the earl to attend him in person. Sir W. Pelham, who succeeded Malby, repeated the call ; but Desmond still refused to leave the castle of Askeaton, where only he considered himself safe. Ormonde, armed with extraordinary powers, was now declared governor of Munster, and the long war of the rival houses proceeded terribly to its close.

A council was held, at which it was resolved to demand four things from Desmond. 1. That he should deliver up Saunders and the Spaniards ; 2. That he should surrender, as a pledge of his good behaviour, either the castle of Askeaton or of Carrigfoile ; 3. That he should submit himself to the queen and council in England, or to the deputy and council in Ireland. 4. That he should join Ormonde in the war against his brothers and all traitors. Of these articles, it is enough to note, that by insisting, in the first, upon an act which Desmond had no power to perform, Ormonde and his party laid bare their policy in proposing them. Desmond pleaded anxiously for permission to go to England and submit himself unconditionally to Elizabeth. But Ormonde was peremptory ; and as Desmond still objected, a proclamation was issued in which he was proclaimed a traitor. In that document his doom was decided ; and it has been remarked that two of the council, Lord Delvin and Lord Gormanstown, refused to sign it. Their reason is plain —at the time he was pronounced a traitor, there was no proof that he had committed treason.

We have now to describe the death struggle ; but the details are so horrible, that with the generality of readers even a meagre recapitulation of them is considered an exaggerated picture, and rejected with disgust and disbelief. Whole towns

and villages, as well as detached houses, and even churches, were everywhere laid in ruins. More touching far than any relation which could be furnished here of the ravages perpetrated on both sides, is the description given by the poet Spenser, who soon after became a resident in the country, of the desolation to which fire, famine, and the swords of a savage soldiery reduced the whole province of Munster. Before it is quoted, the concluding act of the tragedy is to be presented.

Successive deputies had prosecuted the enterprise against Desmond with persevering vigour. At length the promised reinforcement from Spain arrived, consisting of 700 men, with arms and ammunition for 5,000 more, and a supply of money. A detachment from this force was placed in Carrigfoile ; which was taken after a stout resistance, and every man either put to the sword or hung. The principal body built a fort ; but being neither supported as they expected by Desmond himself, or the natives, they soon after surrendered as prisoners of war, and were massacred. The officer who executed this butchery was Sir Walter Raleigh, and his friend Spenser the poet is its narrator.

From the first, Desmond seems to have felt that the hand of fate lay heavily upon him—and yet he displayed, in many of the attacks made against him, a spirit and courage which reflected no discredit on the military character of his race. Two of his exploits have been specially commemorated : the capture of the town of Youghal, which he held for five days ; and a battle immediately after, in which he defeated the inveterate enemy of his house, the tenth Ormonde, who was now, like a blood-hound, hunting him to his death lair.

The most harrowing particulars have been preserved of the extremities to which the heads of the beaten party were one by one reduced. James of Desmond, driven by hunger to make a prey of cattle at the head of a numerous train, was taken prisoner, and, though mortally wounded on the occasion, was carried to Cork and executed with circumstances of the cruellest indignity. His brother, Sir John, betrayed to some soldiers serving under Zouch, was killed. They cut off his head and

sent it to Dublin, where it was stuck on one of the castle turrets. The trunk was taken to Cork, and hung by the heels from the north city gate. Saunders, the great incendiary, as he has been called, worn out with fatigue and want, died in a wild retreat, unhoused, unfed, solitary and unnoticed. His body was not found and buried until it had been mangled by birds of prey. The doomed Desmond, who was excluded from a general pardon issued when there were scarcely any persons left to avail themselves of it, made his last public effort to escape from impending fate by addressing the following letter to the triumphant subverter of his house, the earl of Ormonde :—

“ MY LORD,—Great is my grief when I think how heavily her majesty is bent to disfavour me ; and howbeit I carry the name of an undutiful subject, yet God knoweth that my heart and mind are always most loyally inclined to serve my most loving prince, so it may please her highness to remove her displeasure from me. As I may not condemn myself of disloyalty to her majesty, so I cannot excuse my faults, but must confess I have incurred her majesty’s indignation ; yet when the cause and means which were found to make me commit folly shall be known to her highness, I rest in assured hope that her most gracious majesty will think of me as my heart deserveth, as also of those who wrong my heart with undutifulness. From my heart I am sorry that folly, bad counsels, slights or any other things, have made me forget my duty ; and, therefore, am most desirous to get conference with your lordship, to the end I may open and declare to you, how tyraneously I was used ; humbly craving that you will appoint some time and place when and where I may attend your honour, and then I doubt not to make it appear how dutiful a mind I carry ; how faithfully I have, at my own charge, served her majesty before I was proclaimed ; how sorrowful I am for my offences, and how faithfully I am affected ever hereafter to serve her majesty ; and so I commit your lordship to God.

(Subscribed)

“ GERALD DESMOND.”

Just, natural, and expressive as was this appeal, it was disregarded, while the writer, chased from one hiding place to another, fled, lurking in disguise amongst the most wretched of his followers, through mountain passes, woods, and morsasses. In the autumn he had his retreat in the mountains above Gleneefy; in the winter he kept his Christmas in the wood near Kilmallock. He had but one companion—a poor friar—and his countess, who shared this abject misery, when not engaged in petitioning for the mercy which was always refused. Like deer, says one of the chroniclers, they lay upon their keepings; and so fearful were they, that they would not tarry in one place any long time; but when they dressed their meat, thence would they remove and eat in another place, and from thence to another place to sleep. In the night they watched,—in the forenoons were upon the hills to reconnoitre the country,—in the afternoons they slept.

Chased from the mountains of Limerick into Tipperary, the worn and jaded old man doubled back into Kerry, and hung about the woods near the town of Dingle, in which no garrison had as yet been stationed. In this neighbourhood, deserted, luckless, and defenceless, in the last stage of famine and exhaustion, and after the captain of his gallows-glasses had already lost his life in a similar attempt, two horsemen and a few kerns ventured to seize some cattle for his subsistence. The owner, obtaining a few English soldiers from the next garrison, sent one of his men to follow the depredators. After a long pursuit, they came to the opening of the valley of Glanikilty, where they determined to repose for the night; but spying a light at some distance, they followed it, and fell upon a retired and miserable hut. The leader of the party, by name Daniel Kelly, ordered one of the men to advance in silence and reconnoitre. Word was brought that six persons only were inside. Kelly and his party then rushed quickly to the attack; but on entering found that all had fled, except a man of venerable aspect, who was stretched languidly before the fire. Kelly assailed him, and at the first blow almost cut off one of his arms. With another he inflicted a severe wound on the

side of the head : the old man had only time to exclaim—“ Spare me—I am the earl of Desmond !” when Kelly* smote his head from his body. The head was carried to Ormonde, who, regarding it as a suitable present for Elizabeth, despatched it to London, where it was impaled on London Bridge. The trunk was privately buried in the chapel of Killanamanagh, near Ardnegragh, in Kerry.

So fell Gerald, sixteenth earl of Desmond, the last of a great race. † According to Lodge, ten years of incessant war were required to destroy him. His lands, which measured 110 miles in a straight line, and comprised 574,628 acres, were declared forfeit, and parcelled out by Elizabeth amongst the hardened soldiers and the needy dependants who had long counselled, and at last effected, his ruin. Let one of these, the author of the “ Faery Queene,” sketch the country and the people racked by this ten years’ work of desolation :—“ Notwithstanding the province of Munster was a most plentiful country, full of corn and cattle, yet ere one year and a half they were brought to such wretchedness, as that any heart would rue the same ; out of every corner of the woods and glens they came creeping forth upon their hands, as if their legs could not bear them ; they looked like anatomies of death ; they spake like ghosts crying out of their graves ; they did eat the dead carriions—happy when they could find them ; yea, and one another soon after,—insomuch that the very carcases they spared not to scrape out of their graves : and if they found a plot of watercresses and shamrock, there they flocked as to a feast for the time (yet not able to continue there withal), that in a short space there was none almost left, and a most populous and plentiful country was suddenly left void of man

* Kelly, an Irishman by birth, had served in the English army. For killing the great earl of Deamond he was rewarded with a pension from government, which he continued to receive for some thirty years. Such, however, was the abhorrence in which he was held in Ireland, that he was obliged to live in London, where, according to the Abbé Mac Geoghan, he was hung for highway robbery.

† Though we say the last, the expression is not strictly correct, as more than one heir actually survived. The family, however, like the title, soon became extinct.

and every living creature." Well after this might it be represented to the queen that her deputy, Lord Grey, tyrannized with such merciless barbarity, "that little now was left her in Ireland to reign over, but ashes and carcases."

Let us not forget that this is the testimony of no common witness. Spenser is one of those authors whom England justly ranks in the first class of her men of genius; and from his description we learn that the only argument by which it would be possible to defend or excuse the extirpation of the Desmonds, does not apply to the case. For little as we can admire the greatness attained by that family, and impossible as it is to vindicate the excesses into which its numerous members ran—it is equally impossible not to abhor the means by which they were exterminated. The event, as a political achievement, was signal, no doubt; but it is plain, from Spenser and others, that no immediate good followed the ruin of the Geraldines, and perhaps we may add with perfect truth, nor was intended either. It might have been made, on the part of the statesmen of Elizabeth, a noble labour of regeneration: as it was, we only see the natural succession of events working a great act of retribution for the wrongs by which the first invaders, ancestors of this once potent earl, more than four hundred years before, had despoiled the ancient sept of Macarty. In the miserable fall of the heirs of those aggressors, the moral of a tardy but just punishment was exhibited. Upon the part of the government, the merit of subverting the oligarchy of which the Desmonds were heads, was forfeited by their abuse of the advantages placed in their hands by that decisive reverse. If the queen and her ministers, running their eyes along the chain of events by which the years 1171 and 1583 were connected together, had resolved to remove the Desmonds as principal authors of the ruined condition of Ireland, and to crush at the same time the wasteful power exercised by them; then indeed we might mingle with our regret for the violence and cruelties displayed upon the occasion, some portion of the credit always due to exalted aims, and the praise with which

even an attempt to carry worthy objects deserves to be considered. But after a careful consideration of all the circumstances, we are not able to perceive in them any signs of sympathy with the past sufferings—any desire of atoning for the constant oppression—nor any the slightest effort for the substantial improvement of the country. The sum of the achievement may be briefed into a single sentence. One great crime was committed, and the power to commit others transmitted to new hands : the culprits were changed, but not their offences. In order to create an opening for a better state of things, it became necessary to reproduce, in the worst forms, every atrocity which the annals of guilt testify that human nature is prone to ; and when at last the opening was created, far from taking advantage of it, Elizabeth and her council wilfully neglected the opportunity it afforded them of compensating for the past by providing well for the future. It appears that they saw clearly enough what would be right, and yet persisted in wrong. Lord Mountjoy had written to them, saying, “ All the Irish that are now obstinate, are so only out of diffidence to be safe in any forgiveness ; and although they are weary of the war, they are unwilling to have it ended, for fear lest upon a peace there should come a severe reformation of their religion. They have the ancient swelling and desire of liberty in their countrymen to work upon : they fear to be rooted out ; and generally all over the kingdom they fear a persecution for religion—the least of which alone has been many times sufficient to drive the best and most quiet states into sudden confusion.”

But Elizabeth and her ministers, instead of acting upon the spirit of this language, equally sound and humane, did not hesitate to admit that they were animated by very different views—contending, that if they exerted themselves effectually in bringing Ireland to a condition of good government, it would increase in power, consequence and riches ; and then, it was argued, the inhabitants would become alienated from England, and cast themselves into the arms of some foreign power, or perhaps erect themselves into an independent and

separate state. So they agreed to connive at the disorders of the Irish, because, while a weak and disordered people they never could detach themselves from England. Lord Bacon added a significant remark :—“ You have proved what Ireland barbarous has been—beware of Ireland civilized.” Two centuries have passed since the great philosopher made that observation ;—and it is as replete with meaning now, as it was at the moment in which it was first spoken.

CHAPTER VIII.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION
WITH ENGLAND—*continued.*

THE FAMILY OF O'NEIL.—KINGS OF ULSTER.—THEIR SOVEREIGNTY MAINTAINED FOR CENTURIES, AND REPEATEDLY RECOGNISED BY THE KINGS OF ENGLAND.—CON O'NEIL FIRST EARL OF TYRONE.—SHANE O'NEIL, AND HUGH, THE SECOND EARL.—THE LONG WARS OF THE FAMILY WITH THE ENGLISH CROWN.—THE JUSTICE OF THEIR CLAIMS ADMITTED BY REPEATED CHIEF GOVERNORS.—THEIR EXPATRIATION.—FORFEITURE OF THEIR ESTATES.—CHARACTER OF THE IRISH GOVERNMENT UNDER JAMES I.—CONFISCATIONS OF PROPERTY, AND PERSECUTION IN RELIGION.—CHESTER, LORD BELFAST.—OLIVER ST. JOHN, LORD GRANDISON.

The daring spirit of the Geraldines of Kildare was broken;—the towering Geraldines of Desmond were extirpated;—a kindred house—Fitzmaurice of Kerry,—having furnished its quota of prisoners to the Tower of London, and victims to the gibbet, had been tamed: of all the great English settlers, the Butlers of Ormonde alone retained their possessions uncurtailed, and their honours unreduced. By leaning in general to the crown, by currying grace at court, and becoming on many a critical occasion efficient instruments for curbing and overthrowing obnoxious cotemporaries—this cautious and steadfast family had now rid itself of all rivals amongst the English interest, and were the unmatched lords of the ascendant in Ireland. Yet the triumph was incomplete,—a potent Irish sept remained unsubdued,—the O'Neil was still the royal chief of Ulster. It will be necessary to turn some years back, in order to present a distinct narrative of his ruin.

More than four hundred years before, De Courcy had been let loose against his forefathers; De Lacy followed De Courcy;

to them in an unbroken line succeeded many a bold and battle-seasoned captain, each striving in turn to wrest from the kings of the North their province, and annihilate their succession and their name. All the monstrous interests erected by the invaders, upon the destruction of the native sovereignties, had withered away, or been trodden into dust. This alone reigned on, eminent for courage and talent, both of which were of a high order, and effective, though wild and irregular.

A long file of records from the earliest period of the invasion attest the rank and possessions of the O'Neils, kings of Ulster. They were included by Henry II. in the five bloods to whom the laws of England were conceded; and despite the grant of their province to De Courcy and others, were repeatedly styled and treated as its kings. Rolls of Henry III. gave them that title on different occasions; and the indenture of homage between Neil O'Neil the elder and Richard II. is expressed on the part of the former with all the dignity of sovereign power: "for himself and for his sons, for his whole nation and all his subjects, he becomes liege-man." When the earl of Kildare died broken-hearted in the Tower, and his son and five brothers had been gibbeted at Tyburn, O'Neil, head of the sept at that day, was married to a Geraldine: he was the first of his family who took an English peerage, being created earl of Tyrone: at the same time his son was made Baron Dungannon. In the grant of these titles an unfortunate irregularity was admitted, which had the most pernicious effects. The first earl of Tyrone had two sons—Shane or John legitimate, and Matthew a bastard: the father, loving the latter most, procured the barony for him, and announced that he should inherit the family estates. This preference consisted with the license of the Brehon laws, which were still in force throughout Ulster: it was not the less an unwise act, involving severe and complicated distress.

O'Neil the father—he was named Con O'Neil—died under restraint. Pursuant to established usage, his brother Turloch became Tanist: this, again, was a proceeding as strictly legal

upon the part of those of his sept who adopted it, as it was strongly opposed to the English order of inheritance. By that, Shane, the eldest legitimate son, was the right heir; but by the disposition of the title and property under the patents of Henry VIII., Matthew, the bastard, would succeed. Turloch, the new chieftain, advanced in years, and never distinguished for enterprise or resolution, was unequal to the maintenance of an authority, disputed by his nephews, and rendered further insecure by the general turbulence of the age. He was soon thrust aside; and though occasionally favoured by the English, is not to be regarded as the head of the family, or the depositary of their power.

In the stirring transactions which now took place, it is difficult beyond measure to arrive at a clear perception of the real character, not of Shane O'Neil alone, but of his successor, Hugh—and to give an intelligible narrative of the feuds, plots, and fights, in which, for years, we find them incessantly engaged. We have reached a period at which the volume of historical evidences grows thick and well filled; but the writers who furnish its contents are so biassed by prejudice, so prone to elaborate generalities, and a style of composition strangely compounded of simplicity and conceit, that a correct apprehension of facts, and the true spirit in which they occurred, is almost unattainable. The old saying of gaining in quantity to lose in quality, might seem to have been expressed to describe with accuracy the body of the information lying before us. That second great cause of Irish ruin, adverted to at the commencement of these chapters,—the hatred of rival creeds, superadded to the hatred of rival races—was now beginning to grow rampant. No man spoke, acted or wrote, but as he conceived would most advance the interest and redound to the credit of the party, national and religious, to which he belonged. Plainly as this envenomed bigotry is distinguishable in the best English authorities, it cannot hide the prominent enormities of the age. Usurpation was an every-day crime, effected on both sides by perfidy, rapine and murder. Few virtues and many vices were common

to each ; the standard of morality and intellectual acquirements was low amongst all, while the passions they indulged in were inhumanly fierce. In a state of things full of chicanery, and overloaded with offences, no ordinary powers of discernment and impartiality should be possessed by the judge who would apportion to the different leaders their respective shares of guilt. The generality of readers, hopeless of discharging so arduous a duty fairly, will probably content themselves with laying a heavy censure in the quarter where it appears to have been unquestionably deserved. With the English government rested the responsibility of a consistent line of action, and still more of exacting from the instruments of its authority an example which should vindicate its own policy, and put to shame the misconduct of the smaller and less enlightened forces it sought to reduce to submission and order. But the pained inquirer into the details of Irish history meets with no such relief to lighten the pressure of his labours. He is compelled to own, with reluctance and shame, that in the sixteenth as in the twelfth century, the representatives of the sovereign seem to have had but a single rule of action in Ireland, and that only worked the extirpation of one wrong by the commission of another still greater.

These remarks, so often repeated, are provoked by the constant recurrence of circumstances which it is impossible to pass over without comment. They apply with undiminished force to the case of O'Neil, a man the most extraordinary in every point of view,—extraordinary in his character and his fortunes ; in personal courage and intellectual endowments ; equally admired in the court of Elizabeth and the rough mountain camp of his forefathers ; capable of resisting the most experienced English generals in war, and overcoming them in diplomacy ; at times surmounting extreme misfortunes with dazzling splendour ; but as suddenly thrown back into difficulty, and at last sinking into a violent and discreditable death. Painted by English writers in the most glaring and discordant colours, the story of his life, as related

by Ware, Cox, Hooper, and Morrison, is a tissue of irreconcileable extravagancies. From their pages, nevertheless, the following account has been digested, principally through a fear of incurring the reproach of partiality, by seeking information from other sources.

There is sometimes to be seen in the picture shops an old caricature of Life and Death, in which a figure is represented, half a grinning skeleton, and half a smirking fop of the last century. The portrait handed down to us of Shane O'Neil seems drawn from the corresponding extremes of barbarous and polite society. His cunning, we are told, was so active and penetrating, as to foil the keenest of Elizabeth's statesmen, and his sensuality so gross as to wallow in the lowest and most enervating excesses; his polished manners and graceful wit struck the queen and her deputies with admiration; his cruelties shocked even their dull sensibilities; his prudence was considerable, and his intemperance excessive; his courage and talents in the field eminently commendable, and the defeats he sustained inexplicably disgraceful. There is not much of pleasure or confidence to be felt in the writers who could lay claim as a real character to so unnatural a compound of all extremes: we are bound nevertheless to proceed with his story.

The early life of Shane O'Neil was peculiarly unpropitious: he may be said to have been inured to wrongs from his cradle. Deprived by his father's preference for his natural son, of the few softening and improving influences which the wild home of so troubled a potentate could have fostered, he saw himself excluded from his inheritance by the patents of Henry VIII. at the very age when he was least likely to endure without resentment so heavy an injustice. After some years of impatient contention, we find his father, Con, first earl of Tyrone, placed by him under restraint and dying in confinement, and the illegitimate heir, Lord Dungannon, killed in a local feud of which Shane was the leader.

Sidney, the lord justice, hearing of these lawless events, marched to Dundalk, and called upon Shane to come and

account for his conduct. When the summons arrived, the rising chieftain was holding a feast to celebrate the christening of his child ; and with a frank dexterity, highly praised by politicians, he begged the lord justice rather to visit him and to stand gossip at the ceremony, after which he might receive whatever submission the queen's service demanded. Sidney accepted the invitation—was generously entertained according to the rude fashion of the age and locality ; and after becoming sponsor for the child, held a formal conference with O'Neil upon the subject of the convulsions which the province had so long been fated to endure.

Explicit particulars of all that passed upon this occasion have been preserved, and they leave us no reason to doubt that O'Neil had been grievously used, and that Sidney must have felt the hardship of his case. The points raised were these :—First, that the late Lord Dungannon was the son of a blacksmith's wife, and born after the marriage of which Shane O'Neil was the eldest son ; secondly, that the late earl, when he surrendered his territories to Henry VIII., had only a life estate in them, and therefore could not disinherit the lawful heir ; thirdly, that the king's letters patent were illegal, according to English law, as no inquisition had been held before they were issued ; and fourthly, that Shane having been duly elected tanist according to the Brehon laws and established custom of his sept, and the Brehon code having always been recognised by the English crown and courts of justice as the sole laws in force throughout the Irish districts, Shane O'Neil had only exercised his unquestionable rights in assuming the rank he enjoyed, and in keeping under due subjection the northern chieftains, whose indisputable superior he was by the force of immemorial custom and prescription. Sidney's reply is worthy of the most attentive consideration. By the advice of the council, he assured O'Neil that the queen would do whatever should appear just ; and as a parting advice, he earnestly recommended peace and order. It is admitted on all sides, that while Sidney continued in office, O'Neil's conduct was unexceptionable.

Time passed—nothing was done by the English government,—and O'Neil, left to all the disadvantages of his equivocal position, is found in arms against the O'Donnells. This was an old feud : on its last outbreak O'Neil had sustained a humiliating repulse, and now took a deep revenge. Making prisoners of O'Donnell and his family, he admitted that chief to ransom, while his wife was retained to become the victor's mistress. Success in one expedition led to fresh enterprises, until O'Neil's incursions into the Pale drew down the anger of Sussex, the lord deputy. But O'Neil's resentment was to the full as strong. The representative of the sovereign complained that his authority was outraged by the violence of the northern chieftain ; and the chieftain retorted, that the sovereign, by withholding her recognition of obvious rights, was aggravating the force of injuries which had been acknowledged to be galling, and provoking his defiance of her power, and his hatred of her institutions. Still neither Sussex nor O'Neil were disposed to push the quarrel to extremities. This deputy, like his predecessor, Sidney, promised justice and advised peace ; while O'Neil, cheerfully assenting to a proposal that he should repair to Dublin, and abide by the result of a parliamentary inquiry and decision upon the merits of his claims, and the validity of the patents granted to his father, presented himself at the lord deputy's court, made his submission in form, and was honourably entertained.

But if the head of the government was well inclined to see these differences settled by a rational appeal to the proper civil tribunal, his underlings were resolved upon a very different course. O'Neil had scarcely arrived in Dublin, when he was informed that a plot had been formed to seize and imprison him. With the example of his kinsman, the late earl of Kildare, before him, he quickly and prudently decided that if he was to appear before Elizabeth, it should be as a free prince, and under independent circumstances. Selecting therefore from his followers a company of his tallest gallowglasses, he set sail for England, and proceeded to render homage to

the queen at their head. Camden the historian describes the applause with which the Irish chieftain was cheered along the streets, and the pleasure with which Elizabeth received the well-turned compliments he paid to her person and her authority. It is clear, upon the face of all the accounts, that the queen and court were taken by surprise. They do not appear to have been at all prepared for the polished manners of the Irish chief, or for the ability with which he explained, and the knowledge with which he supported, his case. The consequence was, that having proved himself by the English, as well as by the Irish laws, not a simple feudal baron, but a territorial prince, and having shown himself a fair courtier, he was dismissed with flattering courtesies, an assurance that his claims were just and should be duly admitted, and a present of £2,000.

The warmth of O'Neil's gratitude was boundless. Impatient of an opportunity to prove the sincerity of his allegiance, he resolved to reduce the Scotch hordes from the Hebrides—long his best and most intimate allies in plundering the English settlements, and keeping the North in commotion. He subdued this marauding force, and was warmly thanked by the queen. Still he received no grant or confirmation of his property or rights. Two lord deputies and the queen herself had successively admitted his pretensions, and promised to ratify them. But even now that he had turned his former friends into implacable foes, he was left with no better guarantee than fair speeches, as of old. Thus lay the facts as between O'Neil and the government; but very different appears to have been the view taken of them by the party called "the queen's servants in Ireland." To them O'Neil was a marked man, to be run down by any means. Unable to impugn his acts, they ascribed motives and intentions to him, which being invented, it was easy to make of any colour. It was gravely asserted that O'Neil had conquered the Scots, not to give quiet to the queen's dominions, but to exercise and train his army previous to a revolt. Letters and messages without number, swelling with vague suspicions and threatening unexplained dangers, were despatched to London, until at last, as

if worn out with importunities, Elizabeth hastily exclaimed—“ That if O’Neil should revolt, it would be the better for her servants, as there would then be estates enough for them all.”

There are writers who argue that such language falling from the queen’s lips operated on her ministers as an incentive to force an insurrection. Without insisting upon that construction, we may fairly remark that the immediate proceedings of the local government wore a very suspicious appearance. Sussex had ceased to rule, and Sir H. Sidney occupied his post, when it was determined to establish an English garrison at Derry. This was an irritating act of aggression. It was illegal, moreover, if O’Neil’s allegiance, as he upon the force of repeated treaties contended, was not that of an ordinary baron, but partook of the independence enjoyed by feudal palatinates. Colonel Randolph, commander of the garrison, soon made his actions tell the spirit in which he had been sent into Ulster. Without waiting to be attacked, and without being furnished with the old excuse, in the shape of depredations committed by the Irish, he sallied from Derry, and charged O’Neil, while marching in that direction with his troops. The Irish suffered an easy defeat, but killed Randolph; and O’Neil, with a degree of prudence, in all probability unexpected by his adversaries, instead of prosecuting hostilities, complained to the lord deputy of the treatment to which he was exposed, and solicited an interview at Dundalk. Before it took place, the fort at Derry blew up by accident, and the place being considered untenable after that disaster, the cavalry resolved to cut their way to Dublin, whilst the infantry escaped by sea. The temptation to pursue the flying English proved irresistible. At the same moment a notion was spread abroad that the destruction of the fort was a judgment of Heaven upon the invaders, and the retreat of the garrison an omen of the fate that hung over their cause. O’Neil was soon in arms, and ran through a series of vigorous but unsuccessful efforts to establish his independence. He took Armagh, and burned the cathedral. Rushing through Fermanagh with terrible impetuosity, he ejected the Mac

Guires, who had denied their subjection to his authority, and tried to carry Dundalk, but was beaten back.

Nor were these the only means by which he sought to bring victory to his standard. His envoys penetrated through Connaught and Munster, and travelled to Rome and Madrid. The native chiefs, the earl of Desmond, the Pope, and the king of Spain, were exhorted and importuned to aid him in saving his own rights and the Catholic Church in Ireland. But in no quarter was succour afforded. The unfortunate Desmond, anxious to testify his loyalty to the government, which was bent upon his ruin, refused to co-operate; while still more fatally for his hopes, many of the neighbouring septs, including several of his own tributaries, either jealous of his sway or won over by the diplomatic promises of the lord deputy, rose to molest him. For awhile he sustained a fast sinking cause against all odds with gallant energy. But at last, most of his followers having fallen, and every resource having failed, he was constrained to admit that further resistance would be vain. In this extremity he was only prevented from surrendering to the lord deputy by the remonstrance of his secretary, who, reminding him of the death of his kinsman, the earl of Kildare, and O'Moore of Leix, in the Tower, advised him rather to seek refuge amongst the Scotch from the Hebrides, than trust to the mercy of the English. Upon this advice he acted, and was soon murdered. It is painful to add, that the crime was procured by the government in Dublin. An English officer, named Piers, dishonoured his profession by undertaking a mission to the Scotch; and reminding them of the manner in which O'Neil, once their ally, had turned against them, to prove the sincerity of his allegiance to Elizabeth, prevailed upon them to take a deadly revenge upon the forlorn chieftain whom they had welcomed to their encampment as a guest. O'Neil and his little train of fugitives were provoked into a quarrel at a drinking feast, and slain; whilst the English, as if to leave no doubt of their participation in the crime, rewarded Piers with 1,000 marks, as the price of his villainy.

But the death of Shane O'Neil neither led to the direct pa-

cification of Ulster, nor sufficed to rid the government of a potent adversary in his family. His head, carried to Dublin by Captain Piers, was ignominiously exposed on the top of a pole ; but ere long we find another of his name tracking the same career, nothing deterred by the fate to which it led. This was Hugh O'Neil, eldest son of Matthew, the illegitimate Lord Dungannon, and grandson of Con, the first earl, who fully earned the addition by which he is generally described as being the greatest as well as the last insurgent against the dominion of England in the North of Ireland.

The accounts preserved of the person and the principal events in the life of Hugh, second earl of Tyrone, are copious and minute. Morison, who knew him, says that he was mean in stature, but strong in body, and well fitted to the vicissitudes of a military life, being able to endure much labour, watching, and hard fare. At once active and industrious, he was valiant and affable, and was endowed with a capacity for the management of great affairs, and a wit highly dissembling, subtle, and profound. An English education, and constant intercourse with eminent persons, had assisted him in uniting to a temper naturally insinuating the polish of refined manners. Amongst his own people he could throw off the courtier with facility, and accommodate himself aptly to the wild fashions of the Irish chieftain. Having entered the English army in his youth, he served in the war against Desmond, and signalized himself while captain of a troop of horse by his industry and courage. In the year 1587 he petitioned the parliament sitting in Dublin to be admitted to the titles and estates annexed to the earldom of Tyrone, by virtue of the grant to his grandfather Con, by Henry VIII., which had been renewed to his father and his heirs. Sir J. Perrot readily yielded the title, but referred him for the inheritance to the queen's pleasure. By still pressing his suit, and offering to secure a large revenue to the crown, he was permitted to visit London, and present to the queen some warm letters of recommendation. His success with Elizabeth was triumphant. He spoke, as we are told, the views and sentiments of the most enlightened court

politicians, and obtained a patent, under the Great Seal of England, both of the earldom and the inheritance of Tyrone. No rent was reserved to the crown, but 240 acres near the Blackwater were to be ceded for the erection of a fort ; and the sons, both of Shane and Turloch O'Neil, were to be provided for. Returning to Ireland with exalted ideas of his power and consequence, the new lord found little difficulty in persuading Turloch O'Neil, the real chieftain, who still survived in a weak old age, to resign in his favour.

Well has it been observed, by more than one writer, that in Ireland the preservation of a man's loyalty without suspicion seldom rested upon himself ;—of this truth, Tyrone now received a sharp proof. The lord deputy, Sir J. Perrot, had warmly recommended his case to Elizabeth ; but now that the case had been triumphantly carried, Sir John took offence that he had not been consulted or called on to settle the details. O'Neil thus took possession of his rank and property under the disfavour of the local government, which soon found occasion to censure and complain. The surrounding chieftains, finding him honoured by the queen, and secured by law in the possession of the estates of his ancient race, paid him the respect due to the representative of such a family, and the possessor of so much property. When this was observed, it was said that he was seeking to popularize himself, and to set himself at their head as the independent prince of Ulster. A standing force being held necessary to preserve the peace of the province and awe the disaffected, he had undertaken to keep six companies constantly afoot. The troops were equipped and drilled, and thereupon the government was warned that he was training the inhabitants of his district to military exercises, preparatory to a general revolt. He visited the Scotch from the Hebrides, so long settlers in that neighbourhood, and it was immediately asserted that he had formed an alliance with them against the English. A mansion-house being considered a proof of the adoption of English habits and institutions, and an earnest of loyalty to the crown, Tyrone built one, and procured a quantity of lead to cover his battlements and cisterns.

The mansion was pronounced an intended fortress against the English ; and the lead, material for bullets to shoot them.

This pernicious gossip was poured in a running stream into the lord deputy's ears by the designing courtiers, who could not brook the approaching establishment of an Irishman "in English order and civility," until it led to disgraceful results. If Tyrone, it was argued, really harboured the designs attributed to him, the policy of the English government would lie in being prepared to set up a rival to him in one of the heirs of his immediate predecessor, the murdered Shane. But in order to give effect to this scheme, it was necessary to gain possession of Shane's sons. They were residing with one of the local chieftains, Red Hugh of Tyrconnel, a youth suspected of disloyalty, being of ancient lineage and large possessions. An English ship, disguised as a Spanish merchantman, was sent to the coast of Tyrconnel, under the pretence of selling wine. Invitations to come and taste the wines having been accepted by the unsuspecting chief, and his guests, the O'Neils, the anchor was weighed, and the party carried off to Dublin, where they were thrown into prison.

This offence was followed by others of a still more outrageous nature. The abduction of the Tyrconnel chieftain concluded the administration of Sir John Perrot. He was succeeded by Sir William Fitzwilliam, a man whose rapacity far exceeded the daring lust for plunder which gives so indecent a character to the reign of Elizabeth. Some vessels belonging to the Spanish Armada had been wrecked on the Irish coast. They were said to be laden with money to pay the invading army and it was reported that several chieftains had possessed themselves of large portions of the treasure. Upon no stronger evidence than common rumour, Fitzwilliam seized upon Sir Owen Mac Toole and Sir John Dogherty, gentlemen conspicuous for their attachment to the English interest, and confined them in prison. In Monaghan, Macmahon, chief of that district, had surrendered his lands to the crown, and taken an English grant of them. When he died, his son applied to be admitted heir under the patent ; but his right was withheld

because he refused to pay a fine of 600 cows by way of bribe to the local authorities. The deputy, taking advantage of this proof of disaffection, marched upon the spot and arrested the chieftain. Having thus obtained possession of his person, he formed a court martial of common soldiers, and put Macmahon upon his trial for high treason,—the particular charge being that he had employed a military force two years before in collecting his rents. The unfortunate chieftain was soon found guilty, and led to immediate execution. The guilt of high treason involving the forfeiture of the sufferer's lands, they were appropriately divided between the officers who had destroyed him—Fitzwilliam and Sir Henry Bagnal.

A thousand Spaniards belonging to the Armada were cast by a storm upon the territory of O'Rorke, the chieftain of Breffny, and received from him the succour which, amongst a people honouring hospitality as one of the first of virtues, it would have been considered the meanest of vices to deny. They re-embarked; the ship foundered, and in sight of the Irish shore every being on board perished. O'Rorke's conduct having been reported to the government, he was driven by a revengeful army into Scotland, where he was seized by order of the king, and delivered over to Elizabeth, who executed him as a traitor in London.

In the midst of all this reckless tyranny, Tyrone was informed that he too had been denounced as one who had been in communication with the Spaniards. He detected the informer, and put him to death. The government called him to account for this act of presumption, as they termed it; but he showed them that he had not exceeded the powers conferred upon him by the military commission he held—and they withdrew that authority.

The arrival of another lord deputy inspired Tyrone with a fresh hope of adjusting his differences with the government upon reasonable terms. Hastening to Dublin, he laid his case before Sir John Russell, and had the mortification to learn, that as soon as his arrival became known, a motion for seizing upon his person had been debated at the council board, and

only negatived by a small majority. An object either of cupidity or suspicion to almost every person around him, he became alarmed for his safety, and resolved to fly to England. He reached London, and was there put under arrest upon a charge of having left Ireland without a license from the lord deputy. But upon submitting himself promptly and frankly to the queen's pleasure, he was set at liberty, and obtained an audience with Elizabeth, which ended in a satisfactory accommodation of the leading points in dispute. This fact must be regarded as strong evidence of a conviction in the highest quarters that the unfortunate chieftain was more sinned against than sinning. The earl of Ormonde and Sir Christopher Hatton became sureties for his observance of the agreement now entered into. As the leading terms are considered to have originated with Tyrone, we are enabled to form our own judgment of the sincerity of his professions, and his capacity for dealing efficiently with the difficult questions presented by his case at this crisis. The articles of his submission were full, precise, and freely subscribed. In them he made one stipulation, which it will be proper to specify, because it shows how perfectly he understood his own position, and how clearly he saw the way to preserve the peace of Ulster permanently. He insisted that Turloch O'Neil and the other chieftains of the North should come in and be parties to the indentures which he was willing to sign. The wisdom of this provision is self-evident: it was most important to the English government, and indispensably necessary to Tyrone's security amongst his equals. Having already lost character, and provoked no light feelings of hatred amongst the haughty leaders of his fellow-countrymen by his attachment to the queen, and his preference of English laws and habits, he pointed out with equal truth and force, that he never should be forgiven by them for the destruction of their ancient privileges and irregular practices, unless they should be held in the same bonds by which he was content to be restrained. It was accordingly agreed that the proposed arrangement should include all the outstanding chieftains.

As it is impossible to suppose that the soundness of this condition was not felt by the Irish government, we can only account for the absence of all effort to give it effect by assuming that there existed no real wish for any change that did not embrace Tyrone's ruin, and the division of his inheritance amongst the buccaneer troops whose eyes had long been greedily fixed upon his broad acres as their certain prey. The promptitude with which the earl was required to sign the indentures, and the total disregard of his just remark, that it would be equally impolitic and unfair were he to act alone, are not to be misunderstood as political proceedings.

The results which followed will excite no surprise, and challenge but little blame. The jealous suspicions and restless despotism of the government, together with the repeated proofs afforded, that no submission however humble, no bribe however large, and no treaty however formal, gave security for liberty or life, had spread over the whole country a spirit of hatred and revenge which was perfectly irrepressible. All eyes were raised to Tyrone,* as to the proper leader of an inevitable civil war. For a while he appears to have resisted the vows, flattery, menaces and reproaches of his fellow-countrymen ; but one of the last acts of violence committed upon the chieftains in his neighbourhood having been accompanied with a significant remark from the lord deputy, that Tyrone's turn would come next ; and positive information having reached him about the same time that extraordinary reinforcements, commanded by a general of distinguished ability, had been ordered over to the

* All the English writers of this period, and not a few of those of our own day, almost invariably couple with the name of Tyrone some strong epithet expressive of his hypocrisy, artfulness, and profound dissimulation. In the case of the O'Neils, as in that of the Desmonds, constant reference is made to the double part acted by the sufferers. Without insisting that there is no foundation for such representations, we may be permitted to remark upon the double game played against these unfortunate men, of whom it may with strict truth be said that they never knew on which side safety lay. We must also point out, as a thing somewhat strange, that the plundering character of the English invasion, and its consequences, down to the period here treated of, though plain in the extreme to all steady and dispassionate observers, seems never to have been thought of by the parties alluded to.

army serving in Ireland, he no longer hesitated to commence the hostilities on which both parties were determined.

As it forms no part of the plan of this work to describe the military incidents of the civil war which now began to rage, we shall merely observe, that it proved every way unworthy of the English army engaged in it, and of the statesmen who advised it. Three generals—Sir John Norris, an officer of the highest character; Lord Burg; and Essex, the brave but unfortunate favourite of Elizabeth—were foiled and defeated,* in succession, by Tyrone and his undisciplined Irish. Sir Conyers Clifford, after having been driven to a calamitous retreat in Leinster, fell into an ambuscade in Connaught, and was slain. Lord Burg, Sir Warham St. Leger, and Sir T. Norris, were routed and killed. Tyrone obtained a signal victory over Bagnal at Blackwater Fort; 1,500 soldiers and 13 officers, Bagnal included, being slain on the English side, while the Irish lost only 200 killed, and had but 600 wounded. They reckoned 34 ensigns taken, with all the royal artillery, ammunition and provisions. The royal army fled for shelter to Armagh, but was soon obliged to evacuate that town. This success was the signal for a general confederacy under the banners of Tyrone. The O'Moores in Leinster, the Burkes of Connaught, Fitz-

* Melancholy is the picture drawn of the consequences produced by the manner, at once mean, passionate and inconsistent, in which Irish affairs were managed during the reign of Elizabeth. The craft at the council board, the spies set upon every man in office, the quick ear lent to reports of disaffection, and suggestions of spoliation, the hardened character of the public men, and the general rage for predatory adventure, begot a state of suspicion, faithlessness, and capricious cruelty in all the relations of government, which combined to make this an age of great crimes. Here, however, as in most cases of enormity, we are struck by the heavy examples of avenging power which the predominant policy entailed upon its chief actors. Sir John Perrot, who left Ireland with the emphatic declaration that he could govern the queen's Irish subjects, but that no power could control her English servants in Ireland—Sir John Perrot, upon being removed from his government, was committed to the Tower, where he died. Sir John Norris expired, broken-hearted, by the slur thrown upon his character as an officer by the queen's disapprobation of his conduct. Sir R. Bingham was put under arrest, and tried by a court-martial. Essex's fate is well known. If to these instances of heavy personal suffering we add the losses sustained in the deaths of so many generals, the ultimate success of the war against Tyrone must be held to have been dearly purchased by the English party.

maurice of Lixnaw, in Kerry, and his kindred, the Geraldines, distinguished by the popular titles of the Knight of the Valley, the Knight of Glin, and the White Knight, united in the cause of Irish independence. Elizabeth at this crisis displayed her characteristic vigour. Receiving intelligence from the king of Scots, that Philip of Spain, with whom Tyrone was in correspondence, had allotted 12,000 troops for a descent upon Ireland, she sent over the earl of Essex, esteemed the most gallant soldier of the age, and 20,000 men to maintain her dominion in that country.

Two passages in the history of this war now press for our consideration, and they are more instructive in their nature than a hundred battles. If we desired further evidence to prove that hostilities on the part of Tyrone, and men of his class, were the work of despair, we shoud be content to rely upon the conferences which took place between him and Sir John Norris before the defeat of Bagnal ; and between him and the earl of Essex after Norris had been superseded. Norris and Essex were rivals, but they were both men of ability and honourable character, and they arrived at the same conclusion, after seeing Tyrone, and hearing him explain his case. Various attempts appear to have been resorted to for the purpose of preventing Norris from seeing the earl ; but though some letters were intercepted and suppressed, others reached their address, and the Irish chiefs, with Tyrone at their head, gained an opportunity of stating, in natural but impressive terms, the grievances by which they were oppressed, and the arts by which they had been excited to revolt. It is a miserable fact, that after hearing these men, Norris was so convinced of the injustice by which they had been roused to arms, that he directed his most zealous energies not to conquer but to establish an equitable peace with them. Essex scouted this conduct as a contemptible dereliction of duty ;—let us see how he acted when, having succeeded to Sir John's place, and being at the head of a much more efficient force, he came himself to communicate with these much reviled rebels.

The two armies were in sight, and the generals afield, when

Tyrone proposed that he should be heard before they came to blows. Essex consented, and a private interview took place : another followed immediately after, which, being public, has been fully described. A river separated the English and Irish : Essex stood aloof on the acclivity of one bank, while Tyrone, advancing from the other, plunged his horse up to the saddle girths in the stream, and, after swimming across, cantered up to the lord deputy, and paid his respects with a frank and courteous bearing that won the applause of both armies. Leading the conversation gradually into a familiar and confidential strain, he pointed out how necessarily the disturbed condition of Ireland proceeded from the practices of the government ; showed how different must be the case if a fair system could be introduced, and closed his observations with a refined personality, by asking if Ireland, groaning under the crimes and follies committed by former governors, was the proper field for engaging the talents of a nobleman so eminently gifted and universally admired as Essex, while England, his native country, was already big with mighty changes ? In the end, Essex, like Norris, finding himself unable to answer the facts or the arguments of his opponent, granted a six weeks' truce, and took a respectful leave. Tyrone's overtures were to be transmitted to the queen : they proposed a general amnesty ; the free exercise of the Roman Catholic religion ; the restoration of all forfeited lands ; and a discontinuance of the growing practice of governing Ireland exclusively by Englishmen.

The temper of Elizabeth, long irritated by the troubles of Ireland, now fermented into fury. Perrot and Norris had been degraded one after the other, because they found it impossible to carry her peremptory commands into execution—and, again, the choicest of her favourites and most accomplished of her generals, bending to the invincible conviction entertained by his predecessors, announced that the peace of Ireland was to be secured, not by military devastation, but by conceding the legitimate demands of her injured subjects. We cannot follow here the indignant anger with which the masculine tyrant visited her refractory general, nor his mad

resentment of the treatment to which he was subjected ; but it is impossible not to feel how cogent is the justification made out by these reiterated declarations solemnly offered by different lord deputies to the justice of the cause of Tyrone and his party.

On the expiration of the truce, hostilities were recommenced, and again respite for a month. Essex having hurried to England, the earl of Ormonde was made lord lieutenant of the army, in conjunction with Sir George Carew ; while Blount, Lord Mountjoy, took the command, first of the civil, and ultimately of both civil and military affairs of the kingdom. A detached party of the insurgents made Ormonde a prisoner, but at that point the tide of success turned rapidly from their arms. Henceforward the tactics of the English generals were more successful—but they were also characterized by a barbarous severity which no language can sufficiently stigmatize. In every direction the country was pillaged and laid waste, the cultivation of the land was no where tolerated ; the husbandman who attempted to plough his field or sow seed was cut down with the sword—and universal famine was made to overcome those whom the cruelties of ordinary war could not subdue. The national industry having been thus inhumanly brought to a state of general paralysis, a new debased coin was issued, by which the distress of all ranks was completed, and both the victors and the vanquished were equally cheated.

By these various means, Tyrone and the northern chieftains were driven from their entrenchments to the woods and mountain fastnesses, and gradually reduced within the narrowest bounds. Pressed on all sides, harassed by continual surprises, and having lost the charm of invincibility which once surrounded his name with dazzling lustre, Tyrone suffered from the operation of other acts, by which the number of his followers and the extent of his influence were still further diminished. Promises of pardon, protection, and promotion were liberally held out by the English commanders, while crowds of deserters were welcomed with

grants of money, land, and places. But although the advantages achieved by Mountjoy were in many respects decisive, and Tyrone, kept in perpetual alarm, was beaten in repeated skirmishes, his courage was not damped, and his power, though checked, was far from broken down.

Munster now became the principal seat of war. In that province Sir George Carew, as lord president, was making his office terrible by excesses even more fierce and cruel than those committed by Mountjoy, and by some other practices still more unsoldierlike. We shall condense a short account of these from Leland. Amongst the strokes of policy most commonly resorted to by the government at this period, were those of weakening the power of a great chieftain by buying over his smaller tributaries, and wherever one chief grew pre-eminently powerful, setting up a rival to pull him down. At the head of Tyrone's adherents in Munster was James Fitzgerald, nicknamed the Sugaun Earl of Desmond. It has been already stated, that James, the fifteenth earl of Desmond, set aside his eldest son, and diverted the inheritance of his titles and estates to Gerald, a second son by another wife. This Gerald was the unfortunate person whose undignified fall and death were related in the last chapter. The Sugaun Earl was the grandson of the rejected elder son, to whom Gerald had been preferred; and when the latter was killed, the Sugaun assumed the title of earl of Desmond. As it was of the utmost importance to prevent a family, once so formidable, from again assuming a high position, Carew employed a former servant of Sir J. Norris, named Nugent, who by desertion and treason had forfeited his life, to assassinate the Sugaun Earl's brother, while he set an unprincipled native, Dermod O'Connor, to entrap the earl himself with false papers. The bribe in the latter case was £1,000. Nugent failed while taking aim at his intended victim, and being seized in the act, confessed this plot before he was hung. The Sugaun Earl was captured, but made his escape before he could be delivered to the lord president.

These villainous schemes having both proved abortive, a new expedient was resorted to. Earl Gerald had left a son,

who, upon being delivered up to Elizabeth, was confined in the Tower. There he was liberally educated, as the earl of Warwick and others had formerly been, and like them, was treated with the courtesy due to a person of eminent rank and princely expectations. It was now conceived that the presence of this captive youth in Ireland would create a diversion, and draw off the ancient followers of his house from the train of the pretender. He was accordingly brought before Elizabeth, saluted as the earl of Desmond, and sent over to Munster under the charge of trusty keepers. A patent for his restoration to the honours of his family was at the same time forwarded to the lord president, with directions either to deliver or retain it as his own discretion in the present exigency of affairs and the young gentleman's services should invite.

The fortune of this experiment was no better than its morality. When the prison-bred heir of a long line of potent ancestors arrived with his keepers at one of the old seats of the family in the town of Kilmallock, he was received with the most boisterous acclamations of joy. The streets, windows, and even the roofs of the houses were filled with exulting crowds, all pressing to behold the son of an illustrious but unfortunate father—the one green slip from a ruined stock, which had ruled over them for ages, and had been cherished with habitual affection and reverence. A strong guard of soldiers could scarcely obtain a passage for him, or extricate him from the rough but hearty embraces of the crowd. The next day was Sunday; and as the young Fitzgerald proceeded to attend divine service, the same concourse swarmed about him—the same loud salutations rent the air; but when, instead of moving to the place of Roman Catholic worship, he turned his steps to the Reformed Church, vehement and pathetic were the deprecations uttered against his abandonment of the worship to which his forefathers had knelt. They thundered in his ears the disgrace, danger, and impiety of his conduct—of course, in vain. He performed his devotions, but when he came forth again the scene was changed; the crowds had dispersed; and he passed to his home un-

honoured and unattended. Having thus lost his popularity, the government soon felt that the half-made lord was a useless incumbrance. He was therefore escorted back to England, and soon after died in obscurity.

The rest of the Sugaun Earl's life is a counterpart of the story of his relative, whose title and property he vainly sought to acquire— inheriting only his fate. His retainers beaten off, he was driven into marshy vales and mountain hollows, while enmity and treachery dogged his fallen fortunes from hut to hut, and from den to den. After running the gauntlet of numberless romantic escapes, and leading the life of a hunted beast, his relative Fitzgerald, the White Knight, undertook to give a good account of him. Through all his misery one faithful follower clung to him—a harper, whose name was Dermod O'Doogan. He was tracked to this man's cabin, and surprised in the act of snatching a hasty meal, and so nearly caught, that he had not time to snatch up his mantle. In a few days after, the White Knight ascertained that he was lurking in a cavern on the mountain of Slieve Gort, from which, upon being summoned, he issued boldly—confident, it is said, that the people would turn against his pursuer, and not permit him to be arrested. In this idea, however, he was mistaken. The White Knight secured him in Shandon Castle, whence being removed to Cork, he was tried and condemned as a traitor. The lord deputy, instead of putting the sentence into execution, transmitted him to the queen in London, where he ended his days a prisoner in the Tower.

We resume the history of Tyrone. The Spanish force, so warmly solicited and anxiously expected, had at length reached Castlehaven; and 2,000 men, with ordnance and ammunition, were landed under the command of Alphonso Ocampo. Upon presenting themselves to the insurgents, they announced that additional troops were to follow, as their sovereign was determined to support the Irish war in a manner worthy of his crown and its resources. The disaffected septs, confident that the epoch of their deliverance from English power was at hand, came forward in masses, without hesitation or dis-

guise. Several of the English race in Thomond and Desmond joined them; the whole country, from Kinsale and Limerick, westward, declared for the Spanish alliance. The forts of Castlehaven and Dunboy, commanding their respective harbours, together with various castles, were delivered up to the foreign commanders, who, strengthened in due course by the promised reinforcements, were enabled to put efficient garrisons into every station.

When the action of these important occurrences first set in, Tyrone found himself prevented from at once joining his friends, by the double obstacles of great distance and a severe winter. The English army, being nearer at hand, pressed forward to besiege the Spaniards, who became alarmed at the absence of the head of the revolt; but Tyrone soon displayed abilities fully equal to the critical position of affairs. Mustering his troops in the North, although it was now winter, he marched them fully equipped, and with all their baggage, into the South, and took up an admirable position, distant six miles from both the besieged and the besiegers, which enabled him to cut off the communication between the English camp and Cork. It was now only necessary for him to preserve unaltered this commanding post, and Elizabeth's hold of Ireland was lost. Of this he appears to have been himself perfectly sensible—not so the foreigners or the undisciplined host co-operating with him. They called for active hostilities, though he declared emphatically against the impolicy of giving battle to an enemy who had no means of escaping destruction, while bound by the disadvantages in which they were placed, but who might, if driven to despair, save themselves by some desperate act of valour. Fortunately for the English interest, his prudent council was relished neither by the Spanish general nor the Irish chieftains. They pressed Tyrone to advance; and he, overruled at last by their united influence on the daring but rash temper of his countrymen, reluctantly agreed to advance upon the English camp. The lord deputy, forewarned of this movement by a traitor, determined, though inferior in point of numbers, to commence the attack. The allied army,

anticipating an easy victory, seem to have been confounded by the spirit displayed against them. While some fought well, others fled without striking a blow. Tyrone sustained his character for skill and gallantry; but these availed not. The engagement was soon turned into a rout, in which the carnage was dreadful. No quarter was given to the Irish; the Spaniards only, who yielded, were made prisoners, and some of the native leaders, who were hung immediately after. Twelve hundred were slain, and eight hundred wounded. Tyrone was still bent on reanimating and keeping the confederates together; but they lost heart, and pleaded the necessity of returning to their homes. O'Donel, who never once brought his followers into the field, effected his escape in terror to the Continent; the Spaniards capitulated ere long; and Tyrone, stung with disappointment and shame, was constrained to effect his retreat by forced marches to the North, and conceal himself in his own territory, with the thin remains of his followers.

While these decisive measures were bringing the war to a close, Elizabeth was dying; and Mountjoy, who had received private intimation of the coming event, resolved to conclude a peace before the news of her decease should be publicly known, as in that case the still unsettled state of politics in England might revive the hopes of the scattered Irish, and afford the undismayed Tyrone new resources to work upon. Accordingly a negotiation having been opened, Sir William Godolphin was dispatched, to offer him conditions at once easy and honourable. Thus invited, he waited personally upon the lord deputy, and made an unqualified submission. In return he received a full pardon for himself and followers, the restoration of his blood and honours, and a new patent for his lands, some portions excepted, which were reserved for certain chieftains who had been received into favour, and some which were required as the sites of English garrisons. To these reservations Tyrone freely consented. When all was concluded, he was told of the queen's death, and burst into a passion of tears.

A short interval sufficed to terminate, in an unexpected manner, the career of this brave and still persecuted nobleman. James of Scotland ascended the English throne, and confirmed the agreement entered into by Elizabeth's deputy. Tyrone presented himself in London, and was graciously received by the king, but insulted by the people whenever he appeared in public. A fresh patent issued for his earldom and estates, but he was still insecure. The Irish policy of the new sovereign was intently directed upon two objects—the enforcement of the Protestant religion and the establishment of an English plantation. Tyrone stood in the way of both, and fit heads and hands were soon found to accomplish his removal. The rumours of mysterious plots and traitorous conspiracies which had begun to distract the minds of men in England, spread to Ireland, and were quickly taken advantage of by the party in power. Dark hints were given of a general revolt of the Catholic lords; Tyrone was indicated as their leader; and the popular belief that he was to be seized and ruined became so general and strong, that, alarmed for his safety, he took leave of his native land, and withdrew to Spain. His flight has been construed into a proof of his guilt by some writers. It is rather a presumption of his innocence. A man so able and experienced would have been prepared for hostilities, if he had really proposed to engage in them. An anonymous letter, dropped in the castle of Dublin, which mentioned no names, appears to be the only thing that can be referred to by way of sign that a new rebellion was contemplated. There is no evidence whatever to show that Tyrone had joined a plot—if plot there was,—much less that he had agreed to become its leader. Nevertheless, many historians concur in representing him as flying from the punishment due to an offence which he cannot be proved to have committed. They would be more justified in assuming, that, finding the pursuits of his enemies as restless and malignant as ever, he was driven to believe that it was vain for him to think of preserving his property or life in Ireland; and that, with such a conviction upon his mind, he preferred an honourable exile abroad, rather than make the fate

of the last Tyrone the undignified counterpart of the fate of the last Desmond.

The family of O'Neil was now prostrate and ruined. Springing from the remotest age of Irish history, it withstood the invasion, opposed a strong and gallant front to the aggressions of 400 years, and survived the several noble factions which had risen upon the ruins of other native chieftains, and been overwhelmed in their turn. But the basis of their greatness was at last cut off: losing the extensive property they had so long possessed, the family also lost their distinct character and formidable power; the sept ceased to exist as a separate band, and ere long merged into the general body of the mixed community by which the country was now inhabited.

A few words seem to be called for here by way of explanation. In relating the various circumstances by which the fall of this great house was occasioned, we have neither dwelt at length nor laid particular stress upon the religious differences of the contending parties, and the consequent interference of the Pope, as a party to their struggles. Other writers give extended accounts of the aid afforded by Rome and Spain to Tyrone, as well as to Desmond. A comparison of these with the limited notice taken here of the Papal and Spanish interference, may lead, perhaps, to a suspicion of wilful partiality on the part of the author. As it is prudent to guard against the possible infliction of so grave an imputation, we are anxious to state explicitly, that a deliberate consideration of the whole case has led us to a conviction, that religion bore only a secondary influence upon the affairs of this period. It is difficult in the extreme to decide any question with perfect impartiality, into which that great principle enters, because, whenever admitted, it rides over and subdues every other influence in the minds of most men. If, however, making the necessary effort, and abstracting all religious associations from our consideration of the events before us, we look steadily at the broad current of events, as it rolled turbulently along, we shall hardly fail to perceive that disagreements as to their respective forms of divine worship were far from being the fountain-heads of the

animosities by which the belligerents were hurried into arms. In the extirpation of Desmond and the expatriation of Tyrone, the main object of the English crown was to crush a power found to be incompatible with its own dominion. Next to the crown, we have to examine the ministers and agents who carried its policy into execution. Beyond all doubt they were men incited solely by the hope of winning the large estates which it was the custom, in all such proceedings, to surrender as the prizes of success. Last of all come the parties attacked ; and it is quickly seen that they were principally intent upon preserving their possessions, their privileges, and their laws. Thus, though we may behold religion adopted as a convenient ally on both sides, and equally abused by both—it is impossible to discover that religion was the cause fought for on either side.

The first great division of the history of the connection with England closes with the extraordinary career of Hugh O'Neil, the second earl of Tyrone. Four hundred and forty years had now revolved, so thickly charged with clashing incidents and multiplied horrors, that upon a first review of the past, nothing is discernible but general confusion. But as we fix our eyes steadily upon the crowded mass of persons and things, we perceive one strong iron chain of events extending throughout the whole term, and marking its true character with heavy distinctness. Whenever this long interval is closely inspected, false principles, half measures, incongruous actions, deceit and dissimulation, are found engendering, at every turn, disorder and crime. Entering upon the kingdom with a title he must have despised, Henry II. is content to receive as his subjects a people who submit without being subdued. He fears not to let loose upon them a troop of daring captains, who set up as their rule of conduct the shallow pretext which was the standard of the invasion. Some laws of England, carelessly added to the Irish code, introduce all the contradictions of a double system of jurisprudence in the adjustment of the few differences which

are not sharply settled by the sword. The mailed baron treads out the light-armed chief, who, flying from the rich pastures to the mountain wastes, rushes back at the first favourable opportunity, and lays waste the inheritance he is no longer permitted to enjoy. From the reign of Henry II. to Henry VII. this unparalleled state of murder, perpetual rapine, and unmitigated misrule continues. The five kings found by the English invaders have been frittered down and subdivided into sixty petty dynasts ;*—rising above and over-riding

* These are enumerated and described in a curious Tract, printed in the State Papers :—“Who lytē make surmyse to the king for the reformation of his lande of Ireland, yt is necessary to shewe hym the state of all the noble folke of the same, as well of the kynges subjectes and Englyshe rebelles, as of Iryshe enymyes. And fyrt of all to make His Grace understande that there byn more than 60 countreyes called regyons, in Ireland, inhabytyd with the kinges Iryshe enymyes. Some region is bygge as a shyre, and some a lytill lesse : where reygneith more than 60 capytaynes, wherof some callyth themselves kynges, some kynges peyres, in ther langage, some pryncies, some dukes, some archedukes, that lyveth onely by the swerde, and obeyeth no other temporall person, but onely to himselfe that is stroppē: and every of the saide capytaynes makeyth warre and peace for hymselfe, and holdeith by swerde, and hath imperiall jurysadiction within his rome, and obeyeth to noo other person, Englyshe ne Irishe, except only to suche persones as may subdue hym by the swerde; of which regions, and capytaines of the same, the names folowyth immediate :—

Here after insuyth the names of the chief Iryshe countreys and regions of Wolster (Ulster), and chief capytaines of the same.

First, the great O’Neil, chief captain of the nation within the countrey of, and region of Tyreown (Tyrone).

O’Donel, chief captain of his nation within the region and country of Tyrconnell, near Donegal.

O’Neil of the Tre-ugh-O’Neill or Claneboy, in the south-west of Antrim, and north of Down, and chief captain of the same.

O’Cahan, of Kenoght, in Derry, between Lough Foyle and the Ban, and chief captain of the same.

O’Dogherty of Inishowen, between Loughs Swilley and Foyle, chief captain of his nation.

Maguire of Fermanagh, chief captain of his nation.

Magennis of Upper Iveagh, in Down, chief captain of his nation.

O’Hanlon of Orior, in Armagh, chief captain of his nation.

M’Mahon possessed the Irish part of Uriel, now part of the county of Monaghan. Chief captain of his nation.

Here after insuyth the names of the chief Iryshe regions and countreys of Laynster (Leinster), and the chief captains of the same.

M’Murrough (called also Kavanagh) of Idrone, in the west part of Carlow.

O’Byrne’s country was in that part of the county of Wicklow between Wicklow-head and Arklow.

these, appear a few palatine magnates; until at last the crown bears down, with all its might, upon the delinquent English and

O'Morrough held the west part of the county of Wexford between Enniscorthy and the coast, formerly called the barony of Deeps.

O'Thole's country was formerly called the barony of Castle Kevan, and comprised that part of Wicklow which lies between Talbotstown, Newcastle, and Ballincar.

O'Nolan inhabited the south-west point of Wexford.

M'Gilpatrick, afterwards called Fitzpatrick, of Upper Ossory, in the Queen's County.

O'More of Leix, which was by the Irish statute 3 & 4 Philip and Mary constituted part of the new counties thereby erected, called Queen's County.

O'Dempsey of Glinmaliry, near Portnehinch, in the north part of the Queen's County.

O'Connor of Offaley, which was by the above-mentioned statute converted into King's County.

O'Doyle of Oregan, in the barony of Tinnshinch, in Queen's County.

All these were chief captains of their nation.

Here after followeth the names of the chief Irish regions, and countreys of Mownster (Munster), and chief captains of the same.

Fyrste of the Irishe regions and capytaines of Desmound:—

M'Carthy More (or the great M'Carthy) of Desmond, in the county of Kerry, between Dingle Bay and Kenmare river.

Cormok M'Teague (likewise a M'Carthy) of Muskerry, in the county of Cork.

O'Donaghue of Lough Lene (Killarney), in the county of Kerry.

O'Sullivan of Bear, in the county of Cork, between Kenmare river and Bantry Bay.

O'Conor of Traghticonnor, the north part of Kerry.

M'Carthy Reugh of Carbery, in the county of Cork.

O'Driscol of Baltimore, in the south part of Cork.

There was one O'Mahon of Fonshergahe (now roaring water), and another of Kinalmeaky, both in Carbery.

O'Brien of Toybrien, in the barony of Ibrikin, in the county of Clare.

O'Kennedy of Lower Ormonde, west of Lough Deirgeart, in the north part of Tipperary.

O'Carrol of Ely, now the barony of Eglish, in the south part of King's County.

O'Meagher of Ikerin, now a barony in the north-east angle of Tipperary.

M'Mahon of Corkvaskin, the south-west extremity of Clare, now the barony of Moyferla.

O'Conor of Coreumroe, in the west part of Clare.

O'Loughlin of Burrin, in the north-west part of Clare.

O'Grady, who possessed that part of Clare now called the barony of Bunratty.

O'Brien of Arra, east of the Shannon, in the county of Tipperary.

O'Mulryan, or Ryan of Owney, south of Arra.

O'Dwyer of Kilnamanna, south of Owney.

M'Brien of Coonagh, in Limerick.

irregular Irish. Nearly a hundred sanguinary years were occupied in reducing and removing both these mighty factions :

Here after insuyth the names of the chief Irishe regions and countries of Conaught, and chief captains of the same :—

O'Conor Roo, of Maghery Conough, near Lough Cane, in Roscommon.

O'Kelly, who dwelt in the barony of Kilconnell, in Galway.

O'Madden, at Portumna, in the barony of Longford, in Galway.

O'Ferral of Annaly, comprising great part of the county of Longford.

O'Reilly possessed the East Brenny, extending over great part of the county of Cavan.

O'Rourke possessed the West Brenny, being the south part of Leitrim.

M'Donough of Tiraghfill, in the south-east of Sligo.

M'Dermid of Mylurge, extending from Boyle to Lough Allen, in Roscommon.

O'Gara of Coolavin, in the south point of Sligo.

O'Flaherty of Borin, in Moycullin, in the county of Galway.

O'Malley of Morisk, in the south-west of Mayo.

O'Hara of Maherlene, now Leney, in Sligo.

O'Dowdy of Tyrevagh, in the county of Sligo.

O'Donaghue of Corran, in the same county.

M'Manns O'Conor (commonly called O'Conor of Sligo), of Carbery, in the north part of Sligo.

Here followyth the names of the chief Irish regions and countreys of the county of Meathe, and the chief captains of the same :—

O'Mulloughlin of Clonlonan, in Westmeath.

M'Geoghehan, who dwelt on the west side of Lough Ennel, in the barony of Moycashel, in Westmeath.

O'Mulmoy, or O'Mulloy, of Fircal, of King's County.

Also there is more than thirty greate captaines of the Englishe noble folk, that followyth the same Irishe order, and kepeith the same rule, and every of them makeith warre and pease for hymself, without any lycence of the king, or of any other temporall person, save to hym that is strongest, and of suche that may subdue them by the swerde. Ther names folowyth immedyat :—

The Erle of Desmounde, lord of the county of Kerry.

Fitz Gerald, called the Knight of Kerry.

Fitzmaurice, whose territory was in the modern barony of Clanmaurice.

Sir Thomas Desmond, knight.

Sir John of Desmond, knight.

Sir Gerot of Desmond, knight.

The Lord Barrie of Barrymore and Buttevant, county of Cork.

The Lord Roache of Fermoy, county of Cork.

The young Lord Barrie, Barry Oge of Kinnelea, county of Cork.

The Lord Courcey, of the barony of Courceys, south of Barry Oges country.

The Lord Cogan, who held part of the barony of the Barretts.

The Lord Barret, who held another part of the same barony.

The White Knight (Fitzgerald), whose country lay in the baronies of Clanwilliam, Condons, and Clangibbon, in the counties of Tipperary and Cork.

The Knight of the Valley or Glen (Fitzgerald) had a territory on the

one huge system of violence is thus swept away by another ; and a change takes place—but it is only a change from one form of cruelty to another,—the people every where still groan under oppression, and the land still heaves with discontent.

The gigantic strides that were taken, and the monstrous blows struck, to establish the authority of the crown in Ireland during the 16th century, are not to be contemplated, even at this distance of time, without indignation. To the house of Tudor belong the bloody honours of this unmatched labour of tyranny. Conceived by Henry VII., it was begun by Henry VIII., who hung at Tyburn, Thomas, tenth earl of Kildare, and his five uncles ;—it was continued by Mary, who confiscated south side of the Shannon, in Limerick, from the confines of Kerry to near the river Deel.

Sir Gerald of Desmonds sons, of the county of Waterford.

The Powers, of the county of Waterford.

Sir William Bourke, knight, of the county of Limerick, barony of Clanwilliam.

Sir Pyers Butler, knight, and all the captains of the Butlers of the county of Kilkenny and of the county of Fyddert (Fethard), in the south-east of Tipperary.

Here folowyth the names of Englyshe great rebelles in Conagh :—

The Lord Bourke M'William Oughter, of Mayo.

The Lord Bourke M'William Eighter, of Clanricard, which comprised the baronies of Longford, Leitrim, and Galway.

The Lord Bermyngham of Atheny.

Sir Miles Stauntons sons, of Clannorris, in Mayo.

Sir Jordan Desters sons : M'Jordan, Baron Dester, was seated in the barony of Gallen, in Mayo.

The Lord Nangle M'Costello, Baron Nangle, eastern side of the barony of Costello, in Mayo.

Sir Walter Barretts sons, of Tyrawley, in the north-east of Mayo.

Here folowyth the names of the great English rebelles of Wolster (Ulster) :—

Sir Rowland Savage, knight, of Lecale, in the county of Down.

Fitzhowlyn of Tuscarde, same county.

Fitzjohn Byssede, of the Glynnes, now the barony of Glenarm, in Antrim.

Here after folowyth the names of the Englyshe capytaynes of the county of Meath, that obey not the king's lawe :—

The Dyllons.

The Daltonns.

The Tyrrelles.

The Dedalamoris.

A very full and authoritative report on the state of Ireland, written about 1515, rates the total sum paid in tribute by the English counties, at the period when it was written, at £720,—a considerable sum, if multiplied by the rate of value for that time.

the King's and Queen's Counties, containing 916,820 statute acres ; it was prolonged by Elizabeth, who extirpated the Desmonds, and seized upon 574,628 acres ; and it was completed by James I., who drove O'Neil into exile, and grasped a vast tract, containing 818,344 statute acres, in Tyrone and the northern counties, and 446,000 acres in Wicklow and the midland counties. Thus the subjugation by the house of Tudor of the barons of English origin, and the Irish chiefs, involved the forfeiture of 2,838,972 acres ; and an outlay of money by the English government, the amount of which cannot be ascertained, but which must have been vast, if we are to give Sir W. Petty credit for exactness in estimating the expenses of Elizabeth's wars in Ireland by themselves at £3,000,000 sterling.

Respecting these repeated confiscations, or plantations, as they were termed, we have now to offer some explanation and a few details. If not altogether in point of principle, they, in point of practice, at least, proceeded mainly upon the plan of exterminating the natives, and repeopling Ireland with Englishmen and Scotchmen. Our information of the particular facts connected with Mary's appropriation of the King's and Queen's Counties, are imperfect and unexact. We know more of Elizabeth's grants in Desmond, and of James's plantation in Ulster.

An English colony in Munster, long a pet scheme with Elizabeth, was appropriately facilitated by the havoc of war, pestilence, and famine, which had in a manner depopulated the country during her wars with the earl of Desmond. As soon as the forfeiture of that nobleman's property was obtained,—the act, by the by, was not procured with ease,—letters were addressed to every county in England, encouraging younger brothers to become undertakers of the new venture in Ireland. To such persons estates were offered on the most advantageous terms. They were to maintain themselves as a distinct and superior race, and no native Irish were to be admitted amongst their tenantry. Assurances were given that sufficient garrisons would be stationed on their frontiers ; and that commissioners would be appointed to decide all con-

roversies that might arise amongst them. Upon these terms Sir Christopher Hatton, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Thomas Norris, Sir Warham St. Leger, Sir George Bourchier, and a number of others, received grants of different portions. According to a MS. in Trinity College, Dublin, 33 seigniories, amounting to 244,080 acres, forfeited by Desmond, were granted to as many adventurers. These would leave 330,548 to be restored to such as obtained pardons, or were abandoned to the old possessors. It is but fair to admit, therefore, that notwithstanding the severity of the exclusive principle upon which the project was originally launched, grants and conveyances were made after all to the Irish. The sheer force of necessity must have extorted what national and religious prejudice would have denied. What were the particular considerations upon which these unavoidable concessions were yielded, it were useless to inquire, inasmuch as the rank and consequence of the principal English grantees, the odious character of their rights, and the unattractive modes of garrison life to which they were bound down, speedily superinduced a neglect of all the conditions upon which the grants were made. In many instances the undertakers unjustly encroached on the estates of the old inhabitants, many of whom were harmless, and not a few loyal. Absentees themselves, the new race of landlords entrusted the settlement and support of their respective colonies to agents, who were—some ignorant, others negligent, and all mercenary. This account of Elizabeth's plantation in Munster applies with equal force to many other districts; the property of peers and official persons; and thus it happened that the government in past ages became a mere agency in Ireland for certain English interests, created in most cases by the tyranny of the crown, and continued by the neglect and corruption of parliament.

The plantations of James I. were in their spirit and execution to the full as severe and exclusive, and in point of extent and the style in which they were carried out, far more considerable than any of those undertaken by his predecessor. They violated, too, with equal recklessness, the legal rights of

the occupiers and the obvious suggestions of good policy. For, as the property of the soil vested by the rules of Brehon law in the sept, while its sovereignty only vested in the chief, who held, moreover, but a life estate unentailed, it is clear that the treason of the head could not fairly invalidate the property of the whole body; and as, again, the newly-imported settlers were forbidden to accept the natives as tenants, the sequel could not but fall far short of the original design, which proposed to unite together and tranquillise the different races of inhabitants. This great object was not spurned nor overlooked; on the contrary, it was speciously set forth to some extent, and then not carried into effect. To win the natives from their wild habits, and to settle them in competence—to confer upon them the education and means of civil society, the want of which was so constantly made a matter of reproach, and an apology for oppression,—this was the thing of all others admitted to be wanted, and it was not even attempted.

James's scheme was first carried into effect in Ulster, where the lands held by Tyrone and Tyrconnell as sovereign chieftains amounted to 818,344 statute acres, and formed principal portions of the counties of Donegal, Derry, Armagh, Tyrone, Fermanagh, and Cavan. The utter failure of Elizabeth's confiscations as a means of quieting disturbed districts, was not overlooked on this tempting occasion. But the inherent fault of that venture was ascribed to the grants obtained by favourites, of immense tracts, which they were unable to plant. By the present scheme, the land was divided into three classes or sets of parcels, respectively containing 2,000, 1,500, and 1,000 statute acres. One half of each county was to be parted into lots of the third or smallest class, while the remaining half was divided between the two others. In order to prevent jealousies, or the suspicion of partiality in the appropriation of the lands, the parcels were distributed by lot. The undertakers (as they were called) of the 2,000 acres were to take estates limitable to them and their heirs, and were to hold of the king *in capite*; those of 1,500 held by knights' service; while those of 1,000 were only to hold in common socage. The first

were to build a castle, and to enclose a strong court-yard, or bawn, within four years ; the second were to finish a house and bawn within two years ; and the third to enclose a bawn only. For even this rude species of domestic fortification was accounted no inconsiderable defence against the incursions to be expected from the native hordes, who, being made outcasts by this enormous act of spoliation, were sure to become rebels. Undertakers of the first class, again, were to plant upon their lands within three years 48 able men of English or Scottish birth, reduced to 20 families,—to keep a demesne of 600 acres in their own hands ; to have four fee farmers of 120 acres each ; six leaseholders, each on 100 acres ; and on the rest eight families of husbandmen, artificers, and cottagers. The others lay under the like obligations proportionably. All were, for five years after the date of their patents, to reside upon their lands, either in person, or by such agents as should be approved of by the state ; and to keep sufficient arms for their defence. The British settlers and servitors were expressly forbidden to alienate, or to sublet their lands to Irishmen. They were to let them at stated rents ; and for no shorter term than 21 years, or three lives. Their tenants' houses were to be built after the English fashion, and to be united in towns or villages. Power was given to erect manors, to hold courts-baron, and to create tenures. The Irish were not wholly excluded—they, too, were admissible to estates in fee simple, to be held in socage, and with all the privileges allowed to the others. But by one of those refinements of legal injustice, soon to become common in the statute book, conditions were prescribed in the case of the natives, which had the effect of debarring them from the benefit, to which, apparently, they had been advanced. The oath of supremacy was required in every instance—which amounted to a positive exclusion of the conscientious Catholic. Some sensible, and some foolish regulations were imposed upon them—the custom of wandering with their cattle from place to place for pasture, or creaghting, as it was called, was interdicted ; and they were ordered to dwell in towns, and conform to the English manner

of tillage and husbandry. An annual rent from all the lands was reserved to the crown : for every 60 English acres the British undertakers paid 6*s.* 8*d.*, and their servitors 10*s.* ; while the Irish for the same quantity were charged 13*s.* 4*d.*

The main and the most novel feature of this scheme was the part taken in it by the city of London. This circumstance seems to have delighted James exceedingly. "When," he cried, "his enemies should hear that the famous city of London had a footing therein, they would be terrified from looking into Ireland, the back door to England and Scotland." The quantity of land taken by the corporation of London amounted to 260,000 acres, which were divided into estates of twelve parts, each of twelve city companies taking one part by lot. The assessments levied upon the companies for this plantation eventually reached the sum of £60,000. In another chapter it will be proper to refer to the details of this portion of the scheme, to report upon the present condition of these lands, and examine how far the terms upon which the grant originally was made have been fulfilled, and proved a benefit to Ireland. We must now revert to the general subject.

A more curious accompaniment of the Ulster plantation remains to be noticed. This was the creation of the new order of nobility styled baronets. As a settlement in the midst of a plundered population required military protection, James proposed to find soldiers of honour for the service, by conferring upon 200 gentlemen the dignity of hereditary knighthood ; and as this force could not be kept up without money, each baronet, upon passing his patent, was to pay into the exchequer a sum equal to the expense of keeping 30 men in Ulster, whose pay for three years was to be 8*d.* a day. But James, always needy, and constitutionally mean, applied the money received from the sale of the new titles to other purposes ; and left the undertakers in Ulster to provide, as best they could, for their defence.

Once the integrity of the scheme was violated, various inroads were quickly made upon it. James led the way, as soon

as he found that he could put money in his purse by Irish confiscations. His example was followed by the lord deputy, who obtained a grant of the whole barony of Innishowen, in contravention of the rule fixing 2,000 acres as the limits of the largest lot to be held by an individual. The Protestant church next came forward with her claim to defeat the measure, insisting that she had an inalienable right to portions of the escheated property, which the crown was bound to respect.

The attempt to introduce an improved system had no sooner fallen into a modification of the old scramble for land, than a sort of contagion seemed to spread throughout the country; and ere long the keenest arts of the law, and the most daring abuses on the part of men in office, were everywhere practised to invalidate titles, and wrest estates from the hands of their rightful owners. These proceedings alarmed and confounded the friends as well as the enemies of the government. The innocent as well as the guilty, the chief proprietors along with all subordinate tenants throughout the island, were attacked in common, and swept away in masses. The king was made to believe that an immense revenue would arise to him by a resumption of grants. The local government, and its subordinate agents, perceiving that extensive estates would fall to the share of those who should attain skill in exercising this new device of civil instead of military spoliation, renewed the old practices, with some diminution of attendant violence, but no abatement of inherent injustice. The sequel only exhibits one set of reckless adventurers rushing in to overthrow another. Cases have been quoted in which the crown sued for the recovery of lands even where possession for centuries was proved; —titles, it is said, reaching up to the time of Henry II. were declared bad. When a jury, as sometimes happened, revolting at the task imposed upon them, had the moral courage to find the title not in the crown, but in the defendant, they were called before the Star Chamber, sitting in the castle of Dublin, and there censured and fined. In vain the defendants to these plundering suits pointed to Ulster, where, at that very moment, although the new plantation was carried on with some regard

to a fixed principle and system, it nevertheless seems to have been admitted that almost every condition of the original grants had already been broken; and that the titles of the recent undertakers' estates must be found bad, if the defects in them should be insisted upon. How, then, it was asked, could old titles be defended, open as they were to endless objections, the accumulations of ages?

The rule enforced was shortly this:—Wherever no original grant itself could be exhibited, or a descent or conveyance in pursuance of an original grant could not be distinctly proved, the land was immediately adjudged to the crown. It would fatigue, without instructing the reader, to enter into details of the technicalities upon which the lawyers of the day vindicated their proceedings. The general case was this:—By the act 10 Henry VII., all crown grants from 1 Edward II. had been resumed by parliament. This proved a formidable battery against titles. The lands, moreover, of all absentees, and of all who had been expelled by the Irish, had been revested in the crown by various acts of parliament, which impeached almost every grant of lands antecedent to the period just described. Subsequent grants did not prove much stronger, as the existence of preceding grants opened a wide field for the detection of flaws, omissions, and errors. If the patent did not correspond exactly with the Irish fiat or viceregal warrant used for passing it; if again, these two did not tally with the royal warrant transmitted from England; if, in short, any defect was detected in point of form, or the slightest advantage was to be gained by insisting on provisoee or saving clauses,—the title was declared bad, and there was an end of all property under it.

One of the commonest exceptions taken in point of law at this period was the following:—It had been usual in grants to reserve a rent to the crown, which formed a portion of the king's revenue. But continued commotions had rendered the regular collection of this money impracticable. In many places, the payment of royal revenues had fallen into desuetude; and had not been put in charge by the king's officers

for ages. It was now, however, determined to call for receipts of the payment of these rents ; and although in numberless instances it was perfectly understood that no such documents had ever existed, it was ruled that inability to produce them sufficed to overthrow titles, in other respects the strongest and most perfect. War had executed its havoc, the confiscations now caused general terror ; and legal proceedings brought in a new and more searching mode of destruction. All sorts of projects for enriching the needy and the unscrupulous were sure of favour, provided they were put forward under the spurious pretence of improving the king's revenue. Commissions of inquiry (as they were called) into defective titles were obtained in numbers, and property was everywhere disturbed : the most outrageous robberies were committed in the name and form of law.

These functionaries began by insuring their own reward. When suing out the commission to inquire for escheated lands and all rents belonging to the crown, they took care to obtain grants of both to themselves : the king was contented with a portion, or some small advance in the rent. Under the tempting authority of these documents, a set of men, called discoverers, were brought into requisition, who ransacked the Tower of London in search of ancient grants, and picked out from the old pipe rolls the original rents reserved to the crown. For the most part the possessors were either conscious of the defects in their titles, or alarmed at the danger and expense of resisting the crown, in a country where a legitimate contest for the most sacred rights had frequently been punished as treason, and where the prerogative had always been stretched to its utmost limits. With these feelings they were naturally anxious to enter into a compromise ; and as that suited the purpose of the inquirers, the commission often ended in a composition—each party gaining for himself the best terms which the circumstances seemed to admit of.

The latter being the most moderate of the various forms of injury resorted to during this reign, we gather from it but an

imperfect idea of the acts of iniquity committed by men in office and the favourites of government, in matters of this description. With the view of placing the flagrant conduct of many such persons in its true light, it becomes necessary to abridge the account given by Carte, of the outrageous cruelties practised for the purpose of despoiling two old and unoffending proprietors—the Wicklow Byrnes—of their inheritance.

Descended from an ancient and once independent sept, these gentlemen still retained considerable landed property,—a valuable portion of which consisted of a district near Dublin, called the Ranelaghgs. Upon this Sir W. Parsons, master of wards and liveries, Lord Esmond, and others, cast their eyes as desirable plunder, and determined that it should be forfeited. The Byrnes, warned of the attack, and having powerful interest in England, obtained a grant of their lands from the king. Parsons and Esmond, however, were not to be defeated by so simple a proceeding. They refused to pass the patent, and so nullified the title. Nor did they stop here. Conceiving that their own offences could only be effectually concealed, and the possession of the property fully secured, by the destruction of the Byrnes, they caused them to be arrested on a charge of treason. The witnesses provided to support the accusation, were Duffe, whom Turloch Byrne, in his office of justice of the peace, had sent to prison for cow-stealing; Mac Art and Mac Griffin, two noted thieves; and a farmer, named Archer, who seems to have withheld for a length of time the attempts made to force him into perjury, and to have been subjected for his scruples to horrible tortures. He was burned in the fleshy part of the body with hot irons, placed on a gridiron over a charcoal fire, and finally flogged until nature gave way, and he promised to swear any thing. The fortitude of the necessary witness having thus been overcome, bills of indictment were presented to the grand jury of the county of Carlow, and ignored. They were presented again, and again ignored. The suborned witnesses contradicted themselves and each other so grossly, as to be justly regarded unworthy of credit. For this opposition to the will

of government the jurors were summoned to the Star Chamber at Dublin, and heavily fined. But the witnesses, Mac Art and Mac Griffin, having failed in their villainous duty, were abandoned to the vengeance of the law, and hanged for robbery at Kilkenny : they published the innocence of the Byrnes with their dying breath.

Still the resources of Parsons and his accomplices were not exhausted. The Byrnes presented themselves before the Court of King's Bench in Dublin, to answer any charge that might be brought against them ; but although no prosecutor appeared, the chief justice refused to discharge them. During two years repeated orders were transmitted from England, directing that these scandalous proceedings should cease, and that the accused should be restored to their estates ; but the faction in the castle evaded and disobeyed every mandate. At length the duke of Richmond, who had generously interested himself for these persecuted Irishmen, died, and Parsons resolved to bring the plot to an issue. Grants were procured for himself and certain landowners in the county of Wicklow, of the Byrne property. These grantees were then put upon the grand jury, and fresh bills of indictment sent up against the brothers. The jurors, having received their consideration for a particular verdict, admitted as evidence for the prosecution the depositions of four criminals, who had been pardoned for swearing to the desired effect, but who were not produced in person. Their depositions, taken in Irish by one of the prosecutors, and translated by one of his creatures, proved sufficient for the purpose, and the bills were found.

Additional testimony being still deemed necessary, even more atrocious expedients were practised to obtain it. A number of persons were seized, and subjected to a hurried trial by martial law, while the regular courts were sitting. Such of them as refused to sustain the conspiracy against the Byrnes, were tortured ; and some, who displayed more spirit than the rest, were put to death. Ultimately the Byrnes, by their fortitude and address, succeeded in preserving their lives. The

affair had become notorious in England, and was so strongly represented to the king, that, being shamed into active interference, he sent over commissioners to investigate the various accusations laid by his officers against their intended victims. The Byrnes were brought up, and honourably acquitted; but though their lives were thus saved, their estates were not. Parsons having previously contrived to obtain a great portion of them by patent, was permitted to keep them. It is proper to add, that the documents connected with this foul act of spoliation are preserved in the library of Trinity College, Dublin; and that Carte, from whom this sketch has been abridged, is a historian never disposed to sympathize with Irish grievances.

Lest it should be supposed that we seek to give a tinge to the colour of the first Stuart's reign, from the circumstances connected with this act of official rapine, it is proper to observe, that however appalling, they would not have been related here, had they been either singular or doubtful. Unfortunately for the character of James and his ministers in Ireland, there seems no reason to believe that there was a corner of the land into which their grasping hands were not violently pushed for injury and spoil. If the evidence we possess to this effect was even less direct and weighty than it happens to be, it would still be logical to infer, from the measures publicly executed in the king's name, that the proceedings of his officers must have been cruelly unjust. For the power to do wrong has a peculiar expansive force: it becomes enlarged as it takes in the various grades of official authority. The circle of its operations round the chief magistrates is limited; but when it reaches the minions and underlings, it spreads out wider and wider still, until its range has embraced the whole community, and all men suffer from it. It has this further property, moreover—it grows more violent the further it proceeds. The ratio of crime not only swells as it extends, but assumes a fiercer character: selfishness and cruelty distinguish it when committed in one rank, but brutality is superadded when it is perpetrated some degrees lower in the social scale.

Relying, therefore, on the acts done by James himself, we are fully warranted in describing his Irish policy as unsurpassed in the extent and depth of the iniquities produced by it. The monarch himself was peculiarly qualified for the part he performed: though mean and cowardly himself, he had a sort of bold address in running down plunder through the villany of his creatures, which assumes, when looked at from a distance, and estimated by the results, an air of equivocal greatness; when examined closely, however, it will be found in every part contemptible and minutely criminal. The case of Sir W. Parsons against the Byrnes was an enlarged edition of many of his own acts: his appetite for spoliation grew on that it fed on; for, undeterred by a conspiracy in the North to seize the forts and expel the settlers on the plantation of Ulster, he proceeded to effect others, in various directions, for which it is difficult to find justification or excuse.

There had always been resident Irish septs along the maritime districts between Dublin and Waterford. Neither grants from the crown nor incessant attacks sufficed to remove them from their mother land. They were now residing quietly where their forefathers had lived for ages—nevertheless an inquisition was held upon their title, which was declared to be in the crown. Sixty-six thousand acres between the rivers Arklow and Slane were thus seized, and applied to a mixed colony, resembling that in Ulster. In Leitrim, Longford, and Westmeath, and other counties, further inquisitions were held, and 380,000 acres were adjudged to the crown. Into the validity of the grounds assigned for these despoiling verdicta, it would now be a waste of time to enter. In some cases Irishmen were found in the possession of lands which had been in their families for ages, and dispossessed, notwithstanding, upon the production of some old grant to some retired or ruined English settlers years before. Here the reasoning upon which the legal process was conducted affords a curious specimen of inconsequential deductions. The actual possession was entirely overlooked, or treated as a nullity; the land was

then found to vest in the departed Englishman, and he was pronounced an absentee : but there were old acts of parliament unrepealed, which declared the estates of absentees forfeited to the crown ; and these lands having been thus traced to an absentee, were forfeited accordingly.

James allowed his deputy to distribute these vast acquisitions as he thought proper. There was a form of instructions, and the usual flourish of a noble design. According to Leland, they were to be given to such proprietors as would be most likely to promote the general welfare and security of the country, the extension of commerce, and the civility of the natives. Fine words these, and not unworthy of the eloquent panegyric which Hume pronounces upon the whole objects conveyed in their expression. But it was the fault of James, as much as of his lord deputy, and the misfortune of Ireland, that they were only words.

If we are to particularize causes for the wide difference between this king's plans and his performances, we shall find, undoubtedly, that his necessities urged him into many inconsistencies which he might otherwise have avoided. For he was a strange compound, being at once prodigal and avaricious. With his English exchequer empty, and the revenue of Ireland falling considerably short of the expenses of its government, there was no expedient for raising money too violent or too mean to be resisted by him. At the beginning of his reign the military force on foot in Ireland amounted to 20,000 men. By the year 1622, this number was reduced to 2,000, the cost of which stood as high as £52,000 a year ! This extravagant outlay was a consequence of the arbitrary manner in which every department of the state was administered and abused. Out of 34 troops into which this little army was divided, 25 were commanded by privy councillors,—men of overgrown property and influence, too deeply engaged in a common cause of self-interested misgovernment, to call each other to account ; and too potent to be complained against with effect, by any person in a private station, for a grievance inflicted or a right withheld. These privileged

commanders, being large landowners, could always keep their own pay from falling into arrear by stopping an equivalent portion of the rents reserved to the crown from their estates. Nor did their corruption end here. They compounded with their men, and advanced them the money which the government had not to give, at a discount of a third or fourth part of the amount really due. The men themselves they dispersed in small parties through their estates—employing some in cultivating their lands, and others in the menial duties of their households.

Notwithstanding these proofs of depression and disorganization, there were signs of improvement, which are not to be overlooked. The customs had risen from £3,000 to £6,000, and afterwards to £9,500 a year. The profits of the Court of Wards, which had been enjoyed until the year 1617 by the lord deputy, but were then taken by James into his own hands, produced from wardships the annual amount of £10,000. Still the difference between the charge of Ireland and the annual revenue was £15,000. The more than sufficing reason for this excess lay in the number of useless pensions and places, and the maintenance of appointments for military officers, originally intended to have been temporary, but continued because they were enjoyed by persons of consideration, who were members of the administration, and possessed of too much influence and power to be dismissed or called to account.

Long and uninteresting as this account of James's misgovernment has proved, there were other schemes to which he leaned, for gratifying favourites and raising money, too gross and penal to be passed over in silence. His malpractices, instead of relieving, had only aggravated his difficulties ; and we find him driven from one act of dishonest force to attempt others still more unprincipled and outrageous. Certain cities and corporations had received grants of forfeited land, on the condition that they were not to be alienated, and that the profits should be regularly applied to the building of walls and bridges, repairing fortifications, and the furthering other civil or charitable objects of a public nature. But the cities and corporations had not fulfilled the trust, and it was now pro-

posed to resume the lands. There was an estimate made out in detail, which showed that £50,000 might be obtained in fines, on regranting or otherwise assigning the several lots. But though the scheme was highly thought of and patronised by the government, it was ultimately abandoned, as too bad an extreme.

The last of James's reclaiming projects was cut short at the point of execution by his death, but was not lost sight of by his successor. It embraced no less than the establishment of an extensive plantation in the province of Connaught, similar to that of Ulster. The needy sovereign readily caught the tempting bait it held out. He saw in it one of those gilded stratagems to raise money, by fines, by compositions, and a renewal of grants, the monstrous illegality of which was covered over and concealed by specious pretences of bringing the wild Irish into the circle of civil society, and extending the reign of law and order throughout the island.

The leading circumstances of the project were as follows. When the chief proprietors of Connaught and Clare compounded for their estates with Sir John Perrot, in the reign of Elizabeth, they made surrenders in the usual form to the crown. These they had generally neglected to enrol, and to take out letters patent for. James, in the 13th year of his reign, had issued a commission to receive the surrenders of such estates, which he re-conveyed by new letters patent to the proprietors and their heirs, to be holden of the crown by knights' service as of the castle of Athlone. By the neglect of the enrolling clerks in the Court of Chancery, it seems that though £3,000 had been paid as the enrolment fee, not one of these patents had really been enrolled. Advantage was now taken of this omission, the titles were pronounced defective, and the lands adjudged to the crown. This was done although an act of state, passed by St. John, the lord deputy who succeeded Chichester, had declared that they stood confirmed to their possessors, who were admitted to have discharged their annual compositions with remarkable punctuality into the exchequer.

As the sense of equity entertained by the authorities then

existing in Ireland, inspired as little confidence as their administration of the law, the proprietors offered to purchase a new confirmation of their patents, by doubling their annual composition. And as their tenure exempted them from suing out their liveries or taking the oath of supremacy, they likewise offered to pay a fine of £10,000, which was equivalent to at least £100,000 in the present day. This sum being found, upon computation, to be as much as the king could gain by an entire plantation, the proposal was favourably entertained, and the project of the plantation was suspended; in which state the affair rested at the subsequent demise of the crown.

James bequeathed his policy and its punishment to his successor—it was despotism, not government—the concentration into one irresistible form of a hundred petty tyrannies. His great measures, those upon which he prided himself most highly, and which have been most loudly praised—his confiscations and resumptions of grants of land,—were but less violent forms of the oppression for which so many precedents had been set, and they were strong in original evils. The tenure of land, that first element of security and peace, perpetuated the destructive distinctions of race: instead of converting their jarring animosities into consistent harmony, he introduced special provisions for keeping them always discordant, and always mischievous. As he could not make his plantations English, and he would not make them Irish, they necessarily became failures. By maintaining the old ascendancy of English over Irish, he insured the incessant strife of parties; and by confirming the new ascendancy of Protestant over Catholic, he added fresh elements of strife to the storm that was already raging.

At the same time, it cannot with truth be affirmed, that his designs were wholly without wisdom or humanity, but it may be safely declared, that whatever merit they possessed was lost in the feeble attempts made to carry them into effect—attempts in which his principal instruments, catching the contagion of his own mercenary corruption, were the principal agents in counteracting their better influence.

If we take leave under his reign of an aristocracy, alternately the tyrants and victims of the licentious state of things out of which they sprang, we become acquainted with an oligarchy more refined in the arts of oppression, who rendered the slow force of law as stringent a means of misgovernment as the summary force of arms ; and who still retained the ignorant but impassioned people in a state of the lowest slavery, and the country in a state of savage distress.

But although this appears to be the true character of the reign of James I. considered as a whole, we are bound to state that some of its opening passages augured a much higher result. Descended from the Irish kings who had once ruled in Scotland, and the son of a queen loved for her beauty and misfortunes, and venerated as a martyr to the Roman Catholic faith, this monarch was popular with the Irish when he ascended the throne ; and amongst the first measures of his government were some as wise as they were merciful. Mountjoy, who continued to act as deputy for a short period after his accession, published a general indemnity for all past offences. By another act, he declared the people exempt from the arbitrary power of their chiefs, and placed them under the protection of the king and the British law. About the same time, the old Irish customs of tanistry and gavel-kind were adjudged to be illegal by the Court of King's Bench ; the tenure of land was improved ; the distribution of the island into counties perfected ; the judges holding assizes for the first time in Ulster, completed the circuit of Connaught, and revived them in Munster, where the degeneracy of the Geraldines had long caused them to fall into disuse.

Sir John Davies, who sat as one of the judges on these occasions, and was the author of the excellent "Discoverie" so generally quoted in all works on Irish history, gives an account of these legal improvements, from which a paragraph or two will be found worth reading.

"First, the common people were taught, by the justices of the assize, that they were free to the kings of England, and not slaves and vassals to their pretended lords : that the

cuttings, cosherings, sessings, and other extortions of the lords, were unlawful ; and that they should not any more submit themselves thereunto, since they were now under the protection of so just and mighty a prince, as both would and could protect them from all wrongs and oppressions. They gave a willing ear unto these lessons ; and thereupon the greatness and power of these Irish lords over the people suddenly fell and vanished, when their oppressions and extortions were taken away, which did maintain their greatness ; insomuch as divers of them, who formerly made themselves owners of all (by force), were now, by the law, reduced to this point : that, wanting means to defray their ordinary charges, they resorted ordinarily to the lord deputy, and made petition that, by license and warrant of the state, they might take some aid and contribution from their people ; as well to discharge their former debts, as for competent maintenance in time to come. But some of them, being impatient of this diminution, fled out of the realm to foreign countries ; whereupon we may well observe, that as extortion did banish the old English freeholder, who could not live but under the law ; so the law did banish the Irish lord, who could not live bat by extortion.

" Again, these circuits of justice did (upon the end of the war) more terrify the loose and idle persons, than the execution of the martial law, though it were quick and sudden ; and, in a short time after, did so clear the kingdom of thieves and other capital offenders, as I dare affirm, that for the space of five years last past, there have not been found so many malefactors worthy of death, in all the six circuits of this realm, (which is now divided into 32 shires at large,) as in one circuit of six shires, namely, the western circuit in England : for the truth is, that in time of peace, the Irish are more fearful to offend the law than the English, or any other nation whatsoever.

" Again, whereas the greatest advantage that the Irish had of us in all our rebellions, was our ignorance of their countries, their persons, and their actions. Since the law and her ministers have had a passage among them, all their places of

fastness have been discovered and laid open ; all their passes cleared ; and notice taken of every person that is able to do either good or hurt. It is known not only how they live, and what they do, but it is foreseen what they intend to do, insomuch as Tyrone hath been heard to complain, that he had so many eyes watching over him, as he could not drink a full carouse of sack, but the state was advertised thereof, within a few hours after."

Sir John Davies, with Sir E. Pelham (chief baron), were the first judges of assize who went into Tyrone and Tyrconnel. In another passage of the same work Sir John describes the popular joy at their arrival and declarations :—" The Irishry, who in former times were left under the tyranny of their lords and chiefs, were received into his majesty's immediate protection. Our visitation to the shires, however distasteful to the Irish lords, was sweet and most welcome to the common people ; they were now taught that they were free subjects to the king, and not slaves and vassals to their pretended lords, whose extortions were unlawful, and that they should not any more submit thereunto."

It has been observed, and not without reason, that these proceedings are in some degree chargeable with the fault of precipitancy. The transition from one set of long-established laws, tenures and customs, was perhaps too suddenly brought about, and would have proved more effectual had it been more gradually advanced. We are not, however, the less disposed to recognise the inherent virtue of the new policy, nor to deny that we distinguish in it qualities not unworthy of the genius of Lord Bacon, whom James is said to have consulted on the state of Ireland ; and also not unworthy of the extensive reading and sound views—both extraordinary for the age in which they appeared—of Sir J. Davies, then attorney general.

Had James continued to act in the spirit with which his reign commenced ; had he exerted himself consistently to reclaim his Irish subjects, by a gentle gradation of improvements ; and had he been tolerant of the Roman Catholic religion,

he would indeed have proved a benefactor, and insured the prosperity of the country, by making it, for the first time in history, the theatre of constitutional government. But James was in heart a tyrant ; moreover, he was weak, impatient, and in want of money ; and his lord deputy, an officer of considerable talent and decision of character, but a soldier of fortune, was unable to resist the temptation of enriching himself by the numerous confiscations and discoveries of forfeited lands which took place during his administration.

Arthur Chichester, Baron Belfast, was the second son of Sir John Chichester, of Raleigh, in Devonshire ; where, says Sir W. Pole, in his Survey of that county, the family had long flourished, eminent for its antiquity, estates, employments, and alliances. Arthur gave early proofs of character. After spending some time at the university, he embraced a military life, and signalised himself by attacking and robbing one of the queen's purveyors. Flying from England to avoid the consequences of a prosecution for this crime, he joined the army of Henry IV. of France ; and displaying in that monarch's service the courage which was to be expected from a man who had committed so bold an offence, he was knighted, and afterwards obtaining a pardon from Elizabeth, returned to England. But having lost caste by the misconduct of his youth, and having acquired no fortune, he soon repaired to Ireland, the great field for adventures of every kind and degree. That country he effectually assisted to "plough and break up," according to his panegyrists. After serving with reputation in different parts of the country, under Lord Mountjoy, he succeeded Sir H. Davies in the post of sergeant-major of the army in 1602 ; was admitted a privy councillor, April 21, 1603 ; appointed governor of Carrickfergus in the month of September following, and lord deputy in 1604. In this office Sir Arthur particularly recommended himself to the king's favour by the spirit with which he applied himself to the Ulster plantation. He rendered himself still more conspicuous by violating, for his own advantages, all the essential conditions of the main project. The estates he thus obtained

were enormous. Besides the entire territory of Innishowen, which he was empowered to divide into precincts of 2,000 acres each, Lodge enumerates a long catalogue of other lands and grants conferred upon him, which exceeded in extent the acquisitions of the most fortunate plunderers in the whole range of the old system.*

Having gained all these lands, Chichester was driven into measures of still more indefensible character, in order to secure an undisturbed possession of them. The deputy, who had been himself the active means of affording conclusive proof of the uncertain nature of tenures by patent or grant from the crown, and who had repeatedly shown, and incontrovertibly, that what the king gave, he could and would take back again, naturally desired to possess some still stronger

* On the 14th January, 1610, he had a grant of the castle of Dungannon, and 1,320 acres of escheated lands within that precinct, and other hereditaments of great value in the province of Ulster: two distinct patents were passed, bearing date November, 1621, confirming all his said estates, which were very large; the former whereof contained (among others) the manor, fort, town, and lands of Dungannon, (where he had built a fort 120 feet square, with four half bulwarks, encompassed by a ditch 20 feet broad, and counterscarped; a large church and steeple, 20 houses after the English manner, &c., which was made a borough town, and sends members to parliament); the barony or territory of Innishowen; all islands within the loughs or arms of the sea, called Lough Swilly and Lough Foile; the manors, castles, and loughs of Ellagh, Greencastle, Doncranagh, &c.; the ferry upon Lough Foile, plying between Greencastle and Termonmagillegan; four salmons every day out of the salmon fishing of Culmore; the right of patronage, presentation, and advowson of the rectories and vicarages of Movill, Culdagh, Clonca, Donaghelantagh, Clanmony, Diserteigny alias Dristerteighny, Fathan alias Fawen, and of all other churches whatever in O'Dogherty's county; with the premises erected into the manors of Dunganaon, Ellagh, Greencastle alias Newcastle, Dunacranagh, and Malyn. The latter grant contained the castle or mansion-house, town, and manor of Belfast; the territories of Tuoghnefall, Tuoghmoylene, Tuoghcinament, Carnemony, Carnetall, and Monksland; the rectory of Sankhill, and all other rectories, &c. within the said territories; the entire fishing of the river Lagan; the rectories of Antrim, Glyn, Morylike, Templepatrick, Durien, Dendermott, Roisrolike, Doughconor, Kilrowte, Ballymenemagh, Dromowlagh, Dunien, Donoughconnor, and Kilroigh; the Friary of Masseryne; the entire fishing of Loughsidney, Loughneagh, or Loughchichester; and in the river Banne to the Salmon Leap, &c., &c., in the counties of Antrim, Downe, Tyrone, and Londonderry, erected into the manors of Belfast, Ballylinny, Moylunny, and Castlechichester.—*Lodge and Archdale's Peerage of Ireland*, vol. v. p. 322.

and more durable title to his own estates. And what so binding for this purpose as legislative authority? He therefore determined to obtain, by a specific act of all the powers of the kingdom, a ratification of the right under which he had acquired his property. As there had not, however, been a parliament summoned for seven and twenty years, there was reason to fear that the government would be too weak to carry any sinister or selfish projects on; for the landed interest had always predominated in these assemblies, and that was now agitated by lively fears and deep resentments. The recent attacks upon property were keenly felt; and the principal lords and landowners, being Roman Catholics, were incensed by the penalties enforced against them for not attending the Protestant form of worship.

In this difficulty, Chichester took bold and decisive measures to carry his objects. In the peers the prelates gave him an assured majority: there were 25 bishops in the house, 4 earls, 5 viscounts, and 16 barons; and as all the churchmen voted with the crown, the placemen were sure with their aid to defeat the opposition. To gain a corresponding ascendancy in the commons, no less than 40 new boroughs were created at once. Some of these were so small as to be almost uninhabited, and some so obscure that the correct way of spelling their names was not known.

Assured by this process of a party upon whom he could depend, Chichester called the new parliament together, May 18, 1613, and directed the commons to elect a speaker. Upon this motion the two parties divided. Sir John Davies was proposed as the government candidate, and Sir John Everard, another lawyer of equal learning and character, was brought forward by the opposition. It was agreed that, in taking the division, the ayes should go out, and the noes remain in the house; but no sooner had the supporters of government withdrawn, than a member of the opposition, rising in his place, exclaimed, "They are gone, and ill betide them: as they have left us possession of the house, which is our right, let us take our course."

Acting upon this original suggestion, they proceeded to elect their own candidate, and placed him in the chair. The ministerialist party, when they returned, insisted upon his giving up the seat ; but were told that in withdrawing they had abandoned their right of election. This poor quibble being disregarded, Everard was desired to leave the chair ; and, as he refused, the others placed Sir John Davies in his lap. A scene of disgraceful turbulence followed. Everard, still refusing to leave the chair, was forced from it by the treasurer and the master of ordnance ; while Sir Daniel O'Brien and Sir William Buck strove to hold him in it. After a short struggle Sir John Davies was put in possession, and the popular party withdrew in a body. But the commotion did not end here, for equal violence was displayed in subsequent transactions. The retiring members were repeatedly summoned to the house, but declined to attend, and declared the constitution and proceedings of the parliament illegal : they formed an association for the redress of grievances, which, as then enumerated, were chiefly confined to the present constitution of the House of Commons, its place of meeting, and to the validity of the recent elections. They protested against all legislative acts passed during their absence, and made significant allusions to a rising. Had the contest come to blows, the government, in all probability, would have been worsted ; for the deputy had few troops, while the seceders commanded in their own trains a considerable force. A single blow might have raised a rebellion, but Chichester, having carried the desired measure for confirming the escheat of the Ulster estates, in which he was so largely interested, dexterously resolved to put an end to the commotion by removing its cause, and prorogued the session.

Wherever the head of a government is bent upon enriching himself, corruption is sure to make rapid way in the departments of administration. Whatever of moderation or merit belonged to the early years of James's reign, was undermined and crushed by the lord deputy's labours for his own aggrandizement. Having realized a property far greater than any

other Irish statesman of his age—having abused the constitution in its most vital parts, to secure an unsubvertible title to it—he obtained a peerage with the title of Baron Belfast, in 1616, and some years after returned to England.

He was succeeded by Sir Oliver St. John. This deputy signalized himself by a vigorous execution of the penal statutes. The Roman Catholic Church, having been deprived by the Reformation of the means of rearing a priesthood at home, had sent numbers to be educated in foreign universities. By these men the consolations of religion were administered to the great mass of the population, and a considerable portion of the gentry. St. John banished them from the country by proclamation, and thus left the Roman Catholics without pastors. Seeking the shortest way of confirming all civil authority and the patronage of government to Protestants, he compelled all officers of government, and magistrates, to take the oath of supremacy. His mode of dealing with refractory bodies upon this question was striking. Take, for instance, the case of Waterford. In that city recusants had for some time been elected to the municipal offices. At this St. John took offence, and issuing a commission, seized upon the liberties or revenues of the city, and by that means put it out of the power of the citizens to render themselves obnoxious to government for the future. The true character of James's reign was fully developed in proceedings such as these. The brand upon it is distinct, and reads plainly enough—persecution in religious and confiscation in civil affairs.

CHAPTER IX.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION
WITH ENGLAND—*continued.*

THE REFORMATION.—FIRST UNION OF CHURCH AND STATE IN IRELAND.—EXCOMMUNICATIONS OF ARCHBISHOPS COMYN AND HENRY DE LONDRES, AND OF MULLOY, BISHOP OF FERNS.—DE LEDRED, BISHOP OF OSBORY'S PROCEEDINGS AGAINST DAME ALICE KYTELER, ROGER OUTLAW, PRIOR OF KILMAINHAM AND LORD DEPUTY, &c.—THE FIRST DOCTRINES INTRODUCED WITH THE REFORMATION.—STATUTES PASSED AND MEANS TAKEN FOR THE PROPAGATION OF THE NEW FORMS OF WORSHIP.—PROTESTANTS, CLERICAL AND LAY, ABUSE THE CHURCH SCANDALOUSLY.—BISHOPS TAKE A LEAD IN THE ADMINISTRATION OF POLITICAL AFFAIRS, AND BECOME PRINCIPAL INSTRUMENTS OF MISGOVERNMENT FOR A LONG SERIES OF YEARS.

THERE are three great eras of Anglo-Irish history: the first was the era of military violence; the second, the era of legal iniquity; the third, the era of religious persecution;—and all three were eras of spoliation. The first has been sketched; we have entered midway upon the second; the third is now to be opened.

While the length and breadth of the land were being thickly sown with the seeds of insurrection, as described in the preceding chapter, the arrows of oppression were directed with a keen aim into the tenderest parts of the social system. Hitherto the never-ceasing wars of Ireland had been principally carried on between antagonistic races. A new venom was now infused into their hostility by the fury of antagonistic religions. The paramount cause of national discontent had been English aggression and domination. That was now aggravated by the introduction of a new form of divine worship, set up and maintained upon the principle of depriving every

man, who chose not to kneel before it, of all his civil rights and property. Hitherto the hatred of the mixed inhabitants had been strong, because they belonged to different countries,—henceforward their hatred became deadly, because they were bred to different creeds.

From the invasion of Henry II. to the reign of Henry VIII., the church in Ireland seldom interfered with politics, and obtained but little influence in public or private affairs. Where the sword was always drawn, neither room nor time was given to erect the crosier. To this circumstance, unquestionably, we are to ascribe the infrequency of the attempts made by the church to subject both the government and the governed to the awful visitations of ecclesiastical despotism. The little that was done in this respect, however, was sufficiently marked in its character to call for a brief notice of the proceedings here.

Comyn, an Englishman, who succeeded Archbishop Lawrence O'Toole in the see of Dublin, launched the first bolts of the thunder. He laid claim to extensive lands, of which Lawrence had obtained a confirmation, as it was termed, from the Pope. But this title to property had not been recognised by Henry II., and it was now resisted by Hamo de Valois, the lord deputy, under whom Comyn sought to enforce it. Finding the governor resolute, the archbishop confounded the civil authorities generally by the paralyzing force of ecclesiastical power. He excommunicated the lord deputy and council, and interdicted the celebration of all religious ceremonies in Dublin, and throughout his diocese. The crucifix in every church was laid prostrate on the ground, and the image upon it crowned with thorns. At one time Comyn appears to have fled; but whether from the fear of personal danger, or a wish to strengthen the cause of the church by agitating its interests on the Continent, is not clearly stated. Ere long, the horror produced by the exhibitions he ordered, and by their attendant deprivations, gave victory to the church. De Valois was compelled to yield, and atoned for his offence by adding to the property which he had vainly tried to curtail. He is re-

corded as the donor of twenty plough lands to the see of Dublin.

Comyn was the first archbishop of Dublin who sat in the parliament or council of Ireland, to which he became entitled by a grant from the beardless boy, lord of Ireland, John, of the lands of Coillagh and its appurtenances in barony tenure. With him, therefore, began the union of church and state in Ireland. His example in making temporal use of religious weapons was emulated by his successor, Henry de Londres, another Englishman. The clergy in Dublin had been in the habit of soliciting fees, which were called oblations of the faithful. They became heavy, and were resisted by the citizens. The clergy carried their claims before the municipal magistrates, who rejected them. For this act the magistrates were excommunicated by Archbishop de Londres, and the service of religion interdicted throughout the city. The citizens appealed to the lord deputy, and the cause received a formal hearing before the council. Here the clergy reaped only a partial triumph. The dispute was compounded. It was agreed, that in cases of open scandal, and opposition to the priesthood, a commutation in money should be made for the first offence; that for the second the culprit should be cudgelled round the parish church; that for the third the same discipline should be repeated publicly, at the head of a procession; and if still obstinate, that the offender should be either disfranchised or cudgelled through the city.

Mulloy, bishop of Ferns, furnished a stronger proof of the spirit by which the church was then animated. He had excommunicated the great earl of Pembroke for seizing two manors belonging to the see of Ferns, and upon the death of that nobleman, appeared before Henry III. to claim them back. It was agreed that he should first pronounce absolution at the earl's tomb. Thither he attended the king in a solemn procession, and pronounced these words:—"O William, thou that liest fast bound in the chains of excommunication, if what thou hast injuriously taken away be restored, by the king, or thy heir, or any of thy friends, with

competent satisfaction, I absolve thee. Otherwise I ratify the sentence, that, being bound in thy sins, thou mayest remain damned in hell for ever." The heir, as we are told, not deeming this an absolution, refused to surrender the disputed manors, and the bishop did not retract his malediction. Soon after the Earls Marshal became extinct, and the vulgar belief prevailed that they had died off, because the curse of the church lay upon them.

Another view of the ecclesiastical character was exposed, according to Leland, in the year 1276, by Margaret le Blonde, a widow, at Cashel, who petitions the king against David Mac Carwill, bishop of that see, for withholding from her an inheritance she had recovered before the king's judges at Clonmel. "Item. For the imprisonment of her grandfather and grandmother, whom he shut up and detained in prison until they perished by famine, because they sought redress for the death of their son, father of your petitioner, who had been killed by the said bishop. Item. For the death of her six brothers and sisters, who were starved by the said bishop, because he had their inheritance in his hands, at the time he killed their father. It is to be noted that the said bishop has built an abbey in the city of Cashel, which he fills with robbers, who murder the English and lay waste the country; and when our lord the king's council examine into such offences, he passes sentence of excommunication upon them. Item. It is to be noted, that the said Margaret has five times crossed the Irish Sea. Wherefore she petitions for God's sake that the king's grace will have compassion, and that she may be permitted to take possession of her inheritance. It is further to be noted, that the aforesaid bishop has been guilty of the death of many other Englishmen besides her father; and that the said Margaret has many times obtained writs of our lord the king, but to no effect, by reason of the influence and bribery of the said bishop."

The cases here cited would seem to indicate that the Irish as well as the English portion of the hierarchy deserves to be included in the censures justly applicable to all proceedings of

this kind. It is therefore proper to observe that the practice was introduced by the English, who began to engross to themselves almost all the higher preferments of the Irish church immediately after the invasion. Naturally disliking and condemning the growing custom of placing Englishmen in the most important sees, and the richest abbeys, the Irish priests resolved, in the year 1250, that no clerk of the English nation should be admitted by them to canonical orders. We are assured that they acted upon this bold resolution for a time. But the united influence of the Pope and the king of England was brought to bear against their efforts, and they were constrained to smother the aspiration for independence, and abandon the full patronage of their church to the English crown. The church thenceforward stood in a submissive relation to the state.

The rigour of the iron rule inflicted by the English barons upon the country was mainly rendered fixed and inflexible by the complete subserviency of the church to its projects and excesses. In England, as on the Continent, the ecclesiastical authority, by a merciful dispensation in the order of things, tended to lighten the pressure of the feudal power. While fastening the rivets of its own imperious dominion, it often blunted and turned aside the sharp edge of the conquering sword. By a policy, subtle no doubt in its nature, yet humane in its effects; the church raised the common people to be a means of humbling their oppressors and its antagonists. In the great struggle for arbitrary power which was maintained during the middle ages between the church and the aristocracy, the lower orders gradually acquired improvement and elevation, until they at last became strong enough to fling off, in various places, both yokes together. But the state of Ireland —always anomalous—is in this respect, also, an exception to the general experience. In that country, from the first descent of the invaders, the crozier was borne humbly in the track of the sword. There the grace, consolation, and happiness, and all the blessings which the church professed to call down from heaven, were proudly lavished upon the victorious

soldier; while the wrath of God, awfully wrapped in the thunders of excommunication, was launched with fury upon the distracted ranks of a wronged and prostrate people.

To the few recorded instances in which the church of Ireland made a characteristic attempt to carry the jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical courts above the civil authorities, we have now to add the greatest that occurred, and it will be seen that an Englishman was its hardy hero. The circumstances have more than one claim upon our attention.

There lived in the city of Kilkenny, about the year 1325, according to John Clym, who was then a friar in the town, Dame Alice Kyteler, a lady of good fortune and family, who fell under a suspicion of enchantment and witchcraft. Of this imputed offence she was cited to purge herself, with two familiars, named Petronella and Basil, by John de Ledred, bishop of Ossory, in the ecclesiastical courts of his diocese. It is the worst feature of all cases of this kind, that the ignorance they betray in the accuser is of a character much more grave in itself and injurious to society than we can discover in the accused. The punishment of witchcraft by penal enactments promoted, in an eminent degree, the gross evil it desired to extirpate. For it took for granted the truth of the charge preferred, and thus afforded the most public proof attainable of the reality of powers which, in point of fact, were impossible. When the offender was found guilty, not because he was an impostor, but because the mysterious arts triumphed in which he affected to deal, learning and religion were equally brought into contempt; for they were made to declare that the abominations so energetically denounced by them were to be practised with success by any persons bold enough to risk the consequences of the crime.

In the indictment against Lady Alice, the rudest absurdities were mixed up with imputations of disgusting depravity. It was said that she was enamoured of a sort of demon, named Robin Artison, and was in the habit, towards the hour of twilight, of going through Kilkenny and sweeping the dirt of the streets to her son's door, muttering all the way this doggrel

couplet, probably meant to be nothing more than a rude hint of the value of manure in agricultural occupations—

“To the house of William my son,
Hie all the wealth of Kilkenny Town.”

After this labour of maternal love, she repaired to a certain cross road, and summoned Robin to an assignation, by sacrificing to him nine red cocks and nine peacocks' eyes. He came, and a criminal intercourse followed, after which Lady Alice and her demon lover mounted on a broomstick, after the old fashion, and rode through the air! So circumstantially were all these odious follies put together, that the very broomstick upon which the excursions were said to have been taken was produced in court, and with it a pot of charmed ointment, used to grease the stick, in order to make it bear the weight of its riders! A sacramental wafer was also found, which, instead of the usual initials, J. H. S., was stamped with the devil's cipher. Two trials were instituted upon this evidence. At the first, the parties abjured the errors imputed to them, and submitted to penance. At the second, Lady Alice and her attendant Petronella were found guilty and burned at the stake. According to Friar Clyn, this was the first capital execution of the kind which took place in Ireland.

As one excess usually propagates another, it was next asserted that Petronella, in her agony, had denounced her mistress's son, William Outlaw, as an accomplice in her crimes. Violent hands were consequently laid upon this person; he was placed in solitary confinement, and subjected to severe restrictions, his keepers being forbidden to speak to him, except once a day, when they were allowed to bring him food. He, too, would in all probability have undergone the fate his mother suffered, had not Lord Arnold le Poer, senechal of Kilkenny, who was connected with him by marriage, interferred, and, at the end of nine weeks, insisted upon his release.*

* He seems nevertheless to have been taken again, and, after many trying negotiations and humiliating apologies, to have obtained his liberty, upon undertaking to cover the roof of the cathedral, from the belfry to

For this disloyalty to the church, Ledred, who was determined to vindicate his authority at all hazard, took immediate proceedings. He excommunicated him for heresy, and then issuing a writ *de excommunicato capiendo*, committed him to prison in Dublin. A fierce collision between the civil and ecclesiastical authorities now ensued, and for a length of time so distracted the whole country as to put a stop to the ordinary course of government. The public voice proclaimed Lord Arnold innocent, and the lord justice, who was William Outlaw's uncle, assuming that he really was so, ordered him to be treated with humanity in his confinement. At this, Ledred, whose pretensions rose with the occasion, turned quickly upon the nobler quarry, and lodged a formal accusation against the lord justice, for aiding and advising a condemned heretic. This extraordinary accusation against a person filling such an office, appears to have been prosecuted with rigorous formality, although the business of the state stood suspended, and the parliament, which was then sitting, was rendered incapable of continuing its proceedings, the lord deputy being lord chancellor also. The trial was tediously protracted for a length of time. Before it was brought to a close, another victim fell to the church;—Lord Arnold le Poer, unequal to the persecution levelled against him, expired in his dungeon in the round tower of Dublin Castle; and the church, as unjust as it was cruel, for a long time denied Christian burial to his remains—because, as it was asserted, he died unassooiled. The argument upon which this indignity rested was peculiarly tyrannical—it first cut off the living man from the rites of the church, and then insulted his dead body, because by the act of the church itself he was out of the pale of its communion.

Not the least singular circumstance connected with this contest is the fact, that the lord deputy was himself a church—the Virgin Mary's Chapel, with lead. He was a man of wealth, a money-lender, and well connected with the leading families in the district, where his mother contracted no less than four marriages; first, with his father, also a money-lender; next with Adam le Blound or White of Callan; then with Richard de Valle or Wall, probably of Coolnamuck, near Carrick on Suir; and lastly, with John le Poer.—*Wright's Narrative of Proceedings against Dame Alice Kyteler, printed by the Camden Society.*

man. His name was Roger Outlaw ; he was prior of Kilmainham, and, as already stated, William Outlaw's uncle—a man of ability, who, notwithstanding his religious vocation, now discharged his duty fearlessly to the state. By this he rendered himself the more obnoxious to clerical censure ; and Ireland, at Ledred's instance, exhibited the unusual spectacle of the king's deputy, himself an eminent ecclesiastic, arraigned on a charge of heresy that affected his life.

Fortunately for the country, the antagonists were well matched. Roger Outlaw met his accuser promptly. He called for an investigation ; and the privy council, concurring in the reasonableness of his proposal, issued a proclamation for three days, by which freedom, protection, and safety were accorded to all persons coming forward to prosecute. But Ledred was detained at Kilkenny, and no one appeared to sustain his charge. Roger next solicited the king's writ, convening a sort of parliament, consisting of peers, bishops, abbots, priors, the mayors of Cork, Limerick, and Waterford ; the sheriffs, seneschals, and knights of shires, with the freemen of Dublin. Before this body the lord deputy presented himself, and asserted that in the past he had acted he had only afforded due protection to an individual oppressed by partiality and injustice, inasmuch as the bishop's proceedings against Lord Arnold had originated and been prosecuted to favour a kinsman who had quarrelled with his lordship. A committee of six members, whose names and stations have been preserved,—Wm. Rodeyard, dean of St. Patrick's ; the abbots of St. Thomas and St. Mary's ; the prior of Christchurch ; Mr. Elias Lawless, and Mr. Peter Willeby,—were appointed to investigate the affair ; and after examining apart the witnesses summoned before them, affirmed upon their oaths that the lord justice was orthodox, and a zealous champion of the faith, which he was ready to defend with his life. Upon this report he was solemnly acquitted, and celebrated the event by a sumptuous banquet, to which all comers were liberally made welcome.

But the churchman never yields. Rome was still open ; and Ledred, though defeated by this verdict, determined to perse-

were, and would doubtless have still further troubled the kingdom, had not the whole community as well as the government been strongly opposed to his pretensions. It is no mean evidence of the good sense of the people of Ireland at this period, that all ranks concurred in condemning the bishop. At an early stage of the proceedings, public indignation ran so strongly against him, that the inhabitants of Kilkenny rose in a body, and for a term of seventeen days kept him a close prisoner in his house. Before his intention of appealing to Rome could be carried into effect, his own conduct became the subject of criminal investigation, and he was accused in his turn. Alexander Bicknor, archbishop of Dublin, cited him by letters patent in Chancery to appear and answer charges of notorious heresy. Ledred sheltered himself under his appeal, probably about 1329,—inasmuch as Edward III. wrote to Rome, in the month of June in the following year, warning the Pope and cardinals against Ledred's suggestions; and asserting that, instead of standing a trial for his demerits, he had privately fled the country. Another letter from the king, in 1331, maintained that Ledred, conscious of guilt, had declined an inquiry into his conduct. Upon his departure, the revenues of his bishopric were seized—a moderate punishment for the mischief he had wrought, and was so anxious to extend; but in the year last mentioned a writ issued for his restitution, upon the condition of his submitting in person to the king, and answering the offences objected to him at home. Whether he submitted immediately, and if so, how he fared upon his trial, are points at this distance of time no longer determinable. That he really came to terms with the king, in 1339, at farthest, appears by a writ addressed in that year to Bishop Charlton, lord justice and chancellor, which revoked the preceding orders for his arrest, upon the special grounds of the unlawfulness, according to the canons, of such a proceeding against a bishop; and also because Ledred had diligently prosecuted his appeal to the Holy See.

Matters, nevertheless, do not appear to have proceeded amicably; for in 1347 or 1348, according to Friar Clyn,

having returned to his bishopric, after nine years of exile, he was exempted by the court of Rome from the jurisdiction of Archbishop Bicknor, who, as he complained, subjected him to excessively harsh treatment, and notoriously favoured heretics. In 1351 Bicknor died, and Clement V. restored the diocese of Ossory to the ecclesiastical authority of the archbishop of Dublin.

Adversity appears to have had no chastening influence upon Bishop Ledred. Throughout the incidents already narrated we descry the temper and spirit of an arrogant and obdurate churchman : in his subsequent career we trace the acts and character of a depraved and lawless man. In 1349 his temporalities were again confiscated, upon substantial imputations of graver guilt than had previously been laid to his charge. He was indicted for obstructing the king's business, by excommunicating William Bromley, the treasurer, while collecting the king's debts in Kilkenny ; and for abusing the chief justice of the Common Pleas on the bench, by telling him insolently to his face that he was a traitor, and had given false counsel respecting him to the lord justice. Proceeding in this unmeasured career, he appears to have prosecuted his ancient animosity to the family of Poer in outrageous crimes. He was tried as the accomplice of Thomas Fitzgilbert in plundering and setting fire to the castle of Moycobar, and slaying Hugh le Poer, to whom it belonged. Against the consequences of this outrage he pleaded the king's pardon for all homicides, felonies, thefts, robberies, and conspiracies—a startling catalogue of crimes for a Christian bishop to purge himself of. The pardon was admitted at first, but afterwards declared void, because it had been surreptitiously obtained. Nevertheless Ledred retained his see, and, in the end, retrieved his character to some extent. In process of time the storms in which he made so turbulent a figure blew over; and, as old age composed his passions, he became a quiet benefactor of the church : thus adding another to the many instances the history of his religion exhibits, of men of uncontrolled temper and most turbulent conduct, assuming, in advanced life, a new

nature, and becoming eminent for tranquil and meritorious piety. He beautified his cathedral—rebuilt the episcopal palace—not, however, without circumstances of characteristic violence—having demolished three churches to find materials for the improvement. He augmented the revenues of the vicar's church, erected an altar-piece in the cathedral, which he dedicated to the three saints whose churches he had pulled down ; and, after holding his see for 42 years, died at an advanced age, in 1360, and was buried at the gospel side of the altar of his own cathedral.*

Such was the varied life of John Ledred, bishop of Ossory. Had the efforts he made to render the church paramount been successful, the bold barons would doubtless have found as severe antagonists in successive prelates ; and those phases of obscurity and misfortune would have been sooner passed in Ireland which the progress of political improvement seems to render necessary in most countries. As it was, the church was defeated—a martial aristocracy resumed its sway—and the flood of Irish affairs flowed on as turbulently as ever in the old rude channels.

There is one instance more to be quoted, antecedent to the Reformation, in which the church appears to have made use of the civil power as the instrument of its vengeance in punishing offences offered to its members. This was the case of Sir Thomas Bath, lord of Louth, which, in the year 1459, formed the grounds of an act of the parliament, passed at Drogheda, and quoted in the notes of Mr. Wright's Narrative of the Proceedings against Dame Kyteler, published by the Camden Society. Sir Thomas had accused a priest, named John Stackbolt, of treason. The priest was acquitted, after which Bath robbed and plundered him so much, that the bishop of Meath, in obedience to the Pope's command, excommunicated the hardy knight, desiring that no baptism or burial should be had, and no mass sung for three days in any town visited by him. This proceeding exasperated instead of subduing Sir Thomas, whose servants seized

* Harris's Ware, vol. i. pp. 399-409, *et infra*.

upon the priest in the church of Navan, and carrying him to prison, cut out, it was said, his tongue, and put out his eyes. He was then, according to the statute, taken back to the church, and being cast before our Blessed Lady, was, by her grace, restored his sight and tongue ! To provide condign punishment for the outrage which occasioned this miracle, and to deter others from offending against the church and its ministers, laws, or liberties, it was ordained that Lord Louth should never hold any place or office in parliament. This sentence of disqualification apparently took effect, for in the subsequent rolls and records he is described as "late Lord Louth."

Except in the instances here recapitulated, the church does not stand conspicuously forward in Irish politics during the period intervening between the invasion and the epoch of the Reformation. The number of those instances assists us in measuring the extent of the influence possessed by the clergy in state affairs. As to the condition of religion, no intelligent reader can require to be told that it must have been deplorable. The history of the connection between England and Ireland forms an unbroken chain of sanguinary commotions and violent injustice, from which it necessarily follows that religion may have existed, but could not possibly have flourished under it. The highest offices in the church, as in the state, being awarded to the favourites of the English court, the natural action of the power inherent in the ecclesiastical body was interrupted and neutralised by the frequent introduction of new men, who were generally impelled by selfish motives, and alive to no sympathies with the people whose welfare they were appointed to promote. Under the Tudors they were pressed, not unwillingly, into the military service of the government. The archbishop of Armagh sent 16, and the archbishop of Dublin 20, able archers or gunners, appointed for war, to the musters or expeditions, which were then called hostings. It is unnecessary to point out how these duties must have relaxed the hold which a common form of divine worship gave the hierarchy over the hearts of their flocks.

When that form ceased to be one and the same, the hold was necessarily lost altogether.

Looking at the Reformation in Ireland as a political innovation, we are forcibly struck by the ignorance displayed in trying the experiment; and this remark does not apply to the intemperate acts of Henry VIII. alone, but equally to the more matured exertions of Elizabeth, Edward VI., and James I. It seems not to have struck the propagators of the new mode, that the circumstances of the two countries were essentially different. The English people were, to a certain extent, prepared for such a change, the Irish not in the least. In England it was more or less universally understood, by the adoption of the mother tongue in all the offices of the church. In Ireland the English language was not spoken by the priesthood in three out of the four provinces of the kingdom.

Partial writers lay stress upon the fact, that most of the Irish clergy conformed to the mandates of Henry VIII., and that for a time the parish churches were well frequented. But there does not appear sufficient evidence to show that this practice prevailed beyond the narrow limits of the Pale; and even there it is proper to observe, that for some years the new establishment was only placed upon such a basis as that still occupied by the Greek church. The Greeks, who say mass in the mother tongue, and deny the supremacy of the Pope, are held to be schismatics, but not heretics, by the church of Rome. Moreover, schism does not exclude salvation; whereas heresy does. This distinction will be found useful as a test of the correctness of many inferences sought to be drawn down to the present day, from the partial submission of the Irish clergy to the novelties imposed upon them by Henry VIII.

The truth is, that from the very beginning each form of worship had its champion; and English and Irish took opposite sides of the question. While Browne, archbishop of Dublin, and an Englishman, strove, according to his own report, to bring the nobility and gentry to due obedience, by accepting Henry as their supreme lord, as well spiritual as temporal; his

brother Dowdall, archbishop of Armagh, and an Irishman, called his suffragans and clergy around him in his diocese, and insisted that Ireland, the *Insula Sacra*, belonged to none but the Pope of Rome.

The first statute by which the reformed doctrine was propagated in Ireland, was passed in the year 1536, while Lord Leonard Grey was chief governor. It pronounced the king supreme head of the church of Ireland, vested first fruits in him, and punished appeals to Rome with the penalties of *præmunire*. At the same time the oath of supremacy was required from every person in office, and the refusal to swear it was declared high treason.

These were the principal enactments of Henry VIII. in Ireland ; and it is manifest that, with the exception of putting himself in the Pope's place, he preserved all the essential doctrines of the Roman Catholic church. This appears plain in the extreme upon the face of the instructions printed in the state papers, which were drawn up by Archbishop Browne, and sent round to the incumbents and curates of the diocese of Dublin. In these the powers of the Pope, of his bulls, and his letters of pardon and excommunication, are emphatically denounced and set at nought ; but prayers for the universal church, quick and dead, and for the souls of the faithful departed, are inculcated in the strongest and most earnest terms ; while confession and the real presence are left, as of old, in the plenitude of undisputed authority.

These points are only dwelt on here as exponents of historical truth ; and they are called for, because, day after day, one bold writer succeeds another in asserting that the Protestant established church of England was embraced by the Irish nation. What the Protestantism of this period was, is set forth in the well known statute of the Six Articles, which condemned every one to be hung or burned at the stake, who,

1. Denied transubstantiation ;
2. Maintained that communion in both kinds was necessary ;
3. Or that priests might lawfully marry ;

4. Or that vows of charity might be broken ;
5. Or that private masses are unprofitable ;
6. Or that auricular confession may be dispensed with.

After this recapitulation of the introduction of the Reformation into Ireland, it is hardly necessary to repeat the observation already made—that we have no evidence of its having been accepted by the clergy throughout the country ; and that even if we had, the acceptance of doctrines such as these would afford no proof of a change in the religious tenets of the clergy or their flocks : in short, the royal founder of English Protestantism appears to have been essentially, and in all but the name, a Roman Catholic.

When that religious reformer made himself king of Ireland and supreme head of its church by the same process, he obtained the two titles, and the powers, civil and religious, conveyed with them, by physical force. At first the Anglo-Irish lords and native chieftains were induced to profess their double loyalty with equal readiness. Whenever an outbreak was followed by peace or pardon, the one condition of grace was coupled with the other, and admitted of necessity. Thus, when Desmond renewed his allegiance, he “utterly denied and promised to forsake the usurped primacy and authority of the bishop of Rome.” Similar pledges were soon after given by De Burg and a host of native leaders ; by O’Connor, O’Donnel, Macmahon, O’Brien, O’More, O’Rorke, and Macdonnell. This was a suspicious unanimity, and too much resembled the original submission to the pretensions of Henry II. to be depended upon. The strong probability seems to be that the subscribing parties in these respective cases were imperfectly informed respecting the religious portion of their contract. They would fully understand the terms relating to their temporal interests, and yielded the addition as an unexplained matter of form, to which no substantive consequences were attached. This appears to be the inference naturally deducible from the state of the public knowledge at the period, and from the tenor of all the instruments, which uniformly began by reciting Henry’s title as king, and

ended by asserting his pretensions to be head of the church also. Cox quotes the form of indenture used on these occasions, from the council book of Dublin Castle. "They and each of them do and doth acknowledge the king's majesty aforesaid to be their natural liege lord, and will honour, obey, and serve him, and the kings his successors, as the supreme head on earth, immediately under Christ, of the church of England and Ireland, &c.; and, as far as lieth in their power, jointly and separately, they will annihilate the usurped primacy and authority of the bishop of Rome; and will expel and eradicate all his favourers, abettors, and partizans; and maintain, support, and defend all persons, spiritual and temporal, who shall be promoted to church benefices or dignities by the king's majesty or other rightful patron; and will apprehend and bring to justice, to be tried according to the laws made, or to be made in such behalf, all who apply for provision to the bishop of Rome, or who betake themselves to Rome in quest of promotion."

It was not conviction, then, but policy that led to this outward conformity with the new doctrines; and accordingly, as our preceding narrative will have explained, each lord and chieftain, when driven to take up arms against the royal authority, fell back at the same time upon the Pope, by a natural movement. This was a necessary consequence of the forced union attempted between religion and loyalty: when a man changed his politics, he changed his creed also.

We find the strictly temporal character of the Reformation demonstrated at its commencement by a variety of circumstances. Wherever the authority of government prevailed, the clergy adopted the prescribed formalities. "I deny not," said Father Parsons, replying to Sir Ed. Coke, "but that many throughout the realm, though otherwise Catholics in heart, as most of them were, did, at that time and after, as also now, either from fear or lack of better instructing, or both, repair to Protestant churches." But this facile admission of the Reformation could not possibly be general; and the writers who represent the fact, such as it was, as a proof that the

whole nation had suddenly adhered to the established church, reduce the argument to an absurdity. For the great mass of the people spoke no language but the Irish : they must, therefore, if present when divine service was celebrated in the English tongue, have occupied their minds, as they do to this day, while mass is said in Latin, by repeating suitable Roman Catholic prayers and professions of faith in their accustomed forms.

Is it not, then, idle in the extreme to contend that the assembling of the uneducated masses, under such circumstances, at the only places of worship to which for some years they could have resorted, affords a proof that they either understood or accepted the reformed dogmas ? And is it not equally clear, that as a political enactment, the Reformation in Ireland was a gross blunder ? For how did it proceed ? With a view of facilitating a change of opinions in religion, it was ordered by act of parliament, that the people should abandon all their old habits and peculiarities. Not only the Irish dress, but even the Irish cut of the hair, was abolished by special enactment. By the same statute, 28 Henry VIII. cap. XV., it was provided that ecclesiastical preferments should be given to those who spoke the English language, and “to none other ! ” The intention of the law in this instance may have been good ; but its direct application was absurd. Preached in one language, the congregation might have comprehended the reformed doctrines ; but here was an act of parliament, binding the clergy by the solemnity of an oath, to propound them, not in that, but in another tongue, which nothing short of a miracle could enable the people to understand.

From one solecism the legislature proceeded to another. The statute 2 Elizabeth, cap. XIII., after reciting that English ministers cannot be found to serve in Irish churches ; that the Irish people do not understand the English tongue ; that the church service cannot be celebrated in Irish, as much because it is difficult to get it printed, as because few in the whole realm can read it, enacts—“that in every church where the common minister has not the use of the English tongue,

it shall be lawful for him to say and use all their common and open prayer in ‘Latin’”—“a language,” as Lord Clare pointedly observed in his celebrated speech on the Union, “as unintelligible to the congregation as the English.”

The Protestant church of Ireland as originally founded was independent of the church of England. It was at first deemed wise to have a separate establishment for the ministration of religion, as well as for the civil and executive government of the country. In 1618, a convocation was called, and the public confession of its faith framed for the new church, in 104 articles, which were drawn up by Dr. James Usher. These have been censured for their Calvinistic tendencies, and also because they included the nine articles agreed to at Lambeth, in 1595, but subsequently disapproved of by Elizabeth and James. While thus governed, the Protestant church of Ireland was not exempt from the reproach of that dogmatical intolerance which seems to be the besetting mischief of all ecclesiastical bodies when possessed of the power to promulgate their opinions *ex cathedrā*. While the Roman Catholics, on the one hand, received a Bull, in which Pope Urban VIII. averred, that “the oath of supremacy wrested the sceptre of the Catholic church from the hand of the Almighty;” the Protestants, on the other side, were assured, in a formal proclamation from their bishops, that all who tolerated popery committed “a grievous sin, and rendered themselves accessory to idolatry, abomination, and the perdition of souls which perished in the deluge of Catholic apostacy.” But the independence of the Irish Protestant church was considered a political oversight in England, and was soon extinguished. Archbishop Laud deemed it an important thing to identify the two powers; and being seconded in his views by Wentworth, the measure was carried, much to the dislike of the Irish clergy. In order to reconcile Usher, whose opposition, if actively exerted, might have endangered the whole proceeding, it was agreed that his former articles promulgated under the great seal should not be formally abrogated, but virtually superseded by a selection of such of the English

Canons as were judged most suitable to form a code for regulating the discipline of the Irish church. That selection accordingly having been made, the alliance between the two churches was voted by the Convocation with only one dissentient voice, intended as a record of Usher's dissent from the act.

While the wisdom of the legislature was employed in recommending the new church to the people, by the methods already described, the king, the great lords and landowners, together with all men in office, were still more actively engaged in pursuits which necessarily deprived the establishment of the smallest claims to veneration or respect. The confiscation of the monasteries was followed by a wholesale appropriation of the tithes of the secular clergy. The clerical office was reduced to so degraded a level, that the bishops were ordered by act of parliament to appoint to vacant livings any fluent Englishman in preference to an Irishman, however well qualified. This fact is exposed, as well as the general state of the "reformed church"—how much of irony lurks in the phrase—by Spenser, who says—"Whatever disorders you find in the church of England, ye find these and many more; they have their particular enormities, for all Irish priests which now enjoy the church livings, are in a manner mere laymen, and follow all kinds of husbandry and other worldly affairs; they neither read Scripture, nor preach, nor administer the communion." * * * "The clergy there," he adds, "(except the grave fathers which are in high places about the state, and some few others lately planted in their new college) are generally bad, licentious, and disordered." * * * "Any Englishman," he adds, "of good conversation, being brought to the bishop, should be nominated to a vacant living before any Irishman; but though well intended, little was wrought by it, for there were not sufficient English sent over, but the most part of such as came over of themselves are either unlearned or men of bad note, for which they have forsaken England: or the bishop being Irish rejects him, or if good he carries a hard hand over him, so that he soon wearies of his poor living."

And, lastly, the benefices are so mean here, and of so small profit in those Irish countries, through the ill husbandry of the Irish, that they will not yield any competent maintenance for any honest minister to live upon." * * * "Even were all this redressed," he proceeds, "what good could any minister do amongst them, who either cannot understand him, or will not hear him? or how dare any honest minister commit his safety to the hands of such neighbours as the boldest captain dare scarcely dwell by?"

The practices of the Protestants to render their religion popular and efficient during the reign of James I., are minutely detailed upon the authority of the king himself, and of Carte, the historian. James tells us that he found the estate of the bishoprics in Ulster much entangled, and altogether unprofitable to the bishops, partly by the challenge which the late temporal Irish lords made to the church's patrimony within their countries, hereby to discourage all men of worth and learning, through want of maintenance, to undertake the care of those places, and to continue the people in ignorance and barbarism, the more easily to lead them into their own measures; and partly by the claims of patentees, who, under colour of abbey and escheated lands, passed by patent many of the church lands, not excepting even the site of cathedral churches, and the places of residence of bishops, deans, and canons, to the great prejudice and decay of religion, and the frustrating his religious intent for the good government and reformation of those parts.

Nor were the parochial churches (continues Carte) in a better condition than the cathedrals: they had most of them been destroyed in the troubles, or fallen down for want of covering; the livings were very small, and either kept in the bishop's hands, by way of commendams and sequestrations, or else filled with ministers as scandalous as their incomes, so that scarce any care was taken to catechise children, or instruct others in the ground of religion; and for years together divine service had not been used in any parish church throughout Ulster, except in some principal towns.

Carte must still be one of our witnesses to show that matters did not mend under Charles I.:—“ It was at this time in a deplorable condition ; the cathedrals in many places destroyed ; the parish churches nearly ruined, unroofed, or unrepaired ; the houses of the clergy left desolate, and their possessions alienated during the wars and confusions of former times,—most of the tithes had been appropriated, or sold to private persons and made lay fees. In some dioceses there was scarce a living left that was not farmed out to the patron at two, three, or four pounds a year for a long time,—three lives, or 100 years. The vicarages were for the most part stipendiary, and their stipends so miserably sordid, that in the whole province of Connaught there was scarce a vicar’s pension which exceeded 40s. a year, and in many places they were but 16s. The bishoprics themselves, though many in number, yet but of small revenue ; having the greatest part of them been depopulated in the change of religion by absolute grants and long leases, (made generally by the Popish bishops that conformed,) were some of them not able to maintain a bishop. Several were by these means reduced to £50 a year, as Waterford, Kilsenora, and others ; and some to five marks, as Cloyne and Macduagh. And as scandalous livings naturally make scandalous ministers, the clergy of the established church were generally ignorant and unlearned, loose and irregular in their lives and conversations, negligent of their cures, and very careless of observing uniformity and decency in divine worship, in a country where they were endangered on the one hand by an infinite number of obstinate recusants, and on the other hand by a shoal of factious and irregular puritans brought out of Scotland, who offered daily insults to the established church government, and treated the rites of administering the sacraments with insufferable contempt.”

The letters of Wentworth, Lord Strafford, while lord lieutenant, abound with passages which confirm in the strongest terms the accuracy of the account given by Carte. He writes of “ an unlearned clergy, which have not so much as the outward form of churchmen ; the churches unbuilt ; the parsonage and

vicarage houses utterly ruined ; the people untaught through the non-residency of the clergy, occasioned by the unlimited shameful number of spiritual promotions with cure of souls ; the rites and ceremonies of the church run over without all decency of habit, order, or gravity ; the possessions of the church, to a great proportion, in lay hands, the bishops alienating their very principal houses and demesnes to children and to strangers."

The aristocracy as usual helped themselves largely to these estates and profits. The earl of Westmeath, an impropriator to a considerable amount, in one instance locked the clergyman out of the church, and put the key in his pocket—a piece of practical honesty which perhaps deserves a compliment : having taken care that there should be nothing to pay, he provided effectually that there should be nothing to do. Wentworth has a passage descriptive of the conduct of another nobleman :—“ Just at this moment I am informed that my Lord Clanrickard hath engrossed as many parsonages and vicarages, as he hath mortgaged for £4,000 fine, and £80 rent ; but in faith have at him and all the rest of the ravens. I spare no man among them, let no man spare me. Howbeit, I foresee that this is so universal a disease, that I shall incur a number of men’s displeasure, of the best rank among them.” In a third letter he says—“ It is no longer since than this term, a poor vicar was restored to an impropriation and two vicarages usurped these 30 years and better by the earl of Cork, and considering the usurpations upon the church have been a contagion so universally spread throughout the kingdom, as hardly can a jury be got but where a great (if not the greatest) number would feel themselves interested in the question ; such a desolation have these wars brought upon God’s portion.”

Another extract from these letters will render the case complete, by showing that the heads of the church were as guilty at this period in misapplying its revenues as the laymen :—“ I have sent for the archbishop of Cashel ; but his grace returns, he is ill of the sciatica, and not able to travel ; likes not, I believe, to come to a reckoning, but I have writ

his answer. In good faith, my lord, his grace hath beguiled me, and keeps his 16 vicarages still, but I will roundly prepare him for a purge so soon as I see him."

Having thus far presented, for the sake of a continuous narrative, an outline of the manner in which the Reformation was carried, if not into popular, at least into legal use in Ireland; we have now to point out some under-currents in a better direction, by which the main stream of events was accompanied. The measure itself—essentially religious—was always treated politically by the English statesmen, who for many years laboured assiduously to ensure the salvation of souls by act of parliament. Their attempts failed as much by the force of their own mistakes as the abuses of their followers. They established the church by law, but it was a church without a congregation—the church of the conqueror and the persecutor, and as such avoided and abhorred by the people. There is room for an opinion that the sequel might have been different, in many respects, if some of the higher and purer views entertained upon the subject in a few quarters, had not been feebly advocated and quickly lost sight of, by the majority of those who had the power to give them due effect. We are bound to take notice of these, as well because they are the only sound portions of an abortive undertaking, as because they prove to us but too plainly, that the English government in Ireland, upon ecclesiastical as well as civil matters, took the motto of their actions from the Latin poet:—

“video meliora, proboque
Deteriora sequor.”

It would, indeed, be melancholy if our knowledge of the period furnished us with no evidence of a more enlightened policy and a more religious spirit than we have as yet been able to exhibit. Hitherto the Reformation in Ireland appears to have been rude, corrupt, and every way unworthy of the character of the age for integrity and intelligence. But we find that, although not acted upon, admirable suggestions were occasionally offered by eminent men to guide the government

in framing laws, and to assist its servants in putting them into practice. It is also perfectly true, as several modern writers have insisted, that the Reformation experienced no fair trial in Ireland—almost all the circumstances of the times conspired against it. As an English measure, and the work of government, it was necessarily suspected and disliked. It was introduced with a high hand, and upheld with that proud contempt of the opinions of the majority which too often, even in the present day, marks the conduct of the government when legislating for Ireland. We are not called upon to say what the consequences might have been had the cause been left to natural effects, and to its own merits; but we are bound to observe, that it was enforced by fear and punishment; that it was associated with all that the people had ever regarded as odious, unjust, and tyrannical; and that it was cruelly sustained, like heathenism of old, by persecution. It is still more imperative on us, and also more agreeable, to preserve the emphatic terms in which this false and mischievous policy was condemned by men of the highest authority and the greatest experience. The Lord Deputy Mountjoy, whom we have already quoted upon the same subject, writing to the English council in 1599, said—"Whereas it hath pleased your lordship in your last letters to command us to deal more moderately in the great matter of religion, I had, before the receipt of your lordship's letters, presumed to advise such as dealt in it to hold a more restrained hand therein."

Spenser expressed himself with more eloquence in the same spirit. "In planting of religion," he observed, "thus much is needful to be attended to, that it be not impressed into them with terror and large penalties, as now is the manner; but rather delivered and intimated with mildness and gentleness, so as it may not be hated before it is understood, and its professors despised and rejected." It was in the same strain that the lords of the English privy council addressed the Lord Deputy Chichester, in 1606, when they said—"Conformity must be wrought with time and by the care which you must take to enlarge the passage of God's word, by choice and plan-

tation of sufficient and zealous men to teach and preach the same unto his people, wherein we have more hope of good effects (by the favour of God) than by any sudden and violent course in that kingdom, where the people have so little means as yet to be instructed."

It is doubtless to the reproduction from time to time of passages like these, unaccompanied by a reference to concurrent facts, that we are to attribute the expressions of unqualified approbation which are not infrequently applied, even in the present day, to the Irish administrations of Elizabeth and James I. There are public writers who do not hesitate to describe them as mild and even noble ;—although there was a high commission established in Dublin as early as the year 1593, to inspect and reform all offences against the acts of 2 Elizabeth, for embracing and devoutly observing the order and service of the church established by parliament, or otherwise, (as the word oddly enough is,) for executing all manner of statutes and levying all forfeitures. It is with laws such as these, and others to which we might also refer, before us, that we are invited to believe that there was no religious persecution during these reigns ; and it is in the teeth of specific directions from the Lord Deputy Mountjoy, given five years after the court for enforcing these laws was instituted, "to deal moderately in the matter of religion," that we are assured that these laws were connived at rather than put into execution. Bishop Mant, in his "History of the Established Church in Ireland," is a leader of the modern party, which, taking its cue from Cox, would fain inculcate the opinion that, whatever apparent severity may have marked the laws against the Roman Catholic religion, they were never executed with corresponding strictness. These modified terms will excite surprise when compared with the language repeatedly used by one of the parties referred to. James I. was honest enough to make his temper and disposition upon the subject publicly known. In one of his first proclamations he ordered a general gaol delivery, with a special exception against "murderers and papists." About the same time he convened his council, and assured

them, that "he never had an intention of granting toleration to the papists,"—that "if he thought his son would condescend to any such course, he would wish the kingdom translated to his daughter;" that "the mitigation of the payments of the recusant Catholics was in consideration that not any one of them had lifted up his hand against him, at his coming in; and so he gave them a year of probation to conform themselves: which seeing it had not wrought that effect, he had fortified all the laws against them, and made them stronger, and commanded that they should be put in force to the uttermost." These intentions, Winwood tells us, were further published by the lords in the Star Chamber, and by the recorder of London to the lord mayor and corporation; after which the king sent for the judges, and gave them a strict charge, before they went circuit, to be diligent and severe against recusants, and to execute particularly against them the laws which ordered their banishment or confinement. The plain truth, therefore, is, that authors who represent James I. as not being a persecutor, are to be understood to use that term in a comparative sense. They can only intend to describe him as not having persecuted his conscientious subjects to death. He had a natural aversion to spill blood, and he spared human life. In other respects, his principles and his acts prove him to have been a galling oppressor in the matter of religion.

Amongst the legitimate measures resorted to for introducing the new form of worship, was the establishment of the first and only seat of learning which Ireland owes to England; and yet it is unquestionable that, by making the university of Dublin the keystone of the arch upon which the superstructure of the Protestant church in Ireland was raised, Elizabeth and her ministers impaired the efficiency of that institution in a national point of view—they confined its advantages to a sect. It was nevertheless wisely conceived, and has been, in many essential respects, prosperous, furnishing the church with a well educated and accomplished ministry, and preserving in the country a high standard of classical and scientific attainments. Its condition, order of studies, and

services to the cause of religion and learning, will occupy our attention in another chapter.

We have dwelt upon the ill-advised and arbitrary denunciation of the Irish language in the service of the church, but some more rational opinions prevailed upon that point also. Edward VI. and Lord Chancellor Bacon advised that versions of the service, the Bible, the catechisms, and other books of instruction should be made into the language of the natives. Sir H. Sidney, too, in writing to Elizabeth, expressed himself thus judiciously :—“ In choice of ministers for the remote places where the English tongue is not understood, it is most necessary that such be chosen as can speak Irish, for which search should be made first and speedily in your own universities; and any found there well affected in religion, and well conditioned beside, should be animated by your majesty, yea, though it were somewhat to your highness’s charge; and on peril of my life, you would find it returned with fame, before three years be expired. If there be no such there, or not enough, then do I wish, (but this most humbly under your highness’s correction,) that you would write to the regent of Scotland, where, as I learn, there are many of the reformed church that are of this language, that he would prefer to your highness so many as shall seem good to you to demand, of honest, zealous, and learned men, and that could speak this language; and though for a while your majesty were at some charge, it were well bestowed, for in a short time their own preferments would be able to suffice them, and in the mean time thousands would be gained to Christ that are now left at the worst.”

If Elizabeth did not apply for Celtic Protestants in Scotland to proselytize the recusant Catholics of Ireland, she at least adopted the spirit of her lord deputy’s suggestions, by sending over, during the thirteenth year of her reign, a fount of Irish types, “ in hope that God in his mercy would raise up some to translate the New Testament into their mother tongue.” At the same time she directs that the “ prayers of the church should be printed in the Irish language and cha-

racter; and that a church should be set apart in the chief town of every diocese, where they are to be read, and a sermon preached to the common people in their own language." James I. adopted these views, insisting "that the simple natives were kept in darkness through want of ministers who could speak their own language, and desiring that a competent number of towardly men, already fitted with the knowledge of the Irish tongue, be placed in the university and maintained there for two or three years till they have learned the ground of religion, and be able to catechise the simple natives."

But although the convocation of 1684 ordained the use of the Irish language in the churches; although the celebrated Robert Boyle expended £700 in printing an edition of the New Testament in Irish during the year 1681, and Bishop Bedell followed with a translation of the Old Testament in 1685; we find the House of Commons resolving, so late as the year 1710, "that it will be requisite that a number of ministers, duly qualified to instruct the natives of this kingdom, and perform the offices of religion to them in their own language, be provided and encouraged by a suitable maintenance."

Such a resolution, passed at this late period, affords the most conclusive proof that the Reformation had made no considerable progress. The cause of this failure has already been suggested: it was twofold—the persecution by which the attempt to establish Protestantism was accompanied, and the shameless plunder of the property of the church by the principal men appointed to induce the people to conform to its doctrines and observances. In this latter respect, the worst enemies of Protestantism in Ireland were the Protestants themselves. For whatever indifference may have been shown by the crown, about this period, to the rights of private property, the estates of the church were in general respected by that authority. The laity invaded them often, compensating for the losses which they were made to endure themselves, by inflicting others upon a clergy destitute of the affection or respect of the community. But the

Tudors and the Stuarts, while violating all other rights and properties, made some marked exceptions in favour of the Reformation in Ireland.

Leland derives from Primate Usher some particulars which are not without interest, respecting the nature and extent of the estates of the church of Ireland at the time of the Reformation, and the manner in which they were preserved at the plantation of Ulster. It had been provided, it seems, in old times, that whoever founded a church should endow it with certain lands for the maintenance of divine worship, and deliver a deed of donation to the bishop before the church was dedicated. Thenceforward the bishop managed and applied the lands, which, in consequence of their being devoted to religious uses, became exempt from all temporal charges and taxes, and entitled to the right of sanctuary and other immunities. They were called Tearmuin or Termon, that is, privileged lands; and were occupied by laymen, both villeins and free tenants, who husbanded them for the church at a profit to themselves and their families. For the receipt and distribution of the rents paid by these ecclesiastical tenants every church had its ceconomus or archdeacon, called by the Irish, Eireinneach or Herenach. These ancient archidiaconi were inferior to the presbyteri, and are to be distinguished from the archdeacons of high rank who exercise jurisdiction under the bishop. Of these inferior stewards, each diocese had an appointed number.

The herenachs, again, were superintended by an officer called Corbe, Corbah, or Comhurba, supposed by Usher to be the same with chorepiscopus or archipresbyter; but by Leland, upon the authority of the Irish annals, taken to be the prelate himself, or successor of the first Irish saint who presided in the particular diocese. In this sense the comhurba of St. Patrick means the then archbishop of Armagh; of Kiaran, the bishop of Clonmacnoise. Colgan, in his "Trias-Thaumaturga," is cited by Leland as another authority for this interpretation. The herenachs resided on the termon lands, and apportioned

the accruing rents and profits,—some to the bishop, some to the inferior clergy, and some to the repairs of the churches, and to the maintenance of hospitality—in certain divisions which custom had established in each diocese. They appear to have been under no injunctions of celibacy in early times. Their office, together with its dignity and emoluments, descended frequently to their children. Hence herenach lands are found to have been held in succession for many generations by several septs.

A particular tenure of land was thus created, which in the lapse of time materially diminished the interest possessed by the church in the original property. The northern bishoprics had also been encroached upon by the Irish chieftains and the Anglo-Irish peers. To them succeeded the patentees of the Ulster plantation; until at last there was scarcely a competent subsistence left for the hierarchy. The state of the parochial clergy was still more deplorable. The churches had been either destroyed in the wars, or had fallen into ruin. The benefices were small, for the bishops, being despoiled themselves, became in their turn despoilers, and applied to their own uses the incomes of their clergy, in the way, if not of commendam, of sequestration at least. Hence the cures were filled by ministers, whom Spenser and Carte, already quoted, tell us were as scandalous in character as they were ill-conditioned in fortune.

James I., being absolute master of the terms upon which his own grants were framed, undertook to remedy these abuses in a peremptory manner, and ordained that all ecclesiastical lands should be restored to their respective sees and churches; that all lands should be deemed ecclesiastical from which bishops had in former times received rents or pensions; that compositions should be made with the patentees for sites for cathedral churches; for the residences of bishops and dignitaries, and for certain other church lands which had been unintentionally conveyed away. The patentees were to receive equivalents if they compounded freely; otherwise they were to forfeit their

patents, on the ground that the king had been deceived in granting them, and then all possessions acquired under them were to pass to the church.

The inferior clergy were also taken care of. The bishops were called upon to resign all their impropriations, and to relinquish the tithes paid them out of parishes to the respective incumbents; for which sacrifice ample compensation was to be made out of the king's lands. Every undertaker's proportion, moreover, was declared a parish, to which a parochial church was attached. The incumbents, besides their tithes and dues, had glebe lands assigned to them, of 60, 90, or 120 acres, according to the extent of the respective parishes.

These formal provisions were never carried out to their full extent—much, however, was done through them, and it was in this way that the Protestant church obtained the extensive estates from which her present wealth is largely derived—wealth at all times so disproportioned to the number of persons in communion with her, as to have invested the establishment with a character of extortion from the very outset. Her political subserviency added to the odium thus incurred from the community she overburthened. The civil advantages attached by the state to the observance of her worship induced her ecclesiastics to place themselves as a body at the disposal of the government, and encouraged the more aspiring of her prelates to become politicians and party leaders. The injuries thus inflicted upon the Protestant church in Ireland are incalculable; for of all public men, ecclesiastical statesmen have been the most daring and flagitious. The cardinal ministers of the Continent furnish one set of examples, and the lords justices from the episcopal bench of the Protestant church of Ireland another, to prove the justice of this remark. For the present, it will be enough to illustrate it by a sketch of the life of the first prelate whom we meet with, after the Reformation, blending together the mingled offices of church and state, highly to the dishonour of religion, and his own advantage.

Adam, second son of Edward Loftus, a gentleman of good family and estate, was born at Swineshead, in Yorkshire.

According to Lodge, he was educated at the university of Cambridge, where, enjoying a more than ordinary allowance for support in his studies, and possessing a comely person, he appeared to much advantage before Queen Elizabeth at a public act, performing his part as a florid orator and subtle disputant with so much address, that he engaged her majesty's approbation, and a gracious promise of speedy preferment, which was liberally kept. Upon the appointment of the earl of Sussex to the government of Ireland, this courtly clerk was named his chaplain, and ran a rapid course of promotion. October 8, 1561, he obtained letters patent for the rectory of Painswick, in the diocese of Meath; and having been, in 1562, at the very early age of 28, appointed to succeed Archbishop Dowdall in the see of Armagh, he was consecrated by Hugh, archbishop of Dublin, about the close of that year.

In 1564 he became a noted pluralist, being elected dean of St. Patrick's, with the queen's license for holding that dignity with the primacy. In 1566, O'Neil destroyed the city and cathedral of Armagh; and this Protestant primate, borrowing the feeble thunder of the rejected church of Rome, pronounced, not only by himself, but by all the clergy of his diocese, sentence of excommunication against the Irish chieftain, who appears to have utterly disregarded these ecclesiastical denunciations.

On the 8th of August, 1567, Loftus was translated to the see of Dublin, because the latter was then deemed more valuable than Armagh. Upon this occasion, in obedience to the queen's letter, he resigned the deanery of St. Patrick's: but he seems to have soon obtained satisfaction for the loss of that office. In May, 1572, his urgent representations of the poverty of the see of Dublin, induced Elizabeth to grant him a dispensation to hold, with his archbishopric, any comfortable sinecures not exceeding £100 per annum in value. The archbishop availed himself freely of this privilege, although, in the following year, he was made lord chancellor; an office, with all its patronage and emoluments, which he enjoyed, with the intermission of a few months, to the day of his death. Harris,

a writer never disposed to censure the reformed religion or its prelates, is constrained to dwell upon the “excessive ambition and avarice” by which this prelate tarnished the mitre. “For, besides his promotion in the church, he grasped at every thing that became void, either for himself or family; insomuch that the dean and chapter of Christ Church were so wearied with his importunities, that, on the 28th of August, 1578, upon granting him some request, they obliged him to promise not to petition or become suitor to them for any advowson of any prebend or living, nor for any lease of any benefice, nor for any fee farm; but, when an entry of this promise came to be made in the chapter books, in his presence, he would have thrust in an exception of *one petition, and no more!*”

In 1582, Loftus was one of the lords justices of Ireland, and again in 1585. In 1583, he imitated his brethren of the English bench by staining the Reformation in Ireland with the blood of persecution. He was the unjust lord justice, says D’Alton, who illegally sentenced Dermot Hurley, the Roman Catholic archbishop of Cashel, to the cruelties of death, on Oxmantown Green, for his religious opinions; although the judges, to whom his case had been referred, had solemnly decided that he offended against English statutes only, and that, while on the one hand he could not be sent into England against his will, to be there subjected to their operation, neither on the other could he be tried under them in Ireland, which had its own parliament and laws. With this report before him, Loftus ordered the execution.*

In 1585, Sir John Perrot made a journey to the North, and left the archbishop and Sir Henry Wallop lords justices during his absence. His back was no sooner turned, according to D’Alton, but they wrote letters of complaint against him to Sir Francis Walsingham, secretary of state, which, with the insinuations of Sir Jeffery Fenton, then in England, to the

* Lodge gives the patent of arms granted to Loftus upon his translation to Dublin, by which he and his heirs—as if to perpetuate the recollection of this cruelty—are authorized to bear a golden cross sprinkled with drops of blood.

queen, proved the first dawnings of Perrot's troubles. The same year great unkindness broke out between the lord deputy and archbishop, partly upon public accounts, and chiefly concerning St. Patrick's, which the lord deputy had proposed to convert into a college, as there was another cathedral; but Loftus, being deeply interested in the livings of St. Patrick's by long leases, and other estates, granted either to himself, his children, or kinsmen, did, by all his means, withstand the alienation of these revenues. Being a man of high spirit, and used to bear sway in the government, he grew into contradiction, and from contradiction to contention with the deputy, who, on the other side, brooking no opposition, there grew some heat between them; whereof the queen taking notice, wrote to them both, to reconcile themselves together. "But," adds the old writer, from whom D'Alton quotes, "the archbishop stuck to him to the last, and was a main instrument in bringing him to his condemnation; so that Perrot, in his will, solemnly testified that the archbishop had falsely belied him." The ill-fated ex-deputy was found guilty of the charges urged against him, and only escaped from public execution by a more sudden visitation of death, in his prison at the Tower. In 1589, Loftus, drawing still more upon the munificence of his sovereign, procured a grant of "the office of the prerogative" to him, Dr. Ambrose Forth, and the survivor of them.

Having defeated the intentions of government in founding a university upon the revenues of St. Patrick's Cathedral, he determined to prevent the revival of a plan by which his private interest could not fail to suffer. With this view he became a warm promoter of the college which now exists, and devoted his best influence and offices in its behalf with the Queen Elizabeth and her ministers in England. When the scheme was finally settled, he condescended, notwithstanding the number of his employments, to take the office of provost.

In 1597, Loftus was again one of the lords justices; and once more in 1599, on the sudden departure of Essex, the viceroy, to throw himself before the queen in her dressing chamber, and force on the fate by which he soon perished. At

the close of the latter year, Loftus was one of the assistant councillors to the lord president of Munster ; and in 1603, still unsated with his gains, had pardon of intrusion and alienation in reference to the manors, &c. of Rathfarnham, Ballintiyer, Newtown, Stagonil, Timothan, Old Court, Kilclogan, Wexford, Hooke, Painstown, le Naas, &c. In two years afterwards, April 5, 1605, about forty-two years after his consecration, of which nearly thirty-eight were spent in the see of Dublin, he died at an advanced age in his palace of St. Sepulchre's, and was buried in St. Patrick's Church.

Our sketch of the introduction of the Protestant religion into Ireland closes appropriately enough with this account of Archbishop Loftus. In his life and actions the character of the Irish Protestant ecclesiastic is portrayed in colours that will not fade for ages. He was the head of the church for years ; and his concern for its interests and his care of his own during that long period are broadly distinguishable in the number, variety, and nature of the appointments into which he pushed himself. Archbishop successively of Armagh and Dublin, dean of St. Patrick's, holder of many livings and leases of church lands, twice lord keeper of the great seal, lord chancellor from the year 1578 to the date of his death, keeper of the prerogative, four times chief governor, and provost of Trinity College, his days seem to have passed in the incessant pursuit of profitable places. For the occupation of these he does not appear to have been qualified by the possession of extraordinary talents, nor did he leave behind him in them any exalted reputation for zeal or efficiency. A quick sense of his own interest, and that dexterity in turning favourable circumstances to a good account which occasionally enables a clever worldly-minded intriguer to reap pecuniary rewards never coveted nor dreamed of by men of genius, seem to have constituted his only recommendations to his large fortune and estates.

While such a man was primate, the fate of the establishment was sealed ; and when other prelates followed him, pursuing the practices in which he excelled, with nearly the same success,

the new church necessarily sunk into a scandal to religion, and a calamity to the nation. Clergymen without chapels, and chapels without congregations, became common, where the hierarchy were principally known by being ministers of state, by founding families, obtaining peerages, engrossing pluralities, and amassing enormous fortunes. It little availed that a rare example of learning and piety appeared in Archbishop Usher, when the opposite instances of ambition, nepotism, and avarice, were numerous. In vain did Bishop Bedell strive to discountenance pluralities, and render the order apostolic and useful, by dis severing the united sees of Kilmore and Ardagh, when Montgomery, a Scotchman, favoured by James I., aggrandized himself indecently by holding the three sees of Derry, Raphoe, and Clogher together. While such bishops flourished, the mitre covered the heads of the worst enemies of Protestantism in Ireland ; and its complete failure was as natural as it was disgraceful. Looking at events only, it would almost seem as if it had been hitherto maintained for the purpose of assisting the younger branches of the aristocracy in England, and the more aspiring clerks of the sister establishment in that country, to become political adventurers, temporal lords, and the only rich men in a poor country. As fast as the more valuable sees fell vacant, we find them filled by some fortunate graduate from the universities of Oxford or Cambridge, with few claims to preferment save the patronage of the minister in London, or some noble connections at court.

Amongat the many persons who filled the see of Dublin, from the Reformation to the Union, we find only two who appear to have been born and educated in Ireland ; and one of these was the son of a Scotchman. England supplied all the others, and so far assisted to denationalize the Protestant establishment. The same practice obtained in the other sees, with nearly the same uniformity ; but it is impossible to show, within the limits of this work, the extent to which Englishmen, preferred to the Irish bench of bishops, trafficked in sees, estates, titles, and politics. By way of sample of their proceedings in these respects, however, we shall give a list—which

will suggest its own reflections—of the archbishops of Dublin, with their names, their places of birth and education, and a few additional particulars, from D'Alton's Biographies of the Prelates of that See.

1531. George Browne, an Augustinian friar from London; educated near Holywell, in Oxfordshire. The archbishopric, in his time, was rated at £534 15s. 2d. per annum. By deed, July 12, 1545, this prelate, in consideration of £40, conveyed to trustees the town of Rathlande, and sixty acres of arable land in the village and fields of Rathlande, being on the southern part of Thomas Court Wood, then lately occupied by Thomas Bathe; and also all the lands, &c. in Rathlande aforesaid, and the rents and reversions of the same; to hold for ever, to the use of William Brabazon, ancestor of the earl of Meath, his heirs and assigns, at the yearly rent of 18s. 4d. This alienation constitutes at present the earl of Meath's liberties in Dublin.

1555. Hugh Curwen, a native of Westmoreland; lord chancellor, lord justice, lord treasurer, and archbishop.

1567. Adam Loftus. Two descendants of this family were ennobled as Viscounts Lisburne and earls and marquises of Ely. The bishop's estate of Rathfarnham, taken from the church, passed, by marriage, into the Wharton family, and was sold for £62,000, in 1731, to W. Conolly, Esq., speaker of the Irish House of Commons.

1605. Thomas Jones; born in Lancashire; educated at Christchurch College, Cambridge; retained, with his primacy, the prebend of Castlenock and the rectory of Trim; lord chancellor and lord justice in 1608: had the king's letter for a grant of the monastery of the Blessed Virgin of Tristernagh, with all lands thereunto belonging, as theretofore dismissed by Queen Elizabeth to Captain William Piers, for a certain term then outstanding; and in 1610 obtained a further grant to himself and his son Sir Roger Jones, of two water-mills on the Boyne, near Trim, with the courses and weirs thereunto belonging, parcel of the estate of the late monastery of the Blessed Virgin of Trim; also a grant of the

monastery of the friars minors observants of Trim, with the site, church, cemetery, watermill and course, garden, orchard, and other appurtenances, an eel weir on the Boyne, the king's park, otherwise the park of Trim, containing 80 acres, and other parks, parcel of the estate of said monastery ; also that religious house and its site, the church and burial ground, and the hereditaments within the same, and 80 acres adjoining the town and lands of Galroestown, parcel of the same estate ; 100 acres in Ballynascallan, parcel of the estate of Walter de la Hoyde, attainted ; a castle and 200 acres at Derranstown, &c. In 1614, he had a grant of the temporalities of the bishoprics of Kilmore and Ardagh during vacancy. In 1615, his see was valued at £450 per annum. In the same year, eight Roman Catholics, who had been excommunicated by this prelate for recusancy, and imprisoned, were released by the indulgence of parliament ; but the archbishop having, with the characteristic pertinacity of his order, again excommunicated them, they were sent back to their former place of confinement. By his several promotions, this archbishop not only laid the foundation of a large estate, but likewise so recommended his son to royal favour, that he was created Viscount Ranelagh in a few years after his father's demise, and Baron Jones, of Navan.

1619. Lancelot Bulkeley ; born at Beaumaris, educated at Brabham College, Oxford. James I. granted him a license, the year after his consecration, to hold in commendam one or more livings, not rated in the king's books at more than £100 a year. In 1640, a private act of parliament secured to him several estates and divers lands in the counties of Dublin, Wicklow, and Kildare, or in some or one of them. The Commons Journals of the immediately succeeding years afford abundant evidence of the misconduct of the churchmen under this prelate. Amongst the grievances voted by parliament were the scandalous extortions sanctioned in the ecclesiastical courts, under the pretext of exacting dues for services, which, however respected under the old establishment, were unpractised and condemned as idolatry by the reformers. Yet did they

insist upon being paid for them. In the emphatic language of the Ulster dissenters, “the prelates and their faction, as they inherit the superstition of popery, so of late they exact with all severity the obsolete customs of St. Mary’s gallons, mortuaries, &c., which, as they were given by superstition, and used to idolatry, so now are they taken by oppression, and applied to riotousness.” Bishop Bulkeley’s descendants became baronets, and were appropriately rich.

1660. James Margetson; born in Yorkshire; educated at Peterhouse College, Cambridge; translated from Dublin to Armagh. He died in August, 1678, and was buried in Christ-church. “As to his private estate and fortune,” said Doctor Henry Jones, bishop of Meath, in his funeral sermon, “God blessed him in that abundantly.” It was objected to him, that in England he had laid out what he had acquired in Ireland, and not there rather where he had it; but it is well known that even in Ireland, he laid out for a settlement for one of his children no less than £4,000 at once, and the like sum of £4,000 more towards the settlement there of another of his children. He was also bent on purchasing, not far off, an estate, which sold afterwards for £6,000.

1663. Michael Boyle; educated at Oxford. This family, which came from Hereford, was equally fortunate in church and state. Between the years 1619 and 1660, we count in Lodge, vol. i. pp. 144-7, no less than four of them bishops—namely, Michael, advanced to the sees of Waterford and Lismore, July 7, 1619; John, bishop of Cork, Cloyne, and Ross, who died August 2, 1620; Richard, his successor, and archbishop of Tuam, May 30, 1638; and his son, Michael, translated successively from the sees of Cork, Cloyne, and Ross, to the archbishopric of Dublin, and thence to the archbishopric of Armagh. In 1660, not content with three sees, this Michael Boyle held possession of six parishes, as sinecures, under colour that he could not get clergymen to serve them, in consequence of which he received a severe reproof from his relative, Roger, earl of Orrery, lord president of Munster. In 1667, this prelate had a grant to him and his successor,

of Jordanstown, in the parish of Swords, with other lands therein ; also of Callinstown, Great and Little Roween, Kilrashke, &c., in the counties of Dublin and Cork. By the act of settlement he had a further confirmation of the lands of his see, together with a sequestration of so much of the forfeited lands as should increase the total income of the dioceses of Dublin and Glendalough, over and above certain manors and mensal lands, to the yearly value of £2,000. A few years before, the see had produced only £450. In 1668, he and the respective deans of his two cathedrals had a grant of several impropriations, rectories, and tithes, in the counties of Longford, Galway, Mayo, Limerick, Westmeath, Cork, Kilkenny, and Wexford. Upon his preferment to Armagh, he became lord chancellor—an office which he held for two and twenty years. He was made lord almoner in 1699 ; and, after having been repeatedly constituted lord justice, died in 1702, at the advanced age of 93. Michael Boyle erected a magnificent country house at Blessington, and left behind him so large an estate, that his eldest son, Murrough Boyle, was created Viscount Blessington.

1678. John Parker ; born in Dublin ; graduated in Trinity College there ; and obtained successively Elphin, Tuam, and Dublin. He was a pluralist,—holding in commendam with these sees the rectory of Dartree in Monaghan ; the treasurership of St. Patrick's, Dublin ; and the prebend of Desertmore, Cork.

1681. Francis Marsh ; born near Gloucester, and educated at the free school of that town, and at Emanuel College, Cambridge ; was successively bishop of Limerick, Ardfert, and Aghadoe—of Kilmore and Ardagh—and of Dublin. It was during the prelacy of this divine that Queen Mary, writing to her husband, William III., who was then in Ireland, used these remarkable words :—" I must put you in mind of one thing, believing it now the season ; which is, that you would take acre of the church in Ireland,—everybody agrees that it is the worst in Christendom."

1694. Narcissus Marsh ; born at Hannington, in Wiltshire ;

educated at Magdalen Hall, Oxford; was provost of Trinity College; then bishop of Ferns; was translated to Cashel, further promoted to Dublin, and lastly advanced to Armagh. In 1696, he had a grant to him and his successors, of the castle, town, and lands of Seatown, Newtown, &c., previously the property of the Russell family, containing 524 acres. This prelate, though remarkable for bigotry, was learned and charitable. He founded the library which bears his name, in St. Sepulchre's parish, Dublin, and is considered to have given away in different acts of charity £20,000.

1702. William King, a native of Antrim, whose father was a Scotchman; was educated at Trinity College, and held Derry before Dublin. Archbishop King effected a purchase, in his natural capacity, of the Seatown property, mentioned in the preceding paragraph, which he was obliged to relinquish and reconvey. He was a bitter controversonist, and extremely litigious and provoking both in law and politics. He does not, however, appear to have put by a fortune.

1729. John Hoadly; born at Tottenham; translated from Leighlin and Ferns.

1742. Charles Cobbe; born at Winchester; educated at Trinity College, Oxford; had the sees of Killala and Achonry, of Dromore, of Kildare, and of Dublin.

1765. William Carmichael, son of the earl of Hyndford; promoted from the archdeaconry of Bucks to the see of Clonfert and Kilmacduagh, and thence translated to Dublin.

1766. Arthur Smyth: of this prelate no place of birth or education is mentioned: we are only informed that he was bishop of Clonfert and Kilmacduagh, of Down and Connor, of Meath, and last of all archbishop of Dublin, by which means he amassed a fortune of £50,000.

1772. John Cradock; born at Wolverham; educated at Cambridge; first held Kilmore, and then Dublin.

1778. Robert Fowler; birthplace not given, but educated at Trinity College, Cambridge; and a prebendary of Westminster before he became bishop of Killala and Kilmore, whence he was translated to Dublin.

1801. Charles Agar ; birthplace not mentioned ; his father came from Yorkshire, and he was himself educated at Christ Church College, Oxford. The Agars rivalled the Boyles and the Beresfords in their political and ecclesiastical fortunes. This bishop obtained three sees—Cloyne, Cashel, and Dublin ; and three peerages—being made Baron Somerton in 1795 ; Viscount Somerton in 1801 ; and earl of Normanton in 1806. While archbishop of Cashel—he held the post for twenty-two years—this noble prelate realized £40,000 on a single fine of the Palliser estate, by running his own life against the existing lessee. At his death, in 1809, he left behind him £400,000 in money, besides landed estates. His second son was at the same time richly provided for out of his father's ecclesiastical patronage.

In a subsequent chapter, under the head of religion, we shall have some further details to add respecting the modern history and present condition of Protestantism in Ireland. One obvious remark, therefore, will be enough to make here.—It is in the lives of these and other bishops, that we read the true history of the Protestant church of Ireland, and discern the real causes of the ill success which has hitherto attended the attempt to render that form of religious worship popular in the country.

END OF VOLUME I.

William Stevens, Printer, Bell Yard, Temple Bar.

I R E L A N D:

Historical and Statistical.

BY

GEORGE LEWIS SMYTH.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
WHITTAKER AND CO., AVE MARIA LANE.

M D C C C X L V I I .

LONDON :
WILLIAM STEVENS, PRINTER, BELL YARD,
TEMPLE BAR.

I R E L A N D,

&c. &c.

CHAPTER X.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION WITH ENGLAND—*continued.*

ADMINISTRATION OF LORD STRAFFORD.—PERFIDIOUS DENIAL OF THE GRACES.—NEW INVASIONS OF PROPERTY, AND A NEW ARISTOCRACY.—REVIVED ASCENDANCY OF THE HOUSE OF ORMONDE.—ROGER MOORE, AND THE REBELLION OF 1641.—THE WAR OF THE CONFEDERATES.—CROMWELL LORD LIEUTENANT.—FURTHER FORFEITURES.—ACTS OF SETTLEMENT AND EXPLANATION.—ORMONDE A DUKE, AND AGAIN LORD LIEUTENANT.—HIS DEATH AND CHARACTER.

IRISH affairs appear in a new but still in a troubled phase, under Charles I. and Charles II. The royal authority, overthrown because overstrained, became, when restored again, overpowering: the Reformation, irresistible in point of law, was nevertheless scarcely established in point of fact; while the liberty of the subject remained unknown. Here, as elsewhere, civil liberty was in no degree extended, though the principle of freedom of conscience was proclaimed.

Ireland was never ruled by a man of more eminent talents, a haughtier spirit, or a firmer mind, than Wentworth, earl of Strafford. In his administration the policy was consummated which, dictating the subjugation of the Anglo-Irish barons and the native chieftains, had erected upon the fall of their wild immunities and licentious pretensions, an absolute and uncontrolled dominion upon the part of the crown. As they are now seen, there was nothing doubtful or obscure in the

objects or manner of Strafford's government ;—his personal character, too, was strikingly displayed : it is shown in his actions and in his letters, with an open reality and indomitable earnestness, which often tempt us to admire him most when we should least respect him. He was a man who never hesitated in his course, or brooked concealment of his purpose. Great in personal courage, he was greater still in intellectual daring, and had cultivated his many talents with felicitous care ; but he was proud, domineering, and insulting. He poured his whole soul into his office, and was every inch the viceroy. There was no department of government which his genius did not pervade, and in which his influence was not directly felt. A spirit of exalted tyranny was developed throughout his career with a force which, like that of well tempered steel, combined the highest degrees of strength and refinement. He moulded into order the chaos of Irish misgovernment, and in a manner forced the country, by the irresistible vigour of his despotic will, into a condition of comparative prosperity. His early recall to England, where he was carried off with comparative ease, was a fortunate event for the approaching commonwealth. Had he remained in Ireland, his destruction and the prostration of the monarchy would have been a more difficult—perhaps an impossible achievement.

One of the passages quoted from his letters in the last chapter, contained a remark as to himself, which should have made some impression upon the reader. “ I spare no man amongst them,” he cried ; “ let no man spare me.” His correspondence is full of similar avowals. “ Now,” he exclaims, on one occasion, “ the king is as absolute here as any prince in the whole world can be.” In another place he explains the means by which he proposes to obtain a servile House of Commons to execute his behests. “ I shall labour to make as many captains and officers burgesses in this parliament as I possibly can, who, having immediate dependence upon the crown, may almost sway the business between the two parties as they please.” In a third he relates his success in corrupting the judges, whom he describes with emphatic satisfaction, as men who “ now ministering wholly to uphold the sove-

reignty, carried a direct aspect upon the prerogative of his majesty, and squinted not aside upon the vulgar and vain opinions of the populace."

Lord Digby shortly described Strafford's "rare abilities, of which God gave him the use and the devil the application." Severe as this censure is, it is easy to prove that it is not unjust. When Charles I. became king, Lord Falkland was chief governor. Under his auspices, a meeting was held at Dublin, in the year 1628, composed of several Protestants of rank, and the leading Roman Catholics, who then formed the great majority, not of the population only, but of the landed proprietors of the country. A set of measures, or, as they were afterwards called, Graces, for tranquillizing the affairs of Ireland, was proposed and agreed to in this assembly. They gave general satisfaction, and are admitted on all hands to have been moderate. The more important articles provided for the security of property, by forbidding retrospective inquiries into defective titles—for the due administration of justice; the discontinuance of military depredations; the extinction of monopolies in the Irish trade with other countries; a better regulation of the powers of the ecclesiastical courts, and of the Protestant clergy—who were no longer to be permitted to keep private prisons for their own causes, but to commit offenders to the king's gaols and officers; and a mitigation of the penal statutes upon the tender subject of religion, together with a general amnesty for the past. As no favour or concession, however reasonable or fair, was ever to be expected from royalty, unless when it was accompanied by a suitable offer of money, the parties undertook to raise and pay a sum of £100,000, as the price of these graces.

The friends of Charles I. say that he was himself impressed with a conviction of the equity of the appeal thus made to him by his Roman Catholic and Protestant subjects united. Certain it is, that he not only took their money, and promised to grant their prayers, but intimidated them into an agreement to add £20,000 to the first contribution; after which he broke his pledge. The fraud could not have been more deliberate or

complete. Charles sold a promise of justice to his oppressed subjects, and after receiving the stipulated price, never mitigated a penal statute, reformed a single abuse, or lightened one of the many burdens which bent them double, with poverty and pain, to the earth. The writers who are shocked at the outbreak of the insurrection in 1641, and the subsequent war of the Confederates, are generally content to pass over this piece of royal perfidy with a slight notice.

Wentworth was the minister who undertook to brave out the cheat, of which the sovereign appears to have been somewhat ashamed. He came over with his part pre-arranged, and by the duplicity with which he performed it, increased the baseness of his private compact with the king. He was determined not to grant the graces, and at the same time intent upon saving the reputation of his royal accomplice. In executing this difficult task of deep infamy, he proceeded with consummate art. The parliament, naturally suspicious of the delays which had taken place, gave vent to some observations expressive of a fear that the king might disregard his pledge. For this they were publicly rebuked by the lord deputy, who, at the very time that he held written instructions in his hands to deny the promised concessions, had the hardihood to protest that not a doubt of his master's sincerity was to be entertained. The deceit was so monstrous, that if the evidence upon which it rests were less positive than it happens to be, we should hesitate to believe it. But the parties are proved guilty by their own confessions.

The lord deputy's words to the parliament were these :— “ Surely so great a meanness cannot enter into your hearts as once to suspect his majesty's gracious regards of you, and performance with you, where you affix yourselves upon his grace.” Charles's acknowledgment of the accomplished disimulation with which his perfidy was masked in this address solemnly delivered to parliament, is strong in corresponding guilt. “ Before I answer any of your particular letters to me, I must tell you that your last public despatch has given me a great deal of contentment; especially for the keeping off the

envy of a necessary negative from me of those unreasonable graces that people expected from me."*

Having deceived the parliament and gratified the king, Strafford put an end to its sittings, and proceeded to arm his office with the tremendous jurisdiction of a high commission court, erected after the English model. Superadded to the usual purposes, his letters inform us that he proposed to attain another of no inconsiderable value, namely, the collection of a large revenue. The leading object of his government was to raise a military force, and to find money for supplying the wants of Charles in England. He kept this end constantly in view, and accomplished it with unbending severity in some instances, but in others with meritorious ability. He was almost the first chief governor who deserved the praise of protecting and extending commerce by enlarged and judicious measures. We find him guarding the coasts from pirates, introducing manufactures, and encouraging a spirit of well directed industry. Even this good, however, was not effected without the infliction of a corresponding evil: Ireland stands indebted to Lord Strafford for its linen manufacture; but if he introduced that trade he took away another at the same time, putting down the woollen manufacture of Ireland as a sacrifice to English interests. On this occasion he acted with no common spirit and liberality. In order to encourage others by his example, he embarked in the linen trade, out of his private fortune, as much as £30,000—a vast sum in those days.

Very different was the character of his administration in other respects. Future ages could only derive advantage from these industrial enterprises. Meantime the necessities of the crown were urgent, and demanded immediate relief. The lord deputy procured it by availing himself, with prompt and strict severity, of every pretext to extort money which the artifices of the crown lawyers, or the arbitrary powers of the

* This was not the only instance in which Charles called upon his creature to damn himself, while saving the royal honour. Another letter is extant, in which, referring to some grants which he had made upon the establishment of Ireland, he selfishly bids the lord deputy, notwithstanding what he had himself done, to ratify or refuse them as the service may require—*yet so, too, as I may have thanks, howsoever—that if there be any thing to be denied, you may do it, and not I.*

high commission court could place within his reach. He compelled Lord Wilmot, who had commanded the army in Ireland for many years, to make compensation for lands usurped from the crown, and improperly alienated. The possessions of the unfortunate Byrnes in Wicklow were again attacked, and produced £15,000. The city of London was sued for breaches of covenant in the plantations of Derry and Coleraine ; and their grant, being forfeited, was redeemed by a fine of £70,000. Hume, who dwells with emphasis upon the " noble cares of James I. for Ireland," who mildly describes the lawless exactions of the Star Chamber as only " somewhat blameable," pronounces the administration of Strafford " innocent and laudable." It was partiality, in all likelihood, and respect for Hume's reputation, that prompted Leland also to speak indulgently of the tyrannical excesses of this epoch ; and to content himself with observing that " individuals indeed were frequently aggrieved by an administration which disdained to be restricted within the boundary of the laws ; but that still Ireland in general experienced the good effects of the composure produced by the terror of a severe, vigilant, and active government, while the revenue was considerably increased by the augmentation of rents, as well as by the sums raised in fines on the renewal by patent of former grants of lands."

Notwithstanding the established reputation of these authorities, there are, it is to be hoped, but few writers who will now venture to palliate the enormities of Lord Strafford's administration, or to contend that any increase of the casual revenues of a country like Ireland, any violent suppression of one manufacture coupled with the forced cultivation of another in its stead, or any temporary diminution of agrarian turbulence, produced by enlisting the idle population of the country into despotic armies, could prove of real value to the community, or compensate for the violation of all its laws. Lord Strafford in Ireland, to use his own words, when arraigning the conduct of ministers from the ranks of the opposition in England, " ravished the spheres of all ancient government, and the free constitution of the realm."

There are other crimes to be recorded of Strafford, which more than justify the application of this language. He revived the suspended scheme of a new plantation of Connaught; and laboured strenuously to enforce its execution by mocking the most solemn constitutional rights, as if it gave him pleasure to produce unbounded outrage and iniquity out of the established forms of legal order and justice. Bent upon invalidating the titles of every landed proprietor in the whole province, he determined that his measures should be sanctioned by verdicts from juries, upon which he took care to place the principal inhabitants, as being better able to pay a heavy fine in the castle star chamber, "in case they should prevaricate." His manner of dealing with these victims was inexpressibly contemptuous and insulting. He warned them that it was perfectly indifferent to his majesty, whether their verdict should acknowledge or deny his title. If they were inclined to truth, and to their own interests, they were to find a title for the king; but if they preferred to do that which was simply best for the crown, without regard to their own good, he advised them not to find any title at all. This daring and indecent interference produced its full effect. The king's title was found, without scruple or reservation, for the county of Longford, and all Connaught, with the exception of Galway. The verdicts were accompanied with a petition for the equitable treatment of the actual proprietors, and a due provision for the church; and Strafford readily issued a proclamation, promising easy compositions and new and indefeasible grants. But in Galway the jury refused to find for the crown, and the lord deputy gave instant proof of the danger that was to be incurred by thwarting his proceedings.—Laying a fine in the castle chamber, of £1,000 upon the sheriff, and £4,000 upon the jurors, he further sentenced them to be imprisoned until the money was paid, and they had humbly acknowledged their offence upon their knees in open court. It is impossible to examine the full accounts preserved of these proceedings without being impressed with a feeling of indignation against the man who could execute them, and the liveliest satisfaction to find that, notwithstanding all

his genius, his daring, his pains, and his power, they were ultimately defeated. There was an appeal from the verdicts returned by the juries ; the great case of tenures was argued at length before the judges, and decided in the king's favour ; yet such was the just clamour universally raised, and such the growing resentment manifested even in England against his insolent misgovernment, that the scheme was laid aside, and at last wholly abandoned.

The instances of Wentworth's tyranny are too numerous to be related in detail. He seems to have assumed, as a general rule, that no man in Ireland was possessed of any rights whatever, distinct from or independent of the crown, or rather of the experiments which the government of the day might deem it advisable to try, in the hope of advancing those interests.* Persons accordingly were seized, and property was taken away, without hesitation or regret, whenever the slightest opportunity presented itself of promoting the good of what was called his majesty's service. For the sake of that very equivocal cause, Wentworth was always ready to attack whole bodies or individuals with equal alacrity and rigour ; and so impatient was he of restraint, delay or opposition, and so peremptory and overbearing in the prosecution of his measures, that even when his object was laudable, he injured justice by the rudeness with which he carried it into effect. This appears conspicuously in the case by which he properly compelled the earl of Cork to give up £2,000 a year, taken

* Strafford, by his contemptuous disregard of the rights of all classes, unquestionably sowed many of the seeds out of which grew the war of the Confederates. When the lords of the Pale, pursuant to a custom of long standing, desired to be summoned and consulted before parliament met, respecting the business to be transacted, he insolently announced to them that it was their duty to consider, not what might please the people, but what could please the king ; that his majesty expected confidence, and would admit of no conditions, bargains, or stipulations, and no constraint upon the free and cheerful will of the people : that he must have not a momentary and precarious supply, but a permanent provision for the army. "As a faithful servant to my master," he concluded, "I shall counsel his majesty to attempt this, first, by the ordinary means. Disappointed there, I could not, in a cause so just and necessary, deny to appear for him at the head of that army, and there persuade them fully that his majesty had reason on his side, or die in the execution of his commands so justly laid upon me."

from the church. Amongst other proceedings of indecent severity and unprincipled subterfuge, we have only room to refer to those against Sir Piers Crosby, who was condemned and executed under circumstances of peculiar atrocity ; against the Lord Chancellor Loftus ; against the earl of Kildare, whom he committed to prison for hesitating to submit his estates to the judgment of the privy council ; and worst of all, against Lord Mountmorris, upon whose trial, arising out of a personal quarrel, he shamelessly presided in person, and brought all the influence of his talents and his office to bear against the accused.

Notwithstanding the odious light in which these various transactions place the administration of Wentworth, it is to be borne in mind, that if we were to test its merits by the rules on which he professed to act, and the designs he proposed to accomplish, it was eminently effectual. He was the king's devoted servant : to strengthen his prerogative, and to render his tyranny more formidable by raising troops and money for its support, constituted the summit of his ambition. A career so grateful to the sovereign, met, as a matter of course, with the warmest approbation at court ; and was crowned, it must be admitted, with no mean success. Wentworth by his strong and able management not only disengaged the Irish revenue from debt, but saved a large surplus to serve as a provision against sudden emergencies. On the first alarm of the rising of the Scots, he remitted £30,000 to the king from the Irish exchequer, with a considerable donation from the private fortune which, like all other governors, he did not fail to acquire in Ireland.

As the king's difficulties increased, the Irish forces were mustered, reviewed, and augmented, and detachments were even drafted over into England, to strengthen the royal arm in that country. A cringing parliament, instigated, no doubt, by his dexterous and commanding spirit, voted four entire subsidies, together with a loyal address, thanking the king in terms of high-strained eulogy, for his paternal goodness in giving them so exemplary a lord lieutenant. With more sincerity but not more credit to themselves, they recalled the vote when the object of it fell into disgrace and peril in England, and

pursued him with accusations ; but these were so unskilfully framed, that he escaped uninjured from them, notwithstanding the barefaced illegality of the whole course of his government.

At length having issued the necessary orders for levying the parliamentary grants, and for raising and regulating a new army, Strafford obeyed the pressing invitation of the king, and returned to England, where his subsequent fate, fully merited and nobly borne, gave him the conspicuous place in history, which he is not likely to lose. Wandesford, master of the rolls, long a confidential colleague, and now his deputy, received the charge of raising the subsidies, while the command of the army was entrusted to another personal friend, the earl of Ormonde, who afterwards became lord lieutenant, and was for a series of troubled years the principal minister of the crown in Irish affairs.

The re-appearance in public life of one of the old Anglo-Irish nobility, suggests the propriety of a short statement explanatory of the actual condition of a body always influential in the government of the country. The peerage had undergone mighty changes : many of those families with whose names and fortunes the past history of Ireland has made us most familiar, had ceased to exist in the main line, or had withdrawn from war and politics : new men occupied their places, and were actively and successfully employed in raising up over the powerless remains of prostrate factions and extinguished immunities another superstructure, which they contrived to render equally efficient for keeping the country still a prey to the oppressions of aristocratic misgovernment. As but too many occasions will present themselves for pointing out the means by which this second system of using Ireland for no purpose but that of supporting the ambition of a few noble families ; and as the men by whom it was principally turned to account, will often have to be mentioned ; it will be enough to describe the race and their practices here in a brief account of one of the first and most fortunate of the new aristocracy—“ the Great Earl of Cork,” as he is styled by his biographer, Mr. Budgell.

Richard Boyle, born in Canterbury, October 3, 1566,

received his education at St. Bennett's College, Cambridge. "After studying the law with great application for some small time, he found that his fortune was vastly inferior to his spirit, and that he was unable to support himself like a gentleman in his own country ;" he therefore determined to follow the example set by so many other Englishmen in distressed circumstances, and became an adventurer in the land of spoliation and oppression. "When I first arrived at Dublin," he tells us, in some "true remembrances" which he left behind him, for the information of his posterity, "all my wealth then was £27 3s. in money, and two tokens, which my mother had formerly given me, viz., a diamond ring, which I ever have since and still do wear ; and a bracelet of gold, worth about £10 ; a taffety doublet, cut with and upon taffety ; a pair of velvet breeches, laced ; a new Milan fustian suit, laced, and cut upon taffety ; two cloaks, competent linen, and necessaries, with my rapier and dagger."

Provided and armed with this small stock, Mr. Richard Boyle proceeded, according to his biographer, to make himself quickly remarkable in Ireland. His first speculation was propitious. "One of the daughters and co-heiresses of Mr. Annesley, of Limerick, a young lady of great merit and fine understanding, fell in love with him ; and though her fortune was vastly superior to his pretensions, yet her indulgent father, charmed with the young gentleman's conversation, suffered his daughter to marry him." Mrs. Boyle died in her first accouchement : the mother and child were buried together, while the widower found himself master of £500 a year in land, and so much money acquired by his marriage, that he started as a public character, and by his many purchases, and conspicuous style of living, excited the envy of Sir H. Wallop and of other men in office, who wrote over to England that he was supported by the purse of some foreign enemy of the crown, and was a Roman Catholic at heart.

Boyle was preparing to leave Ireland, and vindicate himself from these charges before the queen, when the Munster wars connected with the fall of Desmond broke out, and wasted his estates in "such a manner," according to his own account,

"that he had not one penny of certain revenue left." In this ruined condition he made his way back to London, and taking his former chambers in the Temple, proposed to resume the legal profession. But the earl of Essex being appointed to the chief command in Ireland, Boyle "made a shift to get himself recommended to that nobleman," and being received with all the humanity which rendered him so justly popular, accompanied him on his expedition. Being soon after arrested by Wallop on the old charges, he was sent to London in custody, and a day appointed for his appearance before the council, when the queen presided in person. On this occasion Boyle, after giving a relation of his conduct in Ireland, throughout which he made it appear that he had been loyal in the extreme, retorted accusations upon his enemy, and concluded with "an explanation of the lord treasurer's method of passing his accounts," which riveted the attention of the queen and her advisers. He had no sooner done speaking, according to his own version of the affair, than Elizabeth broke out lustily with these words, "By God's death all these are but inventions against the young man, and all his sufferings are for being able to do us service, and those complaints are urged to fore-stall him therein ; but we find him to be a man fit to be em-ployed by ourselves, and will employ him in our service. Wallop and his adherents shall know that it shall not be in the power of any of them to wrong him—neither shall Wallop be our treasurer any longer."

Acting on her words at the moment, Elizabeth named Sir George Carew treasurer, in Wallop's stead, and commanded that Boyle should be discharged from confinement, and reim-bursed for all fees and charges, incurred through the accusa-tion. A few days after she gave him the office of clerk of the council of Munster, under Sir George Carew as lord pre-sident ; and this, to borrow his own words, "was the second rise that God gave to his fortunes."

Attending upon the lord president through the campaign against the Spaniards, he was advised by that officer to pur-chase the lands obtained by Sir Walter Raleigh out of the palatinate of Desmond. This was a far-sighted and judicious

speculation. The management of his Irish property had given Sir Walter much trouble, while the income it produced, in consequence of the prevailing troubles, was inconsiderable. Both Sir George Carew and Sir R. Cecil became Boyle's patrons and mediators in the negotiation which was now commenced, and a bargain was soon struck between him and Raleigh. The sum given for the purchase is not mentioned : it was probably small ; but the estates were extensive, and soon proved valuable. They comprised the towns of Dungarvan, Lismore, Youghal, Kinsale, and Bandon, with broad and fertile tracks spreading round each ; and this, continues the fortunate adventurer, "was the third addition and rise to my estate."

Boyle now rose steadily to the highest rank and most distinguished offices in the country. In 1606 he was sworn a privy councillor by the Lord Deputy Chichester ; in 1616 he was created Baron Youghal ; in 1620, Viscount Dungarvan and Earl of Cork ; and in 1629 he became lord justice, in conjunction with his son-in-law, Lord Loftus. In 1631, he obtained the place of lord high treasurer, from which, years before, he had been the means of ejecting Sir H. Wallop. The patent issued on this occasion made the office hereditary in his family. By his second wife, Catherine, daughter of Sir Jeffery Fenton, principal secretary of state in Ireland, he had seven sons and eight daughters. Of his sons, three became peers before his death—Richard as Viscount Dungarvan, Lewis as Lord Bandon, and Roger as Lord Broghill ; a fourth, Francis, was afterwards made earl of Shannon. The youngest, Robert Boyle, was the philosopher, who acquired, by his scientific discoveries and writings, a fame far higher and more lasting than titles can bestow.

Notwithstanding all his honours, estates and influence, there is nothing in the life of the first earl of Cork to excite interest, or call for praise. He was a man of moderate but persevering talent, and rather a favourable specimen of the new aristocracy who began to settle in Ireland at this period, and to obtain the management of public affairs and the patronage of the government, by the strength of family compacts. To the weight possessed by his own and his sons'

peerages, we must add the influence possessed by his brother's family in the church, four of whom, as already stated, were bishops within a short period. His success, which seems wonderful at first, was of a kind neither rare in his own age, nor in the present day. He was a good calculator; prudent in his expenditure, without being mean; and made his way quietly and through good management, by knowing when to bend and when to lie by, and when to push his object home. Exact at all times in his attention to the duties of his situation, and ever prepared to improve his fortune by securing possession of the advantages which public life constantly offers to a quick observer, with dexterous hands; exemplary in his observance of religious forms, and never failing in the responsibilities of office,—we see that he belonged to that thriving class of men who will do every thing that is not positively dishonest to serve themselves. Sagacious, self-interested, sly, and persevering, he made it a point to attain whatever object he had in view by private arrangement rather than by public exertions. Expressions of gratitude to God's providence appear to have been incessantly on his lips, but it is easy to perceive that he kept his head and hands always so busily employed, that if at any moment the divine blessing happened not to carry him on to his ends, he was able to make up for the deficiency by the more humble agency of human perseverance.

Richard, the second earl of Cork, attached himself closely to Charles I., and procuring two English peerages, with the titles of Baron Clifford and Earl of Burlington, took no part in Irish politics. The influence of the family was sustained during his absence from Ireland, by his brother, Lord Broghill, afterwards created earl of Orrery, who stood forward as a prominent public character, much about the juncture at which Strafford, retiring from the government, placed the army, as already mentioned, under the command of the earl of Ormonde.

Thomas, tenth earl of Ormonde, who by taking the leading part described in a former chapter, in the destruction of the Desmonds and O'Neils, accomplished the main object of the government and the ruling policy of his own family for ages,

was obliged to retire from public life while at the height of his ambition. Fifteen years before his death took place he became blind, and thenceforward lived in his castle at Carrick on Suir, where he is described wearing a long beard and his order of the Garter about his neck, “whether he sat up in his chair or lay down in his bed.” Leaving no son, he made his nephew, Sir Thomas Butler, of Kilcash, who was heir to the title, heir to the greater part of the estates also. This Sir Thomas had a son, married to Elizabeth, daughter of Sir John Pointz, of Acton. The first child of that marriage was James Butler, afterwards twelfth earl and first duke of Ormonde, and by far the most celebrated of his name and family.

The early life of this nobleman held out no prospect of the splendour by which it was ultimately surrounded. Sir Thomas Butler had disapproved of his son’s marriage, and refused to receive his wife. Owing to this circumstance, James Butler was born at Clerkenwell, in the year 1607, and placed at nurse with a carpenter’s wife at Hatfield, while his parents went to live at the house of Mr. Anthony Southwell, in Cork. In 1613, the boy paid his first visit to Ireland, and spent some time at the castle of Carrick with his great grandfather, the old blind earl, and with his grandfather, Thomas, the eleventh earl, who succeeded to the family honours in 1614. Losing his father, who was drowned off the Skerries in a voyage from Dublin to Holyhead, in 1619, he was sent by his mother to a Roman Catholic school at Finchley, near London. This proceeding gave offence to James I., who quickly enforced his own views respecting it, according to the despotic fashion of the age. Making use of his creature, Sir W. Parsons, master of the Court of Wards in Ireland, he caused the boy to be declared a ward of the crown, although the only condition out of which such a case could arise, namely, the possession of land in Ireland, did not exist. The boy’s grandfather, Thomas, the eleventh earl, was still living, and a claimant for the family inheritance. We shall presently describe how shamefully he had been deprived of that by the king, even while insisting upon the custody of, and removing the heir from Finchley, in order that he might be educated by

Abbot, archbishop of Canterbury, a prelate who paid no attention to the charge—in all probability because he was ill paid for it.

Amongst the numerous court favourites of this period was Sir Richard Preston, groom of the chamber, who contrived to obtain a patent for the earldom of Desmond. Preston's wife was the only daughter of the blind earl of Ormonde. That peer, while settling the principal family estates upon his heir at law, reserved to his daughter certain manors and a sum of £6,000. This fortune did not satisfy her husband, who, counting upon the king's partiality, set up a claim in her right to all the Ormonde property. A long and harassing lawsuit took place, in which the king, supporting his favourite at every stage, sought to overrule the judges and dictate a decision. But the case was so plain, that even in that subservient age judgment was pronounced for Ormonde. Another of those grievous abuses of law and justice, so characteristic of the reign of the Stuarts, was now committed. Finding no other way left to gratify his minion, the king took it upon himself to reverse the law proceedings, and upon his own authority ordered judgment to be entered for Preston. Nor did his tyranny stop here, for Ormonde, having made some attempt to resist the wrong thus inflicted upon him, was cast into the Fleet prison, where he was left to endure the lowest extremes of want for a term of eight years.

Such were the unpromising circumstances under which James Butler, who enjoyed by courtesy the title of Lord Thurles, made his appearance at the court of the monarch, who had cut off from him the inheritance of the possessions so long held by his family in Ireland. Adopting the army as a profession, he solicited a commission from the duke of Buckingham, and desired to be employed on foreign service. But the duke—unwilling perhaps to appear as the patron of a youth to whom the king's favour did not incline, refused his application, and Lord Thurles continuing in London, became an occasional visitor at the court. There he met his cousin, the Lady Elizabeth Preston, only child and heiress of the earl of Desmond, who held the Ormonde estates. To her he paid

suit, and after a while a fortunate and judicious accommodation of all differences was effected by the marriage of the cousins, September 8, 1629. The king was a party to the contract, issuing letters patent upon the occasion, in which he put on record his approval of the marriage, and vested the wardship of the bride's lands in the late inmate of the Fleet prison, who, dying in 1632, left his grandson fully reinstated in all the ancient honours and possessions of the family. The young lord resided for a short time in England, and then took up his residence at the castle of Carrick on Suir, which continued to be his choice seat for many years.

A close intimacy was soon formed between Wentworth and Ormonde, and it arose out of an incident which seems worth relating. The lord deputy, having reason to apprehend that his first parliament would prove tumultuous, had issued a proclamation to enforce an old order, forbidding peers or commoners to enter the house with swords. When Ormonde came up, the usher of the black rod demanded his sword, and was answered, that if he must have it, it should be in his guts : so saying, Ormonde took his seat, and proved to be the only peer that day who had dared to vindicate his rights and person from insult. Strafford, struck by his intrepidity, sent for him immediately, and demanded to know if he had not seen the lord lieutenant's proclamation ; to which Ormonde replied, that he had disobeyed that order upon the higher authority of the king's writ, which summoned him to parliament *cum gladio cinctus*. Strafford felt that a spirit so determined must either be crushed or conciliated, and finding that Ormonde held the proxies of Lords Castlehaven, Somerset, Baltimore, and Arundel, he adopted the latter alternative, upon the advice of Sir George Radcliffe, and Wandesford, master of the rolls.

Both parties seem to have turned the accommodation to their separate interests. Strafford was now busy with a plan for planting the extensive tracts called Upper and Lower Ormonde, over which the earl had palatine and other rights, and he found it difficult to proceed while the latter held back

his deeds and muniments. These, however, it was now agreed should be produced, and the settlement of the lands was expeditiously effected—Ormonde receiving one fourth part of all the crown planted, and obtaining grants of 1,000 acres each for his friends, John Pigot, Gerald Fennel, and David Routh, esquires.

The progress of Irish events for several years after this period exhibits four noblemen, intimately connected with the country, filling conspicuous offices, and rendering important services to the English monarch. Of the first and greatest of these, Lord Ormonde, we have just given a sketch, and shall have occasion to speak again. We have also made mention, and shall have to recur to the next in point of consideration, Lord Broghill, afterwards earl of Orrery. To the other two, Murrogh, earl of Inchiquin, and Ulick, marquis of Clanrickarde, we shall here devote a few words.

Amongst the peerages conferred upon the Irish chieftains by Henry VIII., as rewards and honours, to recompense them for the resignation of their ancient rights and privileges, three* were allotted to the O'Briens of Thomond. Mur-

* The date of the patent is July, 1543. In the preceding month of June, the articles were formally entered into before the king in person at Greenwich, by which the descendant of Irish kings agreed to surrender the rank and superiority so long enjoyed by his ancestors. The articles are given in Lodge's Peerage, by Archdall:—(1st.) Utterly to forsake and refuse the name O'Breene, and all claims which he might pretend to by the same; and to use such name as it should please the king to give unto him. (2nd.) That he, his heirs, and the inhabitants of such lands as the king would please to give him, should use the English habit and manners, and to their knowledge the English language; and to their power bring up their children in the same. (3rd.) He and his sons to manure and till such of the said lands as should be meet for tillage, and cause houses to be built within a convenient time for proper tenants to improve the same lands. (4th.) He and his heirs to take no cess or other exaction, nor other yearly rent or custom, nor keep any gallowglass or kerne, but such as should content the deputy. (5th.) He and his heirs to be obedient to the king's laws; to answer his writs, precepts, &c., and to their power cause all the inhabitants to do the semblable, or else bring them to justice. (6th.) He and his heirs to answer and go with the chief governor, to all hostings and journeys, whereunto they shall be warned and assigned, in such manner and with such company as the marchers of the county of Dublin. (7th.) He nor his heirs to maintain or succour any of the king's enemies, rebels, or traitors. (8th.) To hold his lands by a whole knight's fee.—*Lodge's Peerage, by Archdall, vol. ii. p. 27.*

rog, the head of the family, was made earl of Thomond during his own life, and baron of Inchiquin, with remainder to his heirs male ; while Sir Donogh O'Brien, his nephew, and Tanist, was created Baron Ibrickan, with the right of succeeding to the earldom upon the death of its first possessor. There were, accordingly, for several generations successively, two peers in the family—the earls of Thomond, descendants of Sir Donogh, being the junior branch, though possessed of the higher title ; and the barons, or, as they afterwards became, earls of Inchiquin, the issue of Murrogh, forming the senior branch.

It is a singular feature in the annals of this house, that unruly and contentious as its various members had been before their adoption of English usages and interests, they proved, after that transition had taken place, remarkable for their attachment to their new condition, as well as for the prudence with which they consulted their political advancement under it. Murrogh, the sixth baron, descending from his namesake the first earl of Thomond, and himself the first earl of Inchiquin, is the person we shall have to treat of further in this chapter. He was a minor when he succeeded to the title, and going abroad to improve himself in arms, served both in Italy and Spain ; whence returning to Ireland in 1639, he took his seat in parliament, and was constituted vice-president of Munster the year after.*

Ulick, marquis of Clanrickarde, the last of these eminent contemporaries, was descended from the original settler,

* At this period he evidently stood well at court. Lodge quotes a letter from the king to Wentworth, written during the course of this year, in which Charles I., referring to the plantations in O'Brien's district, says :—"Amengst other of our well affected subjects to our service in our kingdom of Ireland, we have understood by you the readiness which has been shown by Murrogh, baron of Inchiquin, to advance and further the plantation within our county of Clare, by submitting himself to our title there, in which respect we are pleased to extend our grace and favour to him, that he may not in course of plantation have the fourth part of his lands in that county taken from him as from other the natives there, but be suffered still to hold them upon such increase of rent as shall be set upon these quarters of land in that county, which are left to the several possessors, after our own fourth part shall be taken forth of them. Westminster, March 15th."—*Lodge's Peerage, by Archdale*, vol. ii. p. 49.

Fitzadelm de Burgh, whose title and possessions, it will be remembered, passed into the royal family after the murder of Richard, third earl of Ulster, in the year 1333. Amongst the consequences of that crime (it was instigated, according to all accounts, by the cupidity of his own relatives), was the assumption of Irish names and habits by the De Burgs of Connaught, who ceased for a long time to be considered a portion of the English interest. They were won back to their primitive state by Henry VIII., who made Ulick, of Clanrickarde, the first earl of that title. He had a son distinguished as Ulick Negan, or the beheader, because he collected together and made a mount of the heads of men slain in battle, which he covered over with earth ; but the second earl appears to have been Richard, surnamed the Sasanach, or Englishman, who served the office of lord lieutenant. Richard's son and grandson took active parts in the trying events of their age, and were frequently selected by the crown for honours and grants of lands, in return for their military achievements against the Irish and Anglo-Irish. More eminent than either of these was Ulick, the fifth earl, and first marquis of Clanrickarde, and the friend of James, duke of Ormonde.

The tyranny of the Stuarts in England produced the commonwealth, and the protectorate of Oliver Cromwell ; while in Ireland it excited the rebellion of 1641 and the eleven years' war of the Confederates. History is falsified when a contrary statement is hazarded, and a different cause is assigned for the convulsions which took place in the two countries ; for it was not religion but oppression which drove the English, the Scotch, and the Irish to rise in arms against the family, so wrongful and yet so weak, by which they were then misgoverned. The current of events in the two islands, steadily and dispassionately surveyed, is plainly traceable to its source. We see in both the same provocation given, and a corresponding action resulting from it : we find no writer so unreasonable as to contend that the people were inspired to fight for their liberty by the genius of Protestantism, or of Presbyterianism, in the one

island—how monstrous, then, to pretend that they were made rebels by Roman Catholicism in the other ! When the notorious misrule of Ireland is undeniable, why should we refuse to believe that, amongst the leaders of the revolt, there were men animated by the spirit we reverence in a Hampden, a Sydney, and a Russell ? That bitter religious animosities should have been displayed during the heat of the encounter, will surprise no calm observer of the relative positions and predominant feelings of the belligerents at the period of the outbreak. For what was the state of religion ? The bulk of the population adhering to the faith of their ancestors—a faith which it was highly penal to cultivate—groaned under accumulated wrongs, and were a prey to all the exasperation which intense sufferings, working upon the lowest state of ignorance and poverty, could engender. On the other side, by far the greater number of the Protestant prelates, according to the admission of Protestant writers, were “worldly and time-serving men”—“the Protestant clergy were generally very inefficient, uneducated, and demoralized, and inferior to the Roman Catholic priesthood in the zealous pursuit of their objects, and had turned a sacred vocation into a profession of aggrandizement.” The Protestant laity “generally lived in a state of ignorance of their own doctrines, or of utter indifference to them, and of bigoted intolerance of those of others.” They assumed “an offensive superiority over the Papists, grounded on the mere circumstance of their being the dominant party, but to which they were by no means entitled by any superior morality of conduct.”* So far we see the train laid, and religion supplying the fire by which the explosion was kindled.

Let us next inquire the character of the governors under whose administration this rebellion took place. Strafford, abandoned by the king, for whom he had sacrificed himself, had lost his head on the scaffold ; his friend and successor, Wandesford, had died suddenly ; and in 1640 the adminis-

* “Life of Bishop Bedell,” by H. J. Mason, LL.D., M.R.I.A., Librarian to the King’s Inns, and Secretary to the Irish Society. 8vo. London : Seeley and Burnside. 1843.

tration of Irish affairs was in the hands of two lords justices, Sir W. Parsons and Sir J. Borlase, whom Leland writes of in these terms :—" They who looked more closely into their characters and principles, conceived, and not without reason, that they by no means wished to crush the rebellion in its beginnings, but were secretly desirous that the madness of the Irish might take its free course, so as to gratify their hopes of gain by new and extensive forfeitures. Nor did the deeper politicians scruple to insinuate that these cold and reserved governors acted by directions from the reigning faction in England."

And now, who were the leaders of the revolt ?—who were the men, who seeing the English determined to pull down the king's government as an intolerable tyranny, and beholding the Scotch triumphant in the blows they struck for the protection of their own form of religion—who were the Irishmen who at this inspiriting moment made a fresh appeal to arms for the recovery of their personal rights, and the civil and religious liberties of their fellow countrymen ? They were men—let us call them whatever we may, victims, rebels, or heroes—who were made what they were by oppression.

The first was Roger Moore, a descendant of the princely and once powerful sept, proprietors of the territory of Leix. The O'Moore, who died in the Tower, a victim to the treacherous policy of the government under Edward VI., and whose possessions, confiscated by Philip and Mary, had formed the Queen's County, was his ancestor. The family had thus become impoverished, and nearly extinct. But one of them, Roger, for a short time head of the rebellion of 1641, survived. He had been educated in Spain, where respect for his ancient lineage, and compassion for the severities by which their ruin had been effected, facilitated his introduction to the best society. His natural talents, a lively and generous disposition, and a courage worthy of the reputation of his country for valour, had thus been improved and refined. Hatred of England, and a swelling desire for the recovery of his rights, descending to him as a natural inheritance, were quickened by the pressure of pecuniary distress. In Spain he met with a

fellow-sufferer, who reciprocated all his regrets for the past, and his hopes of the future. This was the son of Hugh, second earl of Tyrone, who commanded a regiment, and was particularly favoured at the Spanish court. Two young men of spirit and ability, whose misfortunes, derived from a common origin, had led to the same effects, could hardly come together without soon agreeing upon some measures for the improvement of their circumstances. The obvious remedy was a descent upon Ireland, aided by arms and money from France, Spain, and Rome. The plan met with the encouragement expected for it, from the ministers of these courts; but it had scarcely been entered upon when assassination carried off Tyrone. At the time that loss was sustained Moore was in Ireland; but though deprived of his companion, Roger determined to proceed with the enterprise. He had applied for co-operation to Owen O'Neil, a near relative of his deceased friend, and a colonel in the service of the Low Countries. From that officer's influence at the court of France many advantages were anticipated, and they were ultimately obtained. We shall presently have to enlarge upon his exploits as a leader of the cause.

A conspiracy so long in preparation, and so extensive in its ramifications, could not be kept a profound secret: rumours of the intended movement spread amongst the numerous exiles whom the tumults of former days, forfeitures, and religious disabilities had driven upon the Continent. The love of country, the hope of regaining property, and the passion of revenge, led these men once again in numbers to the Irish coast. Vane, the English secretary of state, wrote to the lords justices that a host of Irish ecclesiastics had passed from Spain and other parts to England and Ireland, amongst whom were some good old soldiers, pretending to raise recruits for the king of Spain, but whose real purpose, according to the whispered opinions of the friars in that kingdom, was to levy another rebellion.

The moment Roger Moore avowed his objects, he kindled the natural enthusiasm of his countrymen into a flame. Appealing emphatically to their feelings, he reminded them of their past and present sufferings, and invited them to inflict

punishment for the one, and take efficient security against the continuance of the other. He promised that their country should flourish independently of England ; that all the old families should again be aggrandized ; and that fortune and honour should be the rewards of the individuals who should take part with him in the glorious undertaking. Promptly and warmly was this bold invitation re-echoed throughout the land, where every hand was held up, and every heart beat high to carry it forward. It is generally admitted that Roger Moore fully deserved the support of his fellow countrymen, and was excellently well qualified in many respects to sustain with effect the part which he had undertaken to perform. He was perfectly sincere ; moreover, he was cautious and deliberate in his actions, penetrating and judicious in his views ; graceful in person, and engaging in his manners and address. He was not only unquestionably brave, but had a high and gallant bearing, and was gifted with a fervid imagination, a humane and honourable temper, and a warm and most winning eloquence. Such a man agitating a cause so dear to the multitude, roused their ardour to the highest pitch, and soon became a universal favourite. His praises were on every tongue, his gallantry the burden of every song ; while his name was the battle cry—which fair hands inscribed on the military standards of his followers—“ For God, our Lady, and Roger Moore.”

After he had spent some months on a personal canvass of the principal sufferers from Strafford's misrule, the insurrection was decided upon. His first associates were Maguire, Lord Enniskillen, more commonly called Lord Maguire, and Macmahon, who were the representatives of the old chieftains of Fermanagh ; Sir Phelim O'Neil, who set up a claim to the earldom of Tyrone ; Hugh, heir of the plundered Byrnes of Wicklow ; Richard Plunket, the O'Reillys of Cavan, Sir Con Magennis, Sir James Dillon, and many others. These gentlemen began the rebellion of 1641 ; but before a year had elapsed they were joined by another party, consisting of Anglo-Irish peers, whose families were ancient, and whose properties were extensive. Amongst the latter were the Lords Mount-

garret, Mountnorris, Roche, Fingal, Gormanstown, Netterville, Castlehaven, Taaffe, and others.

Thus the rebellion of 1641 ran into the war of the Confederates, and both were but natural consequences of the injustice and impolicy of the local government. For at the rumour of an insurrection, Lords Gormanstown, Netterville, and a powerful party of peers, came forward and desired to be armed in defence of the country. Their offer, coldly received, was partially accepted in some instances, while in others it was positively declined. The peers and principal landowners were thus forced, ere long, where the great strength of the movement lay—into the ranks of the people.

Moore's plans having been maturely weighed, it was agreed that operations were to commence with the capture of the castle of Dublin, and a simultaneous rising throughout the country, by which all forts and strong places were to be suddenly seized together. Moore himself volunteered to lead the first attack, from which Maguire and O'Neil sought to absent themselves. It was eventually arranged that Maguire only should join him on that occasion, and that Sir Phelim should at the same time surprise Londonderry. But the intended blow was never struck. Owen Conolly, a drunken servant, who had been sent on some messages to Maguire, suspected treason and betrayed the plot. The peer and Macmahon were taken prisoners and sent to London, where they were tried for offences committed out of the jurisdiction of the court before which they were arraigned, and notwithstanding the indisputable illegality of the proceeding, were hung, drawn, and quartered at Tyburn. Moore and O'Neil were more fortunate: they effected their escape, and soon raised the country.

There is no portion of Irish history upon which more falsehood has been uttered than upon the affairs of the period we have now to glance at; and it is melancholy to observe that we can trace almost every misrepresentation by which they have been blackened to a religious cause. When the civil rights of the people and the enjoyment of property and office were made to depend on the profession of a particular faith, politics and religion went hand in hand, both in loyalty

and rebellion—while bigotry added her bitterness to the rancour of party prejudice. All the cotemporary writers were deeply imbued with the perverted feelings which these two dark passions necessarily engender, and there are but few authors at the present day who are not more or less infected by their influence; yet an impartial observer cannot fail to perceive, that if ever there was a justifiable rebellion, it took place in Ireland during the year 1641, and that religion was not its mainspring. The misgovernment of that country moreover had been much more galling and extensive than any experienced in England or in Scotland. In neither of these had the rights of persons and property been so shamelessly violated as they had been in Ireland; and yet while the language of respect always, and of admiration often, is fairly applied to the successful leaders of the revolt against monarchy in the sister country, abusive terms of contemptuous censure are too often heaped upon the men in Ireland, who at the same time strove to free themselves from oppression in one of its severest forms. No one dares to ascribe the parliamentary war of the commonwealth exclusively either to the Protestant or Presbyterian religion; but there are numerous revilers, who, lightly touching or wholly suppressing the civil and political wrongs out of which the war of the Confederates arose in Ireland, do not hesitate to ascribe all the enormities committed during the eleven years it lasted solely to the Roman Catholic religion. This is not the place to speculate upon the extent to which England and Scotland might have tamely submitted to the tyranny of the Stuarts, but for the puritanical spirit by which their age was animated. It may, however, be fairly observed, that the victory would not have been so soon or so effectively gained, had the men who fought for it been warmed by a less ardent fire than is kindled by religious enthusiasm; but freely as this is to be admitted, it is also plain that the soldier citizens of the commonwealth had other motives to resist the government; and it would be as unfair to put these out of view when estimating the justificatory circumstances connected with their proceedings, as it is manifestly a perversion of the truth to assign to the corresponding Irish struggle no other

grounds than those furnished by the religious view of the question.

A false colour is also given to the transactions of this period, by representing that the conduct of the whole Roman Catholic population, as well as of their officers and soldiers, was uniformly cruel and savage; and by not adding that the offences, however monstrous, committed by them, were equalled if not exceeded by the English and the Scotch, by the Protestants and the Puritans. The facts display a revolting aggregate of indefensible atrocities perpetrated on both sides without shame or remorse; but the grateful instances in which Protestant authors record acts of forbearance and protection upon the part of the Roman Catholics are so numerous and touching,* that no unbiassed reader can read them, and resist the belief that the crimes of the period were redeemed by the display of not a few glowing virtues amongst the native population.

Moore and O'Neil were soon at the head of armed bodies in the North: the former counted 2,500 men—while posted between Dundalk and Atherdee; the latter, it is said, gathered as many as 30,000. But these were unarmed and undisci-

* Amongst these, particular notice is due to the preservation of Bishop Bedell from violence, when the whole county of Cavan was in the hands of the insurgents. He was known to be a strict Protestant, but being a kindly and truly pious man, he was called by the common people "the good Protestant." Such was their sense of the debt they owed to the prelate who had not been an extortioner or a persecutor, that his residence was respected, and, by common consent, allowed to be a sanctuary to the English and Protestants of the district. He died while the disturbances were still raging, and the insurgent force attended his funeral, and paid military honours to his grave. This is not a solitary anecdote. In 1641, Edmund Burke had undertaken to convey Dr. Maxwell, the Protestant bishop of Kilmore, together with several clergymen of the establishment and other settlers, from the village of Shrude, in Mayo, to Galway. But the party had barely crossed the bridge of Shrude, when, according to the depositions given in Lodge, a shot was fired from behind the bushes, and Edmund Burke drew his sword, and the examinant riding back to the bridge with the bishop's child, way was made for him by Walter Burke. The bishop was wounded, and 30 persons according to one, or 65 according to another account, were slain. The Roman Catholic gentry of the neighbourhood no sooner heard of this outrage than they hastened to rescue and relieve the sufferers. At their head came Bryan Kilkenny, guardian of the neighbouring abbey of Ross, an aged man, who brought the bishop's wife and children, and many others, to his monastery, where they were hospitably entertained to the best of his ability, for several nights.

plined—a tumultuary mob, full of vain confidence in their numbers, but as a body wholly unimpressed with that stern determination to die rather than to submit, which alone could have given victory to such a cause. Moore's manifesto was a moderate and skilful production. He complained of oppression, but acknowledged that there had been indulgence shown in matters of religion ; he set forth the fears which they all had reason to entertain of the Scotch “ landing with sword and Bible,” for the extinction of the Roman Catholic religion ; he insisted that designs were practised against the Papist and Protestant bishops of the kingdom ; and he proposed that the king should secure them both.* Still better than his own compositions and proceedings was the effect produced in his favour by the conduct of the lords justices.

These men, it is to be remembered, were devoted to the party of the commonwealth in England. They were, therefore, well disposed to thwart the measures of the Irish lords and gentlemen, who, if their particular grievances had been accommodated, would have immediately ranged themselves on the side of the government. After many importunities from this party, a parliament was summoned ; but the justices no sooner found that there were not a few members resolved to suppress the rebellion, and also to inquire into and correct the misgovernment out of which the rebellion had sprung, than they called for votes, authorizing them to levy forces and raise money for the defence of the country ; and having obtained these in two days, they put an end to the session.

The principal peers and landlords, feeling that it would be vain to seek in Ireland for the aid which the circumstances of the country demanded, sent a memorial to the king, remonstrating against the misconduct of the lords justices, urging the appointment of the earl of Ormonde as lord lieutenant,

* This was not the only document put forward to justify the act of appearing in arms against the government. Sir Phelim O'Neil exhibited a commission to levy troops, which purported to bear the royal signature and the great seal. The authenticity of this instrument is disputed to this day. Whether forged or genuine, it proved highly serviceable to the cause of the insurgents, by leading to a general belief that the war had been undertaken with the king's knowledge and approbation.

and the employment of military rigour to quell violence, together with legislative remedies to quiet just discontents. But the two lords, Dillon and Taaffe, who were the bearers of this document, were seized at Ware, and after having been deprived of their papers, were kept in prison for some months. While the envoys of the moderate party were thus intercepted, the emissaries of Parsons and Borlase made their way to London, and denouncing the representations of the peers as malignant, self-interested, and unworthy of attention, protested that no force levied in Ireland, or commanded by Irishmen, was to be trusted; that an English army alone could keep the country in order; and that if sent over, as they desired it might be, they would undertake to cover, by confiscations, the charges and expenses it would occasion. This counsel—for the correctness of which Carte is our authority—prevailed; and the lords of the Pale, as they were called, soon took their places in the ranks of Roger Moore.

A meeting was held at the Hill of Crofty, which was attended by Lords Fingal, Gormanstown, Slane, Dunsany, Netterville, Louth, and Trimbleston, with 1,000 of the gentry of the county of Meath. Roger Moore, Colonel Macmahon, brother to the chieftain executed in London, and other leaders of the insurgents attended on this occasion. The lords rode forward to meet them, and asked why they had entered the Pale in arms? Moore replied that they were armed in defence of the king's prerogative, which had been invaded, and to vindicate liberty of conscience. Are these, inquired the lords, your genuine designs?—have you no private ends of your own? Moore protested that they had none; upon which the lords declared that theirs were common interests, and that they would join to maintain them. Thus began the war of the Confederates—produced, it is clear, by an insulting denial of justice to the principal men in the country.

Moore's cause was strengthened, but his personal influence was diminished, by this accession of numbers, rank, and property to his ranks. In the new distribution of commands which the presence of so many eminent men rendered necessary, he ceased to be recognised as the prime mover of the

revolt. Perceiving his position no longer as high as his enthusiasm coveted; mortified by the clashing interests and personal jealousies which abounded in so mixed a party; shocked by the horrors which the cruelties on both sides seemed to accumulate on his head; and chagrined by the slow progress of the cause; his health and spirits drooped, and he retired in discontent to Flanders. When the supreme council was afterwards established at Kilkenny, he returned; but men of inferior minds filled all the principal offices; his first ardour never revived; he fell ill, and soon after died of disappointment and mortification. His qualities and conduct have been commended by all impartial writers. He brought to the struggle an enthusiasm and valour chivalrous and humane in the highest degree, and so little hardness of character, as to be deficient in fortitude and perseverance. His was that peculiarly Irish temperament, equally sanguine and sensitive; prompt to venture upon great undertakings without making due provision for inevitable consequences; and prone to sudden despair, under the pressure of those reverses which so often embarrass the progress of a cause, without being decisive obstacles to its ultimate success.

There have been not a few angry disputes raised for the sake of determining which of the two parties who were now belligerents, set the example of ferocity, by which this cruel struggle was so deeply stained. Some blame the Irish, and some the English; some Sir Phelim O'Neil, and some Sir Charles Coote, as the first monsters who dealt in cold-blooded massacre and lawless executions. But the point is not worth discussion; first, because there is room to doubt whether he who begins a wrong, or he who by retaliating perpetuates it, is the greater offender against humanity; and secondly, because in the long run the guilt on both sides became extreme and indefensible. The savage character of the war may be said to have been decided by the proclamation of the lords justices when Ormonde took the field. The orders then given were "to kill and destroy the rebels, their adherents, and relievers; and to burn, waste, consume, and demolish all the places, towns, and houses where they had been relieved and

harboured ; with all the corn and hay there ; and also to kill and destroy all the men there inhabiting, capable of bearing arms." When we know that these appalling directions were acted upon, it is idle to talk of the slaughter committed by O'Neil, or of assassinations committed by the *péasantry*. The English government, as the body claiming superior strength and civilization, should have shown the higher example. When public massacre was sanctioned by that authority, private murders became the expedient by which an outcast population, made desperate by the fear of extermination, would hope to deter their tyrants from carrying their decrees into full effect, and seek to obtain a guilty satisfaction for the portion which had been put into execution.

Painful as it is to dwell upon such scenes, it is necessary to vindicate our description of them by particularizing a few, which, for obvious reasons, have been selected from Protestant writers. When O'Neil was repulsed from the castle of Augher, he ordered all the British Protestants in the three adjacent parishes to be put to the sword. After his defeat at Lisburn his followers murdered Lord Caulfield. They exulted in goading gangs of prisoners into some large house, and setting it on fire, indifferent to the cries and the agonies of their victims. One hundred and ninety British are said to have been thrown headlong, on one occasion, from the bridge of Portadown. On the other side, Dr. Borlase, brother of the lord justice, and the apologist of his administration, quotes with evident satisfaction, from a letter of Sir W. Cole, this brutal item :—" Starved and famished, of the vulgar sort, whose goods were seized by my regiment, 7,000." The Scotch garrison at Carrickfergus, animated by a deadly hatred of the Irish, and their religion, issued forth, according to Leland, under the cover of night, and marching into an adjoining district, called Island Magee, and inhabited by a number of poor and unoffending Irish, who had never taken any part in the prevailing disturbances—shed the blood of 30 families. The same diligent author, describing the recapture of the Wicklow forts by Sir C. Coote, says :—" This man was employed by the chief governors to drive some of the insurgents.

of Leinster from the castle of Wicklow, which they had invested. He executed his mission, repelled the Irish to their mountains, and in revenge of their depredations, committed such unprovoked, such ruthless and indiscriminate carnage in the town, as rivalled the utmost extravagance of the northerns. This wanton cruelty, instead of terrifying, served to exasperate the rebels, and to provoke them to severe retaliation."

An endless variety of similar passages occur in the different authors who have related or discussed the affairs of this unhappy era. Their computations of the number of persons killed during it, are to the full as exaggerated as any of the conflicting statements respecting the excesses themselves by which we are confused. Upon this subject, the authority of Sir W. Petty, a writer by no means partial to the Irish, seems to be the safest to rely upon. He says, that in 11 years, from 1641 to 1652, above 500,000 of the Irish perished by the sword, plague, famine, and hardship, and that in the same space of time 112,000 English were destroyed in the same manner: according to this account, therefore, five times as many Irish as English perished in the rebellion of 1641.

One point at least seems to be generally admitted. When the lords of the Pale entered into the fight, the rules of honourable war were restored to a great extent. Battles were fairly fought afield; and on their side, at least, towns were no longer plundered, and butcheries ceased. Their first leader was Richard Butler, third Viscount Mountgarret, a cadet of the house of Ormonde, who had married the earl of Tyrone's daughter. He sat in the parliaments of 1613, 1615, and 1634. Upon surrendering to James I. the special livery of his estates, he obtained a confirmation* of them in consideration of his

* The date was January, 1619, and the instrument provided for the creation of the several manors of Bealaragged (Ballyragget), alias Donaghmore, Cowlechill, Kenlis, Ballin, otherwise Balleyen, Urlingford, and Mountgarret, with power to hold courts; to impark 2,000 acres, with free warren, and chace; liberty of tanning leather; and to hold a Thursday market and two fairs on the feasts of St. Barnabas and Bartholomew, and the day after each at Ballyragget. Also, 9 January, 1621, he had a further confirmation thereof by two patents; and by virtue of the commission of grace, K. Charles I., for the fine of £270, February 9, 1638, released to him all his lands in the counties of Kilkenny and Wexford, confirming the aforesaid privileges.—*Lodge's Peerage, by Archdall*, vol. iv. p. 52.

faithful and acceptable services. At the outbreak of the rebellion he was associated, on account of his years and experience, as joint commissioner with Lord Ormonde for the county of Kilkenny, and was so little disposed to take the course which he afterwards adopted, that he offered to raise and arm 1,000 men at his own expense, and march at their head against the insurgents. When at last the mistrustful policy of the government drove him into their ranks, he vindicated himself to Lord Ormonde, desiring him to acquaint the lords justices with his remonstrance, in order that, by a fair redress of the grievances which had brought the country into a state of general commotion, they might prevent the fearful calamities otherwise sure to occur. "It is not my case alone," he emphatically observes, "but the case of the whole kingdom; and it hath been a principal observation of the best historians, that a whole nation, how contemptible soever, should not be so incensed by any prince or state, how powerful soever, as to be driven to take desperate courses."

Following up this letter with a public proclamation, justificatory of the step he had taken, and commanding his followers to respect life and property, he advanced upon Kilkenny with a long train of connections and gentlemen, and made himself master of the towns of Callan, Gowran, Waterford, Carrick on Suir, Dungarvan, Clonmel, and Fethard. This was the work of a week; and so orderly was the manner in which it was performed, that rebellion, in his hands, seemed to be deprived of its usual horrors. Only one act of impropriety is here charged against the party: nine Englishmen were locked up at Fethard, where their property also was seized, but restored the next day by Lord Dunboyne, who set the prisoners at liberty. Advancing into the county of Cork, Mountgarret besieged the castle of Knockordane, which capitulated quickly. The whole of Munster now seemed destined to fall into the hands of the Confederates, when, fortunately for the English interest, Roche, Lord Fermoy, a nobleman of considerable possessions, became jealous of Mountgarret's power, and insisted upon being recognised as commander-in-chief in his own county. The dissensions thus created put a stop to active

operations, and gave the lord president, Sir W. St. Leger, time to concert measures with the Boyles and others, and to put the province into a state of defence.

While the military energies of the Confederates received this check in the South, their allies in the North had proved unequal to the task of retaining their first advantages. Charlemont Castle, Dungannon Fort, Mountjoy Castle, Tanderagee, Newry, and Lurgan, had been successfully occupied; but O'Neil had been compelled to retreat from Drogheda, after a long siege, in which he gave no proof of talent as an officer, and his forces displayed no vigour worthy of their numbers, or the service on which they were engaged. Ormonde by degrees came more effectively into the field. Though not the last, he was still by far the greatest of the old settlers; and by his eminent position and personal character, drew around him an influence which, in a manner, constituted him one of the governing powers of the period in which he flourished. Thus, again, we find the history of the whole country centering in the biography of an Anglo-Irish peer.

Ormonde at first found it difficult to act as he desired. He was at variance with the lords justices, who sought to improve the interests of the English parliament, while his only object was the king's service. His commission as commander-in-chief, held directly from the king, rendered him independent of their authority when in the field, but he could only undertake expeditions pursuant to their instructions, and could derive from them alone the men and the money necessary to prosecute them with effect. The gallant army of 8,000 men and 1,000 horse, which Strafford marched upon Carrickfergus before he left Ireland, had ceased to exist. When the war began, the government force was under 1,000 horse and 3,000 foot. There were arms, however, in the castle of Dublin for 10,000 men. But there was no money to pay that number, if levied, nor were the lords justices willing that the levy should be attempted. Ormonde's abilities as a general were not considerable, but it would be unfair to test them by the dilatory and unsatisfactory achievements of this period. He was not a free agent. He scattered two disorderly ma-

rauding armies at Naas and Kilsalagan Castle, and then proceeded to execute, "upon moderate terms," the proclamation of the lords justices against the villages which were known to have been in concert with the insurgents. It was while he was engaged on this ignoble service that O'Neil raised the siege of Drogheda. Ormonde proposed to pursue the retreating foe, but the lords justices forbade him to cross the Boyne. He returned therefore to Dublin ; and the insurgents, also retracing their steps, resumed their positions at Drogheda, Atherdee, and Dundalk.

While the lords justices were indulging their favourite policy of sending out strong detachments under Ormonde, Coote, and other officers, to waste and burn the lands and tenements of the persons who were absent from their homes in arms, the Confederates advanced from Kilkenny under Lord Mountgarret. They mustered 8,000 infantry, and several troops of horse. Ormonde came in contact with this force at Kilrush, near Athy. According to Carte, his army, consisting of the volunteers under Lord Brabazon, together with the divisions of Sir C. Coote, Sir T. Lucas, Sir H. Willoughby, and Sir C. Grenville, did not exceed 3,000 men. But notwithstanding this remarkable disparity of strength, he won an easy victory. The troops of the Confederates are described as giving way without a blow, and rushing from the ground in such tumultuous confusion, that 700 of them were slain, while Ormonde only lost 20 men. In the published account of the rout sent by the lords justices to the English parliament. the earl is introduced as "ordering the battle, and manner of fight in all parts of it, and doing it with very great judgment, laying hold quickly and seasonably on all opportunities of advantage that could be gained, and sparing not resolutely to expose his own person to hazard, equally with any other commander."

At Kilrush, Mountgarret was taught how feeble undisciplined numbers are sure to prove when opposed to regular troops. Roger Moore, who led a body on the occasion, was deeply mortified at the result, and read in it the doom of his party. The affair illustrates, by a strong example, one main cause of that remarkable want of success by which Irish

insurrections and revolts, however cruelly provoked or hopefully begun, have invariably been attended. The people of a country may rise great in numbers, individually brave, and powerfully excited ; but if they are unaccustomed to the use of arms and military exercises, they cannot possibly defeat a trained army, efficiently equipped, and commanded by officers who understand the art of war.

It was at this moment that a new power made its appearance in the midst of the Confederates, and inspired their drooping ranks with new hope and reanimated courage. In the month of May, 1642, the dignitaries of the Roman Catholic church held a synod at Kilkenny, in which, after declaring the war just and lawful,* they called upon the clergy, nobility, cities, and principal towns, to choose provincial councils ; and one supreme council, in order to give authority and

* The first of the acts ordained and concluded by this congregation may be taken as the manifesto of the Irish people, civil and religious : it was thus expressed :—“ Whereas the war which now in Ireland the Catholics do maintain against sectaries, and chiefly against Puritans ; for the defence of religion, for the maintenance of the prerogative and royal rights of our gracious King Charles ; for our gracious queen, so unworthily abused by the Puritans ; for the honour, safety, and welfare of their royal issue ; for to avert and refrain the injuries done unto them for the conversion of the just, and lawful safeguard, liberties and rights of Ireland ; and lastly, for the defence of their own lives, fortunes, lands, and possessions ; whereas this war is by the Catholics undertaken for the aforesaid causes against unlawful usurpers, oppressors, and their enemies, chiefly Puritans, and that hereof we are informed, as well by divers and true remonstrances of divers provinces, counties, and noblemen, as also by the unanimous consent and agreement of almost the whole kingdom in this war and union. We therefore declare that war, openly Catholic, to be lawful and just ; in which war, if some of the Catholics be found to proceed out of some particular and unjust title, covetousness, cruelty, revenge, or hatred, or any such unlawful private intentions, we declare them therein grievously to sin, and therefore worthy to be punished and refrained with ecclesiastical censures, if, advised thereof, they do not amend,” &c. The council of Kilkenny echoed the declaration of the bishops in all its principal points, adopting the common law of England, so far as it was not repugnant to their religion, or to the liberties of Ireland ; upholding the authority of Charles, but not that of his Irish government ; repudiating all distinctions between new and old Irish, and between British and Irish Catholics ; agreeing to maintain the rights of the Roman Catholic Church—but rejecting a clause in which it was proposed that every confederate should bind himself by an oath not to consent to any peace until the church of Rome was restored to the plenitude of its former powers. Instead of this extreme condition, they had the good sense to stipulate simply for freedom of worship.

effect to the proceedings already commenced, and a form of government to their party in the country. This invitation having been promptly answered, the council sat, and declared Lord Mountgarret president.* In the month of May, Colonel Owen O'Neil, a general experienced in courts and skilled in war, reached the shores of Donegal with arms, ammunition, and 100 officers; two ships soon after landed a quantity of military stores at Wexford; a ship of war and two frigates brought over Colonel Thomas Preston, a train of artillery, a company of engineers, and 500 officers. Ere long, Cardinal Richelieu sent over 12 other vessels, with further stores and soldiers; and at last it seemed as if the struggling rebellion was destined to become a revolution. The supreme council selected the respective commands of the generals in chief: Owen O'Neil was appointed to Ulster; Preston to Leinster; Garret Barry to Munster; and John Burke to Connaught. The last province was intended for Lord Clanrickarde, but he refused to join the party. His place was, ere long, well supplied by the earl of Castlehaven.†

Colonel O'Neil began his career with the spirit of an accomplished soldier. Upon placing himself at the head of the Ulster gentry in arms, he declared his horror of the robberies and

* Cox gives the names of the supreme council as follows:—

Leinster: Archbishop of Dublin, Viscount Gormanstown, Viscount Mountgarret, Nicholas Plunket, Richard Beling, James Cusack.

Connaught: Archbishop of Tuam, Viscount Mayo, bishop of Clonfert, Sir Lucas Dillon, Patrick Darcy, Jeofry Brown.

Munster: Viscount Roch, Sir Daniel O'Brien, Edmond Fitzmorris, Doctor Fennell, Robert Sambart, Geo. Comyn.

Ulster: Archbishop of Armagh, bishop of Down, Philip O'Reiley, Col. Macmahon, Ever Magennes, Torloch O'Neal.

† The case of this nobleman furnishes another striking example of the manner in which royalists were made rebels by the ill treatment of the lords justices. Castlehaven was an English as well as an Irish peer. At the outbreak of the insurrection he tendered his services to the government—which were refused. He then applied for a passport to England, which was also refused. He next received an order to leave Dublin, which he obeyed by retiring to his estates in the county of Kilkenny. There the Anglo-Irish driven from their settlements found an asylum, and Ormonde and his officers hospitable entertainment after the battle of Kilrush. The lords in arms soon after applied to him to act as a mediator in their behalf with the government, and he transmitted their remonstrances to the lords justices, who returned him by way of answer a sharp rebuke upon the impropriety of corresponding with rebels. This led him to renew his application for leave to return to England, which was again

murders with which the war had been conducted in the North, and burned the dwellings of a band of villains at Kenard, who had made themselves infamous by their outrages. As a minute description of the varying fortunes of the war does not fall within the scope of these outlines, we can only relate, in a general way, that O'Neil was feebly opposed by Colonel Munroe, an able officer, commanding a parliamentary force of 10,000 Scotchmen at Carrickfergus, but bent upon aiding the policy of the lords justices, and therefore less disposed to put down the insurrection than to defeat any movement by which the king's cause could be benefited.

Ormonde fell ill in 1643, and feeling his life in danger, be-thought him of seeking compensation from the king for the sufferings and losses he had borne in the royal cause. Carte prints his letter written upon this occasion. In it he describes his pecuniary embarrassments, and goes so far as to put in a direct claim for a share of the forfeitures which this rebellion, like all others, was expected to produce. This undignified act reminds us of the old characteristics of a family always attentive to its worldly interests, and sure to provide for an extension of its property by making out a good case at court. The communication becomes peculiarly significant when the juncture at which it was produced is considered. The lords justices were now seeking to quiet the clamours of their officers for money, and to console them under the severe privations they were enduring, by sending round a book and obtaining subscriptions to an agreement, by which it was stipulated that, in lieu of pay and arrears, the army should take portions of the rebels' lands when declared to be subdued. The marquis condescended to enter into competition with these

denied. Legal proceedings were next brought against him: they began with a charge of horse-stealing against one of his servants, and rose into an impeachment of high treason against himself. As soon as he found himself accused, he hastened to vindicate his innocence in Dublin, and was thrown into prison. His brother, Colonel Touchett, who was in England, demanded of the king that he should be tried by his peers; the king referred the demand to the parliament, and the parliament refused to act without the king's directions. After suffering an imprisonment of twenty weeks, he effected his escape, and fled to Kilkenny, where he was received with open arms by the Confederates.

buccaneers, telling the king that his estate "was rent and torn from him by the fury of the rebellion, and nothing left to support him and his children; that if his majesty did not in his abundant goodness think of some course how his many and great debts (a great part of which had been contracted in his service) might be satisfied, his house and property must of necessity sink under their weight and the interest growing upon them, which would in a short time exceed the debts." As a help towards their payment, or at least, as a means to prevent their increasing, he besought his majesty to grant him, or if he died of that sickness, his son, Lord Thurles, so much of the tenements and hereditaments in the city and suburbs of Kilkenny, as should accrue by forfeiture and owed rent or service to him or his wife. These, he adroitly adds, were conceived to be in the king's free disposal, and not within the intent of the late acts in England, which seemed to comprehend only lands to be admeasured, and not houses.

Renewed health restored Ormonde to a better tone of mind, and prompted him to more creditable services. He was now a marquis, and receiving a new commission as lieutenant-general of the army, was authorized to treat with the Confederates, and yield them such terms as he deemed advisable. Unfortunately for the country, he was not liberal enough in the matter of religion to meet the exigencies of the crisis, while he was so far honest as not to make a positive promise of conditions which he did not mean to observe. The king, whose danger in England was becoming more and more critical, importuned him in the months of April, May, and July, 1643, to adjust his differences with the Confederates; but he purposely avoided a cessation of arms. The Catholic lords were willing to accept his offers; not so, however, the native Irish headed by Colonel O'Neil, who, while the former body suspended operations to treat, pushed on hostilities with unabated vigour. It was owing to these different causes that Ormonde's first commission was not acted upon—another commission being sent over, the Confederates met him again, and terms being agreed upon and published, the party undertook to raise 10,000 men for the king, and to pay him

£30,000 by instalments during the course of the year. A cessation of arms for the same period was then proclaimed.

After this arrangement had at last been come to, another advantage was gained for the king's cause, from which much was at first expected, though nothing was ultimately derived. The earl of Leicester, who, residing in England, had been lord lieutenant all this time, was induced to resign in 1644, and the marquis of Ormonde was immediately sworn into his office. Borlase and Tichbourne, the successor of Parsons, now ceased to rule; the friends of Charles had the government wholly in their own hands; and the horizon, for a moment, seemed to grow bright before them, but it was soon overclouded.

Amongst the more eminent royalist officers who had hitherto served in the South of Ireland, was O'Brien, Lord Inchiquin, vice-president of Munster, who gained the battle of Liscarrol in 1643. Availing himself of the cessation of arms to visit England and seek promotion, this nobleman paid his respects to the king in person, and claimed to be appointed lord president of his province. But the place, as usual, had been promised to an Englishman, and was now given to the earl of Portland. Inchiquin, though an Irishman, was a Protestant. Irritated by this disappointment, he turned to the parliamentarians, and, finding them willing to gratify his ambition, resolved to espouse their interests. He had signed the minute by which the privy council had called upon Ormonde to enter upon a cessation of arms, but he now denounced and broke the agreement. Boyle, Lord Broghill, joined him in this step; and it soon became manifest that the royalists had sustained a severe loss. Raising 12,000 men, they drove the Roman Catholic magistrates and inhabitants out of Cork, Youghal and Kinsale. Inchiquin, during the course of the ensuing year, reduced Rostellan, Castlemartyr, Barrymore, Imokilly, Dromana, Cahir, Fethard, and Cashel. This last place he carried by storm, and with a fury so savage as to batter the venerable cathedral into a ruin, and slay twenty priests on its altars. By far the most important of his achievements was the subsequent defeat of Lord Taaffe, at

Knocknones, near Mallow, where 3,000 Confederates were killed.

The confusion of affairs was now extreme. The king, looking upon Ireland as his last resource, and convinced that the leading Confederates were sincerely attached to his cause, instructed Ormonde to perfect the treaty contemplated by the cessation of arms. But terms with the Papists were deemed wickedness by the English parliament, and not desired by Ormonde; while the Pope prepared to dispatch the nuncio Rinuccini to insist, in the event of their being concluded, upon suitable provisions for the church of which he was the head. Rinuccini was furnished with a sum of £12,000, half of which was expended in arms and stores, and half placed in the hands of General O'Neil. Henceforward we are to consider the Confederates as a divided body. O'Neil commanded the high church party amongst them; and being well supplied with money, stores and arms, kept the field with credit, ultimately gaining one of the few battles fought during the course of the war, in which large forces were fairly opposed, in which the courage displayed on both sides was honourable, and military talents of a high order were displayed by the commanding officers. This was the battle of Benburb, which, however, was not fought until the year 1645. The place is six miles from Armagh, and memorable in Irish history as the scene of other bloody actions. On this occasion, Lord Montgomery, 21 officers, and 180 men, were made prisoners, while 3,248 of Munroe's army were left dead on the field, besides many slain on their retreat next day.

Thus there came eventually to be four distinct parties to the contest, each animated by strong opinions supported by an armed force. There was the king's party, represented by the Lords Ormonde and Clanrickarde. There was the party of the Anglo-Irish, represented by the Lords Mountgarret, Castlehaven, and others whose names have already been incidentally mentioned. There was the party of the native Irish, led by Generals O'Neil and Preston, under the immediate councils of the nuncio Rinuccini; and there was the party of the English parliament, represented

by Generals Munroe and Coote, under the direction of the lords justices. This classification enables us to distinguish clearly the shades of opinion by which the four bodies were respectively actuated. Religion evidently kept three of them apart, who would otherwise have been united. Ormonde was devoted to the king and the Protestant church ; the Anglo-Irish were also attached to the king, but in arms to secure their rights under Magna Charta, as well in the matter of property as of religion ; the native Irish stood in the same category, and therefore co-operated with the Anglo-Irish, though they are at times found counteracting their proceedings, because more directly under the influence of the see of Rome, and thus less willing than their allies to confide in the amicable professions of the English court. The lords justices and the armies under Munroe and Coote sustained the principles of the commonwealth in politics, and of the Puritans in religion. If Charles therefore could have accommodated matters between his Protestant and his Catholic subjects in Ireland, the whole country would have been banded on his side ; for, with the exception of some Scotch settlers and official intruders, the Puritans cannot be said to have possessed indigenous strength or influence.

The year 1644 had been wasted in a variety of missions and negotiations, which, extending without effect from England to Paris, Rome and Madrid, left Ormonde's government environed by difficulties much more formidable than he was able to subdue or control. It was now clear that he was unequal to his position—a man of respectable but not of superior talent, who took a fair but not an enlightened view of Irish politics. Had the Confederates been the only discontented men in arms, he might have restored peace, for their moderation was equal to his own. This, however, was not the season of temperate remedies, temporary expedients, or partial compromises. Opposite extremes were extravagantly pursued by two parties in the rears of the Irish loyalists and the confederated Catholics. These were the puritan parliamentarians and the sustainers of the Pope's supremacy ; and nothing short of a genius of the highest

order—capacity to invent, and courage to execute original measures of commanding force—could suffice to tranquillize the raging elements of a storm which was as new as it was violent. The marquis of Ormonde did not possess these eminent qualities ; and ere long, worn out by a labour which he felt to be impotent, he sought to rid himself of the power he had so long been struggling to acquire, and was unable to maintain with satisfaction to himself or with benefit to his country or his sovereign. Imminent and daily increasing as were the dangers by which he was threatened, he added not a little to their perplexity and intenseness. He belonged to that fair spoken but reserved class of politicians, who, although they deem it wrong to mislead either their followers or their opponents, are not unwilling to derive a political advantage, by allowing either of those parties to deceive themselves. Before a suitable opportunity presented itself for taking any decided steps, he found the discontent produced by his own reserve immeasurably aggravated by the unscrupulous dissimulation of his sovereign. Charles had commenced his reign by breaking faith with the Irish, and, as if determined to end it in the same spirit, he now resorted to a flagitious piece of deceit. When all his hopes of accommodating matters in England had failed, he determined, as a last desperate resource, to throw himself into the arms of the Irish Catholics. Had he taken that resolution at an earlier period, he might have saved his life and the monarchy. Even now the chances of success to which it opened his longing eyes were destroyed by the unsurpassable duplicity with which he acted,—a duplicity the less excusable, because the conditions required of him were both moderate and just.

The respective pretensions of the Protestants and the Roman Catholics had been formally laid before him when the cessation of arms was agreed to. Then, as now, there was no room for a controversy respecting the real points at issue between the contending parties. The Catholics demanded that they should be free in the matter of religion, and, as a necessary consequence, that the penal laws should be repealed; that the Irish parliament should be free ; and again, as a ne-

cessary consequence, that Poyning's law should be suspended during its sessions; that there should be proper seminaries established for the education of the Catholic clergy and lawyers; that there should be an act of general pardon and oblivion, coupled with a reversion of all attainders issued against those who had taken part in the war; that no person should sit in the parliament of Ireland, who had not an estate and residence in Ireland; that the parliament of Ireland should be independent of the parliament of England; that no person should retain the office of chief governor for a longer term than three years, and that no chief governor should be permitted to acquire new lands during his term of office; that parliament should inquire into all breaches of contract and all acts of inhumanity committed upon both sides during the war; and that all persons guilty of either of these crimes should be excluded from the proposed act of pardon and oblivion, and be punished in due course of law.

On the other side, the Protestants demanded that all penal statutes should be enforced against recusants; that all Catholics should be immediately disarmed; that all offences committed by recusants should be strictly punished according to the statutes; that all estates forfeited during the administration of Parsons should be vested in the crown; and that after the claimants upon them had been satisfied under the recent acts of the English parliament, the residue should be distributed amongst British planters.*

It is superfluous to remark of these two schemes for the settlement of Ireland, that the one was dictated by the spirit of liberty, and the other by the spirit of tyranny; that upon the side of the Catholics, who formed the majority of the population, not in point of numbers only, but in point of property also, a moderation was displayed proportioned to their strength;

* Even in Cox we find a confession of the "offensive height and the unreasonableness" of the proposals made by the Protestant agents. They were strongly condemned by Usher, then bishop of Dromore, and by others, who told the commissioners that the propositions they had presented did not express the sentiments of the Protestants of Ireland—that if not withdrawn, they would prejudice the king and his ministers to posterity; and that it would be impossible to grant their desires and obtain peace. But the fanatics were appealed to in vain.

while the opposite party were immoderate in proportion to their weakness. This was a critical hour in the progress of the king's fate: a firm decision and prompt action might have availed to turn the flowing tide of events in his favour; but he vacillated, and was lost. Accepting nothing, and rejecting nothing, he referred everything to negociation and intrigue, in which he sought to blind all parties as to his real intentions, and laboured with profound insincerity to reserve eventually to himself the means of keeping or breaking his faith with every one, as he might find it most convenient.

The full extent of Charles's guilt is to be detected in the earl of Glamorgan's mission. Finding no improvement produced in the state of affairs by the increased powers conferred upon Ormonde, he sent Glamorgan to Ireland, commissioned to make two treaties with the armed Catholics—one private, and the other public. This mission was fully executed; and it is enough to observe of it, that the private treaty made two additions to the demands of the Confederates already enumerated: the one providing that Protestants and Catholics should pay tithes to their respective clergy; and the other that the churches should remain in the hands of those who then held possession of them. Accident led to the discovery of this proceeding: a copy of the treaty was found in the baggage of the Roman Catholic archbishop of Tuam, who had joined in an unsuccessful attack upon the town of Sligo. The document was transmitted to the English parliament, and was no sooner published by that body, than it was repudiated by the king, who denied that he had given Lord Glamorgan any authority to conclude it. At the same time he ordered the Irish privy council to make the earl a prisoner; which was accordingly done.

Strong as this language and proceeding were, the evidence is abundant and convincing, which proves that Charles, throughout the whole transaction and long afterwards, played a foul game with all parties, and was eager to go to any lengths with the Catholics by which he could have served himself. His own letters are the documents upon which he stands clearly convicted in this respect. In the first place, while publicly surrendering Glamorgan to be dealt with by the Irish

privy council, he wrote privately to Ormonde, who, as lord lieutenant, had the power of acting upon their decision of the case, "to suspend the execution of any sentence until he (the king) should be fully informed of all the proceedings. As to the next and the most material point, namely, the instructions given, warranting Glamorgan to yield unreserved terms to the Roman Catholic party, we may fairly judge of his intention at this particular juncture by what we know to have been his disposition at a subsequent period. We have a letter from him to the earl, dated Newcastle, July 20, 1646, in which he says:—" If you can raise a large sum of money by pawning my kingdoms for that purpose, I am content you should do it ; and if I recover them, I will fully repay that money ; and tell the nuncio, that if once I come unto his and your hands, which ought extremely to be wished for by you both, as well for the sake of England as Ireland, since all the rest, as I see, despise me, I will do it ; and if I do not say this from my heart, or if in any future time I fail you in this, may God never restore me to my kingdom in this world, nor give me eternal happiness in the next." Now this solemn attestation was pronounced long after the charge had been made public, and when a man who had ever felt that it involved guilt or impropriety would naturally have accompanied it with some explanation or qualification. It is here evidently uttered not as a new, but as an old resolution, respecting the sincerity of which the writer feels that some doubts may have been entertained. But this is not the only proof we have under his own hand, of his readiness to put himself at the disposal of the earl and Rinuccini. This letter was preceded by two others, dated respectively April 5 and April 6, 1646, the first of which says:—" I know you cannot but be confident of my making good all instructions and promises to you and the nuncio ;" while in the second he adds, " as I doubt not but you have too much courage to be dismayed or discouraged at the usage you have had, so I assure you that my estimation of you is nothing diminished, but rather begets in me a desire of revenge and reparation to us both ; for in this I hold myself equally interested with you. Wherefore, not doubting of your accus-

tomed care and industry in my service, I assure you of the continuance of my favour and protection to you, and that in deeds more than words I shall shew myself to be your most assured constant friend, CHARLES R."—Here there are three other letters subsequent to the publication of the secret treaty, and to a solemn denial of any authority to Glamorgan for its conclusion ; yet all is adopted, and this usage "begets in him a desire of revenge and reparation."

The case is to be pressed still further. The letters of the month of April 5 and 6 followed two dated the preceding February 3 and 28, in the one of which, meant to be seen by Ormonde and others, he says, "I must clearly tell you, both you and I have been abused in this business ; for you have been drawn to consent to conditions beyond your instructions, and your treaty hath been divulged to the world. If you had advised with my lord lieutenant, as you promised me, all this had been helped ; but we must look forward," &c. In the other, intended for his emissary's private consolation, he writes, "I am confident that this honest trusty bearer will give you good satisfaction why I have not, in every thing, done as you desired ; the want of confidence in you being so far from the cause thereof, that I am every day more and more confirmed in the trust that I have of you."

There may be moralists so lax as to attempt to excuse these reiterated falsehoods, upon the plea that they were told to impose upon enemies ; but his correspondence informs us that Charles could deceive his friends with equal hardihood. The passage in the letter of February 5, "If you had advised with my lord lieutenant, as you promised me, all this had been helped," was adroitly introduced to appease the resentment which it was naturally assumed that Ormonde must have felt upon discovering how a mission of this important kind had been entrusted to another without his consent or knowledge. Charles went even further to disabuse the marquis of that supposition, protesting "upon the word of a Christian, he never intended Glamorgan should treat of any thing without his (the marquis's) approbation, much less his knowledge." In the teeth of this assurance, however, he admitted to the

Irish privy council, "that it is possible he might have thought fit to have given the earl of Glamorgan such a credential as might give him credit with the Roman Catholics, in case the marquis should find occasion to make use of him, either as a further assurance to them of what he should privately promise, or in case he should find it necessary to manage those matters, for their greater confidence, apart by the earl, of whom they might be less jealous."

A cause projected and conducted with so much treachery could not possibly succeed. Everything depended upon the treaty, and that was now attacked from all quarters. The first direct attempt to destroy its efficacy was made by Glamorgan himself, who affected to contend, when arrested, that his proceedings were not obligatory upon the king, because the day after he had entered into the treaty he had signed an act of defeazance with the same parties. Thus turpitude and fraud accompanied the affair through its successive stages. Ormonde completed the general embarrassment by positively refusing to repeal the penal laws. The Irish clergy, naturally enough, then insisted that no terms should be accepted short of those already offered. It was in the midst of this confusion, while the king's friends were pressing for the promised supply of men which had been the consideration upon their side for the cessation of arms,—and while the Irish were contending for a public ratification of Glamorgan's private concessions,—that Rinuccini arrived, and held to the full as peremptory language as had as yet been spoken in the controversy. The sections into which the Confederates were split thus became broadly separated : the papal party, emboldened by the reputation of their generals, and the aid of foreign courts, hoped much from the king's necessities, and were reasonably doubtful of Ormonde's willingness to place their claims upon the ground they sought to rest them. They, therefore, felt no anxiety to conclude a peace. On the other hand, the aristocratic division of the Confederates, alarmed at the position in which they stood,—a position which made them at once the enemies of the two great English factions, the king and the parliament,—were sincere in their efforts to extricate

themselves from so dangerous a dilemma, and to bring about a definite arrangement. In the end they carried their point ; but under circumstances so void of public sympathy or confidence, that dissension continued to prevail, and the war to proceed as of old.

The treaty between Ormonde and the Confederates, signed March 28, 1646, would have been hailed with joy if it had been concluded two years earlier. It would then have fallen within the time prescribed for that purpose, by the cessation of arms agreed to in 1643. The delay involved disastrous consequences, amongst the chief of which were the repeated indications afforded by the king, that the more straitened his position became, the more liberal would be his concessions in Ireland ; and the concurrent manifestation of Ormonde's repugnance to satisfy the demands of the Roman Catholics. The latter was ready to tolerate the old religion, but not to place it upon any terms approaching to those of equality with the Protestant church. Fairly as he spoke to the party, he proved in this latter point so mischievously stubborn as to excite mistrust and even odium.* Accordingly, when after many vexatious negotiations, many contradictory admissions and infinite procrastinations, he was at last driven to guarantee the free worship of the Roman Catholic religion, every expression used in the deed was sure to be scrutinised with a suspicious eye, and the

* As in the case of Charles, so in that of Ormonde, we are influenced in our judgment of his real intentions in these treaties, by his subsequent admissions. Cox prints a letter which is conclusive of his fixed principles upon this question. It was written on Christmas day, 1646, while the negotiations were still pending for delivering up the government to the parliamentary commissioners, and was to be taken to France by Lord Digby. "Be careful," he says, "to take order that the commands directed to me, touching this people, thwart not the grounds I have laid to myself in point of religion; for in that, and in that only, I shall resort to the liberty left to a subject to obey by suffering; and particularly that there be no concession to the papists, to perpetuate churches or church livings to them, or to take ecclesiastical jurisdiction from us: as for other freedoms from penalties for the quiet exercise of their religion, I am not only clear that it may, but ought to be given to them." After reading these admissions, it is hard to blame the nuncio and the clergy for suspecting the marquis's liberality, or the majority of the people for resisting, while they had power, so limited a toleration of the rights of conscience.

slightest omission or obscurity to be denounced as evidence of preconcerted fraud and determined insincerity.

Rinuccini and the clergy were the first to assail the provisions of this paper. They insisted that the measure fell short of the terms admitted in Glamorgan's treaty, and also of the powers given by Charles to Ormonde for the total repeal of the penal laws and of Poynings' Act. The truth of these averments is unimpeachable. An amended scheme of settlement was produced on their side, of which it will be enough to report that it erected the Roman Catholic church as the ecclesiastical establishment of the country. This uncompromising plan was laid before a new assembly of the Confederates, and passed with a few alterations. An additional proposal for the restoration of abbey lands was rejected, as was a vote of censure against the commissioners who had signed the peace; but the peace itself was condemned by an overwhelming majority, and the clergy took their own revenge against the commissioners by pronouncing sentence of excommunication upon them.

So far, the high church party amongst the Roman Catholics was triumphant, and bold as their pretensions were, they must be admitted, all circumstances considered, to have been easily defensible in point of principle and sound policy. For the proportion of Roman Catholics to Protestants, according to Sir W. Petty, stood as five to one. Rinuccini now gained an ascendancy in the deliberations of the Confederates which atfirst promised signal results, and was sustained with a free hand. Provided with money, and holding O'Neil and Preston in his pay, he ordered them to march into Leinster and overawe the opposition of the aristocracy, who were for maintaining the peace. He seems, moreover, to have desired to make O'Neil commander in chief, and to crush divisions by erecting a military dictatorship. This, if carried, would have been a master-stroke; but a well-grounded fear lest Preston, a man of choleric temper, and hitherto invested with an independent command, might join the enemy if reduced to an inferior station, diverted

the attempt. From this moment the cause of the country was hopeless ; day by day there was an increase of the weakness and confusion which are inevitable whenever a common interest divides into different courses of action. Much more fatal than this conflict was the arrogance of the hierarchy, who provoked the contempt of all wise men, while they aggravated the hatred of the other sectarians who were parties to the struggle, hurling forth excommunications and anathemas.

Ormonde's mortification was soon complete : he had reluctantly consented to a peace, which when made, did not put a stop to the war. He was thus still beset both by the Catholics and the Puritans. It was under these circumstances that he plunged into another extreme, and resolved to give up the government to the English parliamentarians, with some of whom he had previously corresponded. In now publicly renewing his negotiations with that body, he pleaded instructions from the king as his authority for the step he was about to take. "If it were possible for him to keep Dublin," say Borlase and Cox, "and the other garrisons, under the same entire obedience they were then in, it would be acceptable to his majesty ; but if there were, or should be, a necessity of giving them up to any other power, the marquis should rather put them into the hands of the English than of the Irish." Acting in the terms of this advice, Ormonde and the privy council wrote to the king and the lord mayor of London, September 26, 1646, only six months after the abortive treaty of peace, justifying their late proceedings, estimating the forfeitures already decreed against the first contrivers of the rebellion as sufficient to satisfy the adventurers who had come over to put it down ; and concluding with a declaration that their necessities admitted of no delay, and that if succour were not at hand they should be obliged to think of some other course. These overtures led to the appointment of parliamentary commissioners, who reached Dublin in November, empowered to negotiate for a surrender of the sword of state, all the king's garrisons, and the appointment of a new governor.

The retiring lord lieutenant did not fail to indulge, at this crisis of his power, in his usual tendency to procrastination. The treaty, which when first proposed was to have been concluded in four days, was barely brought to an end in four months; and then with so much precipitation, that advantage was taken of the loose terms used in concluding it to deprive Ormonde of the special benefits he had, in the first instance, taken care to obtain for himself.*

Ormonde left the country, September 28, 1647, and after placing in the king's hands, at Hampton Court, an elaborate memorial, explanatory of his recent conduct, hurried privately to the coast, and joined the Queen Henrietta in Paris. Meantime distraction and calamity, the products of a zeal which was rarely tempered by discretion, continued to prevail amongst all parties in Ireland, except the parliamentarians—that body strengthened by the force under General Jones, which had received Ormonde's resignation, daily acquired new advantages. It is impossible to pursue these intricate events through all their ramifications. The cause of the Catholics, as already intimated, was lost when it fell into the hands of Rinuccini. Looking mainly to the religious side of the question at issue, that impetuous dignitary would listen to no compromises, and enter into no half measures. In thus proceeding he was not more obstinate, and he certainly was more sincere, than Ormonde had been in his attempts to counteract him. His conduct has been strongly condemned by all writers, those on his own side of course excepted; and yet if calmly reviewed, it will appear as a whole but natural to a

* The original conditions, and those which he supposed to have been granted, were liberal. They stipulated that in consideration of his surrendering his office and powers of government, he should be secured in the enjoyment of his estates; that he should receive protection against all debts for a twelvemonth, together with an indemnity against those contracted on the public account; and a sum of £13,877 for the settlement of certain accounts, which were to be audited by Sir James Ware; £2,000 a year for five years and longer, if he should not receive so much out of his own estate; and that he should have leave to reside in England for a twelvemonth without being pressed to take any oath, he engaging his honour not to do anything disserviceable to the parliament during that time.

man of his vocation in such circumstances ; for it is the province of all churchmen to consult the interests of their own order and the privileges of their respective churches, above every other thing. Throughout history, whenever we meet with the cause of a church exposed to peril, we are also sure to find its hierarchy prepared to go to extreme lengths for the purpose of establishing its security. With them, even in times of peace, political rights are held secondary to religious privileges. During periods of political convulsion, when the state and the church are involved in common danger, prelates and priests, if allowed the opportunity, will invariably provide with stern decision for the full recovery of their own power, and postpone all other considerations with indifference, if not with contempt. We offer neither approval, then, nor apology, but are only candid when we confess that the career of Rinuccini forms no exception to the common practice of his order on other occasions of a like description. His abuse of the once formidable power of ecclesiastical excommunication was indefensible ; but if in this and other respects a bad politician, he must, we apprehend, be pronounced a good churchman. At the same time a pointed moral is to be deduced from his conduct—in periods of political convulsion, ecclesiastics are the last persons who can safely be placed at the head of affairs.

The aristocratic section of the Confederates took alarm at the growing strength of the parliamentarians. They had too much reason to feel that no concession was to be expected in that quarter. It was now generally admitted that even toleration from Ormonde was preferable to persecution from the Puritans. While this politic spirit prevailed, the clerical party was outvoted in the general assembly, and the nuncio, incensed at his defeat, withdrew to the camp of O'Neil. As the means to decide their respective pretensions were not to be obtained in Ireland, embassies on either side were despatched to Paris and to Rome. Men and money were earnestly solicited at both places, but at the former the prayer was that Ormonde should be sent with them ; while at the latter the assurance given was, that, if supplied, they should be vigo-

rously appointed to defeat the measures that nobleman was expected to prosecute.

The relative strength of these ill-fated opponents was soon materially altered by another change in the conduct of O'Brien, Lord Inchiquin. That stern and selfish man, hated, not without reason, by the majority of his fellow countrymen, and often dreaded but never admired by any others, had already become dissatisfied with his new masters. Interested motives had prompted him to abandon the royal cause, and the same influence now instigated him to renounce the parliament, and fall back upon the king's service. He had been promised a large sum of money, as a reward for his decisive victory at Knocknones, soon after Ormonde's departure; and finding not only that the amount was not likely to be paid, but that his remonstrances upon the subject were resented, he made no secret of his discontent, and entered into a correspondence with Ormonde abroad and the Confederates at home. His recent ally, Lord Broghill, aware of his feelings, and anxious to obtain his post, denounced him to the English parliament, at first without effect; but ere long his negotiations becoming notorious, he was voted a renegade and a traitor. His treaty with the Confederates at this juncture struck the final blow to the sinking influence of Rinuccini over that body, and led to the return of Ormonde, who landed on the coast of Cork, under the auspices of Inchiquin, in September, 1648.

This second attempt to uphold the interests of Charles proved as abortive as the first, and for the same reasons. The great body of the people were Roman Catholics, many of them seeking to recover the estates of their forefathers, and all bent upon re-establishing their religion. Ormonde had been compelled to leave Ireland only a year before, because he would not satisfy the popular demands in either of those respects; and he was driven away again, because returning after so short an absence, with unaltered sentiments, he was still vain enough to hope that the strength of the Anglo-Irish landowners, who were willing to accept of toleration in religion for the sake of security in property, would avail at such a crisis, to enable him to subdue both the native Irish and the

parliamentarians. An enterprise so desperate and false in point of principle, could only have prospered by the force of original talent and pre-eminent vigour; but these were qualities to which the lord lieutenant had few pretensions; and thus his re-appearance in the war, though marked on some occasions by demonstrations of personal dignity and good sense, was still as devoid of interest as it was barren of success.

It would be tedious to offer proofs of the correctness of these observations, by describing how mistrust of his intentions animated the citizens of Wexford and Waterford to close their gates against him, even when they most needed succour. Equally dull would be the task of relating, in detail, the various inconsistencies and violations of principle by which the other principal actors in these disastrous proceedings sullied their reputations, and incurred disgrace—how Munroe, one of the first to take the solemn league and covenant, became suspected, and was sent prisoner to London; how Preston, jealous of O'Neil, plotted and acted with Clanrickarde, against his old brother in arms; and how O'Neil himself, finding his views alike incompatible with the objects of the Confederates and of Ormonde, was proclaimed a traitor by the Confederates, and made a compact of mutual assistance with Monk, in the North, which was faithfully observed, during a term of three months, until it was dissolved by the puritanical fury of the English House of Commons. These were minor incidents, seldom reflecting credit upon the persons concerned in them, and never diverting the main current of affairs from its impetuous course. Upon that tide the master spirit of the storm soon rode, and became the great avenger to every party but his own, of all the blind and perverse folly, the mingled stubbornness and negligence, the corruption, bigotry, and crime with which this long and inglorious war had been overloaded.

In January, 1649, Ormonde signed a new treaty with the Confederates, embodying the principal concessions yielded by Glamorgan; and in the following month of March, the English parliament voted the lord lieutenancy to Oliver Cromwell, who, looking around him for suitable companions and assistants in so arduous a command, quickly fixed his eyes on Boyle, Lord

Broghill. According to his biographer, Mr. Budgell, that nobleman, shocked by the king's death, had quitted the parliamentary army, and abandoning Ireland, and the estate he had there, as utterly lost, had retired to Marston, a family seat in Somersetshire. The complete character of this political adventurer is revealed with peculiar simplicity and effect in Mr. Budgell's account of his conduct upon this occasion. He could not, it seems, "forbear reflecting, in his retirement, upon the miserable condition both of his country and the royal family, till, at last, he conceived it beneath his spirit and quality to see the public ruined, and his own private fortune enjoyed by rebels. He resolved, therefore, to accept something, both for the sake of his country and himself, and accordingly, under pretence of going to the Spa for his health, he determined to cross the seas, and apply himself to Charles II. for a commission to raise what forces he could in Ireland, in order to restore his majesty, and to recover his own estate. Having taken this resolution, he applied to the earl of Warwick, who had interest with the prevailing party, desiring him to procure a license for him to go to the Spa. He pretended to the earl that he meant nothing more by this journey than the recovery of his health; but he let some of his friends of the royal party, in whom he thought he could confide, into the secret of his design; and having raised a considerable sum of money, came up to London to prosecute his voyage.

But the committee of state, who spared no money to get proper intelligence, being soon made acquainted with the whole design, determined to proceed against him with their utmost severity. Cromwell, a member of the committee, and no stranger to the character of Broghill's cleverness, entreated that he might have leave to talk with him, and endeavour to gain him before extremities were resorted to. Having obtained this permission, he immediately dispatched a gentleman to Broghill, to let him know that he intended to wait upon him. Broghill having had no acquaintance with Cromwell, told the gentleman that he was not the person to whom the general had sent him. The gentleman readily replied, that he was sent to the Lord Broghill, and, therefore, if he was that

lord, he was sent to him. His lordship finding there was no mistake, confessed that he was Lord Broghill, and desiring his humble duty to be presented to the general, he added that he would not give him the trouble to come to him, but that he himself would wait upon his excellency, if he knew at what hour it would be most proper for him to do so : in the mean time he would stay at home, to receive further commands. The gentleman took his leave, promising to return directly.

Musing in his chamber upon what had passed, Broghill soon afterwards, to his great surprise, saw Cromwell himself enter the room. When some mutual civilities had passed between them, and they were left alone, Cromwell told him, in few words, "That the committee of state were apprised of his design of going over and applying to Charles Stuart for a commission to raise forces in Ireland, and that they were determined to make an example of him, if he himself had not diverted them from that resolution." Lord Broghill interrupted him here, and assured him that the intelligence the committee had received was false ; that he was neither in a capacity, nor had any inclination to raise disturbances in Ireland, and concluded with entreating his excellency to have a kinder opinion of him. Cromwell, instead of making any reply, drew out of his pocket copies of several letters sent by Broghill to persons in whom he confided : these he put into his hands. Lord Broghill, upon perusing them, found it was to no purpose to dissemble any longer. He asked his excellency's pardon for what he had said, returned him his humble thanks for his protection against the committee, and entreated his directions how he should behave in so delicate a conjuncture. Cromwell told him that though till this time he had been a stranger to his person, he was not so to his merit and character ; that he had heard how gallantly his lordship had already behaved in the Irish wars ; and, therefore, since he was named lord lieutenant of Ireland, and the reducing that kingdom was now become his province, he had obtained leave of the committee to offer his lordship the command of a general officer, if he would

serve in that war ; that he should have no oaths or engagements imposed upon him, nor be obliged to draw his sword against any but the Irish rebels.

Lord Broghill, continues his simple biographer, was infinitely surprised at so generous and unexpected an offer ; he saw himself at liberty, by all the rules of honour, to serve against the Irish, whose rebellion and barbarities were equally detested by the royal party and the parliament. He desired, however, the general to give him some time to consider of what had been proposed to him. Cromwell briskly told him that he must come to some resolution that very instant ; that he himself was returning to the committee, who were still sitting ; and had determined, if his lordship rejected their offer, to send him immediately to the Tower. Broghill, finding that his liberty and life were in the utmost danger, and charmed with the frankness and generosity of Cromwell's behaviour, gave him his word and honour that he would faithfully serve him against the Irish rebels. Upon which, Cromwell once more assured him that the conditions he had made with him should be punctually observed ; and then ordered him to repair immediately to Bristol, to which place forces should be sent him, with a sufficient number of ships to transport them into Ireland. This being done, Broghill returned to Munster, and there raising a troop of horse, and 1,500 foot, again took the field to fight for the parliamentarians, whose guilt in beheading the king had so lately filled him with horror and despair.

Cromwell landed at Dublin in 1649, with 9,000 foot and 4,000 horse, £200,000 in money, and a full supply of ordnance. The troops he had selected for this expedition consisted of the gloomiest fanatics and wildest enthusiasts in the Puritan army—men who compared themselves to the people of Israel marching to extirpate the idolatrous Canaanites, and who fancied themselves the appointed instruments of heaven for the overthrow of the empire of Babylon in Ireland, and the erection of a new Jerusalem in its stead. Cromwell began his operations at the head of these bigoted desperadoes with characteristic fury. Proceeding at once to attack Drogheda, he disdained

the forms of regular war, and took the town by storm. It was garrisoned with 3,000 men, who fought bravely, and were promised quarter upon throwing down their arms. But Cromwell, pre-determined to strike unexampled terror with his first blow, let loose his armed zealots upon the unresisting Irish, and, in defiance of the promised quarter, devoted two days to a general carnage. Only 30 of the garrison were spared, and they were sold as slaves, and transported to the colonies.

It was at this extreme point that Ormonde, ever too late with his good measures, concluded a hasty agreement with Owen O'Neil, the only officer whom valour, skill, and experience in war qualified to cope with so formidable an antagonist. But a fatal disease had seized upon the frame of that popular commander : he was now so ill that he was obliged to be moved about on a litter. Even in this condition, with a spirit and determination unsubdued by bodily sufferings, he ordered the army to march, and was carried at their head towards the enemy. The motion, however, was more than he could bear ; he was obliged to stop at Lough Oughter Castle, where he died, and took with him to his grave the lingering hopes of Irish independence.

Although the winter was now setting in, Cromwell, undeterred by the approaching severities of the season, detached a force under Venables to co-operate with Coote in the North, while he proceeded himself to Wexford with 9,000 men. Here he was joined by Broghill. Ormonde had contrived to throw a reinforcement into the town ; but Strafford, the governor of the castle, betrayed his post, and an easy capture was brutally followed by a repetition of the scenes which had flooded Drogheda with blood.

New Ross and Carrick-on-Suir were the places next taken by Cromwell's troops, while Broghill, moving into the districts over which the possessions of his family gave him most influence, marched through the open gates of Youghal, Kinsale, Bandon, and even Cork, and reduced Dungarvan after a slight resistance. Thus, before the winter set in, Cromwell's army had won excellent quarters, and, with the exception of Water-

ford, Clonmel, and Limerick, all the large towns in the South had yielded to his arms. At Waterford, Clonmel, and Limerick, however, his sweeping career was bravely arrested. In each of these places the citizens, after rejecting assistance from Ormonde and his agents, in whom they put no confidence, were able to gain the help of officers and men belonging to their own party. The consequences were signal. Waterford, defended by General Ferral, was never captured, though besieged by Cromwell in person. The citizens still pride themselves on the motto to their city arms, so well earned on this occasion—*Urbs Intacta*. Clonmel was commanded by Colonel Hugh O'Neil, at the head of 1,500 Ulster men, an officer who was in every respect a distinguished member of the family to which he belonged, and who acquired the highest honour by the gallantry and skill he displayed in the defence of this town.

Cromwell, impatient of the resistance that detained him before Waterford, had invested Clonmel, when news was brought him that the Roman Catholic bishop of Ross was scouring the province, and raising men to overwhelm him in every direction. Broghill, who became acquainted with this bold movement nearly at the same time, hastened with what troops he could gather to Cromwell, and by his advice pursued the insurgents into the county of Cork. There he fell unexpectedly upon them at Macroom, and completely routed a raw levy of between 4,000 and 5,000 men. He took their leader, the bishop, prisoner, and marching with him to the castle of Carrigdrohid, offered him his life, if he would cause it to be surrendered. The gallant prelate desired to be taken before the walls, where he no sooner found himself, than he nobly exhorted the garrison to fight to the last man, and was forthwith handed over to the hangman.

The insurgents at Macroom had scarcely been put to flight, when Broghill received a letter from Cromwell, telling him that most of his men were dangerously sick of a prevalent epidemic; that they had already been twice repulsed by Hugh O'Neil; and that he should be obliged to raise the siege of

Clonmel, if he was not immediately reinforced. He, therefore, conjured him by all the ties of duty and friendship to think no longer of dispersing the rebels in the West, but to come immediately and save his general from defeat.

Broghill replied by the same messenger, that he had just defeated the enemy, and would not fail to be before Clonmel in three days; and he kept his word. At the promised time he appeared, with all his force, while Cromwell, delighted at the seasonable relief, turned out his whole army before the walls, to the cry of “a Broghill!” “a Broghill!” Running forward at their head, he caught him in his arms, and publicly applauding his courage and activity, returned him thanks, emphatically, for his recent success. Thus reinforced, he pushed on the siege with renewed vigour, and made a breach in the walls. But even then he could not force an entrance : O’Neil, his troops, and the inhabitants fought manfully and invincibly, until at the end of two months it was found that they had fired off nearly their last charge of powder. When that resource failed, the still unexhausted talent of the general saved the army and the town. He withdrew all his soldiers secretly, and by night, across the river, and escaped to Limerick. In the morning the inhabitants offered to surrender the town, and Cromwell, ignorant of O’Neil’s clever retreat, gave them good conditions, and was thus enabled to obey, with honour, the pressing orders to return to England, which had of late been repeatedly addressed to him.

Ireton, Cromwell’s son-in-law, and already president of Munster, succeeded to the command of the army, and by the capture of Killaloe and Limerick ere long reduced the whole province. At the latter place, as at Waterford and Clonmel, the popular resentment against Ormonde had been so strong, that no co-operation with him, or with his friend, Lord Clanrickarde, could be effected. Hugh O’Neil fully sustained the reputation he had gained by his defence of Clonmel ; but his eminent talents, and noble spirit, though every way equal to the task of coping with his enemies, could not prevail against the rage of contending factions, against the ravages of the

plague, which had broken out in the city, and more destructive still, the cunning villany of a Colonel Fennel, who had twice before betrayed his party at Youghal and at Killaloe ; and who now, practising upon the fears of the besieged and distracted citizens, seized the keys of two gates, by which, after beating off O'Neil's guard, he admitted Ireton's soldiers. It is satisfactory to know, that of the 24 persons excepted from pardon, by way of example, upon this occasion, one of the first led out to execution was this infamous traitor. Friar Walsh, one of Ormonde's bitterest assailants, and the Roman Catholic bishop of Emly, were hung with him. The gallant Hugh O'Neil was with difficulty saved from the gallows. When they put him upon his trial, he made a soldier-like defence, asserting that he had maintained the character of an honourable enemy, and that no unjust sentence, there to be pronounced or executed, could tarnish his reputation. Ireton nevertheless pressed for his condemnation, which was carried ; but his life was not taken. Ludlow pointed out the odium with which such an act was sure to be regarded on the continent, where O'Neil had served with distinction—and the fear of disgrace arrested the arm of unmanly revenge.

Ormonde did not remain long in Ireland after Cromwell's departure. He had now been for some time back rather a spectator, than an actor, of passing events. The last slender thread by which he held a sinking party together, was cut asunder by Charles II., who gratified the Scotch commissioners, when he signed the treaty of Breda, by annulling his lord lieutenant's concessions in Ireland. The wildest feelings of indignation and resentment were provoked by this fresh instance of royal faithlessness, and Ormonde once more made his arrangements for escaping to the continent. Calling a general assembly at Loughrea, in November 1650, he put on record several vindictory memorials of his second administration ; and after making some further attempts, equally tedious and vain, to treat with the nuncio's prelates, he named Lord Clanrickarde as his deputy, and set sail for France from the bay of Galway, in the following month of December. Inchiquin, whose

troops had mutinied and left him without followers, was the companion of his flight. Preston had already escaped from the same spot. So far the Roman Catholic party was revenged, if not righted. Ormonde would not yield them religious freedom, and their prelates drove him out of the country.

The authority which devolved upon the new lord deputy was merely nominal. It was fancied that the Irish would rally round him because he was a Roman Catholic ; but his well known intimacy with Ormonde, and the universal distrust of all royal professors of sympathy or regard for the Irish, disabled him from undertaking operations upon an extended scale, or of an important nature. He was joined, however, by Sir Phelim O'Neil, one of the first authors of the war, who, reappearing conspicuously at its close, became one of its last victims, and gave a parting lustre to his career by the honourable manner in which he met his death. Clanrickarde and Sir Phelim captured, but were unable to keep Ballyshannon and Donegal. Close pressed by the enemy, the former escaped, while the latter was taken prisoner, and condemned to die. A pardon was repeatedly offered to him, provided he would declare, that when first he took up arms he had acted under an authority from Charles I. But he rejected the temptation, and suffered with fortitude. One after another the remaining leaders were subdued, or compelled to treat for their lives. A few of the nuncio's section made a wild attempt to gain the duke of Lorraine as a champion, by engaging to set him up as king ;*

* By way of apology for this act, it has been pleaded, that the party were driven to it by the reiterated proofs which had been given, that no dependence was to be placed upon any thing promised, or even done by the king—for that Charles II. had already shown himself a true son of his father, in violating his solemn pledges ; in undoing at one time what he had properly done at another ; and in committing himself, for the sake of a temporary advantage, to the most inconsistent and unprincipled extremes. Assuming all this to be, as it really is, perfectly true, it will not constitute a perfect defence for such an act as the repudiation of their allegiance by Roman Catholic bishops—and still less will it vindicate their reputations as good politicians, to suggest that either the independence or the happiness of their country was to be secured by placing it in the hands of a continental potentate. There never has been, and to all appearances there never will be, room to make Ireland flourish, except in one or other of two conditions—complete independence of, or complete idem-

but the scheme, though tricked out in a new guise, and carried to other courts, was too weak to gain supporters, and only served, at a subsequent and more important juncture, to furnish an excuse for a great national wrong. At length Clanrickarde, who had vainly endeavoured to keep a few followers together, while fighting for their lives in the woods and mountains of the west, received, as Ormonde had done before, permission from Charles II. to provide for his safety. Thus justified, he applied to General Fleetwood for a passport, which being readily granted, the royal authority ceased to have a representative in Ireland.

The affairs of Ireland during the protectorate of Cromwell offer but little matter for comment, if we except the memorable act of settlement. It will be more convenient, however, to describe that rigorous measure in the sketch to be presently drawn of the various forfeitures, which, beginning under Charles I., were confirmed by his worthless successor. In other respects the government of Ireland, under the commonwealth, was of a kind that was sure to increase the popular hatred of the English name and institutions. At the same time it is fair to observe, that the severities practised were less a consequence of any fresh enactments introduced by Cromwell, than the inevitable result of the recent military usurpation of the country. Soldiers who had quartered themselves upon noble properties by force of arms, kept the people around them in a state of abject subjection, not by the

tification with, England. Reverting to this abortive negotiation with the duke of Lorraine, it is to be observed, that it was not an unnatural consequence of some other proceedings, which would have been noticed in the text, but that they were demonstrations of anger rather than of power. Before Limerick fell, the prelates held a synod at Jamestown, and crowned their labours to render Ormonde odious with the people, by requiring "that he should speedily quit the kingdom, and leave his majesty's authority in the hands of some person faithful to the king, and trusty to the nation, and such as the affections and confidence of the people would follow." Prompt obedience not having been rendered to this mandate, it was followed up by other missives of an equally hostile temper. A formal declaration was signed against "the continuance of his majesty's authority in the lord lieutenant," and a fierce sentence of excommunication was pronounced against "all who adhered to him by giving him any subsidy, contribution or intelligence, or by obeying his commands!"

due course of law, but by applying the rudest means of punishment in every instance of apparent disobedience. The cruelties of the Puritans during their uncontrolled occupation of Ireland, are not to be outmatched in the long catalogue of enormities by which the history of Christian Europe has been blackened. Fanaticism never exhibited itself in a mood at once so stern and wild. Vindictive interpreters of the spirit of the Old Testament, they imbibed a blasphemous conviction that God had punished an idolatrous people, by subjecting their lives and properties to the despotic authority of a “purer race elect.” As Joshua used the Gideonites so the Puritans scourged their Irish serfs with rods of iron. At least 40,000 Irishmen were transported as slaves to the West Indies. The peasantry were strictly forbidden to stir out of their respective parishes without leave ; they were not allowed to assemble for religious worship or any other purpose ; their priests were commanded to fly the country under pain of death ; and when it was discovered that some faithful pastors, unmoved by these frightful denunciations, still administered the consolations of religion in caverns, hid amidst the wild fastnesses of uncultivated mountains, or in turf-covered huts, pitched upon the cheerless centre of some deserted bog, blood-hounds were employed to track the martyrs to their retreats, and priest-hunting became one of the field sports of the country.

Of Ireland under the commonwealth it is only further to be observed, that the Protector gave a proof of his political sagacity, by suggesting the first idea of a legislative union between the two countries. He proposed, in his instrument of government, that Ireland should be represented in the imperial parliament by thirty members. Unquestionably it was a serious misfortune to both countries, that a plan, so full of practical utility, was neither reduced to form by its original author, nor adopted by any subsequent government, during so long a period as a century and a half. The wrongs of Ireland, always excessive, could not have proceeded to the monstrous extent they afterwards reached, if the complaints of her suffering population had reached the ears of the people of

England, through the voices of even a few representatives in the English legislature. Cromwell's last choice of a lord lieutenant, in the person of his second son, has been generally praised. Henry Cromwell appears to have been a good and wise man, whose administration was temperate, and whose views for the improvement of the country were judicious; but the interval of his power was too brief to admit of corresponding actions.

Only one member of the Irish aristocracy retained his possessions, and at the same time such an influence with the Protector as to render him a person of consequence in the government of both countries, under the new order of things. This was Boyle, Lord Broghill, a man of refined selfishness, consummately skilful in political intrigue, and the management of his worldly interests, who served all governments with ability, and profited by each in its turn. Ireton alone amongst the parliamentary leaders, appears to have penetrated his duplicity: he was more than once heard to pronounce him a man to be got rid of. If that discriminating officer had not been carried off by the plague, Broghill, in all probability, would not have gained the confidence of the Protector to the extent which we find him enjoying on more than one interesting occasion. Residing in London, and constantly attending Cromwell, he was able to render some opportune services to the royalists. His representations at one time saved the marchioness of Ormonde's pension of £2,000 from being stopped; at another, Cromwell, by a friendly hint, gave him to understand that Ormonde was plotting in London, and was sure to be arrested if he remained. By this means the marquis, warned of his danger, was enabled to escape back to the continent. A third anecdote, of the same familiar kind, describes Broghill sounding the Protector on the subject of a marriage between his daughter, Lady Frances Cromwell, and Charles II. The proposition, we are told, was at first not ill received by the Protector, and was only rejected from a conviction that whatever he might promise, Charles would never forgive the death of his father.

The restoration in Ireland, an event of secondary importance, was mainly brought about by Lord Broghill. He had distinguished himself at the death of Cromwell by the astuteness, spirit, and eloquence, with which he supported the pretensions of his son ; but having fairly proved the incompetence of that unambitious gentleman to support the power and the honours thrust upon him, he proceeded to Ireland, resolved to secure his title and estates by taking the lead in promoting an event which, as he foresaw, was inevitable. Upon reaching Munster he began to gather his friends and retainers around him. His proceedings were soon interrupted by a parliamentary commission, which had followed him over from London, and was charged, amongst other things, "to have a particular eye to Lord Broghill, and, if possible, to take some means to confine him." A train of negotiations ensued, in which the experienced peer far outwitted the commissioners, crafty as they were in the art of deceiving. He defeated all the snares laid to entrap him with a boldness of which one sample will furnish sufficient proof. He was corresponding for the king's return with Ormonde, and was prepared to negotiate with the most unprincipled and by far the most blood-thirsty of the republican leaders, Sir C. Coote, yet he did not scruple to protest to the commissioners that monarchy was a "ruinous wickedness," and that he was prepared to "die sooner than give the Lord's heritage to strangers."

A man so accomplished in hypocrisy was not to be stayed in the execution of his plans. The commissioners were obliged to dismiss him with compliments and smiles, which he reciprocated with equal insincerity ; and returning to his province, completed his previous arrangements. Securing the officers of the Munster army and the garrison of Limerick, he engaged the active co-operation of Coote, and despatched his brother, Lord Shannon, to invite Charles to Ireland. Before an answer could be received, Coote's impetuosity produced extraordinary changes. Having seized Galway and surprised Athlone, this headlong commander marched to Dublin, where he impeached Ludlow. The excitement raised by this spirited

example was contagious. The magistrates of Dublin summoned a convention, which undertook to act in defiance of an order from the English council of state. Youghal, Clonmel, Carlow, Limerick, and Drogheda declared for the king, and the whole country verified the correct view taken by Broghill, when he assured Charles that he might enter into possession of it with perfect safety.

But a corresponding ardour had accomplished the restoration in England, and spared the Irish another occasion of rendering a signal benefit to a family, no member of which had ever appreciated their loyalty or rewarded their services. Broghill at first was coldly received by Charles ; his merits as the projector of the recent movements in Ireland had been eclipsed by Coote's success in bringing them to bear ; and it was not until he had convinced the king by documentary evidence of the validity of his claims to be considered the author of the plot that he received his expected reward—being confirmed in the possession of all his estates, made lord president of Munster, one of the lords justices, and advanced a step in the peerage, with the title of earl of Orrery. Coote was associated with him as lord justice, and created earl of Mountrath. The higher post of lord steward of the household, lord lieutenant of Ireland, a dukedom, his ancient right of wine prisage, extended estates, and £30,000, constituted Ormonde's recompence. Nor was Inchiquin forgotten. That determined character, finding himself excepted from pardon in the act passed for the settlement of Ireland, by Cromwell's parliament, had entered the French army ; and after attaining the rank of lieutenant general, was nominated viceroy of Catalonia, upon the conquest of that province : he also served in the Netherlands. He was now raised to the earldom of Inchiquin, obtained the restoration of his estates, a sum of £3,000 out of the treasury on account of losses and sufferings, together with satisfaction for pay and arrears of pay while captain-general and commander-in-chief of the army in Munster, at the rate of £10 a day, in treasury debentures. Clancrickarde, had he been alive, would doubtless have received

similar honours and rewards ; but he had died in the month of July, 1657, at Somerhill, in Kent, the seat to which he retired upon being excepted from pardon for life or estate by Cromwell.

It was at first intended to make Monk, duke of Albemarle, lord lieutenant of Ireland, but he declined the post, as too difficult for an English peer. Ormonde thus resumed the direction of affairs under circumstances every way flattering to his pride and improving to his fortune.* The pomp with which he made his entry into Dublin, and the acclamations with which he was hailed as he passed in state through the crowded streets, had never been exceeded in splendour and

* Ormonde's losses had been heavy, but they were now amply compensated. The additions made to his property, though not considerable in point of extent, were in point of value enormous. His tenure had been of the usual kind—bearing crown rent, and all arrears under this head were now forgiven. The next large gain accrued from the forfeiture of the vested rights of his tenants or vassals, who held by military tenure, and in point of fact possessed, in many instances, a more profitable interest than the head lord. All these tenants had been dispossessed as participators in the rebellion, and he now took their interests. A third acquisition was effected by the resignation of lands known to have formed part of the old palatinate of Ormonde, but which adventurers had settled upon or government had taken possession of during the late disturbances. These were now cleared and restored to the duke unencumbered. By these means his rental, which, before the war broke out, did not amount to £10,000 a year, was, after the war had terminated, raised to £80,000. There are writers, however, who still adopt Carte's opinion, and represent Ormonde as a heavy loser by his loyalty, and very generous in the sacrifices which he now voluntarily rendered for the public weal. Carte prints a debtor and creditor account of gains and losses, furnished by the agent of the Ormonde property, at the foot of which appears a dead loss of £868,590 ; but in this computation not a few items are altogether omitted, which were of the highest value. It may be perfectly true, as Carte sets forth, that arrears of pay and salary to a large amount were never satisfied ; and that a claim to 400,000 acres of land was resigned for £50,000 : nevertheless, if, upon a final settlement, we find the duke possessed of a better title to a more productive estate than any of his predecessors had ever possessed—if we compare his good fortune in securing so much, while many other noble inheritances were wholly destroyed,—and if we further take into consideration the value of the offices to which he was now appointed in England as well as in Ireland, which, with the patronage and influence attached to them, he continued to enjoy for many years,—we shall not be just if we treat the restoration as any other than a very profitable occurrence to the house of Ormonde.

cordiality. Unhappily for the country, he carried back to his old place his old principles. Some writers are surprised that this should have been the case; but if we call to mind the general enthusiasm of the period, and note the excited haste with which the nation rushed with open arms upon royalty and the ancient style of government, it will be easy to conceive how, to a man of Ormonde's temper and disposition, the king, the parliament, the public, and the current of events might seem to testify, with a grateful unanimity, that the disasters of the past had, in no small degree, been produced by opposition to his measures and neglect of his advice. Certain it is, at least, that he re-appeared as chief governor, confirmed at every point in his former policy. Trying as his misfortunes had been, they had neither softened his prejudices, modified his principles, nor enlarged his ideas. There is a certain obstinacy of character which is proof against the force of all experience; and of this quality, more pernicious in politicians than in other men, Ormonde partook largely. The loss of rank, office and power—his poverty and exile, appear to have taught him but one lesson, and that he made the invariable rule of his life ever after—it was, that any disadvantage, however heavy, is to be overcome in this world, if we will endure it without yielding to its pressure. Accordingly, whenever an opportunity offered, he failed not to enforce his settled opinions; and when the opportunity was denied, he reserved himself patiently for a more favourable time of action. This policy would have been excellent, if the opinions themselves had been suited to any condition of the circumstances with which he had to deal—being every way unsuitable, it is unnecessary to show how his repeated attempts to apply them only served to increase the difficulties of his position.

The great business of his administration, one which for years engrossed the attention of both governments, and the minds of all classes in Ireland, was the settlement of the forfeited lands, and the claims of the different parties to the war for pay and compensation, on account of their services, sufferings, and losses. The subject had been extensively handled, both by Charles I.

and Cromwell. There will be the less inconvenience felt, in reverting now to those proceedings, inasmuch as but little has hitherto been related of them—there seemed to be no course open for adoption more satisfactory than that of not entering upon transactions which form a distinct and important series in themselves, until a point had been reached, at which they could be treated as a connected whole, and disposed of together.

The 11 years' war originated in the general insecurity of private property, and the vexatious penalties imposed upon the religious worship of the majority of the people. For the first time in the history of Ireland, the aristocracy and large proprietors of land had been made to experience, at the hands of the king and his ministers, all the hardships of that oppressive interference with personal rights—that lawless disregard of ancient titles and established possessions—those arbitrary seizures and violent ejections, of which their ancestors had for ages given the native population so many galling and destructive proofs. This was the chief provocation to arms; the religious grievance was supplementary, and the longer duration of this war, compared with preceding insurrections, was occasioned by the superior character and greater means of the class of persons embarked in it—a class which felt to a man that their every worldly interest was staked on the issue—a class, moreover, which in all ages and countries has been more remarkable for attachment to the rights of property, than for devotion to the rights of conscience. This body had bought and paid for the justice, civil and religious, to which they were indisputably entitled. Notwithstanding that bargain and sale, the rapacity of the government was unsatisfied: their lands were still invaded, and their franchises abrogated, with lawless violence, in the guise of law. All former tyranny had been gentle compared with the insulting severities of the imperious Strafford. Even where the privilege of a practical accommodation was allowed, and the landowner met the demands of the crown half way, he was made to give up the fourth part of his estate, as the price of the new title to hold the remainder.

The grants issued against these fresh acquisitions of crown lands, added extensively to the confusion produced by subsequent events.

The king and the parliament of England lost no time in giving the sanction of their authority to stamp the war of 1641 with the character of spoliation and plunder, which had rendered the issue of all former outbreaks so barbarously penal. It had scarcely broken out, when the lords and commons, "taking into their consideration as well the necessity of reducing the rebels of Ireland to their due obedience, as also the great sums of money of late paid for the public and necessary affairs, and desirous to embrace all good and honourable ways tending to his majesty's greatness and profit, the settlement of that realm, and the ease of his majesty's subjects of England," voted that 2,500,000 acres of profitable lands, to be equally taken out of the four provinces, should be "assigned and divided amongst divers worthy and well affected persons," who were ready to disburse sums of money in the following proportions :—

To each adventurer of	$\text{£}200$	.....	1,000 acres in Ulster.
	$\text{£}300$	.....	1,000 do. in Connaught.
	$\text{£}450$	.....	1,000 do. in Munster.
	$\text{£}600$	.....	1,000 do. in Leinster.

This was a legislative bounty upon buccaneering—an outrageous forestalling of escheats. For at the time the vote passed no forfeitures had been declared—no lands confiscated. Nevertheless it was provided, that such only were to be seized as were of the best description:—they were to consist of meadow, arable, and profitable pasture; bogs, woods, and barren mountains, wherever they intervened, were to be cast in, over and above; the tenure was to be common socage, and the rent reserved to the crown of England was to be 1*d.* per acre in Ulster and Connaught, 2*d.* in Munster, and 3*d.* in Leinster.

Charles coupled with his assent to the propositions, of which these were the principal articles, a salvo for his conscience, and

an apology to his friends, by declaring “that he had not taken time to consider whether this course might not retard the reduction of the kingdom, by exasperating the rebels, and rendering them desperate of being received into grace again, if they should return to their obedience.”

The English parliament following up this vote with several acts of parliament, soon raised £400,000 for the Irish war. Nor were the lords justices remiss in turning it to account in Ireland. We find them inviting further succour from England in 1643, upon the assurance that forfeitures to the amount of £300,000 had already been effected.* Even the royalists did not disdain to derive a title to property from this foul source—as Ormonde, for instance, who wrote in the year 1643, as already stated, from his castle at Carrick-on-Suir, and implored the king to grant him, by virtue of the powers held to vest in the crown by these acts, the escheated houses in Kilkenny of his absent tenants in arms.

During a distracted term of 12 years, both the king and the parliament had been declaring forfeitures and making grants, and their respective followers had been seizing upon lands as the varying fortunes of the war afforded them power and opportunity. At last, in the year 1653, Cromwell undertook the difficult task of adjusting and giving a legal sanction to the various claims which had been accumulating in the midst of all this violence and rapine. By this time, however, the demands had become so numerous and heavy, that it became a matter of doubt whether the whole country would suffice to satisfy them. It was therefore deemed prudent to begin the proposed arrangement by declaring that it was “not intended to extirpate the Irish nation.” It was also found necessary to cut down the portions of several of the larger troops of wolves, who were ravenous to devour their prey. “In this transaction,” says Ludlow, “those of the army showed great partiality by confining the satisfaction of arrears only to such

* The rapidity with which the scheme of general confiscation was carried out, is commonly illustrated by the fact, that in two days all the Catholic nobility and gentry of the counties of Meath, Wicklow, and Dublin, together with 300 gentlemen in Kildare, were indicted for high treason, and true bills found against them.

as were in arms in August, 1649, which was the time when the English army, commanded by Lieutenant-General Cromwell, arrived in Ireland ; and though the hardships endured by those who were in arms before had been much greater, yet nothing could be obtained but such a proportion of lands in the county of Wicklow and elsewhere as was not sufficient to clear the fourth part of what was due to them." Cromwell's soldiers, therefore, may be said to have wrested the whole country to themselves.

All the conquered papists in the kingdom possessing more than £10, were divided into four classes, and each was subjected to a different degree of forfeiture—first, all persons who before November 10, 1642, had contrived, acted, or aided, the rebellion, murders or massacres which began in October, 1641 ; and all jesuits, priests, or other ecclesiastics, who had in any way therein contrived, aided, or abetted ; and all persons who since October 1, 1641, had slain any person not bearing arms for the English, or who, not being maintained in arms under the command and pay of the Irish against the English, had slain any person maintained in arms for the English ; and all persons who being in arms against the parliament of England, should not lay them down in 28 days, and submit to their authority.

Secondly, all persons (not being comprehended in any of the former qualifications) who had borne command in the war of Ireland against the parliament of England, were to be banished during the pleasure of the parliament, and to forfeit two-thirds of their estates : their wives and children, however, were to be assigned lands to the value of the other third, where parliament should appoint.

Thirdly, all persons of the popish religion (not being comprehended in any of the former qualifications) who had resided in the kingdom at any time, from October 1, 1641, to March 1, 1650, and had not manifested their constant good affection to the interest of the commonwealth of England, were to forfeit one-third of their estates, and to be assigned lands to the value of the other two-thirds, where the parliament should appoint.

Fourthly, all other persons who resided in Ireland within

the time aforesaid, and had not been in arms for the parliament, or manifested their good affection to its interest, having an opportunity to do so, were to forfeit one-fifth of their estates.

After the ordinance, which provided in the foregoing terms who should furnish the plunder, came another, which particularly explained who should appropriate it. The soldiers claiming arrears of pay were to take the forfeited lands in the counties of Tipperary, Waterford, or Limerick, in the King's and Queen's Counties, in Meath and Westmeath, Down, Antrim, Armagh, and in Louth, if necessary, the barony of Atherdee only excepted. The army still on service, but about to be disbanded, was to take other forfeited lands, commencing at Sligo, and running in a direction which would extend the line from the Shannon, by which it was proposed to keep the English and Irish separate and unmixed for ever after.

The various commissions appointed for putting these ordinances into execution—the surveys made to define the forfeited lands—the courts erected to determine military claims and Catholic delinquencies—had scarcely brought their labours to a conclusion, and the new proprietors had barely established themselves in their possessions, when the restoration opened up all rights and claims anew, and afforded another opportunity for sweeping injustice. The proceedings now resorted to proved to be far more unprincipled and unfeeling than could have been expected even from the ingratitude of a Stuart. Charles II. consulted in them his political interests only, and threw aside all considerations of generosity, virtue and propriety. The Cromwellians were in actual possession of the country, and he agreed with Ormonde, and the other Anglo-Irish landowners who offered the suggestion, that it would be most safe not to attempt to eject them, save and except from Ormonde's own estates and from the estates of a few equally well-disposed peers. They held moreover the parliamentary franchise and the corporations, and they had evinced no mean dexterity on their side, by voting large sums to the king, to the royal dukes his brothers, and to Ormonde. After much hesitation and delay, a paper drawn up by Broghill, now earl

of Orrery; Sir J. Clotworthy, afterwards Lord Masserene; and Sir Audley Mervyn, was eagerly caught at and acted upon by the king. In this document it was computed that there remained at present to be disposed of—

The estates of persons excepted by the act	£
of indemnity, valued at	14,000 per annum.
Gifts and gratuities of Cromwell's to persons that had not served	9,000
English debentures and debts struck off	10,000
Lands in the county of Dublin not disposed of	15,000
Lands in the county of Cork not disposed of	25,000
Lands in the county of Kerry not disposed of	7,000
Per annum	<u>£80,000</u>

Numerous estates in Connaught and Clare, to be discovered on further inquiry, were expected to increase this amount considerably, and thus it was asserted the king would be relieved from all his difficulties. A declaration for the settlement of Ireland was accordingly signed, November 30, 1660, in which Charles confirmed the possession of any lands held, May 7, 1659, under the acts of the English parliament, commonly called the Adventurers' Acts. Such deficiencies as might be proved before May 1, next following, were to be made good; all allotments of lands to soldiers in lieu of pay were confirmed, except church lands, estates obtained by bribery, prejudice, false admeasurement, or belonging to any of the regicides, or to persons who had endeavoured since the restoration to disturb the public peace, or had openly displayed their hostility to the king's restoration and government. Officers having unsatisfied claims for service before 1649, were to be satisfied for their respective arrears. Officers of the royal army were compounded with by receiving lands in satisfaction of their arrears of pay, at the rate of 12*s.* 6*d.* in the pound, and a rateable dividend of any surplus that might after-

wards accrue. Protestants, with certain exceptions, whose lands had been given to adventurers or soldiers, were to be restored, and the present possessors were to receive compensation, and were not to be made accountable for mesne profits. The Roman Catholics were differently dealt with. Innocent papists who had submitted to the Cromwellian settlement, and taken lands in Connaught, were to be bound by that act, unless they had subsequently served the king, in which case they were to be admitted to the recovery of the original estate, due compensation being first made for all repairs and improvements effected, and all incumbrances discharged by the actual possessor. Innocent papists in general were also to be restored, and the persons in possession of their lands reprise ; but no papist was to be restored to an estate lying within any corporate town—it being held politic to confine all corporations for the future exclusively to the Protestants. Thirty-six of the nobility and gentry were specially enumerated, who were to be restored at once, without being put to any proof of innocence, or other trouble.

On the other hand, no person was to be restored who had been concerned in the attempted surprise of Dublin Castle in 1641 ; who at or before the year 1643 had not belonged to the royal party, or had lived within the quarters of the Confederate Catholics—except the inhabitants of Cork and Youghal, who, as already described, had been forcibly expelled from their habitations, and driven into the hostile lines by Inchiquin and Broghill, who, strange to say, now received themselves even more than they had before possessed. No man was to be deemed innocent, who had been actively engaged in the confederacy before the peace of 1648, or who had adhered to the nuncio, the clergy, or the papal power, in opposition to the royal authority ; or who, having been excommunicated for his adherence to that authority, had acknowledged himself an offender, and obtained absolution. Whoever derived his title from persons guilty of these crimes—whoever claimed his estates on the articles of peace, and had thus acknowledged his concurrence in the rebellion—whoever in the Eng-

lish quarters had held correspondence with the Confederates, or sat in their councils, or acted under their commission—whoever had employed agents to treat with any foreign power for bringing forces into Ireland, or had acted in such negotiations, or harassed the country as “Tories,” (a name given to the marauding parties of disbanded soldiers who carried on a villainous system of war and plunder upon a petty but independent scale,)—after the departure of the marquis of Clanrickarde,—were all pronounced desperate rebels, and incapable of restitution.

This declaration, to borrow the language of the age, filled the hearts of the king's enemies with joy, and the hearts of his friends with despair. “The Irish,” says Leland, “complained that the qualifications necessary to ascertain their innocence, were so severely stated, that scarcely any of their nation could expect a sentence of acquittal.” The proverbial faithlessness of kings, and the particular insincerity of his father, were indicated in this document with a directness which gave the whole transaction the air of a practical satire. Even now the declaration reads like a string of invidious suggestions by Charles II. upon the life and reign of Charles I. The Protestant royalist received a composition, the Puritan republican full payment of his claims; the most suspicious passages in the late war were carefully marked out, as if to show that the high church party of the native Irish, who refused to trust the professions of the king and his lord lieutenant, had, with all their faults, an indisputable claim to the merit of having rightly discerned the character of the men they were dealing with, and proved not less sagacious than bold when they resolved not to be duped by their overtures. The two treaties of 1646 and 1649 were here referred to—all the solemn promises of Charles I. to the nuncio, on the true faith of a Christian, were significantly revived, and the host of persons who had been parties to the former, or believers in the latter, were specifically punished for their credulity, by being formally debarred from the only chance that was left them of recovering a remnant of their estates. If the most malignant

fanatic in the army of the Commonwealth had exhausted his mind in feigning a case to illustrate the baseness of kings, and the worthlessness of the Stuarts, he could not have produced one more caustic or conclusive than the real facts now before us establish.

Years were spent in negotiations, appeals, and dissensions upon this exciting question : the parliament of England as well as the parliament of Ireland; and the privy council in London,* participated in the various proceedings to which it gave rise ; the act of settlement was followed by the act of explanation ; but the main conditions of the original award were preserved throughout, and remained unaltered at the end. When all was over, Sir Audley Mervyn, one of the authors of the paper on which the king had at first been induced to declare himself, pronounced the act of settlement the Magna Charta of the Protestants of Ireland. The justice of the opinion given by so competent an authority is not to be called

* Of these suits, one offers a passage of memorable interest. Both parties were heard, on a particular occasion, before the king in council ; the united Protestant and Puritan interests, under the declaration, being supported by the earl of Orrery, and the Roman Catholic by Talbot, afterwards earl of Tyrconnel. These advocates were unequally matched. Orrery was distinguished, more, perhaps, than any man of his age, for his readiness and power in debating critical questions. He had displayed singular judgment and ability in the House of Commons, and came well prepared to this important discussion. Talbot, though not devoid of talent, was sanguine, impetuous, and indiscreet ; and more thoughtful of the strength of his case than the strength of the interests by which that case was opposed. On both sides, as a matter of course, loyal services rendered, losses sustained, and monstrous outrages inflicted by the adverse faction, were dwelt upon at length. But at the end, Orrery confounded his opponents by producing copies of the formal authority given at Jamestown for excommunicating Ormonde, and offering the kingdom of Ireland to a foreign prince. Charles affected so much indignation at these proofs of the disloyalty of the Irish, that he broke off the audience, and forbade any petition or further address to be made by their commissioners. The papers so effectively produced by Orrery on this occasion have often been referred to, as proofs that the Irish really deserved to fare ill at the king's hands ; but it is monstrous to describe any thing done at Jamestown as the act of the Roman Catholics of Ireland. The opinions of that body, as Charles should have remembered, had been pointedly expressed on this subject, when the supreme council ordered the jesuits' treatise to be burned by the common hangman, which advised the nation to throw off its allegiance to the English crown, and to choose as its sovereign a Catholic prince.

in question. Ormonde proved his attachment to the Protestant church by securing its re-establishment, and the restoration of its estates, before the debates upon the act of settlement were opened. His proposals for that purpose were cheerfully assented to, even by the Puritans, who felt indisposed to offend the government, and endanger the advantageous position in which they found themselves placed, by evincing their old horror of prelacy and the liturgy—abominations against which they had so profitably waged war. They consoled themselves in their inconsistency by making several fierce attempts to enforce the penal laws, and to eject the few Roman Catholics who had obtained seats in the House of Commons. But the two governments, English and Irish, sensible no doubt of the injustice already inflicted on the suffering body to which they belonged, refused to harass them further at such a crisis, and for the moment no fresh persecutions were inflicted. They were reserved for a future period. The present labours were adroitly confined, first, to the attainment of such legal provisions for the church as should secure to it all its property and ecclesiastical power; and secondly, to such a dispossession of the native Irish—who were almost to a man Roman Catholics—from their lands, as should also deprive them of political influence in the state. It was clearly foreseen that if these measures should be carried, the natives must cease to prove formidable, either to the crown of England or to the descendants of English settlers. And the measures were carried. Thenceforward the Protestant church, as the leading English institution in the country, became the rallying point and index of the English interest: to be a Protestant was to be an Englishman, and a member or a retainer of the despotic oligarchy which monopolized the state and the soil;—to be a Roman Catholic was to be a mere Irishman, and a slave, deprived of all political privileges and the rights of property.

The aim and end of this second settlement of Ireland, with the motives and conduct of the king, of Ormonde, and the other politicians, throughout the whole business, are demonstrated in a number of plain facts, which admit of no controversy. The

forfeited lands were in the hands of the Puritans ; and only 36 persons having been specially restored, the great body of the claimants was composed of Irish Roman Catholics. The question really at issue, therefore, was whether the proprietors of the soil were for the future to be Roman Catholics or Protestants, Irishmen or Englishmen. The number of the claims entered amounted to 4,000, and the time allowed for considering and adjudicating them would, upon a moderate computation, have admitted of a decision upon about one out of the 4,000. The first commissioners put upon the Court of Claims were themselves deeply interested in the confiscations ; but the universal outcry raised against an act of such open partiality, led to the appointment of Sir Richard Rainsford and six other Englishmen, principally lawyers, and all Protestants—men at the same time of reputation and integrity, who appear to have been neither ill-qualified nor disinclined to discharge the duties imposed upon them in a becoming manner. But the case was one which did not admit of being honestly dealt with : the commission accordingly was soon got rid of.

Rigorous as were the conditions imposed upon the unfortunate Irish, we learn from Cox the following result of the inquiries now made into their conduct :—“ The commissioners began to hear cases, February 13, 1663, and in that month declared 38 innocent, and 7 nocent ; in March, 53 innocent and 7 nocent ; in April, 77 innocent and 5 nocent ; and in the remaining months they decided 630 claims to the great dissatisfaction of the Protestants.” This was a result for which all parties were alike unprepared. The Protestants found vent for their anger in a resolution of the Commons, declaring, “ that they would apply their utmost remedies to prevent and stop the great and manifold prejudices and inconveniences which daily did and were likely to happen to the Protestants of Ireland by the proceedings of the Commissioners for executing the Act of Settlement.” The Puritans, confounded by the apparent failure of the scheme for enabling them to retain their usurped property by the aid of

this judicial contrivance, resolved to try and make the sword defend what the sword had gained. They formed an extended conspiracy, copied in its main features from Roger Moore's plan of a simultaneous seizure of the principal towns ; but the plot, being betrayed, like its original, was easily extinguished.* It produced nevertheless a portion of the desired fruit—the Court of Claims was adjourned, and Ormonde visited England to arrange some better mode of preventing the Irish from recovering their rights. He returned with the Act of Explanation and final arrangement, which had the effect of finally defeating justice to the Papists.† One provision of this rare piece of legislation will explain its general tenor. The first Court of Claims, as already explained, had decided, out of 4,000 claims, 817 only. In the teeth of that crying fact, it was definitively ordered—that every claim which had not previously been adjudged innocent, was for ever barred ; —3,283 cases, wholly untried and unconsidered, were by this summary process disposed of as criminal and untenable ! At the same time Ormonde rendered an important service to the political interests of his own religion by raising the first Protestant militia, in whose hands he placed 20,000 stand of arms.

Amongst the other misfortunes of the suffering Irish at this juncture, one is not to be omitted which added no light share of unpopularity to their cause. This was the accident of its adoption in the play of party tactics by such unprincipled politicians as the duke of Buckingham, Lord Ashley, afterwards

* This plot, like all others, had its bloody characters. The party, as we are told, was to rise in one night throughout the country, and to take the lives of all persons who would not consent to put down king, lords, and bishops, and set up "a sober and peaceful ministry" in their stead. Many Puritan ministers were imprisoned, seven members of the House of Commons were expelled, and five persons hung as parties to this conspiracy. Amongst its heroes was the notorious Colonel Blood, who afterwards attempted to hang the duke of Ormonde at Tyburn, and to steal the crown jewels at the Tower.

† There were two subsequent commissions—one in 1671, and one in 1672—granted to the energetic importunity of the Irish, and the undeniable hardship of their case ; but although on both occasions the powers given to inspect the Acts of Settlement and Explanation, and the disposal of forfeited lands, were large, nothing came of them.

earl of Shaftesbury, and other persons who were struggling for the formation of the cabal ministry. These men, bent upon removing Clarendon and Ormonde as principal obstacles to their assumption of office, seized upon the Irish grievances as opportune matter to perplex the king and embarrass his ministry. But they had no true sympathy with the cause they advocated; while pleading against one description of Irish injustice, they did not scruple to add another item to the heavy catalogue they had to deal with. These were the statesmen who clamoured during a period of two years for an act of parliament prohibiting the importation of Irish cattle as "a nuisance." This piece of ignorant legislation was unavailingly opposed by all the duke of Ormonde's influence. When it passed, the king marked his dissatisfaction of the mischievous spirit out of which it had sprung, by issuing a proclamation, in which, to compensate the Irish for the loss of their cattle trade, he gave them permission "to hold commercial intercourse with every other country, whether at peace or war with him." Ormonde, too, distinguished himself by some highly patriotic exertions to supply new occupations for the displaced capital and industry of the country. One of his earliest cares upon recovering his estates was the revival of the linen trade, first established by the earl of Strafford. He dispatched persons into the Low Countries to learn the methods practised, and the regulations observed there, and invited over from Brabant and other places a considerable number of experienced hands. One body of these industrious emigrants amounted to 500. Some of them were located at Chapel Izod under Colonel Richard Lawrence, where houses were built for the weavers, and a considerable trade in cordage, sail-cloth, and linen grew up. Lawrence afterwards added, on his own account, the manufacture of woollen cloth. When the Irish cattle trade was put down, the duke, being advised that there was a favourable opening for a foreign woollen trade from Ireland, obtained a report from Sir Peter Pett on the manufacture of woollen cloth, and settled large colonies of woollen weavers at Clonmel, Kilkenny, and Carrick on Suir. In these towns, which were his own pro-

perty, the weavers who now introduced the woollen trade were Protestant Walloons, 500 of whom Ormonde employed Captain Grant to bring from Canterbury. By this attention and other encouragements, principally grants of long leases at low rents, this trade flourished in process of time. Its greatest prosperity belonged to a later period, and was occasioned by parliamentary bounties : a mere relic of it still exists at Kilkenny and Carrick on Suir.

The triumph of Charles's favourites over the Irish trade in cattle—it was far from being the last achieved by English statesmen over the elementary principles of political economy and common sense—was prosecuted to more important results. Clarendon was ruined ; and Ormonde, after some awkward shuffling upon the king's part, was removed from office. In the intrigues by which this change was brought about, the earl of Orrery made his last appearance in the troubled drama of Irish affairs, sustaining upon the occasion his established character as a profound deceiver. The letters are extant in which, after Ormonde had detected his machinations, he protested his integrity in a strain of refined hypocrisy conceived and expressed in terms of the most polished eloquence. He intended obviously to make himself lord lieutenant; but though his party won the stake they played for, he for once missed to carry off the prize which had tempted him to take a hand in the game.

Ormonde was succeeded first by Lord Roberts, who was quickly removed, as being every way unsuitable; next by Lord Berkeley; and thirdly by the earl of Essex. There is little to be related of these administrations. Under the second, some slight relaxations of the penal laws, such as the appearance of Catholic bishops performing the common offices of their religion; and the nomination of a few country gentlemen of that persuasion to be justices of the peace, excited a furious clamour amongst the destructive faction which from about this period made itself notorious in the annals of the country, under the rallying cry of "Protestant Ascendancy in Church and State." Their strongest energies were roused into vigorous action by the production of some remarkable

charges of fraud in the proceedings under the Act of Settlement, and by the appointment of a commission to inquire into the manner in which that law was being carried into execution. Finding themselves unable to produce the desired effect upon the local government, or the court in London, they called upon the sectarian prejudices of the English parliament and people for sympathy and relief; and the appeal having been loudly answered, the obnoxious commission was superseded, and the lord lieutenant withdrawn. The earl of Essex, a man much superior to Lord Berkeley in point of talents and honesty, became disgusted with his situation at the end of five years, and solicited leave to retire. He could not obtain sufficient authority to administer the affairs of the country in the manner best calculated to promote the public good; and he would not compromise his independence by further countenancing a policy which his judgment condemned.

During the interval embraced by these two administrations, Ormonde occupied an undignified position at the English court. Much to the surprise of all men, and to the king's annoyance, he did not resign his office of lord steward when dismissed from the lord lieutenancy of Ireland. On no occasion was his character so fully revealed as this. The slights, the taunts, the affronts, which he now tamely brooked, are strong proofs to show that his nature was deficient in the qualities of true greatness. He convinced the world that his virtue was without pride, and would not resent indignity; that his honour, however pure, was of the most submissive kind; and that, where his interest was at stake, he could exhibit the resignation of a martyr. For the sake of his office and his standing at court, he was now content to endure an extent of disgrace little short of personal insult. The king, his courtiers, and the ministry, put no restraints upon their ill treatment of him. Charles, we are told by Carte, made it a rule to receive him with the most mortifying coldness, and to demonstrate, in the most public manner, that his presence was offensive and his attention fulsome. He was never consulted and seldom spoken to; and yet he waited daily at the palace, and took his seat at

every council, as if he was in the full enjoyment of the king's favour and possessed the confidence of his ministers.

Leland, and several writers after him, have paid the duke of Ormonde some high compliments for his conduct under these painful circumstances. In their estimation it was praiseworthy upon his part to maintain his position without concealing his sentiments on public affairs; without displaying any resentment; without deferring to the king's mistresses; without intriguing with the opposition, or making any exertion to vindicate his own or the public wrongs. So well did he manage to preserve an influence against the odds now brought to bear upon him, that "in the drawing-room his virtues and conciliating address," says Leland, "even in that profligate court, attracted a little circle around him, of those who had not yet lost all shame, independence of condition, and spirit." On such occasions the king, not daring to show him any civility, was abashed and confounded. "Sir," said the profligate wit Buckingham, "I wish to know whether it be the duke of Ormonde that is out of favour with your majesty, or your majesty with the duke of Ormonde? For, of the two, you seem to be most out of countenance here."

As the generality of persons will be more disposed to relish Buckingham's wit than to commend Ormonde's patience, it is but fair to give the view taken by the latter of himself in this business. He compared himself to a good old clock cast into a corner, but which always points right. How admirably he could preserve his temper in the midst of his disgrace, is well exhibited in a reply he one day made to Colonel Cary Dillon. That officer had solicited his interest in some suit, declaring that he had no friends but God and his grace. "Alas! my poor Cary," replied the duke, "thou couldst not have named two friends in the world who have so little interest at court."

Some difficulty has evidently been felt by those who have studied Ormonde's character, in endeavouring to supply a rational explanation of his behaviour during this uninteresting period of his life. To urge that he was actuated abstractedly by a sense of disinterested virtue, or religious devotion; or

more probable still, that a mixture of passiveness and obstinacy, naturally inherent in his constitution, will sufficiently account for his extreme subserviency; are hypotheses equally open to strong objections. Some more animating and powerful principle must have been at the bottom of a series of actions maintained for so many years with such pertinacious consistency. To us, Ormonde has always appeared to have been a man essentially stubborn, selfish, and crafty. These were the governing traits of his character; they are plainly distinguishable throughout all his negotiations and proceedings during the eleven years' war; and they remove, as soon as they are recognised, many of the doubts, which otherwise obscure our perception of the motives by which this strange passage of his life was regulated. We should remember, moreover, that he had Lord Clarendon's case before his eyes. There were points connected with that nobleman's fall, which could not fail to have operated as a warning to his friend. While Clarendon could face his enemies and meet the king, his person and property remained secure: it was not until he was driven away from court that his ruin was effected. Upon the mind of Ormonde, which was observant, and to some extent sagacious, a deep impression must have been produced by this direct example. He applied it to his own case; and that he might not again suffer banishment and the loss of his princely estates, he took the determined resolution upon which we have seen him acting with a perseverance so extraordinary and a fidelity so humiliating.

Such was the life of Ormonde, from the year 1668 to the year 1677. At the court, we see in him much that fills us with wonder without exciting any admiration. In Ireland, however, he supported his rank in a more becoming manner, and may be said to have enjoyed a high popularity. Even the Roman Catholics united in offering him manifestations of respect and attachment. True, he had on more than one critical occasion not shown himself their friend, but he had never proved their active enemy; and there was always something to hope from the gratitude of a man who received honours

while out of favour at court. His style of living, moreover, was upon a scale which always imposes upon the multitude. The castle of Kilkenny, to which he had moved from the castle at Carrick on Suir, was a court in itself, where two hundred gentlemen every day sat down to table.

At length the period drew nigh at which he was to govern in Ireland for the fourth time; and it is singular to remark that the influence which brought him back to power was the last by which we should have supposed such an event to have been produced. For several years Charles had not exchanged a familiar or confidential word with him. For a whole year, though daily in attendance, the king had not deigned to speak to him at all. In the month of April, 1677, however, the king suddenly invited himself to sup with Ormonde. The entertainment, upon which the duke spent £2,000, was cheerful; there were no explanations, discussions, or references to the past. On parting, the king signified his intention of again employing him in Ireland; but the splendour of his hospitality seems only to have made Charles reflect, without pleasure or commendation, upon the singularity of his general conduct. The next morning he saw the duke at a distance, advancing to pay his usual respects. "Yonder comes Ormonde," said Charles; "I have done all in my power to disoblige that man, and to make him as discontented as others; but he will be loyal in spite of me." From this moment he was publicly regarded as the new lord lieutenant,—not for his constancy, however meritorious—not for his talents, however respectable—not for his attachment to the Protestant interest, however sincere—and still less by way of reparation for the neglect and the ill-treatment, however undeserving, to which he had for nine years been subjected;—but solely because the duke of York, whose influence was now in the ascendant at court, could light upon no better expedient to prevent one man, the duke of Monmouth—whom of all others he most feared and hated,—from being appointed to this situation, and enjoying in it a foretaste of the royal authority which he was correctly supposed to be bent upon obtaining. The devoted patron of

the Roman Catholic religion thus became the instrument of replacing at the head of Irish affairs the ablest and most persevering assertor of the Protestant interest in that country. Such is the chance medley of politics—such are the inconsistencies which designing statesmen are continually driven to commit.

In forming a judgment of Ormonde's last administration, we may fairly enough permit ourselves to be influenced by the fact, that Cox finds nothing to relate of it but a series of measures adopted to harass the Roman Catholics. When the Popish plot broke out in England, Ormonde countenanced the wicked delusion in Ireland, by ordering all officers and soldiers to repair to their garrisons; and all bishops, priests, and other dignitaries of the church of Rome, to depart out of the kingdom. Further proclamations followed in the same strain. November 2, 1678, all Papists were commanded to deliver up their arms by a certain day. November 20, all Papists were forbidden to enter the castle of Dublin or any other fort or citadel; and the markets of Drogheda, Wexford, Cork, Limerick, Waterford, Youghall, and Galway, were ordered to be held outside those towns. Another proclamation of the same date, says Cox, offered rewards for the discovery of military men going to mass,—the scale was £10 for every commissioned officer, £5 for every trooper, and 4*s.* for every foot soldier. In December there was a proclamation ordering a strict search to be made after bishops and priests. In March, 1679, it was directed by proclamation that the Popish priest of every parish in which a murder or robbery was committed, should be seized and transported beyond the seas, unless within fourteen days the offender was delivered up to justice. A reward was next offered for the discovery of a Jesuit or a titular bishop; and then it was ordered that the Popish inhabitants should be removed from Galway, Limerick, Waterford, Clonmel, Kilkenny, and Drogheda. In consequence of this proclamation, says Cox, "many were expelled, but by the stupidity of the Protestants let in again."

We are not to suppose that these edicts were innocuous

demonstrations, and that Ormonde was not seriously bent upon reducing his Roman Catholic fellow-countrymen to an abject condition of political inferiority. He repeatedly evinced, in his conduct towards them, all the deliberation which can be required to prove a fixed intention and determined purpose. He did not, however, run into excesses, but reproduced the half-measure course of action which he had observed on more than one previous occasion. As he had executed only upon "moderate terms" the vindictive mandate of the lords justices to pillage and plunder the country at the beginning of the eleven years' Civil War, so he now put gently into force the persecuting policy of the reign of Charles II. He seized upon a vague charge of rebellion, and kept close prisoner, in Dublin Castle, Talbot, the Roman Catholic archbishop of Dublin, an aged ecclesiastic, lingering in the last stage of a dangerous disease; and he transported to England another Roman Catholic prelate, Plunket, archbishop of Armagh, whose subsequent trial and execution at Tyburn form one of the blackest passages of the disgraceful plot which included him amongst its numerous victims.

In the closing scenes of his long career, Ormonde's principles and conduct underwent no change. He participated as little in the unprincipled fury of Shaftesbury and the Titus Oates politicians who embroiled England under Charles II., as he had sympathized with the malignity of the Parliamentarians and Puritans who prostrated the monarchy under Charles I.;—yet he yielded to and acted with both of these factions. He was led to put a constraint upon his natural dislike of both by his ambitious love of office and a wary conviction that his vast property was only safe from spoliation while he held the power to protect it in his own hands. Religion had long swayed every other consideration, public and private, with the great body of the people in the two countries; and we are not without distinct evidence of Ormonde's real sentiments upon this important question. Writing officially to Lord Anglesey in 1680, he observes, that "to tell him of the insolent deportment and signal perfidy of the Popish clergy of

Ireland, is to preach to him that there is pain in the gout ;” and he protests that he would rather be rid of them than of that disease. Writing privately, during the period of this last administration, to Sir R. Southwell, he says, “ I know well that I am born with some disadvantages, in relation to the present conjuncture, besides my natural weakness and infirmities ; and such as I can no more free myself from, than I can from them. My father lived and died a Papist ; and only I, by God’s merciful providence, was educated in the true Protestant religion, from which I never swerved towards either extreme,—not when it was most dangerous to profess it, and most advantageous to quit it. I reflect not upon any who have held another course, but will charitably hope, that though their changes happened to be always on the prosperous side, yet they were made by the force of present conviction. My brothers and sisters, though they were not very many, were very fruitful, and very obstinate (they will call it constant) in their way ; their fruitfulness hath spread into a large alliance, and their obstinacy hath made it altogether Popish. It would be no small comfort to me if it had pleased God it had been otherwise, that I might have enlarged my industry to do them good, and serve them, more effectually to them, and more safely to myself. But, as it is, I am taught by nature, and also by instruction, that difference of opinion, concerning matters of religion, dissolves not the obligations of nature ; and in conformity to this principle, I own not only that I have done, but that I will do, my relations of that or any other persuasion all the good I can. But I profess, at the same time, that if I find any of them who are nearest to me acting or conspiring rebellion, or plotting against the government and the religion established amongst us, I will endeavour to bring them to punishment sooner than the remotest stranger to my blood.”

The sincerity of these opinions was thoroughly understood by the duke of York, who was roused by the loud complaints of the Roman Catholics to make strong efforts for the subversion of an administration formed by his influence. By an

odd coincidence, Shaftesbury, the great fabricator of plots and promoter of cabals, laboured assiduously to accomplish the same object from very different motives. For some time, however, the king resisted with firmness every overture made for this purpose. Instead of yielding to the pressure against Ormonde, he for a while sustained him firmly. In 1682 he sent for him to London, where, by way of rewarding his services in Ireland, he made him an English duke. Ormonde now spent two years in England, cognizant if not participating in an endless variety of intrigues and machinations. In the year 1684 he returned to Ireland, and resumed his office ; but though his old enemy Shaftesbury was now no more, the power, to which he had so long tenaciously clung, was at last about to be taken from him. Charles wrote him a letter, in which he announced that it was absolutely necessary to effect many and very general changes in Ireland, and on that account to transfer the lord lieutenancy to the earl of Rochester. Before this could be done, Charles died, but James II. lost no time, upon ascending the throne, in completing the arrangement. "Ormonde and his council had barely time to proclaim the new sovereign with great solemnity but dismal countenances," says Cox, "when the recal of the lord lieutenant was publicly notified." In retiring from the government of Ireland, Ormonde may be said to have taken leave also of public life, for, with the exception of the resistance which he offered in the House of Lords to the proposed repeal of the penal laws and the Test Act, we find his name associated with no further measures of importance. He died August 4, 1688, aged 78, and was buried in Westminster Abbey, where the bodies of his wife and two sons had been previously consigned to a vault long known as the Ormonde vault.

The character of the duke of Ormonde has been frequently reviewed of late years, and the more it has been examined the less it has been esteemed. Carte's biography, prolix, partial and heavy, created, and for some time supported, an exaggerated idea of his merits and importance. No one thought

of reading two enormous folios, with a third volume of appendices ; but every one took it for granted that the man must really have been great, concerning whom so much could have been published in so expensive a form. Time, however, never fails to rub off the lacquer of fictitious reputations. If, in now seeking to form our estimate of the talents and public services of Ormonde, we turn not to the eulogy of his biographer, but to his actions, we shall find, upon a close and impartial examination of them, that no honest judge can praise him highly. During the whole course of his long life he enjoyed, except under the Commonwealth, an almost unbroken tenure of office. The servant of a bad man is not necessarily a bad man himself ; but in this case it may be safely asserted that he was a very patient one : and in truth patience was almost the only virtue which Ormonde possessed. Even that he carried to an extreme point, at which it ceased to command admiration. We see, while tracing his career, that he failed repeatedly to preserve his own dignity ; and we lose, after making that discovery, our respect for his character. He endured the insincerity of Charles I. and the profligacy of Charles II. with equal resignation ; and though frequently condemning the policy and the actions of both, he co-operated with them, and zealously promoted their interests. This was generally done, however, without partaking in their vices or being infected by the contagion of their examples. He stands almost alone amongst the public men of his age, eminent for the morality of his private life and the consistency of his political principles. While some of his compeers forfeited all public esteem by practising shameless tergiversations, he continued to be always popular with his party by the constancy with which he laboured to strengthen their interest and to preserve their superiority. While others of his order were wasting away their estates in courtly excesses and extravagant debaucheries, he was steadily improving his fortune. And yet he was neither mean nor avaricious. His retinue and establishment were maintained on a scale commensurate with his

elevated rank and large income. When he opposed the exclusion of Irish cattle from the English markets, he displayed a commendable degree of information, spirit, and ability,—the value of which it would be ungenerous to lessen, as some writers have done,—by intimating that, being the largest landed proprietor in Ireland, he was sure to be the heaviest sufferer under the edict. Neither is it fair to speak lightly of his efforts to compensate for the loss of this export trade, by developing new sources of emolument in its stead. It is true that the whole commercial and industrial system of the country was then a rude compound of error, partiality and abuse—it is also true that established evils of this kind are strengthened by attempts to palliate their consequences; but it is not the less a fact, that men in general will seldom set its true value upon any right, or take pains to secure it from being abrogated or abridged, before they have found by experience that it is profitable. Upon this ground the introduction of manufactures was a judicious and patriotic act. It promoted the employment of the people; and by assisting the master and the workman to acquire property, raised them both in the scale of civilization, and gave them additional strength to contend against their powerful rivals in England for that full share of the privileges of the constitution which was then and long after denied them.

Upon the whole, the duke of Ormonde may be fairly pronounced a man of a careful mind and sedate constitution—temperate and firm in his opinions and in his actions—who shunned the excesses and mitigated many of the evils of an era full of guilt and errors; but who had neither the genius to discover how these were to be substantially removed, nor the energy to carry into full effect the imperfect measures suggested by others for their correction. He was necessarily defeated, therefore, as a politician and a general by the Roman Catholics and the Puritans; and he claims our notice and remembrance solely on account of the one great fact accomplished during his successive administrations. When first he undertook the direction of affairs, five-sixths of the landed pro-

priests of the country, upon a moderate computation, were Roman Catholics. While he governed, this large majority was wholly dispossessed and forced to disappear; so that when at last he was displaced, we find the odds turned the other way, and the fee simple of the soil almost wholly transferred to Protestants or to Puritans, who, in order to retain the lands he had been the chief means of securing to them, had become members of the established church. The Irish fabric of Protestant ascendancy in church, state, and property, was thus mainly raised by James Butler, twelfth earl, and first duke of Ormonde,—a fatal labour preceded by one civil war, and followed by another.

By this prominent historical fact, different men, according to their prejudices, will paint the complexion of his career either bright or dark; and the character of the individual will be not unfairly judged of by the means to which he stooped in producing the important result for which his government is memorable. His long resistance to the claims of the Confederates, notwithstanding the king's importunities in their behalf; the treaties by which he was nevertheless induced twice over to grant those claims in the most formal manner, and by which he solemnly bound himself to maintain the rights conceded as portions of the law and constitution of the country; and lastly, the responsible part he took in violating those treaties, and in conducting two administrations under which every former concession was swept away, and the Roman Catholics were deprived of their property, their civil franchises, and religious privileges;—these, the leading and most influential passages of his mature life, will teach us that Ormonde had few pretensions to rank as an honourable or consistent politician, and none to the higher praise of having served his country with good effect. His policy contemplated the utter prostration of the native Irish, and his measures were speedily followed by the complete realization of his policy. He was about the last of the original race of adventurers who swayed the destinies of the people; and he pressed their fate severely down to the lowest depths of suffering and degradation.

CHAPTER XI.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION
WITH ENGLAND—*continued.*

JAMES II. AND TALBOT, EARL OF TYRCONNEL.—THE REVOLUTION OF 1688 DECIDED IN IRELAND.—THE ROMAN CATHOLICS IN POWER.—JAMES II. LANDS IN IRELAND, AND HOLDS A PARLIAMENT.—LEGISLATIVE MEASURES PASSED.—INCIDENTS AND CHARACTER OF THE WAR.—ADDITIONAL CONFISCATIONS.—TREATY OF LIMERICK VIOLATED, AND PERSECUTION CONFIRMED.—UTTER PROSTRATION OF THE NATIVE IRISH AND THE ROMAN CATHOLICS FOR A LONG SERIES OF YEARS.

The short reign of James II., ending in the Revolution of 1688, was in some of its more interesting points a passage of Irish rather than of English history. In England, the rejection of one king and the substitution of another in his place, was a bloodless change suggested by the intelligence, and carried without violence by the determination, of the people. In Ireland only, where obstinate misgovernment had deadened all sympathy with the feelings of the sister country, the fugitive monarch found officers and soldiers eminent for their skill and valour, to fight with honour, though without success, for his claims to a crown which he was every way unworthy to hold. The revolution of 1688 was thus confirmed, if not decided, by Irish battles.

The government of Ireland under James II., as under his immediate predecessors, fell almost exclusively into the hands of an individual. Richard Talbot, earl of Tyrconnel, a man elevated to station and command by the commotions of the age in which he lived, was born at the commencement of the war of the Confederates. Very early in his career he was a

witness to scenes which produced an indelible impression upon his mind. He was in Drogheda, and yet a boy, when the town was sacked by Cromwell. The cruelties committed on that and other dreadful occasions, engendered in him a spirit of hostility against English tyranny, and an abhorrence of religious fanaticism, which ever after continued to exercise a powerful influence upon the actions of his life. Always conspicuous for attachment to his sovereign, he had been the companion of his exile, and first acquired the personal friendship of James II. in the days of their common adversity. Returning to Ireland at the restoration, he naturally took a leading position in the ranks of those who relied with confidence upon the fulfilment of the articles of peace established by Ormonde in the year 1648, as the just reward of their loyalty to the house of Stuart. But the professions of the exiled prince were lost in the policy of the restored monarch. Charles II. became the patron of the English Protestant interest in Ireland; and the rights of the Roman Catholics, however well founded and strongly guaranteed, were utterly incompatible with that scheme of government. Talbot was one of the original agents appointed by his suffering fellow-countrymen to appeal against the king's declaration for the settlement of Ireland; and hopeless as upon the first trial that cause was shown to be, we recognise the natural warmth and vigour of his character in the repeated efforts he afterwards made to mitigate its extreme rigours, and to expose the enormous frauds committed in carrying it into execution. But energy and courage were almost the only qualities by which he was in any way adapted to discharge the duties of a negotiator upon so trying an occasion. These qualities he soon displayed in a striking manner. His party, perceiving their suit ill-received and their presence unwelcome, adopted the reasonable opinion that the duke of Ormonde was not their friend. It was agreed that Talbot should remonstrate with him upon the subject, and he did so, but with so little address, that finding he could make no impression by his arguments, he upbraided his opponent with duplicity, and challenged him

to fight. This mode of arranging the points at issue having been declined, a complaint was lodged with the privy council, and Talbot was immediately committed to the Tower, from which he was only released upon making an humble submission.

In 1678, Talbot was one of the numerous persons arrested as conspirators in the Popish plot, but so little could be adduced against him that he was allowed to leave the kingdom. Upon his return a natural feeling of resentment led him to offer a determined opposition to the government of his old antagonist, the duke of Ormonde. The removal of that nobleman having been unceremoniously effected by James II. as soon as he became king, Talbot was created earl of Tyrconnel, and made lieutenant-general of the Irish army, while the earl of Clarendon was sent over to succeed, as lord lieutenant, Primate Boyle, and Forbes, earl of Granard, who had been lords justices for a short interval, and had given equal dissatisfaction to Protestants and Puritans,—Boyle being reputed to be half a Papist in his religious opinions, and Granard a sincere patron of dissent. Ere long, Clarendon retired, and for the first time since the introduction of the Protestant religion, a Roman Catholic, in the person of Tyrconnel, assumed the office of chief governor.

Up to a very recent period, almost all English writers of reputation or authority have treated of Irish affairs during the reign of James II. without moderation or fairness. Regarding the English and the Irish policy of that unfortunate sovereign, as emanating from the same source and directed to the same ends, they have overlooked essential differences in the condition of the two countries, and have characterized the persons now entrusted with power in Ireland as the determined abettors of despotism and bigotry. If they are to be judged, however, either by the measures which they advised, or by those which they carried into execution, they will not be found to have deserved much either of odium or dispraise.

The attempt to establish the Roman Catholic religion as the religion of the state in England, was deservedly unsuccessful,

because it was opposed to the principles and feelings of the people of the country. But the Englishman who vindicates the spirit of his forefathers in resisting that unwarrantable interference with the rights of conscience, is bound by the force of the rule, which he properly applies in his own case, to extend a corresponding liberty to others. Upon no other terms can civil or religious independence be held to exist; upon no others is it possible to conceive that any country can remain internally at peace, in which different forms of religion happen to be cultivated. The principle which justified the erection of the Protestant church as the state establishment in England, demanded a similar ascendancy for the Roman Catholic church in Ireland. English statesmen, however, have invariably refused, in religion as well as politics, to reduce their doctrines of government into practice equally in the two countries. The only opportunity ever possessed by the Irish people of dealing freely in a legislative capacity with their own interests in these respects, occurred during the short reign of James II. It will be instructive to notice how far they took advantage of the powers then placed in their hands, to rectify preceding errors, or to prove to the world, as their enemies so constantly asserted, that they were unfit to be entrusted with the rights and franchises of freemen. The king alone excepted, it was not Englishman against Irishman, but Protestant that was now fearfully arrayed against Catholic. For although religious considerations weighed more with James II. than any others, he never stood clear of national prejudices.*

* The Roman Catholics of Ireland suffered a heavy load of obloquy and a long train of persecutions for their attachment to James II. The punishment due to his offences against the constitution were visited upon their heads with a malignity which soon reduced the two religions to the same level of intolerance. A more heartless persecutor does not appear in history than the English Protestant of the eighteenth century in Ireland. But James is to be considered less as a Roman Catholic than as a Stuart. All the vices and defects of his grandfather and his father were condensed in his character, and strongly developed in his actions. It was his nature, and not his religion, that made him a tyrant when on the throne, and a patroon after he had abandoned it. In other respects, there is little to be observed of him that is not also to be said of all bigots, who are ever essentially the same, no matter what the form of religion may be under which they are reared.

Protestant ascendancy he sought anxiously to destroy—the English interest in Ireland he steadily laboured to preserve. But with the Protestants of Ireland, every relaxation of the penal laws, however slight, operated as a flaw in the title-deeds of their estates. The confiscations sanctioned by the Act of Settlement rested upon the presumption that Roman Catholicism and disloyalty were different denominations of the same offence, and equally dangerous to the state and to its most ardent supporters. To advance an Irishman, or to favour a Papist, was to impugn the justice of the established order of things, and open out an endless roll of smothered claims to a re-distribution of almost all the landed property of the country. So strong was this feeling, that as soon as Lord Clarendon was recalled, and Lord Tyrconnel was made lord lieutenant, Protestants, we are told, fled terror-struck from the country.* If conscience-struck had been coupled with terror-struck, a more correct explanation would perhaps have been given of the panic. The dread of Irish cruelty could not have prevailed to such an extent as that described, without a commensurate sense of the depth of Irish wrongs.

We are to bear in mind the state in which Ormonde had left the country. When first that nobleman became lord lieutenant, the Roman Catholics were freely admitted to serve the crown and the public in a civil as well as military capacity, and they also formed a principal portion of the corporate bodies through the island. But before Ormonde ceased to govern, the Roman Catholics could neither hold a political employment, nor even reside within a corporate town. Accordingly, when James II. ascended the throne, to give to the

* Fifteen hundred Protestant families took ship and abandoned their homes, when Lord Clarendon sailed for England. The consternation, particularly in the large towns, was terrific. Men, women, and children rushed to the shore, and wildly embracing the sailors' knees, implored that they might be taken on board. Property to a large amount was left behind; they who fled were overwhelmed with grief; they who could not obtain a passage were wild with despair. What ideas of past oppression are suggested by these accounts! How tremendous must the persecution have been, when the bare possibility of a power to retaliate could excite alarm so universal and excessive!

Catholic was not merely to take from the Protestant, but to invade the exclusive right to power, place, and property, held to vest in the latter, who, moreover, feeling that one successful innovation is often enough to sweep a whole system away, now raised his loudest outcry against the measure, which was in itself legitimate enough : for James had an undoubted right to change his lord lieutenant, and to appoint a Roman Catholic to the office. But all the measures of that king have been equally blamed—a few that were good, as well as the many that were bad. The perverseness of his nature was like a fate that ruled him—always unfortunate. The best act of his reign was the most illegal. Finding it impossible to procure an act of parliament for the repeal of the test and penal laws, he published a Declaration of Indulgence to all religious sects, which he ordered to be read in the churches. The principle enounced was admirably just, but the form in which it appeared assumed the right to declare laws without the consent of parliament, and was properly resisted as an act of despotism.

The Irish, inured to invasions of the constitution, were delighted to find the royal prerogative strained to do them service. Clarendon and Tyrconnel were applauded when they changed the judges, placing a majority of Roman Catholics upon the bench ; when they dismissed from the service a number of officers and soldiers, enlisting Roman Catholics in their stead ; and when they forced the corporations to resign their charters, and then arranged that, for the future, two-thirds of those bodies should consist of Roman Catholics and one-third of Protestants. These are the cardinal offences charged against the Irish administration, before the abdication of James ; and there is something ludicrous in the unreasonableness with which they have been assailed. Good taste and wisdom in all things were far from constituting the qualities by which Tyrconnel's government was distinguished ; but the virulence is monstrous which censures him for admitting a number of Roman Catholics to the bench, the army, and the corporations, but which passes over, without a comment, their

total exclusion by Ormonde and so many subsequent lieutenants. The partiality of these censurers is too furious to deserve serious reproof or exposure.

The principal measure of Tyrconnel's first parliament has been abused in the same spirit and with as little cause. Heads of a bill were framed, to indemnify the Catholics who had been declared innocent by the Court of Claims during the late reign, and to provide a new commission for the adjudication of the claims which had not been hitherto heard. The consequences of such a law would no doubt have been inconvenient in the extreme to a number of persons; but, on the other hand, a much larger number had been suffering for years from a total denial of justice. Under such circumstances, an honest government must have regarded legislation upon the subject as an imperative duty. If it be argued that restitution would have been impolitic certainly, and probably impossible, it will still be evident that compensation was due to the injured; and as that was not to be determined without some definite authority to settle the details, the proposed bill was required on more grounds than one. The mob in England, however, raised a clamour, and defeated the intention. The fugitive Protestants, through the press and in society, had made the usual appeal to national and religious antipathies. When Chief Baron Rice, a man of profound learning and the purest character, repaired to London, as one of the agents of the Catholics, to argue the question before the privy council, the rabble hooted him through the streets, and formed a mock procession to the court, carrying long poles before him, with potatoes stuck at the tops, and crying out, "Room for the ambassadors from Ireland." The tumult grew so loud, and the excitement so dangerous, that even James was afraid to make an effort in favour of his friends, and the bill was thrown out.

After William III. had landed and James II. had escaped to France, Tyrconnel's conduct was not destitute of address. He dissembled with the Protestants, and sought to quiet their alarm by expressing his desire for an amicable arrangement,

while he kept up the courage of his own party by strengthening the army. Finding something more decisive called for than diplomatic demonstrations, he opened negotiations with the new and with the old king, and seems to have been at first disposed to yield the government to William. The terms offered to him were certainly inviting—full security of person and property to the Catholics—equality of civil rights, and possession of one-third of the churches in the kingdom: and these would, to all appearances, have been accepted, but for the agent chosen by William to make them the basis of an agreement with Tyrconnel. That agent was Richard Hamilton,* a brave officer and a man of ability, but in this instance unfortunately misled by the dissensions openly raging between the English Whigs and Tories, into a belief that the restoration of James would be secure, if his party should hold out in Ireland. He therefore dissuaded Tyrconnel from submitting to William, and encouraged him to maintain the kingdom for his lawful sovereign. Another destructive civil war was the consequence of this advice.

The series of military operations beginning with the siege of Derry† and ending with the siege of Limerick, are too well known to be related here. The bravery with which both these cities were held from a superior force was heroic. The defence of Londonderry, crowned as it was with success, appears the more brilliant affair; but Limerick, though ultimately reduced, claims the honour of having in the first siege repelled the English commanded by William in person, after

* This gentleman's sense of honour was not of the quickest kind. He was a prisoner in England, when William proposed that he should go to Ireland, and gain Tyrconnel's assent to the terms mentioned. He was set free upon undertaking the mission; but he urged hostilities instead of a surrender, and took up arms against the objects of his own embassy. Curiously enough, he was the only prisoner of rank taken in the first battle William fought in Ireland—the battle of the Boyne.

† True courage is always humane. The Derry men, who on this occasion distinguished themselves by an endurance of privations never exceeded, treated their enemies with great forbearance. They allowed the governor, Lundy, and the magistrates, who would have surrendered the town, to depart uninjured; and they contented themselves by depriving the few Catholics who inhabited the town of their arms.

he had reduced Wexford, Duncannon, Waterford, and Clonmel. The battle of the Boyne, in which both kings took the field, may be said to have been in a manner lost before it was fought—in consequence of the perverseness of James, who insisted upon engaging the enemy contrary to the advice of his generals, and who bespoke defeat by hiring a vessel to convey him to France in the event of misfortune. Athlone, long gallantly attacked and more gallantly defended, was mainly captured through the blind confidence of General St. Ruth, a perfect Frenchman of the old school, whose courage and skill in war were considerable, but whose vanity was excessive. At the battle of Aughrim, the ruin of the English army was all but complete, when a cannon ball suddenly deprived the Irish of their commander, and an overwhelming defeat ensued.

It is almost impossible to trace the events of this war, and to resist one impression constantly presented to the mind. The evil genius which seems always to have oppressed the Irish, pursue them relentlessly throughout its whole course. Ever and anon an ominous fate appears striking their assiduous labours with sterility, while destiny repeatedly turns aside the tide of success at the moment it is about to flow full upon their ranks. We see Schomberg in his first campaign, notwithstanding the men and money voted by the English parliament, penned up in his intrenchments near Dundalk, the flux and a burning fever wasting his army, which, at last, crawls into winter quarters through a lane formed by the piled up bodies of the unburied dead. Yet James was in the field all this time, and was warmly urged by Marshal Rosen to destroy an enemy incapable of defending themselves. At the close of another campaign, we behold William, notwithstanding the battle of the Boyne, repulsed at the siege of Limerick, with the loss of 2,000 men, whence leading his diminished army away hopeless of success, he withdraws to England, at once victor and vanquished. We are struck by these remarkable occurrences,—by the high spirit with which, to the last, the Irish maintained a sinking cause; by the numbers who rushed to arms, as death swept numbers from the field;

by the length of time to which they protracted the war, and by the force required to subdue them. That force amounted to no less than six and thirty thousand men—veterans gathered from various nations—the wild and morose Enniskilleners,* sprung from the Levellers and Covenanters of the old civil war, hardened by their prejudices, and infuriated by their fanaticism—Danes, Germans, and Dutch, who had spent their lives in arms—the black banditti of the “Thirty years’ war,” practised in all crimes, and familiar with abominations too horrid to describe—who literally lived on murder and rapine—and the energetic Englishman seasoned to the fight. This formidable mass of chosen veterans, led on and commanded by generals such as Schomberg, William III., Marlborough, and Ginkle, was resisted during four campaigns by the mere Irish. England had pressed into her service the soldiers of many nations; her humble opponents only received the support of some troops from France.† Yet such was the heart and courage with which the natives rallied round their colours, that when they mustered for their last review,‡ after the treaty of Limerick,

* The body of troops, of which frequent mention is made in all histories of this war under the name of Enniskilleners, were of Scotch descent, and settled upon the plantation of Ulster. They formed themselves into bands, and, originally, drew together in the county of Fermanagh more from abhorrence of Popery than fear of danger. The first position they took up was at the town of Enniskillen, which they fortified in a rude manner. They chose Gustavus Hamilton, afterwards created Viscount Boyne, as their colonel, and Thomas Loyd as their lieutenant-colonel. Their actual force, in 1689, was 17 troops of light horse, 30 companies of foot, and a few ill armed troops of heavy dragoons. They were distinguished by their want of discipline, their obdurate courage, and ferocious cruelty.

† The reinforcements sent over by France on more than one occasion were considerable—but at times an equivalent body of troops was required in exchange. In 1690, for instance, 5,000 Frenchmen arrived—but 5,000 Irish, under the command of Macarty More, one of the best of the native generals, went to France in return. The army of William was not weakened by any substitutions of a similar kind.

‡ In the little volumes by Doctor Cooke Taylor, entitled *The Civil Wars of Ireland*, there is a graphic sketch of this scene. “On the 4th of October, Talmash, at the head of five British regiments, occupied the English town of Limerick; and on the following day the Irish army was paraded on the King’s Island, in order that they might choose between the service of England and France. Ginkle and Sarsfield addressed them

but one opinion prevailed—the opinion that the strength which they still possessed, and the spirit by which they were still animated, must, if the war continued, have transferred the possession of Ireland to France.

It was, moreover, to this seal of fate stamped upon the exertions of the native population—to this strong character of pre-determined failure, developed in all their struggles, and bearing down all their genius and valour, that we are to ascribe the enormous cruelties by which they were racked and harrowed during the continuance and long after the close of the war. The mereenory foreigner, the prejudiced Englishman, and the

in different proclamations ; the former recommending William, the latter Louis, as a master. It was then agreed, that on the ensuing morning the army should be again paraded and marched past a flag which had been fixed at a given point. Those who chose England were to file to the left ; those who preferred France were to march on.

The sun, perhaps, scarcely ever rose on a more interesting spectacle than was exhibited on the King's Island, when the morning for the decision of the Irish soldiery arrived. The men paraded at an early hour ; the chaplains said mass, and preached each a sermon at the head of their regiments. The Catholic bishops then went through the lines. They were received with military honours, rendered more imposing by the affectionate devotion which the native Irish have ever shewn to their prelates. After this ceremony, refreshments were distributed to the troops, and a message sent to Ginkle and the lords justices that "all was ready." The Irish army, 15,000 strong, received the British *cortége* with presented arms. The lords justices and the generals rode slowly through their lines, and declared that they had never seen a finer body of men. Adjutant-general Withers then addressed them in an excellent speech, recommending the English service in very forcible terms ; after which the army broke into columns, and the word 'March' was given.

"The walls of the town were covered with citizens ; the neighbouring hills were covered with the peasantry of Clare and Limerick ; the deputies of three kings stood near the flag ; but, when the decisive word was given, the deepest silence reigned through the vast and varied multitude, and not a sound was heard but the heavy tread of the advancing battalions. The column was headed by the Irish Guards, 1,400 strong—a regiment that had excited Ginkle's warmest admiration. They marched past the flag, and seven men only ranged themselves on the side of England. The next two regiments were the Ulster Irish, and they all filed to the left. Their example, however, was not generally followed, the greater part of the remainder declared in favour of France. A similar scene took place at the cavalry camp ; and out of the whole, Ginkle only obtained about 1,000 horse and 1,500 foot. So little pleased was he with this result, that he was inclined to pick a quarrel with the Irish leaders ; and the treaty would have been broken almost as soon as signed, but for the presence of the French fleet, which forced the English authorities to suppress their resentment."

fanatical Scotch settler appear to have one and all carried about with them a common conviction, that however boldly the Irishman might turn upon his foe, it was impossible that he could triumph. There was a reckless indifference to consequences, a ruthless and exterminating vengeance, a wanton indulgence in barbarity displayed against the occupiers of the soil, which can only be accounted for on the supposition that punishment and retaliation were held by the oppressor to be utterly beyond the reach of the oppressed. This fierce inhumanity, so much at variance with the higher qualities of the English character, and the bitter cause of much of the hatred with which the name is still visited in Ireland, was begun by the troops under Schomberg, who, flagrantly violating the terms upon which Carrickfergus capitulated, stripped and plundered the inhabitants, and subjected the women to indescribable indignities. The licentious brutality of the regular army was surpassed by the sanguinary executions of the undisciplined Enniskilleners. These bewildered desperadoes, welcoming death when it came, as martyrdom in the service of the Lord, regarded the slaughter of a Papist or the burning of his cabin as an act of virtue. They gave no quarter in the field, they cut down the retreating enemy with remorseless severity, and hung the captive, as soon as taken, on the nearest tree. Even William III. stained his high character by holding out threats of atrocious vengeance. When he summoned Drogheda to surrender, after the battle of the Boyne, he declared that, if resisted, he would give no quarter. When James's party withdrew from Dublin, a Protestant mob, after plundering the houses of the wealthy Catholics, set fire to the suburbs, and proposed to wrap the city in flames. This violent spirit was kept rampant by another commission of forfeitures, and a proclamation which, while it offered pardon and protection to labourers, farmers, and artisans living in peace, left "the desperate leaders of the rebellion to the chances of war." The king's language and conduct being of this immoderate description, the excesses of his soldiers, as a matter of course, were boundless. Wherever they

halted—particularly at Athlone and Limerick—they ravaged the country around, and burned the houses; brutal lust and barbarous murder hung upon their march, and made their presence every where so terrible, that in estimating the amount of destruction effected during the war, we may safely set down one half of the deaths and losses to the account of the outrages committed off the field of battle by Willian's force, and to the retaliations which the peasantry were thus incited to inflict.

The administration of civil affairs in Ireland during this period presents features of more than usual interest. Almost for the first time in the history of the connection with England, the natives appear every where in the possession of the offices of government, and of the highest posts in the country. An Irishman and a Roman Catholic is lord lieutenant; and in both houses of parliament, in the corporations, and in the army, Irishmen and Roman Catholics preponderate. The spirit in which the people now used their power, the extent to which they took vengeance for the past, and provided future security for liberty and property,—their demeanour during a brief interval of dominion, and the laws passed by them while constituting a decided majority of the legislature,—are points which excite the liveliest attention, and reflect a light upon the whole surface of Irish history.

The reception given to James when he landed at Kinsale, with a force of 1,200 Irish and 100 French, in the month of March, 1689, displayed the highest degrees of public unanimity and enthusiasm. It seemed as if all parties, English and Irish, Protestant and Catholic, had agreed to prove that he had evinced as much judgment as patriotism, when he declared that he would owe his restoration, not to the help of foreign arms, but to the assistance of his own subjects. Meeting Tyrconnel at Cork, whom he at once made a duke, he proceeded to Dublin, where the higher orders of the Roman Catholic clergy, attired in their proper robes, formed part of his state retinue. The ceremonies observed upon his entrance into the Irish capital were marked by the usual pomp and

solemnity, and by loyal demonstrations from all classes of the people.* He began the business of governing by issuing five proclamations. By the first, all Protestants who had left the country were ordered to return, under pain of forfeiting their estates ; by the second, all Catholics who did not belong to the army were ordered to bring in and deposit their arms in the royal stores ; by the third, the terms were regulated upon which the army was to be supplied with provisions ; by the fourth, the value of money was raised ; and by the fifth, the parliament was summoned to meet in the ensuing month of May. These measures appear as moderate and reasonable as the circumstances of the country permitted, always excepting the folly of supposing that the value of money was to be increased by the declaration of a state paper.

The proclamation for the meeting of parliament was dated March 25, 1689 ; and during the same year, minutes of the proceedings were printed in London in a small 4to tract. The Protestant bishops were summoned as usual, but there

* Dr. Lesley, in his "Answer to Archbishop King's State of the Protestants in Ireland," gives a ludicrous account of the buoyant pliability with which the clergy of the established church accommodated their consciences to the shifting circumstances of the time. "Before the association in the North of Ireland," says the Doctor, "September, 1688, they prayed for King James ; the beginning of March following, they proclaimed the prince of Orange king, and prayed for him ; the 15th day King James's army broke their forces at Dromore, in the North of Ireland, and reduced all but Derry and Enniskillen—then they prayed again for King James, that '*God would strengthen him to vanquish and overcome all his enemies.*' In August following, Schomberg went over with an English army,—then, as far as his quarters reached, they returned to pray the same prayer for King William, the rest of the Protestants still praying for victory to King James and for the people ; and yet now tell us, that all that while they meant the same thing,—four times in one year praying backwards and forwards—point blank contradictory to one another." To some minds this will appear an amusing, to others a melancholy, extract. One effect to be produced by it is certain—we are bound to adopt, with extreme caution, the professions of a party acting with such violent inconsistency. They assure us that their loyalty was unimpeachable, and that they stood true to James until he deserted England, and until the outrages of his Irish adherents compelled them to arm themselves with pikes and scythe-blades. But if there is one historical fact more strongly established than another, it is the disloyalty of the Protestants in the North of Ireland, long before the flight of James : their agents were in communication with William before he landed in England, and they were themselves in the field before James had abdicated.

was a majority of Roman Catholics in both houses.* James opened the session on the 8th of May in person, with a speech every way judicious and satisfactory. The loyalty of the Irish was acknowledged with praise,—violations of the rights of conscience and of property were repudiated with abhorrence,—equal protection was promised to Protestants and Catholics, together with a ready assent to any laws beneficial to the nation;—after which the distressed condition of trade and manufactures, and the sufferings of those who had unjustly lost their estates under the Act of Settlement, were recommended as fit subjects for early and attentive consideration.

The tone of this speech was well preserved in the character of the parliamentary proceedings, with a particular exception. An act of attainder was passed, by which all known or suspected adherents of William were required to come in and surrender themselves before a certain day, or to suffer forfeiture of their real and personal property. It was calculated that two thousand persons would have been affected by this law, which specially provided that if the obnoxious parties did not establish their innocence within a limited period, the king should not have the power of pardoning them. The severe injustice of this measure admits of no observations in its defence. It followed the bad precedents set by the parliaments of Charles I and Cromwell, and furnished an unnecessary incitement to the violence of William's party in executing similar penalties.

In other respects, the Roman Catholic parliament distinguished itself by the wisdom and liberality of its evanescent legislation. It sat for only two months, and entertained thirty-five bills. Amongst these, two of the first brought forward were most important. The one forbade writs of error and appeal to England, and the other declared that Ireland

* This was effected in the Lords by reversing the attainders of several Roman Catholic peers, and by newly creating others. The persons selected in both cases were of ancient family and estate. In the Commons the usual interference with the elections took place, and the influence of government was every where exerted to the utmost in behalf of its own candidates.

could not be bound by the acts of the English parliament. James was present in the Lords when both measures were discussed, and gave them his support. But another effort made to secure the independence of the Irish legislature failed in consequence of his opposition. A bill was introduced to repeal Poynings' laws. When the report was brought up, the Commons were informed "that the king would have a clause that he and his heirs should have the bill first agreed to by him and his council before it should pass the Commons." It was ordered to be printed, "the house being inclined to be as free as the parliament of England;" but it was not proceeded with. Amongst the few unsuccessful measures of this short session, was one which showed a wise liberality. Chief Justice Nugent proposed a sweeping repeal of the Acts of Settlement and Explanation, but his bill was thrown out on the second reading. A more moderate provision, of which Chief Baron Rice, and the attorney-general, Sir R. Nagle, were the authors, succeeded. Six bishops and four temporal peers entered a protest against this act. Another good bill abolished patents for life. But the law of all others by which the Roman Catholic parliament did itself the highest honour, was the celebrated "Act for Liberty of Conscience, and for repealing such Acts, or Clauses in any Act, as are inconsistent with the same." As a companion to this admirable piece of legislation, worthy of the most enlightened age, was another which equitably settled the difficult question of tithes, by providing that every person should pay them to his own pastor. Such were the principal labours of the parliament of Ireland under James II. It reflected lasting shame upon the members of the English legislature, that they not only took the earliest opportunity of repealing them all, but ordered them to be burned by the common hangman in Old Palace Yard.

A stain of blacker dye attaches to the unprincipled forfeitures enforced by William, and to the violation of the treaty of Limerick. The latter was the price upon which 15,000 men had agreed to lay down their arms. There is no principle of faith or honour by which kings, governments, or

nations can be bound, which did not imperatively demand the sacred fulfilment of that heavy obligation ; and yet it had scarcely received the stamp of the great seal of England, when it was openly infringed.

The loss of Tyrconnel, who had died a short time before in Limerick of vexation and a broken spirit, was a fatal event for his party. Had he been alive, more efficient conditions would, in all likelihood, have now been insisted upon and obtained. The language used in this treaty, though framed by Sir T. Butler, was certainly not as precise as was desirable. By a strange omission, no mention was made of the lands already confiscated. But although lawyers may affect to make out a case against the Irish by raising technicalities, defects, and objections, there are broad and specific grounds upon which a breach of faith is unquestionably chargeable against William and his ministers. The Irish had a right to include in the general terms adopted at this juncture, the particular concessions previously offered. It is besides well known that more favourable particulars were embodied in a proclamation which was on the eve of publication, when the news of the treaty of Limerick reached Dublin. Sir R. Cox, finding the war concluded, suppressed the document which would have set the case of the vanquished beyond dispute.

Let us, however, review these documents by themselves, and judge of their purport by the language in which they are framed. There were two sets of articles—one civil and the other military ; but the former were the more important. The Roman Catholics of this kingdom, said the first of the civil articles, shall enjoy such privileges in the exercise of their religion, as are consistent with the laws of Ireland, or as they enjoyed in the reign of Charles II. ; and their majesties will endeavour to procure the said Roman Catholics such further security in that particular as may preserve them from any disturbance upon the account of their said religion. The people of the kingdom having been thus far provided for, the second of the civil articles dealt with all the inhabitants or residents of the city of Limerick, and the counties of Lime-

rick, Clare, Kerry, Cork, and Mayo, together with all officers and soldiers in arms under any commission from King James,—to these and their heirs the possession and enjoyment of their estates were granted, and of all the rights, titles, and interest, privileges, and immunities which they held, or were rightfully and lawfully entitled to, in the reign of Charles II.

Comparing these pledges with the subsequent enactments of the English and the Irish parliaments, we blush for the loss of honour and humanity in both legislatures. We see in the heading and preamble of the law subsequently passed upon the subject, how clearly the law-makers held the articles to have been unfairly dealt with. They call the measure not a bill for the confirmation of “*the articles*”—but of “articles;” and such they profess to confirm, or “so much of them as may consist with safety and welfare,” &c. After setting forth the object of the act in this mutilated style, they omit altogether the first article, which embraced the Catholics of the kingdom; and they exclude the guarantee given in the second article for the free exercise of trades and professions. There were other essential limitations, but it would be a waste of time to specify them. To the credit of the Irish House of Lords, it should be remembered that thirteen members were found in that body—six of whom were Protestant bishops—just and spirited enough to protest against this shameful breach of the public faith. They recorded their dissent from it in five reasons, expressed with a bitter truth that gives their language the point of sarcasm. They protest—1. Because the title of the bill doth not agree with the body thereof, the title being “An Act for the Confirmation of Articles made at the Surrender of Limerick,” whereas no one of the articles is therein fully confirmed.—2. Because the articles were to be in favour of them to whom they were granted, but the confirmation of them by the bill is such that it puts them in a worse condition than they were before.—3. Because the bill omits these material words,—“*and such as are under their protection in the said counties,*”—part of the second article; and several persons have been adjudged within the second article accordingly, who

will, if this bill passeth, be entirely barred and excluded from any benefit of the second article.—4. Because several words are inserted in the bill which are not in the articles, and others omitted which alter the sense and meaning of some part of the articles.—5. Because many Protestants may and will suffer by this bill in their just rights and pretensions, by reason of their having purchased and lent money upon the credit of the said articles.

The government to whom language so just and forcible was addressed without effect, was soon beset with difficulties. The lords justices wrote to England, that they received complaints from all parts of the ill treatment of the Irish who had submitted, who held their majesties' protection, or were included in the articles ; and that they were so extremely terrified with apprehensions of the continuance of that usage, that some thousands of them, who had quitted the Irish army and had returned to their homes, came back to the government and pressed earnestly for permission to go to France rather than stay in Ireland, where, “ contrary to the public faith, as well as law and justice, they were robbed of their substance and abused in their persons.” * * * “ Justices of the peace, sheriffs, and other magistrates,” according to Harris, (“ Life of William III.” p. 357,) “ presuming on their power, illegally dispossessed their majesties’ subjects not only of their goods, but of their lands and tenements, to the great disturbance of the peace, the subversion of the law, and the reproach of government.” While this was the treatment of persons who were admitted to be entitled to protection, the sufferings of those who were held to be objects of punishment may be easily conceived.

So strong was the desire of oppressing the Irish at this time, that the parliament of England ran before the parliament of Ireland in producing measures of severity and degradation. They passed an act, 3 William & Mary, c. 2, “ for abrogating the Oath of Supremacy in Ireland, and appointing other Oaths.” By this statute the Catholics were excluded from the Houses of Lords and Commons, and the

English legislature effectively assumed the right of binding the people of Ireland by laws not made in their own parliament. Few as were the pretensions to independence which that body could claim, so bold and unreasonable an invasion of its powers was naturally resented. They made some efforts to resist the attack upon their authority, but were overpowered by a bolder spirit and more determined hand. Mr. Molyneux, member for the University of Dublin, published a tract justly celebrated, entitled "The Case of Ireland's being bound by the Acts of Parliament in England." But the work was pronounced dangerous by the English Commons, and ordered to be burned by the hangman. They selected the strongest passages, and went up with them to the king, calling upon him "to exert his royal prudence, and to take all necessary care that the laws which directed and restrained the parliament of Ireland in their actings should not be evaded." William returned a tame answer, promising that "what was complained of should be prevented and redressed," and ere long a monstrous proof was given of the unwillingness of the English parliament to suffer the right which they had usurped to lie idle or inoffensive. The importation of wool and woollen manufactures from Ireland was prohibited under pain of confiscation, imprisonment, and transportation; and it was further enacted, that persons tried and acquitted in Ireland for offences under this statute should not be allowed to plead such acquittal in bar of a new indictment for the same act in England. Another foul blow was thus struck against the struggling commerce of Ireland. Equal ignorance and injustice were displayed in the interference of the English parliament with the cattle trade of Ireland under Charles II., and with the woollen trade of that country under William III.

While the English parliament was engaged in asserting this insulting dominion over Ireland, the Irish parliament was intent upon fortifying the Protestant ascendancy by increased severity against the Roman Catholics. There was an act passed to prevent the education of their children abroad; another to deprive them of the possession of arms; a third to

banish out of the kingdom all the clergy of that religion ; a fourth to prevent Protestants from marrying Papists ; and a fifth to prevent Papists from practising as attorneys.

These harrowing details form an indispensable portion of every account of Irish affairs, past or present. For their influence is powerful to this hour. It is only by going patiently through them, that we can fully understand the language in which such men as the Lord Chancellor Clare and Edmund Burke have spoken of the conduct of England at this juncture ; and it is only by considering how pregnant that conduct was with every quality by which anger could be provoked, and resentment perpetuated, that we can account for the animosity which is still vividly displayed in all political matters by the Irishman of the present day against his fellow subject in England.

The following passage has been often quoted, and is generally known ; but it is too true and too pointed in its reference to the subject immediately before us to be omitted here. Lord Clare—he was the colleague of Lord Castlereagh and Mr. Pitt—gave the following summary of the different Irish forfeitures, ending with those of William III., in his celebrated speech on the Legislative Union between the two countries :—

“ After the expulsion of James from the throne of England, the old inhabitants made a final effort for the recovery of their antient power, in which they were once more defeated by an English army ; and the slender relics of Irish possessions became the subject of fresh confiscations. From the report made by the commissioners appointed by the parliament of England in 1698, it appears, that the Irish subjects outlawed for the rebellion of 1688 amounted to 3,978, and that their possessions, as far as could be computed, were of the annual value of £211,623, comprising 1,060,792 acres. This fund was sold, under the authority of an English Act of Parliament, to defray the expences incurred by England in reducing the rebels of 1688 ; and the sale introduced into Ireland a new set of adventurers. It is a very curious and important

speculation to look back to the forfeitures of Ireland incurred in the last century. The superficial contents of the island are calculated at 11,042,682 acres. Let us now examine the state of the forfeitures :—

In the reign of James I. the whole of the province of Ulster was confiscated	Acres.
Set out by the Court of Claims at the Restoration	2,836,837
Forfeitures of 1688	7,800,000
	<hr/>
	1,060,792
	<hr/>
	11,697,629*

“ So that the whole of your island has been confiscated, with the exception of the estates of five or six families of English blood, some of whom had been attainted in the reign of Henry VIII., but recovered their possessions before Tyrone’s rebellion, and had the good fortune to escape the pillage of the English republic inflicted by Cromwell ; and no inconsiderable portion of the island has been confiscated twice, or perhaps thrice, in the course of a century. The situation, therefore, of the Irish nation at the Union stands unparalleled in the history of the inhabited world. If the wars of England carried on here from the reign of Elizabeth had been waged against a foreign enemy, the inhabitants would have retained their possessions under the established law of civilized nations, and their country have been annexed as a province to the British Empire.”†

* The forfeitures of the preceding century by Elizabeth and Mary appear in Vol. I. p. 302, as 2,838,972 acres.

† The impolicy of these forfeitures was strongly felt at the very time they were declared, and their illegality was afterwards pointedly referred to by more than one impartial historian. They were repeatedly denounced by Ginkle, who found them heavy impediments to the conclusion of the war. But there was a reckless faction who represented them as indispensable to the maintenance of the Protestant interest, and they were persisted in. The character of these patriots is forcibly drawn by Ginkle :—“ I did very much hope,” he writes, “ on one occasion, that some favourable declaration might have been emitted to break the Irish army and save the cost of a field of battle. But I see our civil officers regard more adding £50 a year to the English proprietary in this kingdom, than saving England the expence of £500,000. I promise myself it is for the king’s, the allies’,

Mr. Burke's letter to Sir H. Langrish describes the feeling of the people of England towards Ireland during the reign of William III., and for years after, in this expressive strain :— “ By the reduction of the kingdom of Ireland in 1691, the ruin of the native Irish, and in a great measure, too, of the first races of the English, was completely accomplished. The new interest was settled with as solid a stability as anything in human affairs can look for. All the penal laws of that unparalleled code of oppression which were made after that last event, were manifestly the effects of natural hatred and scorn towards a conquered people, whom the victors delighted to trample upon, and were not at all afraid to provoke. They were not the effects of their fears, but of their security. They who carried on this system looked to the irresistible force of Great Britain for their support in their acts of power. They were quite certain that no complaints of the natives would be heard on this side of the water with any other sentiments than those of contempt and indignation. Their cries served only to augment their torture. Machines which could answer their purpose so well, must be of an excellent contrivance. Indeed, at that time in England the double name of the com-

and England's interests to remit most, or all the forfeitures, so that we could immediately bring the kingdom under their majesties' obedience.” Ginkle made many representations to this effect, but always without success. Before Athlone fell and the battle of Aughrim was gained, he solicited, and was refused, a proclamation promising protection and security of person and property to all who would submit. The utmost he could obtain from the lords justices was permission to offer reasonable terms in his own name to all who were then in arms. So much for the impolicy of the forfeitures—as for their illegality, Macpherson puts the whole question impartially in his “ History of Great Britain.”—“ The peculiar situation of the country,” he says, “ seems to have been overlooked in the contest. The desertion upon which the deprivation of James had been founded in England, had not existed in Ireland. The lord lieutenant had retained his allegiance. The government was uniformly continued under the name of the prince from whom the servants of the crown had derived their commissions. James himself had for more than seventeen months exercised the royal function in Ireland. He was certainly *de facto*, if not *de jure*, king. The rebellion of the Irish must, therefore, be founded on the supposition that their allegiance is transferable by the parliament of England. A speculative opinion can scarcely justify the punishment of the great majority of a people. The Irish ought to have been considered as enemies rather than rebels.”

plainants, Irish and Papists, (it would be difficult to say which, singly, was most odious,) shut up the hearts of every one against them. Whilst that temper prevailed in all its force to a time within our memory, every measure was pleasing and popular, just in proportion as it tended to harass and ruin a set of people who were looked upon as enemies to God and man—and, indeed, as a race of bigoted savages who were a disgrace to human nature itself."

There are no witnesses of higher authority to be called, and no writings more eloquent or convincing to be quoted, than those here produced. With such testimony before us to regulate our opinions, this imperfect account of the reign of William III. may well close. The condition of Ireland, and the disposition of Englishmen towards the people of that country, could not have been more forcibly exhibited. It is clear, beyond the possibility of dispute, that the old evils were all preserved and continued—and that, however firmly the principles of political freedom may have been established, and the rights of conscience secured in England by the revolution of 1688—in Ireland that great event effected no improvement whatever in the government, and tended to aggravate, rather than to lessen, the grievances of the inhabitants.

CHAPTER XII.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION
WITH ENGLAND—*continued.*

THE CENTURY DURING WHICH IRELAND HAS NO HISTORY.—QUEEN ANNE.—GEO. I.—GEO. II.—GEO. III.—EXTENT OF THE PENAL LAWS.—THE ENGLISH PROTESTANT SYSTEM TRIUMPHANT.—PRIMATE BOULTER AND PRIMATE STONE.—GENERAL RUIN.—THE GOVERNMENT BANKRUPT.—HENRY GRATTAN.—THE VOLUNTEERS.—FREE TRADE.—INDEPENDENCE OF THE IRISH PARLIAMENT.

THE century of abject prostration, during which it has been observed that Ireland has no history,—during which a bishop* of the established church, preaching from the pulpit to the lords justices, maintained that Protestants were not bound to keep faith with Papists,—during which there is little to relate but details of the “ferocious legislation of Queen Anne”†—the last, and, to Ireland, the worst of the Stuarts,—during which the Protestantism of the Irish ascendancy consisted of “hatred of Popery, ignorance of Christianity, and a total absence of moral principle,”—may be summarily dismissed. A bare recapitulation of the principal persons and events, a general description of the state of the country, and an abstract of the penal laws, will be enough to preserve of an age painful to contemplate and disheartening to describe. A new era will then open upon us: the genius and patriotism of an individual, pure in the midst of general corruption, will be found snatching for a while independence for his country,—a glorious but untenable possession, which shone forth brightly for a short interval, and then fell away—reminding us of one

* Dopping, bishop of Meath.

† Burke, “Letter to a Peer,” &c.

of those flashes of extraordinary intelligence which are sometimes seen, for a brief interval immediately preceding dissolution, to gladden and expand the mind of a man dying of long disease, suffering and prostration, and which, after dazzling for a few moments, and raising hopes as deceitful as unexpected, vanish into darkness, and with the individual forever cease to exist in this world.

The first lords justices appointed by William III. were Viscount Sydney, Sir C. Porter, and Mr. Coningsby. Their administration was soon broken up by internal dissensions. Sydney was intent upon violating, while Porter, who was lord chancellor, vainly strove to maintain, the treaty of Limerick. Sydney called a parliament, but interfering with the right of the Commons to originate money bills, he was obliged to prorogue the session, with an emphatic complaint against the ingratitude of the members to their great deliverer. Upon his recall, Lord Capel, Sir Cycil Wyche, and Mr. Duncombe took office. They appear to have agreed as little as their predecessors had done respecting the degree of faith which it behoved them to keep with the Irish. At length, Capel being found the man most likely to fix the Protestant ascendancy upon the desired elevation, his colleagues were removed, and a parliament was summoned in 1695, which made considerable progress in the odious work demanded at its hands. The duke of Ormonde* and Earl Wharton, successively lords lieutenants in the years 1702 and 1709, so completely exhausted the subject, that from the former year to 1782 we find, amongst a

* This was the second and last duke, son of the gallant earl of Ossory. He was named James, and played a sorry game in the politics of his day. He was amongst the first of the nobility who abandoned James II. and hailed the arrival of William III. By the latter king he was employed in a military as well as a civil capacity on several occasions. His administrations—for he was twice appointed lord lieutenant—first in 1702, and again in 1710—of the government of Ireland, were marked by a display of splendour never before equalled. He was one of the lords of the English privy council who proclaimed George I., but was dismissed by that sovereign from all his offices. Being soon afterwards impeached of high treason, he fled to France, and was attainted. His estates were forfeited, his honours extinguished, and a reward of £10,000 was offered for his apprehension in the event of his attempting to land in Ireland.

long list of amended and improved penal laws, the record of only one new penal enactment.

There is amongst the manuscripts, belonging to the king's library in the British Museum, a work, bound up in two small 4to volumes, and entitled "An Account of Ireland, 1773." There is no author's name on the title, and nothing to distinguish the contents but this motto—

"Vitam impendere vero ;"

and the internal evidence they offer of being the production of an accomplished writer, thoroughly acquainted with his subject. The following account of the penal laws from this manuscript is valuable, not solely because it is well written and accurate, but still more so, because it presents the opinions entertained of that terrific code by intelligent men at the time it was in full force.

"But the most remarkable transaction in Ireland during the reign of Queen Anne was the passing of what are called the Popery Laws, which, though equally repugnant to good policy and humanity, have yet remained unrepealed and unmitigated since their first institution. If they have in any case undergone alterations or amendments, those alterations and amendments have been only to sharpen their acrimony and invigorate their blows. As these laws have been represented by many as the true basis of civil liberty and the Protestant religion in Ireland, I shall here endeavour to trace their origin, and describe their progress and operation.

"In the reign of King James I. a number of new settlers from England and Scotland arrived in Ireland, which was then mostly Popish, and, with a new religion, brought over a new schism or source of contention with the old inhabitants, many of whom were of English descent, and equally tenacious of the ancient opinions and possessions: The jealousy of the natives impeached the title of the stranger—the stranger encroached on the rights of the native; the first complained of legal injustice—the latter of fraud and violence; contest begot contest, and often litigation sprung from decision. The Protestant

abhorred the idolatrous Papist, and the Papist damned the reprobated Protestant. The mode of faith now became the motive of enmity, whilst the original ground was forgotten, and the most sacred institution was converted into an instrument of mutual injury and hatred.

"The severe government of Strafford contained these animosities within bounds ; but no sooner was he removed, than the old inhabitants broke out into open hostility and rebellion. After a fierce but ineffectual struggle they were totally subdued, and became obnoxious to almost every calamity which can befall the vanquished.

"An army of new settlers, and mostly of a newer religion, whether Independents, Anabaptists, Socinians, Muggletonians, Brownists, or Millenarians, now obtained large grants of forfeited lands in Ireland, and from these adventurers are descended some of the principal persons of the kingdom in opulence and power. Most of these settlers were men of an untoward republican spirit, and of the sourest leaven, who eagerly adopted the most harsh and oppressive measures against those upon whose ruin they rose.

"The Restoration had secured to them their property, and the Revolution armed them with power ; this power, instead of using it with justice and moderation, they stretched to the utmost rigor, and determined ultimately to crush, if they could not immediately destroy : they did not, however, all at once unmask their designs ; they proceeded by cautious steps ; and in the reign of King William, most of their provisions against Popery may be justified on the principles of sound policy ; but in the reign of Queen Anne they threw off all reserve, they avowed their intentions, and executed them to the full : for this purpose they passed those acts which have now, for these seventy years past, been the established law of the land, and which form the most complete code of persecution that ingenious bigotry ever compiled.

"It is but justice to the administration of England to mention, that they did not willingly give their consent to

these severe statutes ; but not choosing, or not venturing to avow their disapprobation, they cunningly clogged the bills with a clause which they imagined would infallibly occasion them to be rejected : this clause, which introduced the sacramental test as a necessary qualification of office and employment, could not be very palatable to an assembly where some of the principal leaders were Covenanters and Presbyterians : but these leaders, on this occasion, in their severity to the scruples of others, forgot their own, and conscience was suffered to sleep while persecution walked abroad. The bills were passed ; and the edict against Popery, like the laws of the Medes and Persians, was never to be changed ; but the test clause relative to the Dissenters, it was hoped, might at a favourable opportunity either be repealed or evaded.

" There is no doubt that both justice and prudence authorize penal laws against Papists in a Protestant country. The wisdom of every state must secure itself from every danger on every side. During these two centuries past, religion has been considered as an adventitious part in the policy of almost all the governments in Europe, and in some is so interwoven with the constitution, that the ruin of the one involves the destruction of the other. This has long been an established opinion in England, and thence England early and continually guarded against the perils of Popery. But she has done it with dignity, with judgment and moderation : she looked on Popery as on her other foes, whose secret machinations she might apprehend, but whose open assault she defied. To the lot of Ireland it has fallen to ingraft absurdity on the wisdom of England, and tyranny on the religion that professes humanity ; by her laws against Popery, the bonds of society, the ties of nature, and all the charities of kindred and friendship are torn to pieces. Those are allured who could not be compelled, traps are laid for youth and inexperience, and it becomes a maxim of state to encourage the profligate and reward the ungrateful ; the concord of brothers is dissolved, the son is armed against his father, and the hus-

band and wife are taught to break through the most sacred and tender attachment, when invited by interest, inconstancy or libertinism.

" It is no longer the Protestant that is to be on his guard against the Papist ; but the Papist must be armed at all points, and watch day and night against the legal assaults of his wife, his children, and his kindred ; if all their affections are secure, yet his neighbour has an interest to become an informer against him, his sword of defence may wound himself, and the hospitality of his roof may leave him without a roof to shelter him ; a bill of discovery may strip him in a moment of all his possessions.

" Precluded from offices of public trust or emolument, the Papist * is even deprived of the comforts of private life in the

* In order to perfect this sketch, and to verify the striking averments with which it abounds beyond dispute, it will be desirable to give the heads of the different acts of parliament by which so heavy a load of injustice and cruelty was declared legal. The following list is taken partly from the second edition of the "History of the Penal Laws," by Sir H. Parnell, afterwards Lord Congleton, and partly from the Index to the Irish Statutes. There were in force against the Catholics at the time of the Treaty—

1. An Act against the authority of the See of Rome. It enacts that no person shall attribute any jurisdiction to the See of Rome ; that the person offending shall be subject to a premunire ; and that all who have any office from the king, every person entering into orders, and taking a degree in the university, shall take the oath of supremacy.

2. An Act restoring to the crown the ancient jurisdiction over the state, ecclesiastical and spiritual. It likewise enacts that every ecclesiastical person, and every person taking office, shall take the oath of supremacy.

3. An Act for the uniformity of common prayer. It enacts that every person, having no lawful excuse to be absent, shall, every Sunday, resort to some place of worship of the established church, or forfeit 12d.

4. An Act by which the chancellor may appoint a guardian to the child of a Catholic.

5. An Act by which no Catholic schoolmaster can teach in a private house without a license from the ordinary of the diocese, and taking the oath of supremacy.

6. The new rules by which no person can be admitted into any corporation without taking the oath of supremacy.

The acts subsequent to the Treaty were—

1. The 7 Will. III. c. 4, which deprived the Catholics of the means of educating their children either at home or abroad, or of being guardians of their own or of any other person's children. It was of this act that Burke remarked,—“ Whilst this restraint upon foreign and domestic education was part of a horrible and impious system of servitude, the members were well fitted to the body. To render men patient under a

bosom of his family; his children may be taken from him, and educated at his expence in a profession he dislikes. If he

deprivation of all the rights of human nature, everything which could give them a knowledge or feeling of those rights was rationally forbidden. To render humanity fit to be insulted, it was fit that it should be degraded."—*Letter to a Peer, &c.*

2. An Act to disarm the Catholics, and to limit the binding of Roman Catholics as apprentices. 7 Will. III. c. 5.

3. An Act to banish Roman Catholic priests. 9 Will. III. c. 1.

4. An Act to prevent Protestants from intermarrying with Papists. 9 Will. III. c. 3.

5. By 10 Will. III. c. 8, an Act for the preservation of game, it was declared unlawful to employ a Papist as a gamekeeper.

6. An Act to prevent Papists from being solicitors. 10 Will. III. c. 13.

7. 2 Anne, c. 3. An Act to prevent Popish priests from coming into the kingdom.

8. 2 Anne, c. 6. An Act to prevent the further growth of Popery.

9. 2 Anne, c. 7. An Act for regulating the Popish clergy.

10. 4 Anne, c. 2. An Act to amend the Act for registering Popish clergy.

11. 6 Anne, c. 6. An Act to amend the Act for preventing Papists from being solicitors.

12. 8 Anne, c. 3. An Act to explain the Act for preventing the further growth of Popery.

13. 12 Geo. I. c. 3. An Act making it felony for a Popish priest to celebrate marriages between Protestants and Papists.

14. 1 Geo. II. c. 22. An Act for regulating the admission of barristers at law, six clerks, and attorneys, and for better strengthening the Protestant interest: forbide the admission of any person to these professions, who shall not prove that he has been a Protestant for two years.

15. 7 Geo. II. c. 5. An Act for the amendment of the law relating to Popish solicitors.

16. 7 Geo. II. c. 6. An Act to prevent converts from Popery, or persons married to Popish wives, or educating their children in the Popish religion, from being justices of the peace.

17. 13 Geo. II. c. 6. An Act to amend and render more effectual the Act of William III. for disarming Papists.

18. 19 Geo. II. c. 7. An Act for more effectually preventing his Majesty's subjects from entering foreign service, and for publishing the Act of William III. to prevent foreign education.

19. 19 Geo. II. c. XI. An Act for better regulating the election of members to serve in parliament.

20. 19 Geo. II. c. XII. An Act for the better regulating of corporations.

21. 21 Geo. II. c. 10. An Act to amend and make more effectual the two preceding Acts.

22. 23 Geo. II. c. 10. An Act for rendering more effectual the Act to prevent marriages by Popish priests.

23. 23 Geo. II. c. 14. An Act in relation to the appointing high and petty constables.

24. 29 Geo. II. c. 5. An Act to prevent the return of such persons as now are, or hereafter may be in the service of the French king.

These were the infamous laws by which the rigors of preceding perse-

entertains a Popish bishop or regular priest in his house for their instruction, he is punished for the first and second

cautions were reviewed, re-arranged, and reinforced. It is of these that Sir H. Parnell, afterwards Lord Congleton, wrote as follows:—"The Catholics, in place of being the free subjects of a prince from whom they were taught to expect only justice and mercy, were made the slaves of every one—even of the very meanest of their Protestant countrymen. They saw the English government, on whom they had claims for protection against their own parliament, directing its fanatic counsels and confirming its crimes. By the treaty of Limerick they were left at liberty to educate and act as guardians to their own children: by the penal laws they neither can send them to be educated abroad, or have them educated at home, or be guardians to their own, or the children of any other persons.

"By the treaty of Limerick the free exercise of their religion was guaranteed to them. By the penal laws their chapels are shut up, their priests are banished,* and hanged if they return home.

"By the treaty of Limerick their noblemen and gentlemen were specially allowed the privilege of wearing arms; and the whole body were equally entitled to the same privilege, because, when it was executed, no law existed to the contrary. By the penal laws no Catholic is permitted to have the use of arms, except a very few of those who were specially comprised in the treaty.

"By the treaty of Limerick Catholics might intermarry with Protestants. By the penal laws this privilege is removed.

"By the treaty of Limerick the profession of the law was open to them: by these laws it is taken from them.

"By the treaty of Limerick the Catholics could purchase, sell, bequeath and inherit landed property. By the penal laws they can neither purchase, sell, bequeath or inherit landed property, take annuities for lives secured in lands, or any longer lease of land than for 31 years; nor could they lend money on mortgage or vest it in public securities.

"By the treaty of Limerick the Catholics were left in full enjoyment of every political franchise, except those of holding offices under government, and of becoming members of corporations. By the penal laws they cannot vote at vestries, serve on grand juries, act as constables, or as sheriffs or under-sheriffs, be magistrates, vote at elections, or sit in parliament.

"By the treaty of Limerick they were protected from being called upon to take any other oaths beside the oath of allegiance, 1 Will. & Mary. By the penal laws they are required to take the oaths of abjuration and supremacy, and to subscribe declarations against the principal tenets of their faith.

"By the treaty of Limerick they were acknowledged as the free subjects of a British king. By the penal laws they are placed in the double capacity of slaves and enemies of their Protestant countrymen. Had they become mere slaves, they might have experienced some degree of humane treatment; but, as the policy which made them slaves held them out at the same time as the natural and interested enemies of their masters, they

* The Irish parliament passed a bill, by which it was provided that every Roman Catholic priest caught in Ireland should be castrated!

offence by pecuniary penalties, and for the third he forfeits all his goods and chattels, and all his estate of freehold and inheritance during his life.

“ Popish schools are prohibited in Ireland, and a Papist bred abroad incurs the strongest disabilities.

“ If the son of a Papist professes himself a Protestant,—which he may do at fourteen years of age,—the father’s property is instantly altered; his estate in fee simple is converted into a tenure for life; and a third of his whole fortune, real and personal, is taken from him for the immediate use of the Conformist. The heir at law of a Papist, if he either is or becomes a Protestant, defeats every grant or settlement made to his prejudice, and enters into possession as a matter of course: if the heir at law continues a Papist, the estate gavels among the sons; if there are no sons, among the daughters, and in failure of daughters, among the collaterals. A Papist is not only incapable of purchasing lands of inheritance, but he is incapable of taking a lease for more than thirty-one years, and even under this short tenure, two-thirds of the value must be reserved to the lessor.

“ A Popish mechanic can’t take more than two apprentices, and there are certain towns in which the law forbids him to inhabit.

“ No Papist, nor trustee for a Papist, can take or receive an annuity for life or term of years, determinable upon lives, or for any estate chargeable on, or that may affect lands.

“ Any Papist of sixteen years old may be summoned by two justices of the peace, and examined upon oath when and where he heard mass, who celebrated the same, and who were present at the celebration; and on refusal to inform, may be sent to the common gaol for twelve months, or pay a penalty of £20 to the poor of the parish.

“ Any Papist of sixteen years old may be summoned to take the oath of abjuration, and on the third refusal incurs the penalties of a premunire.

were doomed to experience all the oppression of tyranny, without any of the chances, that other slaves enjoy, of their tyrants being merciful, from feeling their tyranny secure.”

" There is a multitude of other clauses in these Popery laws not less harsh and oppressive ; but there is one, and of a very recent date, which will be scarcely credited. It is actually a fact, that, in Ireland, a marriage between a Protestant and a Papist is null and void, to all intents and purposes, without any process, judgment, or sentence of law whatsoever ; nay, a marriage between two Protestants, if celebrated by a Popish priest, is equally ineffectual.* Such is the wisdom and virtue of the Irish legislature, that a husband may abandon his wife, or the wife her husband, after twenty years cohabitation, and their whole race be legally bastardized. Instances, indeed, of such perjury and dishonour are very rare—for, happily, the honest affections of mankind are too strong for the tyranny of such unreasonable statutes.

" A remission of many and an amendment of all these laws is now become necessary ; for, the dangers of Popery being removed, or sufficiently guarded against, the first great principle of government ought to be to make every subject of the state as useful to it as possible : where this great principle does not prevail, there is a defect of sound policy. Now, it is impossible for Papists to become such subjects under their present circumstances, whilst we are perpetually awakening their regret for what they have lost, invalidating their security for what they still preserve, and withholding from them a moderate degree of permanency in what their labour might obtain ; it is hardly too much to say, that an Irish Papist can neither inherit, acquire, nor bequeath—for in all these cases he is liable to be defeated or disquieted.

" The laws of Ireland against Papists are the harsh dictates of persecution, not the calm suggestions of reason and policy : they threaten the Papists with penalties in case of foreign education, and yet allow them no education at home ; they shut the doors of their own university against them, and forbid them to enter those of any other. No man shall go to lecture

* Singularly enough, although we have got rid of almost all the penal laws, this, which struck the author we quote from as most unreasonable, remains still in full operation.

who will not go to church. A Papist shall not be a divine; a physician, a lawyer, or a soldier; he shall be nothing but a Papist. He can't be a lawyer, for the law is not his friend; he can't be a soldier and draw his sword for his country, for he is forced to draw it against it. We will not admit him into our service, and yet denounce vengeance against him if he engages in another. If he becomes a trader or mechanic, he shall scarcely enjoy the rights of a citizen; if a farmer, he shall not cultivate or improve his possession, being discouraged by the short limitation of his tenure; and yet we complain of the dullness and laziness of a people, whose spirit is restrained from exertion, and whose industry has no reward to excite it. This is one great cause why the Irish do not make a more rapid progress in tillage and manufactures. There are others, but if we remove these, the rest will be less sensibly felt; humanity and policy equally demand it; the exiled soldier who now seeks bread in foreign service will return a loyal subject, the slothful tradesman will be changed into a diligent artizan, the idle peasant will become a laborious husbandman, and two millions of people will be rendered useful, florishing, and happy."

Excesses of whatever kind always carry with them a certain degree of self-punishing and corrective power. This dispensation, so wise and merciful in the order and succession of created things, is to be recognised both in the moral and in the physical world. It was never seen more fully developed than in the progress of the system now applied to the government of Ireland. At all points the country was completely subdued, the English government ruled supreme, and everywhere the native population lay prostrate and helpless. The consequences were public waste and private impoverishment, general corruption, political turpitude of the foulest kind, and national bankruptcy. The Anglo-Irish party, who had outraged humanity and religion in reducing the natives to a condition of unparalleled thraldom, fell victims to the extremes of their own severity. They had striven to ruin the people, and they had succeeded in the labour; but they had ruined the country also,

and with it their own interests. They invested the English minister with uncontrolled dominion ; and he no sooner felt himself securely possessed of the gratifying rights it conferred, than he exercised them solely in favour of his fellow countrymen. The Irish Protestants, who had begun by preventing the employment of Catholics, were denounced in their turn as incapable and unfit, and were only admitted to the lower and less profitable range of offices and duties. All the higher and largely lucrative posts were reserved exclusively for Englishmen. To them, during a series of years, fell every considerable preferment in church and state. As one lord chancellor, archbishop, or chief justice died off, a successor was quickly chosen from Westminster Hall, from Oxford, or Cambridge ; and he, as a matter of course, re-echoed the cuckoo-cry to which he owed his appointment,—that cry which had but one burden—If you desire to govern Ireland well, put none but Englishmen into places in that country. Evidence to support the truth of this statement abounds. There is, for instance, little that is worthy of note or comment in the published letters of Primate Boulter, if we except his reiterated appeals to the cabinet in London on behalf of the English interest in Ireland. So strongly was Boulter infected with the vice of this policy, that his system of government seems reducible to the one simple rule of never employing an Irishman. We shall presently have to give a summary of its chief results.

Primate Boulter was the mainspring of the English system from the year 1724 to the year 1742. During this period he served the office of lord justice no less than thirteen times. Born in London, and educated at Merchant Taylors' School, and at Christ Church College, Oxford, he became chaplain successively to Sir C. Hedges, secretary of state ; to Archbishop Temison ; and to George I. ; who appointed him to teach the Prince of Wales the English language. He was consecrated bishop of Bristol in 1719, and archbishop of Armagh in 1724. As an ecclesiastic, he deserves the praise rarely to be awarded to Protestant bishops in Ireland during the eighteenth century—

of not having wholly neglected the church and the education of the people. He meant well in many things, and was of a generous turn of mind ; but ignorance of the country and national prejudices rendered his best efforts to do good abortive. A recent Protestant writer,* who has already been quoted in these pages, speaks of him in the following terms :—“ This prelate was entirely a politician, appointed solely with the view of promoting the English interest in Ireland, and extremely jealous of every thing Hibernian. * * * He laboured to bring both the state and the church to the adoption of that plan which had already caused all efforts at introducing a reformation into Ireland so entirely to fail. Under his advice the prejudices of the people were despised ; their requirements quite neglected ; the will—the caprice even—of the English dominancy solely consulted. He was either a shallow observer of history, or one of those reckless persons that put aside its important lessons as mere ephemeral annals.”

The year in which Primate Boulter reached Ireland was one of considerable excitement and importance. The wrongs of the country had found a champion, and the people an idol worthy of their devotion. Dean Swift, one of the heartiest, the purest, the most highly gifted and enlightened of Irish patriots—was already tasting the cordial popularity which the celebrated “ Drapier’s Letters †” so deservedly produced. A year or two afterwards, and while Boulter was the chief instrument of the English minister in managing the government, Swift published a caustic account of the state of the country. After enumerating and describing the chief causes, fourteen in number, of a kingdom’s thriving, he proceeds :—“ It is not my intention to complain, but barely to relate facts, and the matter is not of small importance.

“ As to the first cause of a nation’s riches, being the ferti-

* H. J. Monck Mason, LL.D. “ Life of Bishop Bedell.”

† The “Drapier’s Letters” were written to expose the worthlessness of a copper coinage for which a patent had been corruptly granted to a Birmingham iron-master and manufacturer, of the name of Wood. According to the dean, the patentee attempted to put into circulation £108,000 of coin, intrinsically worth £8,000 or £9,000 sterling.

lity of the soil, as well as temperature of the climate, we have no reason to complain ; for, although the quantity of unprofitable land in this kingdom, reckoning bog and rock and barren mountain, be double in proportion to what it is in England, yet the native productions, which both kingdoms deal in, are very near an equality in point of goodness, and might, with the same encouragement, be as well manufactured. I except mines and minerals, in some of which, however, we are only defective in point of skill and industry.

“ In the second, which is the industry of the people, our misfortune is not altogether owing to our own fault, but to a million of discouragements.

“ The conveniency of ports and havens, which nature has bestowed so liberally on this kingdom, is of no more use to us than a beautiful prospect to a man shut up in a dungeon.

“ As to shipping of its own, Ireland is so utterly unprovided, that, of all the excellent timber cut down within these 50 or 60 years, it can hardly be said that the nation has received the benefit of one valuable house to dwell in, or one ship to trade with.

“ Ireland is the only kingdom I ever heard or read of, either in ancient or modern story, which was denied the liberty of exporting their native commodities and manufactures wherever they pleased, except to countries at war with their own prince or state ; yet this privilege, by the superiority of mere power, is refused us in the most momentous parts of commerce,—besides an act of navigation, to which we never consented, pinned down upon us, and rigorously executed ; and a thousand other unexampled circumstances, as grievous as they are invidious to mention. To go on to the rest.

“ It is too well known that we are forced to obey some laws we never consented to, which is a condition I must not call by its true uncontroverted name, for fear of lord chief justice Whitshead’s ghost, with his *Libertas et natale solum* written for a motto on his coach, as it stood at the door of the court, while he was perjuring himself to betray both. Thus we are

in the condition of patients, who have physic sent them by doctors at a distance, strangers to their constitution and the nature of their disease, and thus we are forced to pay 500 per cent. to decide our properties;* in all which we have likewise the honour to be distinguished from the whole race of mankind.

" As to the improvement of land, those few who attempt that or planting, through covetousness, or want of skill, generally leave things worse than they were; neither succeeding in trees nor hedges; and, by running into the fancy of grazing, after the manner of the Scythians, are every day depopulating the country.

" We are so far from having a king to reside among us, that even the viceroy is generally absent four-fifths of his time in the government.

" No strangers from other countries make this a part of their travels, where they can expect to see nothing but scenes of misery and desolation.

" Those who have the misfortune to be born here have the least title to any considerable employment, to which they are seldom preferred but upon a political consideration.

" One third part of the rents of Ireland is spent in England, which, with the profit of employments, pensions, appeals, journeys of pleasure or health, education at the inns of court and both universities, remittances at pleasure, the pay of all superior officers in the army, and other incidents, will amount to a full half of the income of the whole kingdom, all clear profit to England.

" We are denied the liberty of coining gold, silver, or even copper. In the Isle of Man they coin their own silver; every petty prince, vassal to the emperor, can coin what money he pleases. And in this, as in most of the articles already mentioned, we are an exception to all other states or monarchies that were ever known in the world.

" As to the last, or fourteenth article, we take special care to act diametrically contrary to it in the whole course of our

* The Appeal to the House of Peers.

lives. Both sexes, but especially the women, despise and abhor to wear any of their own manufactures, even those which are better made than in other countries, particularly a sort of silk plaid, through which the workmen are forced to run a kind of gold thread, that it may pass for Indian. Even ale and potatoes are imported from England, as well as corn; and our foreign trade is little more than importation of French wine, for which I am told we pay ready money.

" Now, if all this be true (upon which I could easily enlarge), I should be glad to know by what secret method it is that we grow a rich and flourishing people, without liberty, trade, manufactures, inhabitants, money, or the privilege of coining, without industry, labour, or improvement of land, and with more than half the rent and profits of the whole kingdom annually exported, for which we receive not a single farthing; and to make up all this, nothing worth mentioning, except the linen of the north, a trade casual, corrupted, and at mercy, and some butter from Cork. If we do flourish, it must be against every law of nature and reason, like the thorn at Glastonbury that blossoms in the midst of winter."*

* Swift's poetry upon the wrongs of Ireland was to the full as exciting as his prose. In his Verses on the Sudden Drying up of St. Patrick's Well, near Trinity College, Dublin, in 1726, he personifies St. Patrick, and makes him exclaim:—

" Thee, happy island, Pallas called her own,
When haughty Britain was a land unknown :
From thee with pride the Caledonians trace
The glorious founder of their kingly race.
Thy martial sons, whom now they dare despise,
Did once their land subdue and civilize ;
Their dress, their language, and the Scottish name,
Confess the soil from whence the victors came.
Well may they boast that antient blood which runs
Within their veins who are thy younger sons.
A conquest and a colony from thee,
The mother country left her children free ;
From thee no mark of slavery they felt :
Not so with thee the base invaders dealt :
Invited here to vengeful Morrough's aid,
Those whom they could not conquer they betrayed.
Britain, by thee we fell, ungrateful isle !
Not by thy valour, but superior guile :
Britain, with shame confess this land of mine
. First taught thee human knowledge and divine ;

The next ecclesiastical head of the Irish government was Primate Stone, a man of unbounded profligacy, moral as well as political. His grandfather, according to Plowden, was the keeper of Winchester gaol, and saved so much money out of the perquisites of his office as to set up his son, the primate's father, in the business of a banker. Dr. Stone owed his fortune to the friendship entertained for his brother by the duke of Newcastle. Like all favourites, he was rapidly promoted. In 1731, when only twenty-eight years of age, he was made bishop of Ferns; in 1733 he was translated to the see of Kildare; in 1743 to Derry; and in 1747 to the primacy of Armagh. Swift's writings had already created a public opinion in Ireland, and a party of landowners was soon formed, which, taking advantage of the spirit excited by his genius, and assuming the captivating name of patriots, sought to esta-

My prelates and my students sent from hence,
Made your sons converts both to God and sense—
Not like the pastors of thy ravenous breed,
Who come to fleece the flocks, and not to feed.

Oh ! had I been apostle to the Swiss,
Or hardy Scot, or any land but this ;
Combined in arms they had their foes defied,
And kept their liberty, or bravely died.
Thou still with tyrants in succession cursed,
The last invaders trampling on the first ;
Nor fondly hope for some reverse of fate—
Virtue herself would now return too late.
Not half thy course of misery is run ;
Thy greatest evils yet are scarce begun.
Soon shall thy sons (the time is just at hand)
Be all made captives in their native land ;
When for the use of no Hibernian born,
Shall rise one blade of grass, one ear of corn ;
When shells and leather shall for money pass,
Nor thy oppressing lords afford thee brass ; *
But all turn leasers to the mongrel breed, †
Who from thee sprung, yet on thy vitals feed ;
Who to yon ravenous isle thy treasures bear,
And waste in luxury thy harvest there ;
For pride and ignorance a proverb grown,
The jest of wits, and to the court unknown.
I scorn the spurious and degenerate line,
And from this hour my patronage resign.”

* Alluding to Wood's halfpence.

† The absentees.

blish a tyrannical oligarchy, and sway the destinies of the country by the weight of their property and the violence of their cabals. It was against this party that Dr. Stone had principally to contend, and there was no art, no corruption, and no vice, as we are assured, to which the unprincipled churchman did not resort to thin the ranks of the opposite faction and increase the number of his own followers. He bribed the avaricious, feasted the sensual, and is even said to have kept a harem for the lascivious !

The manuscript account of Ireland in the British Museum, from which the sketch of the penal laws, given a few pages back, was borrowed, contains a few striking passages explanatory of the manœuvres and tergiversations of Primate Stone and his cotemporaries :—“ As the modern part of the history of Irish government becomes every day more interesting, it is necessary that the narrative should be more full and particular. In former times the administration was confided by the lord lieutenant during his absence to such persons as, from his conviction of their talents and integrity, he esteemed worthy of so great a trust ; he did not think himself obliged to confine his choice to certain great officers of state, merely because they were such, but considered other circumstances than accidental station as necessary for this employment, such as knowledge of business and knowledge of the country, its laws and revenues, integrity and disinterestedness, loyalty, zeal, and activity ; but in later times it seems to have been a kind of established rule that the lord lieutenant, regarding rank alone, should, at his departure, leave the government in the hands of the principal persons of the church and the law, together with the speaker of the House of Commons. These gentlemen were usually appointed lords justices, and in this manner the conduct of Irish affairs continued for the greatest part of the late reign without any considerable variation.

“ The lord lieutenant came over once in two years, staid a few months, lived in kingly state, provided for his chaplain and secretary,* received freedoms, gold boxes, and compliment-

* The rich nature of this provision may be judged of from a memo-

tary addresses, and then hurried back to England with the utmost precipitation.

"The lords justices, by their connections and influence in the House of Commons, did what was usually termed the king's business in parliament, but which in truth was rather their own, as it enabled them to establish their power, and to domineer without control in the interior government of the country ; thus from their rank in their several departments, from the powers of their deputation, and their own diligence, they became important, the administration in England considered them as such, considered them as necessary, and that nothing could be done in Ireland without them.

"The lord lieutenant, who had solicited the government as a dignity to swell his titles, not to increase his trouble, to add to his dependants, not to his business, who from inattention was ignorant, and from indolence unwilling to undergo the

random given at the end of the manuscript, entitled "List of Irish Secretaries for these 25 Years past."

"Mr. Weston, secretary to Lord Harrington, was appointed alnager of Ireland, a place worth £1,000 per annum, which he resigned after having held it 12 years, and in lieu of it obtained a pension of £500 per annum for 31 years, he being at that time near 70 years old.

"Lord George Sackville, secretary to the duke of Dorset, was appointed clerk of the council *for life*, a place worth £1,100.

"General Conway, secretary to the duke of Devonshire, was appointed clerk of the crown and hanaper *for life*, a place worth £1,500 per annum.

"Mr. Rigby, secretary to the duke of Bedford, was appointed master of the rolls *for life*, a place worth £2,500 per annum ; also comptroller of the customs at Dublin, a place which he sold for £—.

"Mr. Hamilton, secretary to Lord Halifax, was appointed chancellor of the exchequer *for life*, a place worth £1,800 per annum ; and to make room for him, a pension of £1,200 per annum *for life* was given to Sir W. Yorke.

"Lord Beauchamp, secretary to Lord Hertford, would accept no office or himself ; but his brother, Mr. Henry Conway, was appointed constable of Dublin Castle *for life*, a place worth £425 per annum ; and he and his brother, Mr. Robert Conway, have the reversion of the clerkship of the crown in the King's Bench, worth upwards of £2,000 per annum.

"Mr. Theophilus Jones, secretary to Lord Bristol during six weeks, was appointed collector of Dublin, a place worth £1,200 per annum.

"Sir George Macartney, secretary to Lord Townshend during four years, in which space three sessions of parliament were held, has a pension of £1,500 per annum *during pleasure*, which incapacitates him from sitting in parliament, and besides, being ill paid, produces in London little more than £1,000 per annum."

laborious duties of his station, committed all public affairs to their entire management ; his chief object was to leave matters as he found them, and he esteemed himself happy, if, after six or seven months bustle and parade, he met with no insult on quitting Ireland, nor censure on arriving in England.

" Things remained on this footing till the year 1751, the grand epocha of those party feuds which have disturbed and disgraced the parliamentary proceedings of Ireland ever since ; at this period Doctor Stone was at the head of the church, and Mr. Boyle had sat near twenty years in the chair of the House of Commons ; the latter was a man of a sound understanding, of affable manner joined to a resolute mind,—the former was ingenious, supple and insinuating, of boundless presumption and insatiable ambition. Mr. Boyle from his station, his prudence and his unshaken attachment to his friends, derived his power, and maintained it with steadiness and dignity. Doctor Stone aspired to this power, and was eager instantly to seize what his colleague had obtained by perseverance and time : the speaker was jealous of the enterprise and address of his young rival ; the primate dreaded the arts of the old statesman. The one could not brook the ecclesiastical politician, the other determined to overturn the lay dictator ; both employed the usual arms of courtiers, and both busily prepared for the parliamentary campaign.

" The duke of Dorset, now appointed lord lieutenant, had been the primate's first patron, and was naturally inclined to support the work of his own hands : the subtle churchman cultivated this disposition, and improved to the utmost the advantage of his ground. Affairs began now to wear a different face. The chief governor did not, for he could not, depend on the old system, as the leaders were divided. He was obliged to form a new party ; but instead of commanding it himself, as he ought to have done, he put the primate at the head of it. Thus, what was intended for the support of government, became injurious to it, and served but as an engine to promote the views and to gratify the ambition of Stone. The dignity and independence of administration was

the avowed motive, but the personal contest between the speaker and the primate was the real source of national division. Under their banners the whole kingdom seemed to range, and to wait with impatience for the day of decision.

“An occasion for essaying their strength was not long wanting. The late surveyor-general was made the instrument of trial, and the ruin of an honest and an innocent individual was to be the test of superiority before any important national question was ventured on. Mr. Boyle was victorious, and the unfortunate Neville was expelled. Not satisfied with this advantage, the speaker resolved to hazard a contest on the more momentous subject of the king’s prerogative. This question, as being weighty in itself and serious in its consequences, I shall endeavour briefly to explain.

“After the conclusion of the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, an increase of the trade of Ireland brought so great augmentation to his majesty’s revenue, that in two years a very considerable redundancy appeared in the treasury. There can be no question that this redundancy was the property of the crown, for it arose from the exceedings of the hereditary revenue, and additional duties which are granted to the king without any appropriation. There being now much more than sufficient to answer all the charges of the establishment and other expences of government, it follows, that the surplus, as it is vested in the king, so it must be at his disposal.

“The public had contracted a large debt in the late war; but for the payment of the interest and discharge of the principal of that debt, certain duties had been granted by parliament, and specially appropriated to that purpose alone. The crown, however, was willing to employ a share of its treasure towards exonerating the nation and lessening its incumbrance. Accordingly, in 1749, there being then a balance of £220,000 and upwards in the vice-treasurer’s hands, it was moved in the House of Commons by the king’s attorney-general, that this balance should be applied to discharge a certain portion of the public debt. As the occasion was new, gentlemen were at a loss to know in what manner the king’s consent ought to

appear ; however, they brought in heads of a bill for the payment of the several principal sums of £70,000 and £58,000, in which, after several recitals relative to the debt, there was this recital, ‘ Whereas there is a considerable balance in the vice-treasurer’s hands unapplied, and it will be for your majesty’s service and the ease of your faithful subjects of Ireland, that so much thereof as can be conveniently spared, should be paid, agreeably to your majesty’s most gracious intentions, in discharge of the said debt.’ The bill was passed in this form, which contained an acknowledgment of the king’s right to determine how much could be spared, and that his gracious intentions on that subject had been communicated to them previous to the drawing up the heads of the bill.

“ In 1751, the duke of Dorset, in his speech from the throne at the opening of the session, declared that his majesty would graciously consent, and recommend to them that such part of the money then remaining in the treasury as should be thought consistent with the public service be applied towards the further reduction of the national debt. This shewed that his majesty considered his previous consent as necessary to that application ; the Commons, in their answer, thanked the king for his recommendation, and took no notice of his *consent*. A bill thus framed was sent in the usual manner to Great Britain, which was returned with the insertion of the word ‘ Consent,’—an insertion plainly in affirmation of what his majesty insisted on in right of his prerogative. The bill thus altered passed both houses without an objection or a single negative, and received the royal assent. If the constant exertion of the royal power over the money in the actual hands of the king’s treasurers wanted a formal recognition of right from parliament, that recognition was now given in express terms by a unanimous decision. Here, then, are two undisputed precedents—the one of 1749, and the other of 1751—for the establishment of the king’s prerogative in this instance.

“ The session of 1753 was opened by the duke of Dorset, who, in his speech from the throne, repeated exactly the same words of his majesty’s *consent* and recommendation as in the

former session. It was answered in just the same manner ; the House of Commons omitted echoing back the word 'Consent,' but expressed their sense of the king's recommendation. In the heads of the bill prepared by them, they were silent on both points, and neither mentioned the king's consent nor his recommendation. These omissions were supplied in England, and the bill was returned with the proper insertions, according to the form of the preceding session.

" It was on this occasion that Mr. Boyle exerted his whole weight and influence in the House of Commons against the crown, in defiance of all decency, consistency, and gratitude. The bill was rejected by 122 to 117. Though the crown was defeated in this question, yet its opponents might say, like Pyrrhus, that such another victory would undo them. A majority of five is but unsteady footing against government, and must soon be mastered, if properly contended with ; and, indeed, one cannot look back without astonishment on the imprudence, I had almost said presumption, of the Irish parliament in this proceeding ; for there is no doubt that at this time, such was the opulence of the crown, and the state of its finances so flourishing, that it could have stood on the hereditary revenue alone, without being under any necessity of applying to parliament for additional duties or supplies. But notwithstanding the rejection of the bill above mentioned, the king was resolved that neither his subjects of Ireland should be deprived of the benefit he intended them, nor his own prerogative be defeated ; he therefore sent over his letter for the payment of the remainder of the debt out of the balance then in the treasury, and thus solely and in his own right exercised that prerogative, in which he graciously intended to have permitted the Irish parliament to participate.* Before I

* Mr. Grattan, in the life of his father, states the actual sum now remaining in the Treasury as £77,500. Five of the Gores, who voted on the occasion in the minority, claimed the honour of the victory for their own family. The lists of the division were printed in black and red ; the majority described as *Vindices libertatis*, and the minority thus—*Hic niger est, hanc tu Romane caveto*. Horace Walpole, who always wrote to the purpose, and whose numerous letters are full of all sorts of entertainment and information, has the following passage respecting these events :—

close the scene, I must take notice of a little piece of craft practised by Mr. Boyle on occasion of the rejected bill. In all other divisions of the house, the numbers appear on the Journals, but the speaker expunged them in this instance, and the entry is simply thus: ‘Ordered that the bill be rejected,’—that the world might imagine the rejection of the bill was a matter of course merely from the odiousness of its nature; such was the subject, and such the result, of the question in 1753.

“In consequence of these extraordinary proceedings, Mr. Boyle was dismissed from his employment of chancellor of the exchequer, and all his adherents who had offices were deprived of them. This spirited conduct on the part of the crown, if it had been persevered in, would undoubtedly have rendered the subsequent government of Ireland both easy and honourable. Why the duke of Dorset did not return to Ireland, and why the system then laid down was not effectually pursued, I know not; but I know that the not pursuing it has been the true cause of all the distractions and disturbances in Ireland since that time.

“The marquess of Hartington, afterwards duke of Devonshire, was now sent over lord lieutenant. He negotiated with all parties, he flattered the opponents of government with hopes of restitution, and to the friends of government he promised every security; hence the session was tolerably quiet; but how far his administration was just and advantageous to the crown, must be decided by the consequences resulting from it.

“He could not dismiss those from their offices, who had obtained them by their support of government, but he gave

“The flames in Ireland are stifled—I cannot say extinguished—by adjourning the parliament, which is prorogued. A catalogue of *dimensions* was sent over thither, but the lord lieutenant durst not put them in execution. The style towards that island is extremely lofty, and after some faint proposals of giving them some agreeable governor, violent measures have been resumed. The speaker (Henry Boyle) is removed from being chancellor of the exchequer, more of his friends are displaced, and the primate, with the chancellor and Lord Besborough, again nominated lords justices. These measures must oppress the Irish spirit, or, what is more natural, inflame it to despair.”—*Letters to Sir H. Mann.*

better employments to those who had lost theirs by opposing it. Mr. Boyle was not only reinstated in the chancellorship of the exchequer, but was created an earl, and rewarded with a pension of £2,000 per annum for thirty-one years; Mr. Carter was made secretary of state, with an additional salary; Sir Richard Cox obtained a large pension; and the inferior partizans were all provided for. *Nemo non donatus abibat.* Thus was purchased this fatal and ignominious peace, which swelled the charge of the establishment to an enormous size. Opposition was lavishly recompensed, and government shewed that it considered the constant attachment of its friends as less meritorious than the suspicious conversion of its enemies."

This extract is interesting as the account of a writer evidently well informed of the circumstances which he narrates. We are able to see plainly in it the secret springs of a political contest, suggestive of extensive improvements, and resulting in important changes; but it is of little value as a correct exposition of the constitutional points at issue at this juncture between the crown and the parliament of Ireland. Those points were two,—the first touched the right of the Commons to originate all money bills, and the second involved the pretensions of the crown to dispose of the public money without the authority of parliament. Upon neither the one nor the other is this writer a safe guide. As we are rapidly approaching the short season of Irish parliamentary independence,—a season which, like an arctic summer, exhibits its brief interval of light and warmth breaking through a long period of darkness and cold,—it will perhaps be most convenient to reserve our review of the facts and arguments bearing upon these disputed questions, and to proceed with the manuscript version of the political diversions of Primate Stone, Mr. Speaker Boyle, now Earl of Shannon, the undertakers, and the patriots who contribute between them, in their schemes, their squabbles, and their jobs, the little that constitutes the history of Ireland for a series of years.

" During this administration the primate lay under a sort of disgrace, and was left out of the government on the lord

lieutenant's departure. His real views had been confined to the increase of his own power, and never pointed to support the authority of the crown farther than as it answered that end. Vanquished by his enemies and rejected by his friends, he for some time suffered all the pangs of baffled ambition; but though disappointed, he did not despair, and resolved, since the times seemed unfavourable to his measures, to adapt his measures to the times; he saw the difficulty of ruling alone, and thought an equal share of government was preferable to a total exclusion; he therefore made overtures of friendship to his old rival, and by his usual address accomplished an entire reconciliation.

"The primate and Lord Shannon knew each other perfectly: they both knew their respective interests, and that a mutual co-operation was the most effectual method to promote them; their united judgments would lay their designs with greater security, their united address would more easily remove difficulties, and their united power would undoubtedly be too strong for a government which had so lately exposed its inexperience and timidity.

"The duke of Bedford was appointed lord lieutenant in 1757, and continued in that high office till 1761. From his character and temper it was imagined that he would maintain the dignity and independence of the king's representative; but I know not how it happened, whether from want of proper support in England, or from want of proper management in Ireland, his Grace was after a short struggle obliged to follow the example of his predecessors, to return to the old system, and put himself into the hands of the parliamentary undertakers. But this was not the only mortification he suffered: a still greater was preparing for him, and in a short time he found himself under the necessity of complying with the demands of a set of gentlemen who modestly called themselves *the Patriots*.

"The patriots were men of moderate fortunes, of a middle rank in life, but of great ambition and considerable abilities. They could not brook the superiority affected by the under-

takers, and were therefore determined either to bring them down to their own level, or to raise themselves to the same degree of consequence. Whenever government quarrelled with the undertakers, the patriots were ready to support it; but as government, after making use of them, had constantly left them in the lurch, and recurred to the undertakers, the patriots became irreconcileable enemies to both; they soon found an occasion of taking an ample revenge, and extorted a concession from the duke of Bedford, which, if not recovered, must at last destroy the great engine of kingly government in Ireland.

" I have before observed that the hereditary revenue was granted to the crown for ever, and that if properly conducted it might alone be rendered sufficient to answer all the necessary charges of the state. This was well understood both by the patriots and the undertakers. The former, therefore, took every opportunity of diminishing this revenue; and the latter had the treachery, if not to assist, to acquiesce in their doing so. Of this a very strong instance was now given, and a bill passed for granting a bounty on all corn and flour brought to Dublin by land carriage. This bill has been altered and amended by subsequent statutes, the effect of all which has been to increase the charge.

" The duke of Bedford offered at first to grant this bounty for a term of years, but nothing would satisfy the patriots but a perpetuity, and thus the act passed without any limitation. They promised, indeed, to create a fund for the payment of this bounty; but though often reminded, never kept their word. The consequence of this law has been that the money paid out of the revenue on account of land carriage of corn and flour now amounts to near £50,000 per annum; and there is no doubt but that it will amount to double that sum in a good wheat season.

" Thus a prodigious charge is for ever entailed upon the revenue, which charge must be answered at all events and in preference to most others; for by the act, this bounty is made payable not out of the revenue in the treasury, but out of

the revenue is *transitu*, in the hands of the collector of Dublin port as he receives it before he accounts with the treasury, so that if any state emergency was to happen, if an enemy was at the gates, the corn bounty must be first paid, though there may perhaps not be money in the treasury sufficient to set a battalion in motion. And here I must observe, that besides this bounty on corn and flour, there have been several others given at different times by act of parliament in the same exceptionable manner, a particular account of which shall be given in the chapter of revenue.

“ It may not be improper in this place to take notice of an innovation introduced in favour of Mr. Ponsonby, ‘who was now speaker of the House of Commons, and was beginning to aspire to popularity and power. In the money bill of 1759, £500 was for the first time granted to the speaker to enable him to maintain the state and dignity of his office, as is expressed in the bill. To shew how dangerous it is to yield to any thing, however trifling, out of the ordinary channel, it must be remarked that afterwards, in 1761, the allowance of £500 was augmented to £2,000, and in the session of 1765 this £2,000 was doubled; so that at present the speaker has £4,000 constantly given him in the money bill as a matter of course, besides the old allowance from the crown of £500 each session and the emoluments of the office, which £500 and those emoluments were all that his predecessors had, and were esteemed fully sufficient.

“ Soon after the accession of his present majesty, a money bill certified in the usual manner was transmitted to England as a cause and consideration, among others, for the calling a new parliament. There had been a strong debate in the privy council on the propriety of this measure. It was urged by some, that since the Revolution, no parliament had ever been called in Ireland without the previous certification and transmission of a money bill to England,—that it was looked upon by the British administration as a necessary form, and that it could not be departed from; on the other hand, the primate, Lord Shannon, and Mr. Ponsonby, now lords jus-

tices, at first refused to certify a money bill, alleging that other bills of a different nature were sufficient causes for assembling a parliament. As the House of Commons had always looked with jealousy on this origination of a money bill in the privy council, the lords justices imagined that their refusal to certify one on this occasion, would increase their own consequence and popularity. They thought, if they succeeded, it would prove that by their influence, and advice, the English ministry had been prevailed on to recede from this important point, and at the same time it would show their own tenderness for the privileges of the people, by not interfering with them in the right of granting money.

" Mr. Malone, the chancellor of the exchequer, adopted their ideas, but the earl of Kildare loudly declared for a money bill ; several letters passed on the subject between England and Ireland, the consequence of which was that the lords justices thought it prudent to submit and certify a money bill in the usual manner, which on its return passed both houses by a prodigious majority. Lord Kildare was rewarded with a marquisate for his support, and Mr. Malone was dismissed for his opposition.

" The earl of Halifax was now appointed lord lieutenant, whose government, being strongly supported in England, was easy to himself and honourable to his sovereign. The undertakers having experienced the firmness of the crown in the instance of the money bill, and well knowing that firmness in the crown must baffle them in every other, were afraid to take any steps which might occasion complaint. They therefore lived on good terms with Lord Halifax, assisted him in carrying on the public business, and were left in the government at his departure.

" He was succeeded by the duke of Northumberland, during whose splendid and princely administration affairs were conducted with dignity and regularity, and without any considerable opposition ; Lord Shannon was grown old and fond of repose, the primate was desirous of entering into the strictest union with the duke of Northumberland, and Mr.

Ponsonby still remained in some degree under the influence of the primate ; I must, however, remark that a bounty for encouraging the fishery was now granted, and made payable, like the corn premiums, out of the revenue *in transitu*. It was not, indeed, like the corn premiums, made perpetual ; it was limited to six years, but was extended to fourteen in the ensuing session ; the amount of it at present is upwards of £11,000 per annum, and is likely to increase.

" In the latter end of the year 1764, the primate and Lord Shannon, who had from the time of their reconciliation wisely drawn together in the government, died within a few days of one another ; the fortune and following of Lord Shannon descended to his son, who had married Mr. Ponsonby's eldest daughter. This young nobleman and his father-in-law aimed at the power and importance of their predecessors, and flattered themselves that their united weight would not only overpower every other party in the kingdom, but be too strong for government itself. In the administration of Lord Hertford, they on more than one occasion betrayed their intentions, but the lord lieutenant's firmness and address kept things from coming to a rupture during his residence. The most material occurrence of the session was an attempt of Mr. Pery, in the House of Commons, which I can't avoid taking particular notice of, as it occasioned much discourse, and was in itself of an extraordinary nature.

" In the reign of King James the First, in my Lord Chichester's government, the speaker of the House of Commons, on the last day of the session, November 29th, 1614, delivered a note or remembrance to the lord deputy, containing, among others, the following paragraph :—

" ' The House of Commons, acknowledging that the sole power and authority to transmit such bills as are to be propounded in parliament, doth rest in the lord deputy and council, do only desire to be as remembrancers unto his lordship and the rest, touching the acts following, which they humbly offer as meet to be transmitted, with such other acts as his lordship, &c. shall think fit to be propounded in the next session.'

" This paragraph, which contains a very short and plain acknowledgment of the law and practice, as settled by Poyning's Act, Mr. Pery moved to have expunged out of the Journals. The motion was made so suddenly and so artfully, that the speaker, Mr. Ponsonby, had not presence of mind sufficient to defeat or restrain it, so Mr. Pery's resolution passed for the expunging, and appeared the next day in the printed votes; but soon after, the speaker, having been in consultation at the castle, and being informed of the dangerous tendency of Mr. Pery's motion, with great difficulty got the whole proceeding annulled, and the entry on the votes to be declared an error of the clerk.

" The ordnance of Ireland was now vacant, by the resignation of the marquis of Kildare, and the world expected that it would be given to Lord Drogheda, a nobleman of good character, who had served upwards of twenty years in the army, and had lately married the lord lieutenant's daughter; however, on this occasion, his excellency preferred the interests of the crown to those of his own family, and hoping to attach Lord Shannon to the service of his administration, recommended him to his majesty for this great employment, and obtained it for him. Lord Hertford, at his departure, left the chancellor and speaker in the government together with the earl of Drogheda, who was thus compensated for the loss of the ordnance.

" On the great change of the English ministry in 1766, the earl of Bristol was appointed chief governor; a new system of government was said to be now adopted. Ireland was no more to be left to the discretion of the undertakers; the lord lieutenant was for the future constantly to reside and hold the reins of government in his own hands.

" The people, ever fond of novelty, were rejoiced beyond measure at the happy tidings. Individuals were no less delighted. Those who had been long in leading-strings, but had never been led to what they looked for, felt new hopes rise in their bosoms, and flattered themselves that the day of enfranchisement was come; golden visions of profit and of honour opened on the eyes of every patriot. He who had disdained

the thraldom of an undertaker, was ready to wear the livery of a resident viceroy, and the most inveterate Republican became a convert to the new theory of government ; all was rapture and reformation ; the return of Astraea was hourly expected, and the kingdom of Saturn was supposed to be at hand.

“ The undertakers, against whose usurpation this scheme of residence was levelled, immediately took the alarm, and most diligently used all their endeavours to defeat it ; they knew indeed that opposition, if steadily resisted, must soon moulder into insignificance, but they flattered themselves that no lord lieutenant would long persevere in the new plan. If he should, they were resolved to omit nothing on their part to make his situation as uneasy and as unpleasant to him as possible.

“ The season now approached for the usual assembling of the Irish parliament, and the earl of Bristol having resigned the government, Lord Townshend was appointed to succeed him ; the principal events of this administration I shall endeavour to comprehend in as small a compass as I can.

“ The bill for granting a bounty on corn and flour brought to Dublin by land carriage, as mentioned in the duke of Bedford’s administration, was a concession so important and so unexpected, that the patriots were from thence encouraged to make still greater demands. They imagined that government, having once yielded in a point so prejudicial to its own interests, would as easily be persuaded to pass any other laws which they might choose to propose : their principal aim was to load the hereditary revenue either by perpetual charges, or by charges for long terms of years ; by this means their own consequence would be enhanced, and the authority and revenue of the crown greatly weakened and impaired.

“ To accomplish these views they laid their designs with uncommon art and address, and the measures most destructive to government they often contrived to make appear as the measures of government itself,—not as measures adopted in compliance with popular importunity, but as measures flowing

spontaneously either from the king's goodness or the viceroy's representation and influence. Immediately on the appointment of a new lord lieutenant, they employed some emissary, who, under the mask of friendship and good wishes, insinuated that the best method to secure an easy and honourable government in Ireland would be to open the session with some popular act or declaration ; the real meaning of which was either some innovation in the established constitution or some encroachment on the revenue.

" For this purpose various schemes were offered, and the utility and necessity of pursuing them were painted in the most seducing colours : one day a bounty on fish, fishing busses, and whale catching, was desired ; the establishment of county hospitals and public coal-yards was another day mentioned ; a septennial bill, a judges bill, a habeas corpus bill, premiums for corn preserved upon stands and for corn brought to Dublin coastways, were all asked in their turns ; nay, what will scarcely be believed, a proposal was seriously made that the land-carriage bounty should be paid for all corn and flour brought to Dublin by the new canal ; and such was the success of these representations, that many of the demands above-mentioned were in a great measure complied with : the immense charge incurred by them may be seen in the public accounts, where they stand as incontrovertible evidence of their own exorbitance and impropriety. A lord lieutenant new in his government, perhaps new in business of any kind, unacquainted with the people and constitution of Ireland, and desirous of carrying on his administration with popularity and good humour, probably at first did not apprehend any danger or inconvenience from adopting these schemes ; he perhaps seemed to approve them,—and his seeming approbation was immediately sworn into a positive promise, the performance of which he was afterwards either soothed or frightened into, according to the features of his character, and the circumstances of the times.

" In Lord Hertford's government, heads of bills were brought into the House of Commons to make the judges' commissions

to continue *quamdiu se bene gesserint*. The administration in England, apprehending that such a law would tend to create a kind of *imperium in imperio*, refused at that time to consent to it in any shape ; they were, however, afterwards of opinion that it might be granted under certain restrictions ; accordingly Lord Townshend, at the opening of the next session, recommended it in his speech from the throne. The bill was transmitted to England, and returned to Ireland with several alterations ; but as these alterations seemed to defeat the insidious intentions of the gentlemen who had framed the bill, it was rejected without a division.

" The same spirit of innovation which had clamoured for the judges bill still prevailed, and was equally loud and eager for a law to limit the duration of parliaments. How far it was politic to consent to it, is not now material ; the bill was passed, and during four and twenty hours the lord lieutenant was the most popular man in the kingdom.

" The undertakers, who never imagined that the crown would have consented to lessen its prerogative in this point without some equivalent, and who had formed their schemes and connections according to the then subsisting parliament, were highly enraged to find themselves so mistaken. As the bill was popular, they had never ventured to oppose it whilst in agitation ; and now that it was passed, they pretended to approve of it ; but they never forgave the measure, and from that moment acted in open hostility to government.

" This was not however the only cause of their ill humour. Not contented with the power and employments which they enjoyed, they had early in the session made some very unreasonable demands upon government. One gentleman was only to be satisfied with half a dozen peerages for his friends ; another preferred some great reversion for himself. Those who had not pensions, wished to have them ; those who had pensions, desired an addition ; and almost all who were already in good employment agreed in asking for better ones. Lord Townshend's hesitation to comply with these extraordinary

requisitions was highly resented. Thus these gentlemen, instead of being grateful for past favours, were enraged at the refusal of new ones, turned the power of the crown entrusted to their hands against the crown itself, and endeavoured to extort by faction and opposition what was meant to be the reward of loyalty and service."

This extract is in some parts even more obnoxious to criticism than was the one last taken from the same pages. It reveals the character of a decided partisan, the official courtier, and expresses not a few extreme opinions. As a whole, however, it presents an instructive insight into the condition of the country, and the improprieties practised both by the government and its opponents. Instead of seeing the English minister corrupting the Irish parliament through the instrumentality of the undertakers, we now detect the bribe passing directly from the hand of the lord lieutenant into the purse of the public man. But, as has been already remarked, the writer seems to misapprehend the real point at issue between the contending authorities; the right, namely, of the crown to appropriate at its own will and pleasure the stated accumulations in the treasury. Unquestionably, the exaggerated extent of royal prerogative to which a claim is here laid would be incompatible with all constitutional government. It is moreover to be regretted that no notice is taken of the popularity enjoyed by the patriots. There were reasons for the respect paid to those men which deserved consideration. Had their leaders been pure, they would have merited an immortal fame. Inconsistent and even mercenary as they were, and undoubtedly as are our proofs of the selfish objects of the landed oligarchy to which they belonged,—an oligarchy that equally abused on every occasion the crown and their country,—it would still have been but fair to recognise the arguments of those amongst them who contended that there were advantages to be gained by supporting even such an aristocracy against the English minister, who preferred the pernicious influence even of that order to the absolute tyranny of a distant sovereign; and who feared, that if the nobility was destroyed,

it would be for ever impossible to make head against the crown of England.*

It was in this state of things that a small advantage was gained for the cause of improved government. The first Irishman, "who, after Swift, *dared to write freedom*," was Dr. Lucas. Mr. Grattan, who makes the remark, tells us in his life of his father, "that Lucas established the *Freeman's Journal*, —a paper that upheld liberal principles, that raised a public spirit where there had been none, and kept up a public feeling when it was sinking, and to which, in a great degree, Ireland was indebted for her liberties. Lucas's name stands connected with those two great measures—the freedom of the press, and the shortening the duration of parliament. His history presents the singular spectacle of a man of humble origin,—an apothecary by profession, and that profession his only means of subsistence,—moreover without education, with little acquired knowledge, and little force of talents,—issuing from his shop, and at once attacking abuses wherever he finds them. He does this, too, with great boldness and admirable spirit. He not only attacked abuses, but individuals, and declared a general war against the wrongs of his country, her governors, her laws, and her representatives. He bade defiance to the power and tyranny of the parliament of Ireland, and was fearless of the vengeance of Great Britain. He was another Swift, but without the vast talents of that writer. In Lucas it seemed a sort of inspiration, for nothing was too high or too low for his resentment or his ambition. He assailed everything and everybody, from the monarch who swayed the sceptre, down to the mayor who held the city mace. He flung them all into his political crucible, and poured upon them indiscriminately the vials of his unsparing vituperation. He deemed their offences great, and his language was strong in

* These were the opinions of Mr. Flood and others, who used to maintain that the only way in which an Irishman could really serve his country, was by taking office. These, however, were not the opinions of Mr. Grattan, who, with Lord Charlemont, was almost the only pure public character of his time. Office, in his estimation, was a "masked pension;" the man who took it sold himself to government, and it was impossible that in Ireland it should confer the power of doing good.

proportion. He made political abuse a sort of trade, and got business by it, and popularity.

" In 1748, Lucas addressed a number of letters to his fellow-citizens, that were devoid of style and taste, but full of ardor, spirit, and the love of freedom; their sentiments strong, their principles sound, and their boldness undaunted. His writings were all in favour of liberty, and they embraced all the leading points of Irish grievances. He denied the supremacy of the British parliament; he asserted the absolute independence of Ireland, and her right to self-government; he attacked Poyning's law and the final judicature assumed by the British House of Lords; he also published, with appropriate strictures, the protest in the English house in 1719, against the then assumption of that authority.

" All this very naturally attracted attention, and drew down upon Lucas the hostility of the government. To add to the number of his foes, he alluded in his writings, in the severest terms, to the Lord Lieutenant Harrington, and inveighed against the abuses of the city authorities, the lord mayor and the aldermen. Thus he contrived to unite all parties against him, and they were quick and decided in their proceedings. The grand juries of the county and of the city of Dublin presented his addresses as libels on the lord lieutenant, as 'tending to promote insurrection, and as justifying the bloody rebellion raised in Ireland'; and they ordered his writings to be burned by the hands of the common hangman. The attorney-general also filed an information against him for the same supposed offences for which he had been presented by the several grand juries, upon the charge of the chief justice. The House of Commons resolved that his writings were seditious, and he was an enemy to his country; that he be arrested by the speaker's warrant, and committed to gaol; and not being able to discover him, they requested the lord lieutenant to issue his proclamation for his apprehension. Finally, the corporation disfranchised him, in gross violation of their own rules and institutions. Several of the citizens, however, more spirited than the rest, opposed this violence, and

proceeded to call their ancient court of Darrien Hundred ; but they were dispersed by the lord mayor, who threatened to call out the military.

" Yet all these efforts, numerous as they were, failed either to subdue or silence the object of their unjust vengeance.

" Lucas took refuge in England ; and, compelled to fly from the country whose rights and liberties he had asserted, he appealed to the people of both islands against such unexampled oppression, and dated his address from Westminster, 'the present place of my pilgrimage, 1750.'

" The active mind of Lucas did not suffer him to remain quiet. He now applied himself to his profession, and practised as physician ; and being well skilled in that profession, he quickly obtained reputation. His treatise on the Bath waters was much esteemed : he also obtained much business by his popularity : he was the medical adviser as well as the personal friend of the earl of Charlemont.

" Lucas remained an exile from 1749 to 1760, when he returned to his native country, in consequence of a '*noli prosequi*' from the crown ; and a dissolution of parliament having taken place on the death of George II., he was chosen one of the members to represent the city of Dublin in 1761. This latter event was Lucas's final triumph over his enemies ; but it was also his 'journey's end,'—'the seamark of his utmost sail.'

" He brought forward the Septennial Bill in the first session of the reign of George III. It was approved of by the lord lieutenant and council, and was transmitted to England, but never returned. The popular party, thus defeated, but not discouraged, brought forward the measure a second time in the ensuing session, with the same zeal and the same result. In the third session the measure was again introduced, and the chief governor, Lord Hertford, gave every assurance of his support ; his son was secretary in Ireland, and voted for the bill, but it was nevertheless a third time rejected, and the people were disappointed. A fourth time it was attempted in the winter of the session of 1767-8, in Lord Townshend's administration, and was returned from England, along with the

bills of supply, altered from septennial to octennial, and was at length (Feb. 9, 1768) passed into a law."

During this year the government recruited its wasted strength by creating a variety of new places. The Boards of Custom and Excise, hitherto united, were now divided, and the number of commissioners increased from seven to twelve. A sum of £500,000 is said to have been expended in bribery at this period. The manner in which additional servants were procured to do "the king's business," was as indecent as the use was vile to which they were put when obtained. The laws of England, enforcing the spirit of the constitution, then as now excluded commissioners of revenue from parliament; but Lord Townshend gave them seats in the Irish Commons. On two occasions the house resolved, by decided majorities, that the increase in the number of commissioners was unnecessary; but the lord lieutenant set the votes at defiance: he appointed the additional men, and propped up his own majority by wantonly increasing the public burthens. By practices such as these,—by a lavish profusion, by feasting, pleasures, and by indulging in unbounded expense,—Lord Townshend was enabled to make head against the undertakers; but his unprincipled proceedings, far from imparting strength to the government, only added to its embarrassments and increased its weakness. Upon his retirement, the offices under his control were found to owe £250,000; and although the salary of the lord lieutenant had been augmented during his time to £16,000 a year, he had so encumbered his private property with debts, as to be obliged to sell some of his estates, after his return to England, in order to satisfy the demands of his personal creditors.

Lord Harcourt, whose lieutenancy commenced in 1772, added largely to the extravagance, corruption, and discontent of the period. In order to fill the treasury bench before the meeting of parliament, he made five earls, seven viscounts, and eighteen barons, in one day. Small as was the public income, there were three vice-treasurers, each with an augmented salary of £3,500 a year. Amongst them was Flood,

one of the most eloquent of the patriots, and on many occasions distinguished for the breadth and vigour of his liberality. Unquestionably the situation of Ireland at this moment was of that gloomy and disturbing character, which was well calculated to rouse the strongest feelings of irritation, and to inspire at the same time the boldest hopes of patriotism. Lord Harcourt was succeeded by the earl of Buckinghamshire in 1777, when America was fighting against English injustice. It now became evident that the trodden Irish had begun to own to themselves that the elements of nationality still lingered upon their soil. The distress of the government made them sensible of their strength. The ministerial rescripts are our authority for representing that the trade of the country had, by this time, every where declined,—that her fisheries were not followed—that the manufacture of linen, the only one left, could not find a market;—that the chief sources of revenue from which the civil and military offices of the country were supported, had not only decayed, but were in danger of being utterly lost;—that the people were starving in thousands,—and that their discontent was so general and so strong, that the lord lieutenant was obliged to reckon up the number of troops he could send into the field in the event of an insurrection. So extreme was the want of money at the treasury, that the government was obliged to borrow the small sum of £20,000 from Messrs. Latouche's bank, in order to pay its current expenses. This loan having been soon exhausted, another was solicited and refused,—the bankers assuring the lord lieutenant that “it was not in their power, though very much in their inclination,” to lend a second sum of £20,000. In consequence of this humiliating refusal, the government became positively bankrupt; the lord lieutenant was obliged to suspend payment of the civil and military salaries and pensions, all parliamentary grants, clothing—arrears, and other disbursements.

It was while Lord Harcourt was chief governor, while the treasury was thus beggared, and the administration disgraced, that England committed a further act of ignorant injustice

against Ireland, by laying an embargo on the export of Irish provisions. Denied the right of exporting their cattle, the Irish had acquired a valuable trade in salted meat, particularly beef and pork. That commerce was now interdicted by England ; and it was also during the term of this lieutenancy that, for the first time, a seat was taken in the Irish House of Commons by Henry Grattan, the greatest of Irishmen,—a statesman whose genius, eloquence, and public virtue, would have done honour to any age or country ; but who stands pre-eminently admirable as an example of unstained integrity and unbending fortitude, during a period of unparalleled degeneracy, when every patriot was a placeman,—when the senator who served his country looked for a gratuity, or the payment of a salary, as a matter of course,—when vacillation and apostacy were the every day failings of public characters, and consistency was a virtue which but rarely found a second follower.

Henry Grattan was born in Dublin during the year 1746. His father filled the office of recorder, and represented the city in parliament for many years. Henry was educated at the university of Dublin ; and being intended for the profession of the law, entered himself as a student of the Middle Temple in London, during the year 1767. Before this event took place he had lost his father, who left him a small estate, which was sufficient to render him independent, but not to make him rich. He was called to the Irish bar in the year 1772, but never obtained much practice. His son tells us, that having lost the first cause entrusted to his advocacy, he sought to console his client by returning half his fee. In the year 1775, he took his seat for the first time in the Irish House of Commons, as member for the borough of Charlemont ; and in seven years after he effected the independence of the Irish legislature. When the greatness of this achievement, the short period within which it was accomplished, and the monstrous power and unbridled corruption by which it was resisted, are all considered, no praise that can be bestowed will be found too high for the merits of the private gentleman who, with a

very moderate fortune, and few aids but those derived from the force of his own genius and eloquence, freed his country from as abject a condition of slavery, legal and commercial, as is to be found in the history of the world.

Henry Grattan's patriotism will be thoroughly appreciated by those only who are correctly informed of the nature of the restrictions imposed upon the Irish legislature, and the extent of the corruption by which the ministers of England were enabled to keep the country under foot, at the time he entered the House of Commons. From the year 1585 to the year 1692, the meetings of the parliament of Ireland, the repudiated session under James II. excepted, had been frequently intermitted. For instance, from the year 1585 to the year 1612, a period of twenty-seven years, there was no parliament; from 1615 to 1634, nineteen years, there was no parliament; from 1648 to 1661, thirteen years, there was no parliament; and from 1666 to 1692, twenty-six years, there was no parliament. The king's revenues throughout this long period sufficed to cover the ordinary expences of government, and as no money was wanted, no parliament was called. The particular ground upon which the king's revenue had been placed beyond the reach and control of the legislature deserves to be remembered. The Irish quit rents had been voted in return for the forfeited lands; the hearth-money tax had been granted by way of compensation for the abolition of the Court of Wards; and the customs and excise, as an acknowledgment for the Act of Explanation and Settlement. In the year 1692 under Lord Sydney, in 1753 under the duke of Dorset, in 1760 under Lord Halifax, and in 1769 under Lord Townshend, the Commons made unavailing attempts to throw off this yoke. They claimed the constitutional right of originating all money bills, while the crown insisted upon its legal right, derived from existing acts of parliament, to apply, of its own accord, for money whenever the public service demanded a supply, and to appropriate, on its own authority, any sums remaining in the treasury. The Irish process of legislation for a series of years is thus explained in the manuscript account of Ireland already quoted.

"As the course of passing an Irish law is and must be different from the course of passing an English one, I shall here state the manner of it. Heads or sketches of a bill or bills, when agreed to by either house of parliament, are sent up to the lord lieutenant, with a desire that his Excellency will transmit them to Great Britain in due form. This form is given to them by the lord lieutenant and council by whom they are taken into consideration, and if not rejected, are altered and amended in such manner as appears to be necessary. They are then engrossed and become a bill, which is certified by the lord lieutenant and council as proper to be passed into a law, and so certified is transmitted to England under the great seal of Ireland. It is there referred by the king and council to the attorney-general and solicitor-general, and revised and reported upon by them; it is then examined by the king and council, who either reject or alter and amend it, and so altered and amended return it to Ireland under the great seal of England. It is then carried to that house of parliament from which it was sent up, and is either rejected or agreed to *in toto*. If the latter, it is ordered to the other house for its concurrence—and that being given, it receives the royal assent from the lord lieutenant upon the throne, and becomes a law."

The public revenue, under such a form of legislation and government, was necessarily uncertain, small, and ill-managed. At the same time it is curious to observe, that notwithstanding all these oppressive laws and its contracted commerce, the crippled industry of the country more than sufficed to provide for the expences of the administration, whenever prudence or order prevailed in the conduct of affairs. The clearest testimony has been borne to this singular fact by the manuscript author from whose well written pages so much has been already taken. It appears that in the year 1707, there was so large a deficiency of the revenue as to prevent the payment of the army and the ordinary charges of the government, but in 1710 there was a surplus of income over expenditure of £11,544. In the year 1715 the national debt

of Ireland was only £16,106; but in the following year the borrowing system was introduced, and thenceforward the amount of the public obligations rose with rapidity. It was £66,106 in 1716; £94,594 in 1717;* £119,215 in 1725; £220,730 in 1729; and £371,312 in 1733. But in 1753 we find the resources of the country so productive, that the whole of this debt was discharged by the accumulations in the treasury within the space of two years. This was done contrary to the voice of the Irish parliament.† In the year 1752, £120,000 was paid off, and the balance in 1753. This fortunate event has been generally regarded as a consequence of the extension of the linen trade, which was now and for some preceding years had been in a flourishing condition. But this creditable state of things was not long preserved. On the 1st of March, 1754, there was no national debt in Ireland; during a term of five years no money was borrowed; but in 1759 a loan was opened at the im-

	£	s.	d.
* On Lady-day, 1719, according to the Report of the Committee of Account, the net produce of the hereditary revenue, additional duties, &c., for one year and nine months, was	805,015	4	3½
And the charges upon the establishment and other expences of government for the same period amounted to	<u>793,658</u>	4	2½
Surplus of income	<u>11,357</u>	0	1½
In 1729, according to the same Report, the net revenue for two years was	889,351	4	11½
Charges, &c.	<u>982,710</u>	4	9½
Deficiency	<u>£93,358</u>	19	10½

† In making use of this expression, it is proper to add, that although in point of form the Commons appeared to vote against the liquidation, their resistance was principally directed to the particular authority by which that liquidation was directed and carried into effect. They denied the right of the crown to pay away money in the treasury of its own accord, and, constitutionally speaking, they were unquestionably correct in taking that view of the case. Had they continued to act upon it with consistency and vigour, they would have commanded the gratitude of their country, and, in all likelihood, a certain victory. But it is impossible to feel respect for the Irish Commons of this age, who, to a man, combined to defeat the exercise of a questionable authority of the crown, by squandering upon themselves the public money, which, if permitted to accumulate, would have furnished grounds for another quarrel.

stance of the duke of Bedford, and in 1761 the funded debt was £350,000. In the year 1763 it amounted to £521,161 16s. 6*ld.*; in 1771 it had increased to £782,320; and by Lady-day, 1773, to £994,890 10s. 10*½d.* These large additions were occasioned by the growing insufficiency of the revenue to bear the various charges put upon it by the House of Commons for illegitimate purposes, such as corn bounties, public companies, &c. &c. The profligate increase of the pension list is to be set down as another cause of these pecuniary embarrassments. The amount of the annual payments upon that list in the year 1756 was £44,393; which in 1767 was raised to £83,541; and is found a few years later as high as £158,685.

Mr. Grattan, in the Life of his Father, draws from the most authentic sources—the very letters of the lord lieutenant himself—overwhelming demonstrations of the system of corruption out of which these enormous additions to the national burthens arose. That system had been in full play for many years, and had reached its height at the time Grattan was inspired with the resolution to grapple with its enormous abuses. As evidences of the grossest misgovernment, and proofs of the desperate powers with which the genius of the reformer had to contend, the following communications are more than commonly striking:—

THE LORD LIBUTENANT TO LORD NORTH.

Dublin Castle, Sept. 8, 1780.

MY LORD,—Nothing could be more against my inclinations than the yielding to solicitations of gentlemen upon the line of peerage; but without engagements strongly to recommend several to that mark of his majesty's favour at the close of the session, it would have been impossible for me in any sort to have surmounted the various difficulties which have lately attended government.

I must therefore request, that your lordship will submit the following names to his majesty:—

Sir Robert Deane has uniformly, with four friends, supported his majesty's measures, and has never suggested a difficulty upon any occasion: his property is very considerable.

Lord Chief Baron Dennis is recommended by Lord Shannon; but ex-

clusive of that consideration, his abilities may be of great use in the House of Lords, especially as Lord Annaly has an asthmatic complaint, which renders his attendance precarious. He has no family, nor is there any probability of his having any; and, upon the whole, I should think his appointment full as desirable to government as it may be agreeable to himself.

My private wish would certainly influence in favour of Mr. Armar Lowry Corry; but his extensive property—his having supported government, though elected for the county of Tyrone by popular interest—his having also induced another gentleman to follow his example—may give him some claim to his majesty's favour.

Mr. Mathew is of a very ancient respectable family, and has upon every occasion supported his majesty's government. His brother-in-law, through his means, was induced to act the same part.

Mr. Pomeroy was originally recommended by the duke of Leinster; but at a time his grace was undecided, he engaged at all events, with his brother and his son, to support government. The duke of Leinster lately renewed the application in his favour.

Mr. Clements, the son of an old meritorious servant of the crown, has a very considerable fortune; and has, with three friends, supported government, exclusive of his brother, the deputy vice-treasurer.

Mr. Knox, of Dungannon, is a gentleman of respectable family, with a large property; and has, with two sons, supported government. He was strongly recommended also by Colonel Burton.

There are some few promotions of peerage which I would make the subject of another letter, but must remind your lordship of Lord Farnham's earnest request that his majesty would consent to his being honoured with his late brother's earldom.

I hope that these several recommendations will meet with his majesty's approbation, and receive your lordship's support, &c. &c.

BUCKINGHAM.

September 22, 1780.

MY LORD,—Amongst the gentlemen whom, in my letter of the 8th instant, I submitted to his majesty for the dignity of peerage, I should have included William Tonson, Esq., but that some matters which had been misconceived, required first to be explained: that has since been done entirely to my satisfaction; and I request your lordship will lay before his majesty my humble recommendation, that Mr. Tonson may obtain this mark of his royal favour.

Mr. Tonson is a gentleman of very considerable estate in this country, is zealously attached to his majesty's person and government, and has uniformly and steadily supported administration. He will bring a friend of government into the House of Commons, upon his being called up to

the House of Peers. He engages to bring into parliament, at the next general election, any person nominated by government; and he has signified to me his determination in future to give administration the nomination of members for his borough of Rathcormack, until his son shall be of age.

BUCKINGHAM.

October 18, 1780.

* * * —I am further to desire your lordship will lay before his majesty my humble request that his majesty will be pleased to approve that Edward Tighe, Esq., be appointed one of the commissioners of the revenue here in the room of Lord Naas. Mr. Tighe is a gentleman of family and extensive connections, member of parliament for the borough of Athboy, and loyally attached to his majesty's person and government. Of his abilities I will myself be an assurance, having had intimate knowledge of them in the services which he has rendered me as my private secretary, during the greater part of my residence in this kingdom.

Mr. Tighe is at present one of the commissioners of imprest accounts, and comptroller of the pipe in his majesty's Court of Exchequer in this kingdom, which offices will enable me to gratify other gentlemen, whose parliamentary services demand the attention of government.

BUCKINGHAM.

P.S.—I beg leave to mention, that I shall in some sort take the liberty of recommending other promotions in the peerage; and that I do not intend that this letter should establish Lord Naas' station in the rank of Viscount.

October 24, 1780.

MY LORD,—The following noblemen having distinguished themselves as the zealous friends of his majesty's government, I think it my duty to prefer their applications, that his majesty will be graciously pleased to confer on them the advancement of their rank in the peerage of this kingdom; and I do earnestly request accordingly, that his majesty will permit me to recommend the Viscounts Mountcashel, Enniskillen, and Carlow, and Lord Farnham, to be created earls; and the Barons Desart, Lisle, Lifford, Erne, Bangor, Clifden, Naas, Doneraile, and Templetown, to be created viscounts.

Lord Mountcashel is particularly recommended by Lord Ely, and has constantly supported government, as have Lord Enniskillen and Lord Carlow. Lord Farnham's pretensions have already been stated. Lord Desart is an active supporter of government in the House of Lords; Lord Lisle is strongly recommended by Lord Shannon; Lord Lifford's merits need not be repeated; Lord Erne engages to bring a member of parliament, to be recommended by government, on the next general election, and will be responsible for the conduct of his brother, who will then come

into parliament under his influence; Lord Bangor's two sons came into the support of administration on condition of this recommendation; Lord Clifden has long and faithfully served the crown; Lord Naas has been already recommended; Lord Doneraile's two sons have given their support in the House of Commons; and Lord Templetown is zealously attached, as are all those other noblemen, to his majesty's person and government.

And I also request his majesty's permission to recommend that the earl of Inchiquin, Lieutenant-General Robert Cunningham, John O'Neill, Luke Gardiner, and Richard Townshend, Esquires, be appointed of his majesty's privy council in this kingdom.

I desire your lordship will lay these my humble recommendations, as being for his majesty's service, &c. &c.

BUCKINGHAM.

Nov. 19, 1780.

My LORD,—I must say that no man can see the inconvenience of increasing the number of peers more forcibly than myself; but the recommendations of many of those persons submitted to his majesty for that honour, arose from engagements taken at the press of the moment to secure questions upon which the English government were very particularly anxious. My sentiments cannot but be the same with respect to the privy council and pensions, and I had not contracted any absolute engagements of recommendation either to peerage or pension, till difficulties arose which necessarily occasioned so much, and so forcibly communicated, anxiety in his majesty's cabinet, that I must have been culpable in neglecting any possible means of securing a majority in the House of Commons, &c. &c.

BUCKINGHAM.

Nov. 19, 1780.

James Carigue Ponsonby, Esq.—This gentleman bought his seat in parliament, and in the contest for the speaker's chair, offered his vote to Lord Harcourt, in favour of Mr. Pery, on condition he should represent his conduct to his majesty, hoping it might be kept in account when he should on some future day be thought deserving of his majesty's favour. This request was complied with by Lord Harcourt, as will appear by his lordship's letter to Lord Weymouth, of Sept. 11, 1776; and as this gentleman's conduct in support of government has been very uniform and honourable during my administration, and I have not been able to provide for him in the line of office agreeably to the expectations which had been given him, I am induced to hope his majesty will consider him as a worthy object of his royal bounty.

Charles Henry Coote, Esq., son to Deane Coote.—This gentleman is

member for the Queen's County, and has generally, during the present parliament, supported his majesty's measures; but in the last session, when it became difficult for members of counties to give an uniform support, I promised Mr. Coote to recommend him to his majesty for this favour, in the manner specified in my official letter, if there should not be an opportunity for my gratifying him with some civil employment, upon the terms of his giving a consistent support to government, which he has very honourably performed.

Francis Bernard Beamish, Esq., was brought into parliament for the borough of Rathcormack by Mr. Tonson, in conjunction with whom he has uniformly supported his majesty's measures. In the session 1777, Mr. Tonson having resigned the office of lieutenant-governor of Cork, I gave Mr. Beamish assurance of a civil employment; and not having found it in my power to provide for him in that mode, I promised to recommend him to his majesty for this mark of the royal favour.

Ponsonby Tottenham, Esq., nephew to the earl of Ely.—His father and two brothers are in parliament, and, with him, have been constant supporters of his majesty's government.

James Sommerville, Esq., member of parliament for the borough of New Town, which seat he purchased. Before the opening of the last session, Mr. Sommerville offered his support, which he has most uniformly given, upon the assurance of some provision. He was formerly in business as a merchant, but unsuccessful; and being in distressed circumstances, and no opportunities offering of providing him with office, I am induced to recommend him for his majesty's bounty.

William Caulfield, Esq., member for the borough of Tulsk, who has the collection of Donaghadee, and keeping house at the Capeland Isle, worth about £300 per annum, which he will resign to accommodate government. He was formerly an officer in the army, in which service and in the revenue he has been upwards of forty years. Mr. Caulfield has been a constant and uniform supporter of government, and is most zealously attached to his majesty's service.

Thomas Nesbitt, Esq., member of the borough of Cavan. This gentleman was early recommended me for some mark of favour by the late attorney-general, and he has been a constant supporter of government; and as I have not been able to provide for him in office, and he has represented to me that the expense of living in Dublin during the session is distressing to him, I have recommended him to his majesty for this small pension, his father having already a pension of £600 a year.

James Sheil, Esq., one of the commissioners of appeals, is an old servant of the crown, and when in parliament constantly supported government. His distresses at present prevent him from executing his office, which I have given to Mr. Tydd, member for Maryborough, who sup-

ported government during the present session, upon a promise of being promoted on the first vacancy of this board. Mr. Sheil has been recommended to me, in his unfortunate situation, as a proper object of his majesty's bounty.

Robert Sibthorpe, Esq., one of his majesty's counsel in this kingdom, and the president at the general quarter sessions of the county of Dublin, with a salary of £200 a year. As the present distressed state of this gentleman's circumstances do not allow of his executing this office in person, and the service of the county requires it to be performed by a gentleman of practice and ability in the law, I am induced to recommend Mr. Sibthorpe for his majesty's bounty, and intend appointing as his successor, with an additional salary of £300 a year, Mr. Toler, the member for Tralee, who supported his majesty's measures during the last session with great zeal and firmness, and will, I have no doubt, from his abilities and knowledge, give very great satisfaction to the county of Dublin: an official application for the additional salary accompanies this letter.

Sir Boyle Roche, member of parliament for the borough of Gowran, which seat he purchased, with a view to support government, to which he is most zealously attached.

Edward Bulkeley, Esq., was formerly joined with his uncle, the late Michael Clarke, Esq., in the office of agent for the half-pay officers, worth about £600 per annum; which office, upon Mr. Clarke's demise, he enjoyed for some time solely, but in Lord Harcourt's administration it was given to Sir William Montgomery, for the accommodation of government, and a pension granted to Mr. Bulkeley of £250 a year, which not being equal to the income of his office, the present sum is recommended to make up the deficiency.

The Honorable John Evans is brother to Lord Carbery, and was former collector of Loughrea, but his extreme ill state of health disabling him from executing his office, he resigned it in hopes of receiving some provision from government.

Mrs. Elizabeth Jebb, wife of Dr. Frederick Jebb, a physician of this town, and author of the letters which appeared in the beginning of the last session, under the signature of "Guatimozin," and other political productions. As the press was exceedingly violent at that time, and had great effect in inflaming the minds of the people, it was recommended to me as a measure of absolute necessity, by some means, if possible, to check its spirit. On this a negotiation was opened with Dr. Jebb, who was then the chief of the political writers, and he agreed, upon the terms of my recommending him for a pension of £300 a year, to give his assistance to government. Since that time he has been very useful, as well by suppressing inflammatory publications, as by writing and other services, which he promises to continue to the extent of his power.

Dame Jane Heron.—I some time since appointed Sir Richard Heron, my chief secretary, to the office of searcher, packer and gauger at Cork, the value of which, upon an average of the last seven years, is about £700, although the years since the war have been higher than that average; and in order to make it equal to what his majesty has been graciously pleased to consider as a proper recompence to the chief secretary of the lord lieutenant of Ireland for his discharge of that very laborious and arduous station, I have, at Sir Richard's desire, requested that his majesty would be graciously pleased to grant this pension to Lady Heron. I have, by the same messenger, transmitted to their lordships a recommendation that the pensions upon the civil establishment of Guy Moses Coote be transferred to his wife, Mrs. Mary Coote. This gentleman always voted with government; and as this was the only respect he made, I was induced to comply with it.

Their lordships will receive a third letter, recommending Joseph Surr, Esq., for a military pension. Mr. Surr served many years in the army; and some time ago, in the office of sheriff of this county, was of singular service to government: he has long executed the office of deputy judge advocate, the emoluments of which amounted to the sum of £150 per annum; but, having lately lost his sight, is incapable of any longer discharging that duty: his great age, added to his long and faithful services, render him a very worthy object of the royal favour.

The messenger carries with him another letter, recommending pensions to Henry Meredith, Esq., in trust for his nieces Letitia Meredith and Judith Woodward; and a further separate application for pensions for Robert George Gamble and Mr. Edward Stirling. The reasons which have induced me to make these requests are fully set forth in the letters severally recommending them.

I have also made my humble request to his majesty, through their lordships, that the salary of £150 a year, placed on the civil establishment for the Honourable John Butler, as clerk of the pipe, may be continued to him and his son Humphrey Butler, during his majesty's pleasure, on their being joined in that office. Mr. Butler is great uncle to the present Lord Lanesborough; has been a very old servant to government, and is most zealously attached to his majesty's person and government.

I cannot sufficiently express to your lordships with how much reluctance I state the several requests; but I am driven to this necessity, not having any other means of gratifying the expectations of gentlemen who engaged in the service of government through this long and arduous session. The civil patronage never was so slender as during my administration; and the only two capital offices which fall since my coming to this kingdom, (the secretaryship of state and that of deputy vice-treas-

surer,) were both engaged by my predecessors. I do not mention the late Sir Henry Cavendish's office, as, though he died after my administration, Lord Harcourt was still in the possession of the government.

If my recommendation respecting Lord Shannon and Mr. Forster is accepted of, it will enable me to make an advancement for a gentleman whom Lord Shannon particularly protects; and in succession for Mr. Howard, brother to Lord Clowmore, who, with another brother of his lordship's, have uniformly supported government upon every occasion. The office also of the provost's son,—whom I did not choose to remove, though his office is within my department, till I knew your lordship's sentiments with respect to his father,—would enable me to fulfil another engagement, and in succession to take off some of the pensions—a species of provision which of all others gives the greatest dissatisfaction here.

I have the honour to be, &c.

BUCKINGHAM.

If we now extract from the Museum account of Ireland, a few tables explanatory of the income and expenditure of the country; and if, with the view of completing the range of contemporary authorities, we prefix to these tables the picture drawn by Mr. Pitt, upon a later occasion, of the manner in which England was accustomed to govern Ireland; a full description will have been given in this chapter of the condition of the country immediately before the period at which Grattan began to devote himself to the high labour of its regeneration.

In 1781, Mr. Pitt called upon the English House of Commons "to recollect, that, from the Revolution to a period within the memory of every man who heard him, until these very few years, the system had been that of debarring Ireland from the enjoyment and use of her own resources,—to make that kingdom subservient to the interests and opulence of this country, without suffering her to share in the bounties of nature, in the industry of her citizens, or making them contribute to the general interests and strength of the empire. This system of cruel and abominable restraint had, however, been exploded. It was at once harsh and unjust, and it was as impolitic as it was oppressive; for, however necessary it might be to the partial benefit of districts in Britain, it pro-

moted not the real prosperity and strength of the empire. That which had been the system counteracted the kindness of Providence, and suspended the industry and enterprize of man. Ireland was put under such restraint that she was shut out from every species of commerce. She was restrained from sending the produce of her own soil to foreign markets, and all correspondence with the colonies of Great Britain was prohibited to her; so that she could not derive their commodities but through the medium of Britain. This was the system that prevailed, and this was the state of thralldom in which that country had been kept ever since the Revolution."

The following are the tables already referred to. The details will be found worth examination. We shall only point to one significant fact. In the year 1772, the total income appears to have amounted to £839,756 11s. 7½d.; and the expence of collection, deducting bounties and drawbacks, to £126,893 5s. 8d. In the following year, 1773, the income was £887,935 15s. 1d.; and the expence of collection, deducting bounties and drawbacks, £140,120 13s. 5d.

AN ABSTRACT of the HEREDITARY REVENUE and ADDITIONAL DUTIES, for two Years, ending the 25th of March, 1773.

	In the Year ending Lady-day, 1772.			In the Year ending Lady-day, 1773.			
	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.	
Hereditary Revenue:							
Light House Duties	451	13	6	495	8	2½	
Casual Revenue { Ancient Part	1,142	5	1	1,060	8	9	
Modern Part	3,729	7	3½	5,179	19	8½	
Crown Rents, Composition Rents,] and Quit Rents	64,084	5	8½	64,076	6	6½	
Customs, Inwards	199,368	12	7½	232,767	15	9½	
Customs, Outwards	38,850	16	1½	37,397	10	2	
Imported Excise	146,461	11	2½	151,661	9	4	
Inland Excise	70,319	7	9	74,991	5	4½	
Ale Licences	7,898	9	8½	7,887	6	0½	
Wine and Strong Water Licences	21,012	0	0	21,309	13	4	
Hearth Money	58,439	18	6	59,938	10	6	
Residue of the Duties on Teas	4,799	17	6	6,638	4	6	
Prizage	3,797	10	0	4,335	0	0	
	£	620,355	14	11	667,738	18	4

Abstract of the Hereditary Revenue, &c.—continued.

Additional Duties :	In the Year ending Lady-day, 1772.	In the Year ending Lady-day, 1773.
	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
Tobacco	66,241 0 3	68,971 5 8
Wine	16,429 11 0	19,454 12 3
Spirits	83,080 9 10	71,305 11 6½
Muslin	4,056 12 11	6,414 14 8
Foreign Paper	596 18 4	739 5 8
Molasses	1 13 0	—
East India Silks and Stuffs	42 7 6	36 12 4
Ale, Beer, and Strong Waters	48,971 3 10½	53,274 14 7½
	£ 219,419 16 8½	220,196 16 9

An ABSTRACT of the EXPENCE of MANAGEMENT, of BOUNTIES, DRAW-BACKS, &c., for two Years ending 25th March, 1773, paid out of the Revenue, in transitu.

	In the Year ending 25th March, 1772.	In the Year ending 25th March, 1773.
	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
Salaries to Officers on the Revenue } Establishment	30,720 12 2½	88,847 0 5½
Incident Charges	26,052 13 8½	31,529 6 7½
Officers' Rewards for Tobacco and } Tea seized and sold	255 13 11½	—
Portage Bills	1,944 14 4	2,145 18 0
Repayments to Merchants	7,917 15 10	5,398 2 2
Wine Warrants to Privy Councillors	916 19 0	923 5 0
Light House Expenses	1,446 7 9	1,270 10 8
Salaries to Hearth-money Officers	6,308 0 0	6,367 18 4½
Hearth-money Incidents and Constables	957 11 11½	940 17 3½
Allowance claimed on Hearth-money } Collectors and Gaugers' Balances	351 11 2½	1,769 8 6
Arrears of Inland Excise	21 5 8½	928 6 9½
	£ 126,893 5 8	140,120 13 11
Bounties :		
For Convicting Burglary, perpetual		35 0 0
Flax Seed Imported } { 21 Years,	6,874 6 9	9,405 2 7
Flax Seed Exported } { from 1763 . . . . .	.	52 0 0
Land Carriage of Corn, &c. to Dublin, perpetual	39,560 15 3	44,508 16 4
Carried forward	£ 46,435 2 0	54,000 18 11

Abstract of the Expence of Management, &c.—continued.

	In the Year ending 26th March, 1772.	In the Year ending 26th March, 1773.
Bounties—continued.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
Brought forward	46,435 2 0	54,000 18 11
Irish Coal brought to { 21 Years, Dublin by Sea { from 1772 }	113 11 0	209 11 8
Fishing Busses	9,424 2 5	11,012 12 4
Irish Cured Fish	511 9 10	663 15 2½
Exported	100 5 4	
Irish Fish Oil and Whalebone	£ 56,584 10 7	65,886 18 1½
Drawbacks on the Additional Duties :		
Tobacco	1,862 11 0½	911 3 5
Wine	193 7 3	199 15 0
Spirits	4,929 18 1	1,476 12 3
Muslin	11 15 4	1 15 5
Foreign Paper	14 15 3	—
	£ 6,305 6 11½	2,589 6 1

AN ABSTRACT of the CIVIL ESTABLISHMENT.

	As it stood at Michaelmas, 1767.	As it stood at Michaelmas, 1772.
	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
Exchequer	6,207 10 2	6,547 10 2
King's Bench	2,749 5 1	2,749 5 1
Chancery	3,617 19 11	3,617 19 11
Common Pleas	2,607 10 0	2,607 10 0
State Officers	7,503 8 6	7,503 8 6
Incidents	13,819 18 10½	15,643 17 0½
Custom Officers	2,288 6 8	2,688 6 8
Perpetuities	1,156 16 7	1,456 16 7
Commissioners of Appeals	600 0 0	1,500 0 0
Nonconforming Ministers	1,200 0 0	1,200 0 0
Concordatums	5,000 0 0	5,000 0 0
Commissioners of Barracks, &c.	3,150 0 0	3,150 0 0
Court of Admiralty	300 0 0	300 0 0
Commissioners of Accounts . . . . .	. . . . .	2,800 0 0
Pensions	83,541 7 6	80,249 17 6
French Pensions	811 7 6	701 13 9
	£ 134,553 10 9½	137,716 5 2½

AN ABSTRACT of the MILITARY ESTABLISHMENT.

	As it stood at Michaelmas, 1767.	£	s.	d.	As it stood at Michaelmas, 1772.	£	s.	d.
General Officers	28,611	18	4		25,874	8	4	
Military Contingencies	3,000	0	0		3,000	0	0	
Military Incidents	60	0	0		60	0	0	
4 Regiments of Horse	41,074	13	4		41,074	13	4	
8 Ditto of Dragoons	71,044	4	2		71,044	4	2	
30 Battalions of Foot, 1767	236,145	17	6		275,602	7	6	
27 Battalions of Foot only, 1772								
4 Regiments of Horse	3,212	0	0		3,212	0	0	
8 Ditto of Dragoons	4,964	0	0		4,964	0	0	
30 Ditto of Foot	9,855	0	0		9,855	0	0	
Battle Axe Guards	1,891	18	4		1,891	18	4	
Additional Pay in Dublin	3,672	1	0½		3,672	1	0½	
Governors of Garrisons	3,503	5	0		3,503	5	0	
Fire and Candle for Guards, &c.	166	0	0		166	0	0	
Military Pensions	3,686	8	4		5,509	13	4	
Half Pay	35,068	2	8½		27,474	12	3½	
Barracks	13,396	10	0		13,396	10	0	
Widows of Officers	5,569	4	0		5,569	4	0	
	£	464,861	2	9	£	495,809	17	4

N.B.—To this must be added the Establishment of the Ordnance, which, with the Contingencies, amounts to about £17,000 per annum.

During the exciting struggle which now took place, circumstances of peculiar interest and power favoured Mr. Grattan's efforts, and the advancement of the national cause. The very year after that in which he commenced his parliamentary career, was made memorable by the enrolment of the Irish Volunteers. These celebrated corps, whose influence over the public affairs of their country was for a length of time as mighty as it was beneficial, took their rise in the town of Belfast. Corruption had drained the country of money,—the reverses of the American war had drawn off all the troops,—the privateers of the young republic were sweeping our ships from the sea,—the navy of France was sailing triumphantly along our undefended shores, when the rumour was spread that Ireland was to be invaded. As every man in that country felt convinced that its defence, if invaded, would be impracticable,

the alarm became general. It was at this crisis that the inhabitants of Belfast petitioned the government for a garrison, and received for answer that half a troop of dismounted cavalry, and half a company of armed invalids had been ordered to occupy their town. As soon as the minister had thus shown his inability to protect the people, the people undertook to protect themselves; and in discharging this natural duty, they proceeded with equal judgment and spirit. The inhabitants able and willing to bear arms at their own expence for the defence of the country, enrolled themselves into volunteer corps, and obtained fit persons to put them in a state of effective discipline. Other towns followed this example, and ere long, the growing numbers of the force proved so useful, that the government was induced to distribute amongst them 16,000 stand of arms. The English cabinet foresaw from the beginning, and repeatedly remonstrated against, the danger of allowing armed associations of this kind to become general throughout the country; but the exhausted authorities of Dublin Castle were too feeble to control a movement superinduced by their own incapacity, and evidently national. They had misapplied the hereditary revenue which the people paid to the king as the price of protection, and had left the country without defence. Possessing no force of their own, they could not prevent the formation of a popular one. It was upon their side a case of utter impotence, in consequence of which the volunteers, during three years, continued to increase in numbers and to rise in public estimation, until at length they amounted to 40,000 and even to 90,000 men; and ultimately dictated to the government the particular measures which they deemed necessary for the purpose of redeeming the constitution and restoring the commerce and the liberties of their country.

The principles and objects of these armed patriots were clearly and broadly stated. They insisted upon the enjoyment of equal liberty, and similar institutions in Great Britain and Ireland; they proclaimed it to be the duty of every good citizen to maintain the connection between the two countries.

inseparable, and also the freedom and independence of Ireland ; they affirmed that the King, Lords, and Commons of Ireland *only* were competent to make laws binding the subjects of the realm of Ireland ; and they publicly avowed their determination not to obey, nor give operation to any laws save those enacted by the King, Lords, and Commons of Ireland, whose rights and privileges jointly and severally they declared themselves resolved to support with their lives and fortunes.* When language of this kind was held by noblemen and gentlemen in arms, headed and instructed by such leaders as the duke of Leinster, the earl of Charlemont, by Grattan, Flood, and by not a few† of the members of both houses of parliament who were most distinguished for rank, property, and talents, the experiment was no longer doubtful. It was feebly met by a temporising line of action upon the part of the government, which only served to render the final issue more certain and abrupt.

The Irish parliament was called together in the month of October, 1779, but so disturbed was the public mind, and so strong the apprehension of violence entertained by the executive, that it was resolved at a full meeting of the privy council and confidential servants of the government, to limit the usual two years' vote of the supplies to six months. The embarrassing state of the revenue added to the force of the popular re-action. A sum of £200,000 was demanded to clear off the arrears upon the public establishments to Lady-day, 1779, and it was estimated that a further sum of £300,000 would be required to make good the accruing deficiency up to June 24, 1780. It was therefore proposed to raise half a million sterling by loans and lotteries, and to put on new taxes for the

* Resolutions at the quarterly meeting of the Dublin Volunteers, the duke of Leinster in the chair, June 9, 1780.

† In the month of July, 1780, the different volunteer corps were reviewed throughout the kingdom ; those in Westmeath, by the earl of Belvidere ; those in Sligo and Galway, by the earl of Clanricarde ; those in Londonderry, by Lord Erne ; those in Cork, by the earl of Shannon ; those in Clare and Limerick, by the earls of Kingsborough and Inchiquin ; and those in Wicklow, by the earl of Ravenscourt.

purpose of providing a fund to pay off the money borrowed. But the scheme was successfully resisted, and at last the two governments,—the English as well as the Irish,—were compelled by their distresses to relax the severe code by which Ireland had been so long afflicted. On the motion of Mr. Foster, two resolutions were carried unanimously—the first, that the exportation of its woollen and other manufactures would tend to relieve Ireland; the second, that liberty to trade with the colonies in America and the West Indies, and the settlements in Africa, would be productive of great commercial benefits. An act passed early in the next year by the parliament of Great Britain adopted these resolutions, and so far the colonial trade was thrown equally open to Ireland as to England.

Grattan now determined to assert the independence of the Irish legislature. For this purpose he prepared a declaration of rights, and announced his intention of moving for a repeal of Poynings' law. Of this noble labour he has himself given an interesting account. It roused, as soon as it became known, a host of passions. Hope, terror, anger, and resentment agitated the public mind in every direction. Tortured and oppressed by the doubts of the timid, the forebodings of the grave and prudent, and the menaces of the factious and the corrupt, Grattan withdrew for awhile to Celbridge Abbey,—a retreat sacred to the memory of Irish genius,—and took counsel of his old friend and relative, Colonel Marlay, who sustained and encouraged him to advance. “Along the banks of that river,” he writes, “amid the groves and bowers of Swift and Vanessa, I grew convinced that I was right; arguments unanswerable came to my mind, and what I then prepared, confirmed me in my determination to persevere; a great spirit arose among the people, and the speech which I delivered afterwards in the house, communicated its fire and impelled them on: the country caught the flame, and it rapidly extended. I was supported by eighteen counties, by the grand jury addresses, and the resolutions of the volunteers. I stood upon that ground,

and was determined never to yield. I brought on the question, April 19, 1780. That was a great day for Ireland—it gave her liberty."

The question was submitted in the form of three resolutions, which were moved by Mr. Grattan, and seconded by Mr. Stewart, afterwards marquis of Londonderry.

" Resolved,—1. That his most excellent majesty, by and with the consent of the Lords and Commons of Ireland, are the only power competent to enact laws to bind Ireland.

" 2. That the crown of Ireland is, and ought to be, inseparably annexed to the crown of Great Britain.

" 3. That Great Britain and Ireland are inseparably united under one sovereign, under the common and indissoluble ties of interest, loyalty, and freedom."

Grattan spoke for two hours in support of these resolutions, and in the following strain:—

" If I had lived when the 9th of William took away the woollen manufacture, or when the 6th of George I. declared this country to be dependent, and subject to laws to be enacted by the parliament of England, I should have made a covenant with my own conscience to seize the first moment of rescuing my country from the ignominy of such acts of power; or, if I had a son, I should have administered to him an oath, that he would consider himself as a person separate and set apart for the discharge of so important a duty. Upon the same principle am I now come to move a declaration of right, the first moment occurring since my time, in which such a declaration could be made with any chance of success, or without aggravation of oppression."

" Let corruption tremble; let the enemy, foreign and domestic, tremble; but let the friends of liberty rejoice at these means of safety, and this hour of redemption. Yes; there does exist an enlightened sense of rights, a young appetite for freedom, a solid strength, and a rapid fire, which not only put a declaration of right within your power, but put it out of your power to decline one. Eighteen counties are at your bar; they stand there with the compact of Henry, with the charter of John, and with all the passions of the people. 'Our lives are at your service, but our liberties, we received them from God; we will not resign them to man.' Speaking to you thus, if you repulse these petitioners, you abdicate the privileges of parliament, forfeit the rights of the kingdom, repudiate the instructions of your constituents, bilge the sense of your country, pale the enthusiasm of the people, and reject that good, which—not a

Lord North, not a Lord Buckinghamshire, not a Lord Hillsborough, but a certain providential conjuncture, or, rather, the hand of God seems to extend to you. Nor are we only prompted to this when we consider our strength; we are challenged to it when we look to Great Britain. The people of that country are now waiting to hear the parliament of Ireland speak on the subject of their liberty. It begins to be made a question in England, whether the principal persons *wish* to be free. It was the delicacy of former parliaments to be silent on the subject of commercial restrictions, and to show a knowledge of the fact, and not a sense of the violation. You have spoken out; you have shown a knowledge of the fact, but not a sense of the violation. On the contrary, you have returned thanks for a partial repeal made on a principle of power: you have returned thanks as for a favour; and your exultation has brought your charters as well as your spirit into question, and tends to shake to her foundation your title to liberty. Thus you do not leave your rights even where you found them. You have done too much not to do more; you have gone too far not to go on; you have brought yourselves into that situation in which you must silently abdicate the rights of your country, or publicly restore them. It is very true, you may feed your manufacturers, and landlords may get their rents; or you may export woollens, and load a vessel with baize, serges, and kerseys; and you may bring back again, directly from the plantations, sugar, indigo, speckle-wood, beetle-root, and panellas. But liberty, the foundation of trade, the charters of the land, the independency of parliament, the securing, crowning, consummation of every thing, are yet to come. Without them, the work is imperfect, the foundation is wanting, the capital is wanting, trade is not free, Ireland is a colony without the benefit of a charter, and you are a synod without the privileges of a parliament."

"Sir, we may hope to dazzle with illuminations, and we may sicken with addresses; but the public imagination will never rest, nor will her heart be at ease—never! so long as the parliament of England exercises or claims a legislation over this country: so long as this shall be the case, that very free trade, otherwise a perpetual attachment, will be a cause of new discontent. It will create a pride to feel the indignity of bondage; it will furnish a strength to bite your chain; and the liberty withheld will poison the good communicated.

"The British minister mistakes the Irish character. Had he intended to make Ireland a slave, he should have kept her a beggar. There is no middle policy: win her heart by the restoration of her right, or cut off the nation's right hand; greatly emancipate, or fundamentally destroy. We may talk plausibly to England; but so long as she exercises a power to bind this country, so long are the nations in a state of war. The claims of the one are against the liberty of the other, and the sentiments

of the latter go to oppose those claims to the last drop of her blood. The English opposition are therefore right; mere trade will not satisfy Ireland. They judge of us by other great nations, by the nation whose political life has been a struggle for liberty: they judge of us with a true knowledge and just deference for our character—that a country, enlightened as Ireland, chartered as Ireland, armed as Ireland, and injured as Ireland, will be satisfied with nothing less than liberty."

Other strains of equally fervid eloquence were poured forth, and the house divided, after a debate of fifteen hours—ayes, 97; noes, 136. But this repulse neither cooled the ardour, nor shook the determination of the popular leaders. Poynings' law was attacked by Mr. Yelverton, afterwards Lord Avonmore, who proposed to regulate the transmission of bills to England, and lost his motion by no more than 25 votes, the ayes being 105, and the noes 130. The government continued to preserve their majority in the Commons, but out of doors their authority was in more than one respect powerless. The English Mutiny Act, which asserted the right of punishing deserters and military offences in Ireland, was now resisted. Upon a motion made by Mr. Bushe, for leave to bring in the heads of a bill to regulate the punishment of deserters in Ireland, the votes were 148 to 75 against the measure; but the victorious lord lieutenant was at the same time compelled to tell the minister in London that the English law was a dead letter, as no Irish magistrate would put it into execution. Nevertheless an absolute authority, maintained for ages, was not to be easily wrested away. Instead of yielding the point in dispute to the Irish parliament, the English minister declared the Mutiny Act perpetual!

It was for the sake of maintaining himself in this position that Lord Buckinghamshire was forced to carry bribery to the extent described in the official correspondence already quoted. Having exhausted "the means of gratifying the expectations of gentlemen who engaged in the service of government through this long and arduous contest," he was succeeded by the earl of Carlisle. Under this administration the usual abuse in the patronage of government, the old arts of seducing the leaders of the opposition, and the esta-

blished waste of the public revenue, were continued with so much skill and assiduity, that at one time there were only 30 members to be found voting against the government in the House of Commons. Yet it was during the session of 1781, that two important concessions were made to the liberty of the subject. The penal laws against the Roman Catholics were relaxed in some degree, and Ireland obtained for the first time an Habeas Corpus Act. It was also during the administration of Lord Carlisle, that the Bank of Ireland was established.

But compactly as corruption had bound the creatures of government together in parliament, the volunteers and the friends of freedom gathered numbers, strength, and power throughout the country. At every step they assumed a bolder attitude, and in the year 1782, enjoyed the triumph of complete success. This great achievement was expedited by two important proceedings—first, the convention of 242 delegates from the volunteers of all Ireland, held at Dungannon, Feb. 15, 1782, at which the celebrated resolutions drawn up by Grattan and Flood were passed; and second, the dissolution of Lord North's ministry in the course of the following month. The earl of Rockingham becoming prime minister; Mr. Fox, secretary of state; and the duke of Portland, lord lieutenant of Ireland; assiduous efforts were quickly made to induce the popular leaders in Ireland to delay the measures which they had been urging forward, and to allow time for a mature consideration of the proposed improvements in the constitution. The reply returned to these importunities was excellent. “We are pledged to the people,” said Grattan, “our measures are public property, and cannot be postponed.” He and Lord Charlemont were then solicited to take office, but they declined the overture. Of this conduct Mr. Grattan well observed upon a subsequent occasion,—“I was young and poor; I had scarcely £500 a year. Lord Charlemont was as poor as any peer, and I as any commoner. We were, however, determined to refuse office: our opinion, and a just one too, was, that office in Ireland was different from office in England; it

was not a situation held for Ireland, but for an English government, often in collision with, and frequently hostile to, Ireland. We stated that we should be consulted, but not considered."

It was by this dignified independence, a firm and noble virtue, which constantly accompanied his public conduct, that Grattan rose immeasurably superior in point of personal spirit and political merit to all his contemporaries. And richly did he now reap his ripe reward. The English ministry applied to him for an enumeration of the grievances of his country, and for instructions as to the manner in which they should be redressed. Being thus honoured, he specified four grievances—foreign legislation, a foreign judicature, a legislative privy council, and a perpetual army; and to remove these he demanded—

"The relinquishment of legislative and appellant judicature by the British parliament, or the repeal of 6 Geo. I.

"The practice of the privy council to alter and suppress bills passed by the Irish parliament, to be removed by law.

"The perpetual Mutiny Bill to be repealed, and a new Mutiny Bill with the declaration of rights, the number of men, and articles of war set forth; and the whole to be for two years.

"Laws necessary to legalize judgments by the House of Lords and King's Bench in England; to explain Poynings' law.

"The regulation of his majesty's forces to be limited.

"The modification of Poynings' law to be radical and by act of parliament, without leaving the shadow of a grievance to alter.

"These," he adds, "are the only terms I made with government. Whether they are honourable to me or serviceable to the country, the calm sense of posterity will judge." A fair understanding, but no explicit arrangement, appears to have been come to upon these important questions when the session of 1782 was opened by the duke of Portland. Grattan's confidence in the result, however, may be judged of by the style

of his speech when moving the memorable amendment to the address, which being carried unanimously, anticipated and assured the victory.

"I am now," he began, "to address a free people! Ages have passed away, and this is the first moment in which you could be distinguished by that appellation.

"I have spoken on the subject of your liberty so often, that I have nothing to add, and have only to admire by what heaven-directed steps you have proceeded, until the whole faculty of the nation is braced up to the act of her own deliverance.

"I found Ireland on her knees; I watched over her with an eternal solicitude; I have traced her progress from injuries to arms, and from arms to liberty. Spirit of Swift! Spirit of Molyneux! your genius has prevailed! Ireland is now a nation. In that new character I hail her, and bowing to her august presence, I say *Esto perpetua!*"

No detail can be here desired of the particular acts of parliament which were now prepared and passed for the purpose of effecting the changes demanded by Grattan and the volunteers. It is enough to state that they proved at the moment satisfactory and agreeable in every respect to the nation, that the public joy was unbounded, and that the gratitude of parliament and the people overflowed with generous deeds. £100,000 were unanimously voted for the service of the navy, and £50,000 to Mr. Grattan. Unfortunately, however, the liberal measures of the year 1782 proved insufficient to ensure freedom to the subject, or purity to the legislature and the government. But an examination of the circumstances by which this striking failure was occasioned, and the union of the two countries was, ere long, brought about, will be most conveniently entered upon as the subject of a separate chapter.

CHAPTER XIII.

OUTLINES OF THE HISTORY OF THE CONNECTION WITH ENGLAND—*concluded.*

THE LEGISLATURE INDEPENDENT AND THE PARLIAMENT UNREFORMED.—SUBSEQUENT HISTORY OF THE VOLUNTEERS, THEIR DISSENSIONS AND DECLINE.—THE COMMERCIAL PROPOSITIONS AND THE REGENCY QUESTION RENDER THE UNION INEVITABLE.—CONTINUED CORRUPTION, IMPERFECT REFORMS, AND INCREASED DISCONTENT.—MR. GRATTAN WITHDRAWS FROM THE PUBLIC SERVICE.—THE REBELLION OF 1798.—THE UNION COMPLETED IN 1800.

THE frequent recurrence of political revolutions during the course of the last sixty or seventy years has enabled us to form opinions, at the present day, to some extent well defined and positive, respecting the general laws by which popular movements of this kind are governed. Almost in every instance it appears to have been necessary to generate and bring to bear upon the proposed object a much greater degree of power than has ultimately sufficed for its attainment, and thus the goal has seldom been reached without having been overshot. As the heated race-horse, when his mettle is put forth to the utmost, will defy restraint and bound far beyond the winning post; so a popular body effecting either a revolution or extensive reforms, is sure to be carried by the mere force of the action which has set it into motion, upon a much more extended course than was originally contemplated. Skill, judgment, firmness, and influence of the highest order have upon a few signal occasions availed to hold a whole people within timely bounds, even when flushed with the excitement of complete success. But this result has been rarely—very rarely produced. On the other hand, whenever the public ardour has not been opportunely cooled, and

the public energy has not been gradually diverted to pursuits of ordinary use, violent imprudence—wild folly—and at last some gross excesses have been committed. Regeneration has thus been repeatedly expanded into an enormity nearly as hideous and intolerable as the original evil it was intended to destroy !

On the other hand, no mistake can be more fatal than that which supposes that it is wise to stop short and stand still after making a powerful national exertion. Repose, no doubt, and composure are then most desirable, and should be carefully sought for. But the address of the successful statesman is principally displayed by continuing the new action while he abates its intensity. If he arrests it suddenly he is plunged into a state of imminent danger. No sooner therefore has any great constitutional reform been accomplished, than immediate provision is required for the introduction of a machinery suitable to its intended operations. Omit that provision and the recent change will often be found rather to have aggravated, than to have remedied the old evil. For nothing has been more strongly proved by experience than this decided fact, that every comprehensive reform requires to be accompanied by a number of smaller ones. These, though insignificant when detached and considered by themselves, are often found, when taken in the aggregate, so obstinate as to clog, if they are neglected, and to neutralize the progress of the greater action with which they are connected.* A machinery

* The truth of these observations has been attested by two striking examples in our own time. The Duke of Wellington and Sir Robert Peel passed the Catholic Relief Bill in 1829, and then stopped suddenly short. From that day to this, Ireland has continued in a most convulsed and dangerous state, with the exception of the interval during which Lord Melbourne's ministry was sensibly occupied with the task of acting in the spirit of that Relief Bill. While the lesser reforms were in a course of introduction, which were imperatively required in order to enable the greater ones to work efficiently, there was quiet and content. The stop-short policy broke down the Wellington ministry; and, with that example before their eyes, Lord Grey's administration passed the Reform Bill, and propounded the doctrine of finality. Their fate then became inevitable : they followed the fall of the Wellington and Peel ministry, which has revived, and now holds office by practising the principle of progressive reform, which they so long and so vehemently condemned and resisted when the Whigs sought to move upon it.

is thus demanded, of which the larger wheel will not work well, unless the movement of the lesser wheels be concurrently harmonious and well regulated.

If the Irish revolution of 1782 be tested by the application of these general rules, it will be found but a lame and imperfect experiment. When the independence of the legislature was declared, a principle entered into the body of the constitution pregnant with the right to originate and effect every measure by which public virtue, constitutional liberty, and the prosperity of the country could be strengthened and advanced. But when the parliament itself was not touched—when the greater reform was unaccompanied by the smaller reforms necessary to give it a smooth and effective action—the proper means of turning the recently acquired power to good account were not supplied ; the seeds of the old corruption were allowed to lie in their usual hot beds at the heart of the new system, and there to germinate and throw off without restraint all their natural excrescences and abuses. The landed oligarchy were left undisturbed in their ancient haunts where the English minister found them as willing, as he was anxious, to renew the practices by which the government of the country had been hitherto rendered profitable to them, and disastrous to the people. A partial relaxation of the penal laws against the Catholics ;* and, more efficacious still, the exten-

* These tardy labours of humanity and wisdom began in the year 1778, when Mr. Gardiner procured an act (17 & 18 Geo. III., c. 49) for the relief of his majesty's subjects in this kingdom professing the popish religion. By that law any Catholic subscribing the oath of allegiance and declaration prescribed by the 13 & 14 Geo. III., c. 35, was allowed to hold and dispose of a lease of land for 999 years certain, or determinable upon the dropping of five lives ; Catholics, then possessed of lands, were empowered to retain, devise, and alienate them as freely as any other of his majesty's subjects. The power thus conferred of holding leasehold property was extended to freehold by the act 21 & 22 Geo. III., c. 24., for the further relief of his majesty's subjects of this kingdom professing the Roman Catholic religion. This law, besides repealing several of the penalties and the most offensive parts of the acts of Ann, Geo. I. and Geo. II., such as fines and imprisonment for hearing mass, for having a horse worth more than £5., and purchasing a house in the towns or suburbs of Limerick or Galway, &c., enabled Catholics to hold and dispose of lands, except advowsons, manors, and boroughs returning members to parliament. 21 & 22 Geo. III., c. 62. An act to allow persons professing the

sion of the national commerce under the free trade laws of the period, quickly enlarged the sphere and enhanced the value of industrial enterprise and the productive labour of all classes of the community. But there was no commensurate improvement made in the political institutions, or in the aristocratic system of government. Mr. Fox and the Whigs who were the patrons of the change enjoyed but a short tenure of office, less friendly ministers took charge of the state, and thus there occurred an interval, during which a rapid increase in the quantity and value of the national exports and imports excited the envy of other nations, while it gratified in the highest degree the national pride of the Irish. That passed, and the corrupt profusion of the government, and the venality of public men, soon brought back the former abuses, until at last bribery became universal, and the debauched and shattered constitution was sold to the English minister under accumulated circumstances of degeneracy and shame.

The question, then, of how far Ireland may be well governed under a separate and independent legislature, if not altogether an unsolved problem, is yet one which hitherto, at least, has not been fairly demonstrated in the negative. It may be argued, partly by facts and partly by analogy, that the trial could not produce a different result under any circumstances; but it is impossible to pretend that the application of the principle was admitted, even for the shortest period, either legitimately or impartially by the current of events embraced between the years 1782 and 1800. The history of all nations shows that many years must elapse between the recognition of a principle and its adoption into general practice. A law of nature seems to have imposed it as an obligation upon mankind, that they should love to contemplate the great moral truths which are the guerdons of liberty, and to worship them long at a distance, before they will take them into their arms and make them the familiar objects of household devo-

Popish religion to teach schools in this kingdom, and for regulating the education of Papists, and also to repeal parts of certain laws relative to the guardianship of their children.

tion and the daily companions of their common avocations. Although the elements of British liberty were discovered, defined, and proclaimed at an early period of our history, we have added little to the principles of Magna Charta since the year 1215 ; and it is only within a recent period that we can honestly boast of the application of those principles to the every-day use of every member of our vast community. If ages were consumed before the essential properties of the British constitution penetrated to the various members of the body politic, and was equally interchanged and shared by them all, how little will it appear strange that a brief span of eighteen years proved insufficient to allow the Irish nation fit opportunities of bringing their constitution fairly to the test, and evolving its various capabilities through all the details of legitimate action.

It is now an easy task to criticise the poor experiment made in 1782 ;—it is easy to point out its defects and to enumerate the disadvantages which its patrons had to contend with, as well as the mistakes, too numerous and mischievous, which they committed ;—it is easy to show where the measure particularly failed, and who were the men most at fault upon the occasion. From first to last, the whole proceeding is plainly explicable. We behold all the men and all the classes best fitted to give advice and assistance at such a juncture, unanimous in the assertion of one principle, but disagreeing unfortunately in their modes of giving it effect. Every section of the liberal party concurred in holding the immediate reform of the House of Commons indispensable to the common weal ; but, while the volunteers assembled in numbers, and peremptorily demanded that essential improvement, with arms in their hands, the friends of the new constitution felt that this was neither a becoming nor a safe attitude to assume, and that the continuance of violent proceedings must prove equally subversive of public order and legislative deliberation. The latter resisted the attempt to control the parliament and to dictate to the minister by demonstrations of physical force. This division of the popular party caused

the loss of the measure itself—a measure which all desired to obtain, and which alone could have given an important bearing to the empty triumph of legislative independence.

Two men of very different characters seem to have been principally blameable upon this fatal occasion—the earl of Charlemont and the Right Honourable Frederick Flood. These eminent persons continued to lead the volunteers, to preside at their stormy meetings, and to render homage to their indignant enthusiasm, when Mr. Grattan withdrew from the agitation, and desired to prosecute the remaining work of reform without bringing to bear, against the legislature and the government, the violence of a public force which presented not a few of the characteristics of a general insurrection. Lord Charlemont was a nobleman possessing many claims to the confidence and regard of his fellow-countrymen. An accomplished scholar, and distinguished by his knowledge and his taste in the fine arts,—humane, affectionate, and liberal in his disposition and principles,—honourable to the purest extent, and perfectly disinterested,—he was sincerely attached to liberty, and deeply impressed with a sense of the evils with which a long period of misgovernment had oppressed his native land. To show him that a grievance existed, and that his fellow-countrymen were suffering under its pressure, sufficed at all times to excite his sympathy, and insure his co-operation in obtaining its redress. But though unquestionably a good and an amiable man, Lord Charlemont was far from being either a great or a very useful one. He had no genius, no originality, no boldness or force of character. It would be difficult to instance a second individual who took for many years so conspicuous a place in politics, and displayed during the whole course of his career so little political talent. He had the honour of introducing Mr. Grattan into public life, but, finding himself outstripped by the superior energy and the uncompromising decision of the younger patriot, he seems to have taken umbrage at his progress, to have become estranged from him, and to have employed his feebler powers in attempting to counteract the influence and neutralize the

labours of the only Irish statesman who was endowed with abilities of the highest order, and never once devoted them to any service but the good of Ireland.

Mr. Flood, at this crisis, seems to have acted a far more censurable part than Lord Charlemont. The line of conduct which in the peer was in no small degree the result of weakness and simplicity of character, presents in the commoner all the marks of conscious error and deliberate mischievousness. The Right Honourable Henry Flood, though still pronounced a patriot by many Irish writers, really possessed few of the genuine properties of that high character. He was unquestionably a man of considerable powers,—the stamp of eminent merit was deeply impressed upon every thing he produced,—strength and superiority distinguished his life; in eloquence he was consummate, and only surpassed by Grattan; his ambition, like his eloquence, was bold and ardent; but his personal vanity was of the most jealous and susceptible kind, and his temper was most irascible and unforgiving. He was proud of office, and attached to it as much for the sake of the distinction it conferred as the emolument it contributed to his private fortune, which was large.* He had great and useful qualities, but they were marred by his vices, which gave the government the benefit of services that belonged to his

* The rental of Mr. Flood's estates, in the county of Kilkenny, is said to have been nearly £7,000 a year; but although thus richly provided for, he sought and obtained one of the best appointments which the government could bestow—the office of vice-treasurer, with a salary of £3,500 a year; there being at the same time two other vice-treasurers, each with as large a salary. In 1780 he resigned, in a fit of displeasure, because the earl of Buckinghamshire refused to entertain some measures which he desired to carry. For that act he would have deserved the thanks of his country and the admiration of the historian, had he not forfeited all claim to respect by clamouring against the Whigs in 1782, because they would neither turn out his successor, and replace him in the sinecure, nor consent to make him the subject of such a parliamentary vote as Grattan had been honoured with. This was the true cause of the factious virulence with which he opposed every subsequent government. An odd compound of eloquence, vanity, cleverness, inconsistency, and discomfiture, he stands unmatched in the history of his country, and deserves special censure, as the ablest mischief-maker of his time, who seldom did any thing well, and was generally on the watch to mar the good done by others.

country. They rendered him not only a bad politician, but even a bad party man ; and they deprived him of every claim to the rank of a sound, consistent, or a successful statesman. His career may be not insignificantly described by an Irish contradiction—it was a clever failure. He had acquired distinction before Grattan became known. He led the Irish Commons when its greatest ornament first entered the house ; and he might have continued equally great with him had he been equally pure and unselfish. But there was a single-heartedness, a serenity, a disinterestedness, and moral dignity in Grattan's nature of which Flood was wholly destitute. Grattan's soul was always in his cause, and by its greatness he grew great himself. Flood was always placing himself before his cause, and studying to make it appear that it was he gave greatness to the cause, and not the cause that conferred greatness on him. From the time at which Grattan displayed the fulness of his powers, Flood spent the remainder of his life in a vain endeavour to outshine the dazzling splendour of the greater luminary. Devoured by this envy, and a restless passion for popularity—which, though sometimes snatched for an interval, was never retained for any length of time—he rushed blindly into error, and deluded the multitude with false lights. To him, more than any other contemporary, is the loss of parliamentary reform ascribable. Mortified vanity led him to resist the popular triumph, and to bespatter it with imputed defects. Failing in this unworthy effort he aroused all the power of his talent, and all the force of his passions, which were violent, to mislead the people for a series of years. The punishment which he afterwards suffered for his misconduct was heavy but not too severe. He was driven into retirement by the general sense of his unworthiness. Rejected by all parties, and severed from his former political friends, no patron or constituency was found to adopt him at the general election which took place in the year 1790 : but though abandoned in every other respect, his vanity, proof against all the lessons of experience, survived to the last—adding to the painful solitude of his retreat by instigating him to try and

persuade his few remaining associates that his country had been ungrateful, and that he was an injured patriot !

The form in which Mr. Flood interrupted the general satisfaction and diverted the progress of reform, was more plausible than ingenious. Mr. Grattan and his friends had been content to secure the independence of the Irish parliament by repealing Poynings' law and the subsequent act, 6 Geo. I. c. 5, increasing the stringency of its enactments. Mr. Flood insisted not only that the acts which had so long controlled the Irish legislature should be repealed, but that England should also make an express renunciation of the existence of any right upon her part to bind Ireland by laws not made in the Irish parliament.* Defeated in the House of Commons, Flood carried his proposition to the meetings of the volunteers, where his eloquent appeals to the national pride were hailed with cordial enthusiasm. The public mind was quickly driven into wild extremes under the lash of so potent a leader. The volunteers proposed to establish a national convention, and Grattan, so late the idol of popular admiration, suddenly became the object of popular abuse. The subsequent decline of the celebrated volunteers, and the history of the events to which their dissensions and excited proceedings gave rise, contain several passages of deep personal interest, and suggest not a few grave lessons of political instruction. But a particular account of them is not exactly suited to this outline. Mr. Flood's plan of parliamentary reform is the only incident of the period

* The question in dispute between Mr. Flood and Mr. Grattan, must always retain no common interest, in consequence of the extraordinary talent displayed by both orators in the several debates which now took place in the Irish Commons. But how little there was to fight for will appear by referring to the repealed statute of Geo. I. That law enacted, —first, that the kingdom of Ireland was of right subordinate to and dependant upon the imperial crown of Great Britain, as being inseparably united and annexed to it; secondly, that the British parliament had of right full power to make laws to bind the people and kingdom of Ireland; and thirdly, that the Irish House of Lords possessed no appellate jurisdiction. This act, as well as Poynings', having been repealed bodily and unreservedly, it seems the height of intemperance to assert that Ireland was left where she was, inasmuch as no declaratory act had passed, renouncing in words the right which had already been resigned in point of fact.

which it will be possible to advert to, and even of that it will be almost enough to mention that it was propoed and rejected. Its merits and its adaptation to the circumstances of the country may be judged of by the fact that it neither admitted the Roman Catholics to vote as electors, nor to sit as members of parliament. As a mark of the spirit in which it was brought forward, it will be enough to repeat the exhortation of its author to his supporters : " Let 50,000 armed men, followed by 50,000 more, follow up this principle ! "*

* The earl of Clare, a hostile witness, gave this minute description of the proceedings in the Volunteer Convention, upon the subject of Parliamentary Reform :—" Accordingly, in the year 1783, a military convention did meet in this city, decked in all the forms of a parliament. They had their speaker, their committees ; a bill for the reform of the House of Commons was brought in, read, debated, read a second time, committed, reported, and ordered to be engrossed, read a third time, passed, and sent by two of their number, who happened to have seats in the other house, to be registered by parliament. It was declared at this time by the minister of that day, now a leader of the opposition, (Mr. Fox,) as his opinion, to my Lord Northington, that the existence of Ireland as a member of the British empire depended upon his dispersing that armed convention. Parliament, however, vindicated its honour ; the bill thus brought in upon the point of the bayonet was, indeed, offered to the House of Commons, but that house treated the act of contumacious folly with the contempt it deserved. It was driven from their house, and its authors, ashamed of the act of folly they had committed, quietly slunk back to their different counties."—*Speech in the Irish House of Lords, February 19, 1798.*

Two other writers, both friends of liberty, and well acquainted with the circumstances, have given narratives of these proceedings :—

" The Belfast review," says Plowden, (vol. ii. p. 233,) " was approaching, and those who were dissatisfied, determined then to make their stand. The 31st of July exhibited a volunteer encampment of nearly 3,000 men, and a volunteer garrison of upwards of 1,000, all completely clothed, armed, and accoutred. Anonymous papers were dispersed in thousands through the camp and garrison. Every private was taught that he was competent to legislate, and consequently to express his sentiments on the most speculative points. Declaration, renunciation, simple repeal, legal security, better security, a bill of rights, were all before them, and they were to instruct their delegates on these important points."

Lord Charlemont, it will be remembered, was the head, though not the hero, of this agitation. According to Mr. Hardy, in his life of that nobleman,—" A singular scene was soon displayed, and yet such a scene as any one who considered the almost unvarying disposition of an assembly of that nature, and the particular object for which it was convened, might justly have expected. From every quarter, and from every speculatist, great clerks, or no clerks at all, was poured in such a multiplicity of plans of reform, some of them ingenious, some which bespoke an exercised and rational mind ; but, in general, as I have been well assured, so utterly

Disagreements amongst the reformers having thus arrested the progress of reform, the union of the legislatures of the two countries became an inevitable consummation ; and the course of events, by developing the anomalies of the existing system with inconvenient force, brought on the change with unexpected rapidity. The more prominent causes of this result were three in number—the commercial propositions mooted in 1784, the question of the regency in 1789, and the rebellion of 1798.

The unfortunate coalition ministry of Mr. Fox and Lord North having been dissolved, Mr. Pitt made the duke of Rutland Lord Northington's successor in the office of lord lieutenant, Feb. 27, 1784. This nobleman was of all others the person most fit to resume the work of debauching the gentry, and scattering the few relics of patriotism that lingered amongst the leaders of the people. Frank and generous in his manners and disposition ; wealthy, extravagant, and devoted to pleasure ; he pleased the Irish by his open gaiety and careless conviviality, and carried the upper classes along with him in a torrent of courtly dissipation. There are no

impracticable, ‘so rugged and so wild in theif attire,’ they looked not like ‘the offspring of inhabitants of the earth, and yet were on it,’ that language would sink in portraying this motley band of incongruous fanatics, valuable only if inefficient, or execrable if efficacious. All this daily issued from presumptuous empirics, or the vainly busy minds of some political philanthropists, whom the good breeding alone of their countrymen permitted to be regarded as not totally out of their senses. The committee showed a perseverance almost marvellous, but the murky conceits and solemn vanities of such pretenders, would have put even the patience of the man of Uz to flight. At last, after being for several days bewildered in this palpable obscure of politics, and more and more theories fitting round the heads of the unfortunate committee, that which must for ever take place on such occasions, took place here. A dictator was appointed, not indeed in name but in substance. The bishop of Derry moved that Mr. Henry Flood, who had not been one of the committee, should be nominated as an assessor or joint member. And here was displayed the potency of oratorical talents on such a body of men, and the justice of Lord Bolingbroke’s remark, that the House of Commons, or in short any assembly partaking of the nature of the House of Commons, is like a pack of hounds. They will always follow the man who shows them the most game. So rapid and decisive was the superiority that Flood obtained, that without his concurrence nothing was approved of. The bishop now, as has often been experienced, found himself undone by his auxiliary.”

scenes described in the annals of licentiousness which surpass the recorded profligacy of the Rutland viceroyalty in Ireland. By a natural parity of debasement there are no instances of official peculation more infamous than those which were committed under the cover of his misplaced authority. The enormous extent to which official plunder was carried under the duke of Rutland's administration, was fully revealed when his successor, the marquis of Buckingham, was compelled to scrutinise the accounts of the numerous defaulters. Plowden describes the scenes which now took place in striking terms. "A panic spread through the offices—some fled the country, one cut his throat, and many were disgraced. The profligacy of official profusion was incredible : peculation reigned in every department where public money was handled, or public property disposable : the public accounts were wound up yearly with formidable balances in the hands of collectors, treasurers, and paymasters, or arrears due by former great officers who had received their employments without security, or had been discarded for misconduct, or were dead, or had fled, or had become bankrupt. In the ordnance and the treasury the grossest frauds pervaded almost every department. The public stores were plundered with impunity in open day. Arms, ammunition, and military accoutrements condemned as useless, were stolen out at one gate and bought in at the other, and charged anew to the public account. Journeymen armourers who worked in the arsenal seldom went to dinner without conveying away a musket, a sword, or a brace of pistols as lawful perquisites, sanctioned by the connivance of their superiors. Clerks with salaries of £100 a year, kept handsome houses in town and country, with splendid establishments ; some of them became purchasers of loans and lotteries ; all exhibited signs of redundant opulence."—Such was the government of the duke of Rutland,—such the abuses which the marquis of Buckingham attempted to extirpate ; but ere long, finding the system necessary to the English government, he fell into its worst practices, and ultimately left the country even more corrupt than he found it.

While the government and the oligarchy, equally demoralised and arbitrary, were goading an oppressed tenantry to discontent, conspiracies, and insurrection, the few materials for improving the circumstances of the country which had lately been offered by the prospect of commercial freedom, were unfortunately destroyed by the jealousy of the English people, and the want of firmness and sincerity upon the part of the English prime minister. Mr. Orde, afterwards Lord Bolton, was now the Irish secretary. Mr. Flood's defective propositions for parliamentary reform had been rejected ; the popular dissatisfaction was loud and vehement ; the volunteers though disunited and bereft of their original fame and strength, were still a numerous body and in arms ; the public press teemed with articles of indignant abuse and menacing violence ; and everywhere throughout the country, the lower orders and the military were exasperated against each other.

A description of one amongst the various aggregate meetings which were now held, will answer for all. A petition or remonstrance to the king against the parliament and the whole government of Ireland, was prepared on the part of the free-men, freeholders, and inhabitants of the city of Dublin. This document was voted by acclamation as an example and incentive to all other constituencies, and the different counties of the kingdom. At this meeting the sheriff presided, and different corps of volunteers attended in arms. The flame thus kindled extended rapidly ; dreams of a separate state of freedom, and independence of England were warmly cherished. The public excitement in the latter country, unsettled and distracted by the recent establishment of the United States of America ; and in Ireland the conviction spreading every day that the people possessed all the elements and but few of the enjoyments of a great nation — these various causes poured their combined influence upon a troubled sea of politics, and raised a storm that shook the state to its centre. But the political party now in the ascendant, were furnished with all the resources derived from considerable experience in the arts of misgovernment, and were equally skilled in the

use of corruption and severity. Both of these were put into requisition with an active and determined spirit which tolerated no scruples, resistance, evasion, or delays. While the court seduced the wavering and the infirm, and places and pensions bribed the venal and the insincere, the public prosecutor dealt summarily with the rough remainder. The high sheriff of Dublin was sentenced to a fine and imprisonment; but upon acknowledging his error and making a public apology in the Court of King's Bench, his fine was reduced, and his person soon after liberated. The divided opinions of the volunteers upon the Roman Catholic question, were at this critical moment made an apt instrument of further confusion. Lord Charlemont declared his immovable dissent from any such concession; and warned his followers that its success would be fatal to all their particular objects. A considerable section of the volunteers ranged themselves on his side, and the corporation of Dublin, then a leading organ of liberal politics, voted an address of thanks to his lordship on the occasion. Meantime criminal prosecutions were carried on against other sheriffs and magistrates, and against the printers and publishers of several newspapers. The volunteers powerful though divided, renewed their efforts to overawe the government. But they had demonstrated their hostility to the religion professed by the bulk of the people. Upon their roll of national wrongs to be redressed, those so unjustly inflicted upon the Catholics were omitted. Professing to rival the famous convention of Dungannon, they convened a national congress at Dublin; and soon found that the present movement wanted that peculiar sanction and cementing strength which can only be supplied by the common consent and sympathy of the masses. Delegates representing twenty-seven counties, were sent to this assembly. Although the sheriffs did not dare to convene it, it was held; and there were kindred gatherings, all more or less turbulent, in many other places. It was suspected at the time, and is not at present doubted, that many of these bold demonstrations were suggested, if not provided by persons who were enemies

to the cause itself. The disappointed placeman and the confirmed corruptionist combined heart and hand to push on proceedings fatal to the proposed issue, and formidable to the prudent, to the enlightened, and to all those who were anxious to serve their country by firm but moderate, and above all, by honest courses, and with uncontaminated associates. These were unequivocal symptoms of the fast-approaching dissolution of the once irresistible and still celebrated volunteers. Unanimity, concentration, and the agreement of a whole people were no longer represented in their ranks. They ceased to be dreaded by their foes ; they passed vain resolutions, voted a tame address to the king, adjourned, and disappearing by degrees, died away so imperceptibly, that it is difficult to state the precise period at which they positively expired.

The career of the volunteers is thus conspicuously marked in its several stages and consequences. Enlightened and directed by the genius of Grattan, this body carried the independence of the Irish parliament. Throwing off the reins of his wisdom they lost the opportunity of reforming the parliament itself, and giving a wholesome and efficient direction to its proceedings. Repudiating the crying claims of their suffering fellow-countrymen, the Roman Catholics, they ranked no longer as the representatives of an oppressed nation, but degenerated to be the partisans of sectarian persecution. In this manner they had ceased to retain the influence of a great body when the last question consequent upon the revolution of 1782 came on for adjustment—the question, namely, of the commercial intercourse between the two countries. This was embraced in a series of resolutions, originally eleven in number, which were introduced by the secretary, Mr. Orde, into the Irish House of Commons. They passed the parliament of Ireland, opposed by Flood, but ably and warmly supported by Grattan, who said of them, “ They have a threefold principle ; the first is, after defraying the charge of the nation, to contribute to the general expenditure of the empire. The second is, that by making the surplus not applicable to the general expense, until all charges are paid, it interests both the British

and the Irish ministers in Irish economy. The third is to subject that surplus to the controul of the Irish parliament. This puts an end to debt, and decides the great question of 1753 respecting the appropriation of the surplus revenue. It makes the British ministry a guarantee for the integrity of the House, and the economy of Irish administrations.

Particular details of these propositions are no longer interesting; but as they were intricate and perplexing, as they excited long discussions and angry feelings in both countries, and as they engrossed for a period the serious attention of the English and Irish legislatures, some general account of them is required. An unfavourable harvest in the year 1783, had been followed by severe sufferings amongst the agricultural classes in Ireland. To their complaints the cry of commercial distress was soon added. Every description of manufacture was declared to be in a state of extreme poverty and depression; the interference of parliament alone it was insisted could remove or alleviate these evils, and no form of relief, it was further concluded, could be lasting or enriching which did not proceed upon the basis of favouring native produce by heavy protecting duties.

While doctrines of this kind were generally promulgated, and were daily acquiring a firmer hold of the public mind, the subject was taken up by Mr. Foster, who afterwards became speaker of the House of Commons. That gentleman having first placed himself in communication with several considerable merchants, and with Mr. Secretary Orde, arranged a plan which was deemed by them consistent with sound principles; and well suited to the interests of both countries. With this he repaired to London and obtained for it the approval of Mr. Pitt. It was agreed that the eleven propositions should be introduced and carried through the parliaments of both countries by the authority of the government. Two of these propositions were of much higher value than the others. The one gave Ireland power to import goods into England from the colonies and other countries at her own rates of duty. The other, by way of returning this advantage, assigned the

surplus of the hereditary revenue of Ireland—which was an increasing income derived from customs, excise, and hearth duty—as a grant for ever towards the maintenance of the navy of the empire at large. A proper understanding having been come to, and the principle and details having been adopted by the government, and voted by the Irish parliament, new taxes to the amount of £140,000 were imposed in order that there might be a clear surplus of Irish revenue when the proposed arrangement came to take effect.

The spirit in which Mr. Pitt laid these propositions before the English House of Commons was excellent. A quotation has already been taken from the speech in which he opened the subject; other addresses made by him in the earlier stages of the discussion were equally distinguished by the force of truthful statements and enlightened views. But he was soon driven to alter his tone and to modify his measures. There had been a strong resistance offered to the propositions in Ireland, where it was maintained that the freedom of parliament and the right of independent legislation would be trespassed upon by a compact, which handed over the revenue of Ireland to England and deprived the representatives of the people of all right to deal with or controul it for the future. But the opposition of the Irish, complaining of a theoretical or constructive injury to be done to their constitution, was feeble and uninfluential when compared with the fierceness with which the English rushed forward in large numbers to prevent a practical and direct invasion of their commercial and manufacturing privileges. The mercantile body every where took the alarm; they declared that the whole commerce of the empire would be diverted to Ireland if these propositions should be passed into a law. From every port and emporium of trade; from Liverpool, Bristol, Birmingham, Glasgow, and sixty provincial towns, deputations were despatched to remonstrate against the Irish commercial propositions, and to compel the minister to abandon them. Most unfortunately for Ireland, Mr. Fox, the patron of its independence, identified himself with the cause of the discontented merchants, and was induced to declare that he would

debate every resolution, and divide the house upon each, as the measure went completely to the destruction of the commerce, manufacture, revenue, and maritime strength of England. The propositions, according to his view of them, went to appoint Ireland sole guardian of the laws of navigation, and arbitress of all the commercial interests of the realm.

Aroused by these threats, and by the acclamations with which they were hailed out of doors, Mr. Pitt recast the whole scheme, and, by introducing various amendments, expanded Mr. Orde's eleven propositions into twenty,* which ultimately passed the English parliament, and were referred in due course to the legislature of the sister country. There they were no sooner produced than the whole island rose to denounce them. The outcry poured forth against them was universal, and it included the most stirring incentives to resistance. The legislative authority of Ireland was directly attacked; national faith was broken, and the country cheated out of £140,000 a year in new taxes, which had been imposed

* These in their main effects were:—1. That whatever navigation laws the British parliament should thereafter enact for preservation of her marine, the same should be passed by the legislature of Ireland. 2. That the importation into Ireland, and from thence into Great Britain of West India produce, should be confined to the produce of our own West India colonies. 3. That Ireland should not interfere with the chartered rights of the East India Company, by trading with any countries beyond the Cape of Good Hope. The earl of Clare's version of the history of this question was marked by all that uncompromising plainness and strong contempt so characteristic of the man. “It was discovered,” he said—(*speech in answer to the earl of Moira, Feb. 19, 1798*)—“that British manufactures, by their superior quality and cheapness, obtained a preference in our markets; and instead of setting about to rival them in quality or cheapness, or at all considering that the balance of trade between this country and Great Britain was infinitely in our favour, it was immediately resolved to commence a war of prohibitory duties against England, although it was proved decisively that we had not wool enough in this kingdom to clothe one-half of its inhabitants. To conciliate and quiet these clamours, Great Britain, in 1785, offered a fair and liberal commercial treaty to this country, by which she admitted us to her markets; and shared her immense capital with us, and opened her colonies to our trade, on condition that we should follow England in the laws which she had made for the regulation of those colonies and that trade of which we were to participate. This, however, was represented as a new attack upon Irish independence; and so great was the outcry raised against it, that the parliament of Ireland, in their wisdom, thought fit to reject the treaty, and, duped by the silliest deception that ever was put upon any set of men, omitted an opportunity of consolidating the interests of the empire.”

in a spirit of credulous confidence in the honour of England and the consistency of her prime minister ! The agitation of these topics produced an effect so powerful as to give the minister, when he put the question for a final settlement of the dispute, a majority of only nineteen votes in a house of 239 members. So small an advantage was quickly pronounced tantamount to a national victory. And such ere long was shown to be the opinion of the government ; for although the bill was ordered to be printed as it had been proposed—by way of ministerial justification, notice was given, in the course of a few days, that no further motion would be made respecting it during the session. The public delight was unbounded at this defeat of the English commercial interest ; Dublin was illuminated to celebrate the event ; and resolutions against the use of English manufactures were passed with acclamation at numerous public meetings held throughout the country.

For all this exultation there was but little substantial foundation. The merchants of England had acted unreasonably, and her ministers unfairly ; still the wide sources of Irish misery and discontent were left open and unchecked. Ireland greatly wanted, and had now lost, the advantages of a commercial arrangement with the sister country ; she had saddled herself with additional taxes to the amount of £140,000, in the vain hope of extending her trade, and no other available result appeared to arise from the dissensions which had been so generally provoked, than the growing conviction expressed by the English manufacturers, and echoed by Mr. Fox and Mr. Wilberforce in the English Commons, that there was no way of removing the difficulties by which the question was surrounded, but by a union of the legislatures of the two countries.

Another incident of more touching interest, though of less importance, soon occurred to confirm the impression thus created. The profligate vice-royalty of the duke of Rutland had terminated, and his successor, the Earl Temple, soon after created marquis of Buckingham, had grown weary of the praiseworthy but unavailing attempt already described, to cleanse the Augearn stable of official peculation in Ireland,

when mental disease first attacked George III., and the question of appointing a Regent became matter of parliamentary discussion in England and in Ireland. Upon this occasion the decisions of the two legislatures were repugnant. While the English parliament, at the instance of Mr. Pitt, conferred the regency upon the Prince of Wales, restrained by numerous limitations and abridgments of power, the more generous Irish defeated the ministry by a large majority, and voted the prince, regent of the kingdom without restriction. The inconveniences threatened by these opposite proceedings were opportunely obviated by the recovery of the king, but the demonstration produced a deep impression upon the statesmen of England. Legislative contests, and not improbably a consequent separation of the two countries were now evidently matters which the daily current of events might evolve. The boroughmongers and placemen of Ireland, whom the ministers' bribe sufficed to hold in their seats upon occasions of ordinary baseness, were no longer, it was clear, to be depended upon, when the prospect of a new sovereign, or a more tempting patron, was offered to the impatient avidity of their insatiable corruption. Thus every thing that happened seemed to point to the union as an event not more necessary than inevitable.

As soon as the king recovered his health the regent's party was made to feel that they had incurred the vengeance of an implacable government. It was determined to make every man "the victim of his vote." There was a general ejection of the ministerial recusants from office, while new situations were devised and old ones split into parts, in order to increase the number of dependents upon the castle, and to satisfy the inordinate appetites of the new levy for infamous emolument. Under the old system the government had been farmed out in gross, and the head of it never troubled himself with details; but now corruption proceeded piecemeal; there was an open market, and established prices for boroughs, votes, peerages, and titles. Thirty-two members of parliament were purchased in this manner by the marquis of Buckingham, and the ministerial gain was made a subject of public ovation. Eight new peerages were created at

the same time ; £13,000 a year was added to the pension list ; and the nation further burdened with a perpetuity of £28,000 per annum. Amongst the new means resorted to for the purpose of supplying funds to meet the extended demands upon the pecuniary resources of the administration, particular notice is challenged by the sale of peerages. Three titles* at least, and in all probability a greater number, appear to have been disposed of for £3,000 each, which was put into a stock purse for buying seats in the House of Commons.†

* The Baronies of Kilmaine, Cloncurry, and Glentworth.

† Rather a full exposition of these disgraceful acts is furnished by Mr. H. Grattan, in the Life of his Father : acts which drew from that father the observation,—that in a free country the path of public treachery leads to the block,—but in a nation governed like a province, to the helm.

The dismissals were :—

The Earl of Shannon, Vice-treasurer.

The Duke of Leinster, Master of the Rolls.

W. Ponsonby, Postmaster-general.

G. Ponsonby, Counsel to the Commissioners.

Lodge Morris, Treasurer to the Post-office.

Charles Francis Sheridan, Secretary-at-war.

William Burton, Paymaster of Foreign Regiments.

John Staples, a pension and reversion of Examinator of Customs.

John Townsend, Barrack-master.

James Uniacke, Comptroller of Stamps.

H. Hatton, Comptroller of Youghal.

Colonel Pigott, Governor of Cork.

Dennis Bowes Daly, Ranger of the Curragh.

Edward King, Comptroller of the port of Dublin.

Sir Skeffington Smith, a pension.

The value of these offices amounted to nearly £20,000 a year.

The promotions were as follows :—

Fitzgibbon, appointed Lord Chancellor.

Wolfe, Attorney-general.

Toler, Solicitor-general.

Boyd, First Counsel to the Commissioners.

Edward Cooke, Secretary-at-war.

Corry, Commissioner of Revenue.

Pakenham, Surveyor of Ordnance.

S. Moore, Treasurer to the Post-office.

Molyneux, Comptroller of Stamp Duties.

Beresford, Pursebearer to the Lord Chancellor.

D. Trant, Advocate to the Admiralty.

C. H. Coote, John Reilly, and Richard Neville, Commissioners of Imprest Accounts.

S. Hayes, R. Holmes, R. T. Herbert, and Edward Fitzgerald, Commissioners of Stamps.

Lord Bellamont, and Lord Loftus, Joint Postmasters-general.

R. Johnston, Third Serjeant-at-law.

It was in the midst of these practices—when the very ideas of probity, independence, and the example of public virtue seemed to have been swept away, that Grattan uncontaminated and undismayed by the torrent of abominations everywhere inundating the institutions of his country, rallied his great energies, and renewed his splendid exertions to uphold the tottering fabric of the constitution, and reanimate the expiring vitality of Irish patriotism. It is impossible to contemplate without feelings of the highest admiration, the genius that devoted itself anew to such an undertaking, or to feel surprise that the effort was but partially successful. The resentment of the ejected placemen gave him a temporary strength, which promised while it lasted, some decisive results. But the thunder of indignant eloquence destroys only the open foe; while the secret electricity of ministerial corruption undermines and subverts the strongest foundations of the social system. The nature of the opposition offered to Mr. Grattan and his friends, may be gathered from a single anecdote. “I recollect,” said the attorney-general, Mr. Fitzgibbon, in one of the debates of this period, “Lord Townshend proroguing the parliament, and the house voting an address of thanks to him. It cost the nation half a million of money to procure the majority. I shall, therefore, oppose these amendments, which might lead to an address which would cost half a million more.” History loses all interest as

The following were the promotions that took place in the peerage:—

- The Earl of Antrim, created Marquis of Antrim.
- The Earl of Tyrone, created Marquis of Waterford.
- The Earl of Hillsborough, created Marquis of Downshire.
- The Viscount Glerawley, created Earl of Annesley.
- The Viscount Enniskillen, created Earl of Enniskillen.
- The Viscount Erne, created Earl of Erne.
- The Viscount Carysfort, created Earl of Carysfort.
- Lord Earlsfort, created Viscount Clonmel.
- Lord Loftus, created Viscount Loftus.
- Mr. Fitzgibbon, created Baron Fitzgibbon.
- Mr. Stewart, created Baron Londonderry.
- Sir John Browne, created Baron Kilmaine.
- Sir Nicholas Lawless, created Baron Cloncurry.
- Mr. L. Gardiner, created Baron Mountjoy.
- William Cecil Pery, created Baron Glentworth.
- Mr. Alexander, created Baron Caledon.

well as dignity, when ministers of state make such unblushing avowals of pollution as this. Grattan gave vent to the feeling of astonishment and indignation excited by it, in strains characteristic of his oratory, but as unavailing as were all his other efforts in the midst of the general debasement.

These were the words, matchless for their force, truthfulness, and fire, in which he described and denounced the marquis of Buckingham's administration :—

“ Such has been the conduct of your reformer. This was the man: you remember his entry into the capital, trampling upon the hearse of the duke of Rutland, and seated on a triumphal car, drawn by public credulity ;—on one side fallacious hope—on the other many-mouthed profession,—a figure with two faces, one turned to the treasury, and the other presented to the people, and with a double tongue speaking contradictory language. The minister alights: justice looks up to him with empty hopes, and peculation faints with idle alarms. He finds the city a prey to an unconstitutional police—he contemns it; he finds the country overburthened with a shameful pension list—he increases it; he finds the House of Commons swarming with placemen—he multiplies them; he finds the salary of the secretary increased to prevent a pension—he grants him a pension; he finds the kingdom drained by absentee employments, and by compensations to bring them home—he gives the best reversion in the country to an absentee, his brother! He finds that the government had, at different times, disgraced itself by creating sinecures, to gratify corrupt affection—he makes two commissioners of the rolls, and gives one of them to another brother; he finds the second counsel to the commissioners put down as useless—he revives it; he finds the boards of accounts and stamps annexed by public compact—he divides them; he finds three resolutions, declaring that seven commissioners are sufficient—he makes nine; he finds the country has suffered by peculations in the ordnance—he increases the salaries of the officers, and gives the places to members—to members of parliament.”

The attorney-general's threat of spending half a million in the purchase of a new majority, was thus exposed :—

“ It is in vain to equivocate; the words were uttered: the minister may have forgotten, but the people remember them, and several of us were witnesses to them; nor was it merely the minister's expression,—it was his sentiment,—it was his measure. The threat was put into the fullest execution; the canvass of the ministry was everywhere,—in the House of Commons, in the lobby, in the street, at the door of the parlia-

mentary undertakers, rapped at and worn by the little caitiffs of government, who offered amnesty to some, honours to others, and corruption to all ; and where the word of the viceroy was doubted they offered their own. Accordingly we find a number of parliamentary provisions were created, and divers peerages sold, with such effect, that the same parliament who had voted the chief governor a criminal, did immediately after give that very governor implicit support ; and the subsequent parliament did, under the same influence—on the Catholic question—on the pension question—on the place question—vote and unvote, and turn, and change, according to the orders of government, with a versatility that made an indignant public cry shame upon them ! This policy was an attack on the moral as well as on the constitutional system, and guaranteed political slavery by moral prostitution ; proposing that the gentlemen of parliament should be systematically robbers, in order that the people should be systematically slaves : it was a condition on which no freedom, no government, no religion, no connection, no throne, could long rest.”

Upon the sale of peerages he spoke with powers still more splendid :—

“ If gentlemen are unwilling to risk their reputation, by instituting an inquiry upon the ground of common fame, I will state to them what they will consider sufficient ground for this inquiry—a member of this house standing up and asserting that peerages have been sold. This, Mr. Speaker, the gentlemen opposite will acknowledge to be ground for inquiry. Sir, I am that man. I say I have good reason to believe that peerages have been sold for money ;—nay, more—I have proof. Go into a committee ; and if I do not establish my charge, degrade me,—let me no longer enjoy the character of an honest man: I dare the administration to it. I risk my reputation on establishing the fact.

* * * * *

“ We charge them publicly, in the face of the country, with making corrupt agreements for the sale of peerages ; for doing which, we say, that they are impeachable. We charge them with corrupt agreements for the disposal of the money arising from the sale, to purchase, for the servants of the castle, seats in the assembly of the people ; for doing which, we say that they are impeachable. We charge them with committing these offences, not in one, nor in two, but in many instances : for which complication of offences we say that they are impeachable—guilty of a systematic endeavour to undermine the constitution, in violation of the laws of the land. We pledge ourselves to convict them ; we dare them to go into an inquiry ; we do not affect to treat them as other than public malefactors ; we speak to them in a style of most mortifying and humiliating defiance. We pronounce them to be public criminals. Will they dare deny the charge ? I call upon, and dare the ostensible member to

rise in his place, and say, on his honour, that he does not believe that such corrupt agreements have taken place. I wait for a specific answer.

* * * * *

“ You may cast a veil over families : but honour that sacred gem you have cast to the dust. I ask you, is there any man you would disgrace by attempting to give him title, except such a man as would exalt you by the acceptance ? The Irish ministry have attempted to strike off honour and authority. Such a minister goes before the leveller like sin preceding the shadow of death, shedding her poison, and distilling her influence, and preparing the nectar she touches for mortality. I do not say that such a minister with his own hand strips the foliage of the tree of nobility ; no,—he is the early blight, that comes to the island to wither your honour in the first blast of popular breath, and so to scatter it, that at last the whole leafage of nobility may descend. He does not purpose to blow up the houses of parliament ; he only endeavours to corrupt the institutions, and he only undermines the moral props of opinion and authority ; he only endeavours to taint the nobility,—he *sells the Lords, and buys the Commons*. The tree of nobility!—that it may flourish for ever, and withstand the blight of ministers and the blast of popular fury ;—that it may remain on its own hill, rejoicing and laughing to scorn that enemy, which, in the person of the minister of the crown, has gone against the nobles of the land ! This is my earnest prayer ! That these nobles may survive ;—survive to give counsel to these very ministers, and perhaps to pronounce judgment upon them ! But if ever the axe should go into the forest,—if on the track of the merchantman in the shape of the minister, the political woodman, in the shape of the leveller, should follow,—if the sale of peerages, as exercised by the present ministry, becoming the ordinary resource of government, should provoke a kindred spirit, and give birth to a race of men as unprincipled and desperate in one extreme as they are in the other : we shall then feel it our duty to resist such an effort ; and as we now resist the minister’s attempts to dishonour, so shall we then resist the consequences of his crimes—projects to extinguish the nobility.”

Such was Grattan’s oratory—let us glance at his measures. Those for the year 1789, which he either originated himself, or advocated when mooted by others, were a short money bill, carried against the government by 105 to 85 ; a bill to reform the police, long a convenient medium of gross and defiling patronage ; a bill to limit the amount of pensions and to disable pensioners, during pleasure, from sitting in parliament, and with them the holders of profitable places under the crown, created within a certain time ; and a bill to disable revenue

officers from voting at elections. To these was added a resolution condemnatory of the practice of granting to absentees all the high and profitable offices and reverions to office in the kingdom.* The promptitude, the energy, and the skill with which Grattan acted at this period were conspicuous. It is true that the measures proposed by him and his friends were in themselves of secondary importance. They indicated the direction of his spirit, not the extent of his convictions, and were palliatives, not remedies, for the distresses of his country. It is also true that his success was slight, but it was not the less wonderful under all the circumstances of the times. In every instance, the principles for which he contended were afterwards affirmed by different enactments, and within a short period. The Absentee Bill, the Place Bill, and the Pension Bill were rejected in 1792, and carried in 1793. That interval, and the alterations introduced into them, sufficed to impair their efficacy, and diminish the small remains of public confidence in the progress of useful reform that lingered in the country. Upon another, and with him a favourite subject of motion, tithes, Grattan displayed, at this juncture, all the vigour of his ardent powers, an enlarged philosophy, and the fullness of accomplished charity. In these he anticipated the wisdom and the humanity of the age, rendering the speeches in which he propounded them imperishable monuments of his genius, and the worthlessness of the contemporaries by whom they were so little regarded.

The situation of Ireland was now more critical than ever. There had grown up a wealthy and enlightened class. Limited as had been the field laid open to industry and enterprise, much had been acquired, and a feeling prevailed that the country possessed resources and the power for acquiring still more. Unfortunately for both divisions of the empire, the

* The number and value of the absentee sinecures, and the manner in which they were made the property of particular families, may be roughly estimated by an example or two. The offices of Prothonotaries, Clerk of the Crown, Keeper and Filacer of the King's Bench, were held by Lord Henry and Lord Robert Seymour Conway, while the Chief Remembrancership of the Court of Exchequer was held by the Wellesley family —the whole producing about £50,000 a year.

local heads of the government in Dublin had determined to disgust the Irish with their independent parliament. While difficulties and dangers were daily augmenting in number and sharpness, but one object seemed to be kept steadily in view by them—the old degrading object of prostrating every thing Irish to the arbitrary rule of the ill-qualified strangers who executed the pleasure of the English ministry. The volunteers had dwindled into insignificance, but the government continued so pregnant with abuses, and so deaf to the public clamour, that a common impulse towards some new and more effective association for the redress of grievances became general.

The newly formed republic across the Atlantic—torn by principle and valour from the dominion of England—was composing her institutions amidst the admiration of the civilized world; the French Revolution was proceeding with rapid strides, and apparently opening to the sanguine hopes and warm hearts of all liberal-minded men the dawn of a free and happy era, soon lost amidst the horrors of universal destruction; and Irishmen from every school of reform, and all the varying shades of political discontent, were anxiously pressing forward to mark their sense of Irish grievances, and to apply each his panacea to the national disease. The Whigs led the way in this series of popular movements. Following the example of their party in England, they had instituted, in the year 1789, and at the instance of Lord Charlemont, the Whig Club, composed of the most distinguished men in the country. This was essentially an aristocratic and exclusive body, representing, in an eminent and imposing degree, the rank, property, and talent of the liberal politicians in their own class of society. The members addressed themselves with an accomplished power, worthy of their station and their fame, to prepare their fellow-countrymen for the arduous contest now fast approaching.* But they sought to lead, while the spirit of

* The public declaration of the Whig Club furnished an eloquent exposition of the opinions of its own members on the political condition and requirements of the country:—

"Resolved, that the great object of this society is the constitution of

the era demanded cordial unanimity and equal co-operation between all orders of the oppressed, and from every advocate of

the realm, as settled by the Revolution in Great Britain and Ireland in 1688, and re-established in Ireland 1782.

" That we will support and maintain, as a principal object and fundamental part of the constitution, the ' sacred rights of the people ; ' and above all, that great indispensable right of the subjects of this realm to be free from, and independent on, the authority of any parliament or legislature whatsoever, save only the parliament of Ireland ; that is to say, the king of Ireland and the lords and commons of this realm.

" We therefore protest against and abjure, as illegal and criminal, a doctrine, which, on a late occasion, has been advanced, ' that the parliament of another country had, in the appointment of a regent over this realm, a legislative authority.'

" We declare that the parliament of Ireland, that is to say, ' the king of Ireland, and the lords and commons thereof,' are the only legislature of this realm.

" And we further declare, that as far as in us lies, we will endeavour to preserve to this country, in all times to come, a parliament of her own, residing within this realm, and exclusively invested with all parliamentary privileges and powers.

" That we will for ever support and maintain the constitutional rights and dignity of the imperial crown of Ireland ; and we do abjure, as illegal and criminal, a doctrine lately advanced, ' that his majesty legislates in Ireland as king of Great Britain ; ' inasmuch as said doctrine is not founded on our laws, militates against our constitution, affects to depose the king of Ireland, and tends to dissolve the principles of our allegiance and our liberty.

" The best and surest method of preserving the constitutional rights of the crown, is to preserve and transmit the same in succession in the house of Brunswick.

" That we shall ever adhere to the principles which directed the lords and commons of Ireland, when, on a late melancholy occasion, they addressed his royal highness the Prince of Wales to take on himself, during his royal father's indisposition, the administration of affairs, free from occasional and unconstitutional restrictions ; such restrictions being more calculated to answer the views of ambition than to preserve liberty, or to promote the solid interests of the empire.

" That we shall ever maintain and vindicate the principle and justice which actuated our parliament, when, on behalf of the people of this realm, they did impose a public and merited censure on his excellency the marquis of Buckingham, for his ill-advised, unwarranted, and unconstitutional conduct.

" That we will ever maintain, as sacred and indissoluble, our connection with Great Britain, being in our opinion indispensably necessary for the freedom of this kingdom in particular, and for the freedom, strength and prosperity of the empire in general.

" We have set forth the principles and objects of the Whig Club ; and we have formed this society, because we apprehend some of those objects are in danger.

" The rights of the people of Ireland have been publicly and ministerially questioned by the present chief governor.

reform. The different sections omitted in the composition of the Whig Club proceeded, ere long, to resolve themselves into separate communities. In the summer of the year 1791, the

"A right in the parliament of another kingdom to make laws for this kingdom, in the case of a regency, has been by the ministers of the crown in Ireland advanced and defended.

"The competency of the two houses of the Irish parliament, on a late occasion, has been denied.

"The legislative capacity of the king of Ireland has been denied, and the great seal of another country held up as a substitute for the imperial crown of this realm.

"The undue influence of the crown over both houses of parliament has been of late beyond all example increased.

"A pension bill has been rejected by the influence of the present ministers of Ireland.

"A place bill has been rejected by the same influence.

"A bill for the better securing the freedom of election, by disqualifying revenue officers from voting for members to serve in parliament, has been rejected by the same influence.

"The present extravagant, ineffectual, and unconstitutional police of the city of Dublin, has been continued and patronized by the same influence. All proceedings in parliament to remove the grievance or censure the abuse, have been defeated by the same influence.

"The expediency of combating by corruption a constitutional majority in parliament, has been publicly avowed, and the principle so avowed, has been in part carried into execution.

"Honours, as we apprehend, have been sold, and the money deposited for the purpose of purchasing seats in the Commons, for the dependants of administration, in order to procure for the minister a majority in parliament. For the same corrupt purpose, useless offices have been created or revived.

"Boards for the same unconstitutional and venal purpose have been divided; sinecure offices split to multiply the number of commissioners, for no other purpose than to increase the influence of the minister, and gratify the individual.

"For the same venal purpose, and with as little colour or pretence, salaries have been augmented, to increase the parliamentary influence of the minister at the expence of the nation.

"A plan of intimidation has aided and abetted the views of corruption; and members of parliament have, by the minister, been expressly threatened with being made "the victims of their votes," or have been displaced, for no reason or pretence whatever, except their constitutional conduct in parliament.

"That we apprehend these proceedings and principles avow a design to govern this country unconstitutionally, and must, if successful, render the minister absolute in the parliament of Ireland, by corruption.

"That this danger is the more to be apprehended, because there is no fixed or adequate responsibility in the situations of the persons who direct the affairs of this country; and the minister of Ireland, however culpable, is but too likely to elude public justice.

"That to redress, as far as in us lies, these grievances, we have formed this society."

plan of the first Society of United Irishmen was published in Belfast. Within the same month, the Roman Catholics issued a declaration of their tenets and claims. The United Irishmen of Dublin were formed in the following month of November. In 1792, the Catholic petition having been rejected in the House of Commons by an overwhelming majority of 208 votes to 23, the Catholics chose delegates from each district throughout the kingdom, who congregated in Dublin before the close of the year, and began to deliberate upon measures of relief with all the solemnity of parliamentary forms.* At this moment, a new military force, the Irish National Guard, was arrayed and disciplined in a green uniform, with the badge of an uncrowned harp; while the duke of Leinster and many moderate members of the opposition enrolled themselves into a new society, called the Friends of the Constitution, Liberty, and Peace; pledged to promote, by all lawful means, a radical and effectual reform in the representation of the people in parliament, including persons of all religious persuasions.

The different bodies thus formed, were animated and consolidated by the obstinate adherence of the government to established abuses, and the exhibition of new arts to increase the amount of the public burdens, and the extent of the public corruption. Notice has already been taken of the still expanding profligacy of ministers in 1790. The terms have been quoted, in which their conduct was denounced by Mr. Grattan. They had appointed two additional commissioners of revenue, and given additional salaries to four officers of the ordnance; they had created fourteen new parliamentary places, and granted eight or nine parliamentary pensions—all unnecessarily, and in the course of twelve months. These were acts, as the orator well observed, importing their own criminality, and bespeaking a ministry who had not only attempted to undermine the constitution, but who had actually broken the laws. The public odium so naturally excited by

* They held their meetings at Taylors' Hall, in Back-lane, Dublin, whence the nickname of the Back-lane Parliament.

these shameless practices, was still further extended by a contemptuous rejection, session after session, of the liberal proposals already referred to,—by an affront offered to Lord Charlemont, which he resented by resigning the honorary post of governor of the county of Armagh,—and by such paltry acts as that of dividing the office of weighmaster of Cork into three parts, for the purpose of still further adding to the influence of government in the House of Commons, by giving them to members. The climax may be said to have been reached in 1793, when the state of the parliamentary representation was fully exposed. The history of the Irish House of Commons—as profligate, impotent, and unenviable a public body as ever existed, saving always a very few splendid exceptions—and the enormous amount of public malversation and private impurity produced by its constitution, are well described in the speeches delivered upon this occasion, particularly by Grattan, and William, afterwards Lord, Ponsonby. During eighty-five years out of the preceding century, no parliament whatever had sat. The house contained 300 members, of whom 64 were credited to 32 counties ; 14 to 7 cities ; and 220 to 110 boroughs ; but the actual choice of 219 members was held to be in the hands of patrons, while only 81 were within the reach of the people. Two hundred, moreover, of the 219 patron-members were sent into the house according to the pleasure of 100 individuals, each of whom, therefore, might be said to have had two representatives of his personal interests in the councils of the nation. It was further calculated that 50 out of the 200 were the nominees of 10 persons—each of whom would have had five representatives. The rental of Ireland, at this time, was estimated at six millions sterling a year ; and the rental of the 200 persons who contributed these 200 members to the House of Commons, averaged £4,000 a year. All this it was proposed to correct and purify ; but the effort was unavailing.

The temper of the age as much as the desperate position of the country no longer permitted either Mr. Grattan or the Whig Club to lead the people. The English minister was fast

outstripping the bounds within which a constitutional resistance to misgovernment is to be maintained. The French revolution, as already observed, had lit up in the minds of men a wild and consuming ardor for liberty, which had no sooner touched the inflammable sense of degradation long smothered in the bosoms of the Irish, than it spread with uncontrollable rapidity. Their apprehension of this fast growing mischief threw the English ministry suddenly into a new mood of conciliation, involving an unexpected series of inconsistent, imperfect, and unsatisfactory measures—which just granted enough to vindicate past disaffection, and withheld more than enough to provoke it for the future.

1793 was thus a year of singular events. The parliamentary session began in the month of January with a speech from the earl of Westmoreland, in which, after lamenting the prevailing discontent of the people, he invited both houses to take into consideration such measures as would cement and strengthen all parties in supporting the constitution. Every bill brought forward for this purpose was a triumph to the opposition—a signal tribute to the force of public opinion, and a direct and unequivocal confession that the claims so often and so energetically put forward, had been reasonable, just, and such as ought to have been granted long before. With the single exception of parliamentary reform, the different questions mooted by the opposition in the last session, were now revived with the consent of the crown, and made subjects of positive legislation. A place bill passed, and the pension list, that oldest and most fruitful source of corruption, was limited to £80,000 a year. It was also agreed that no future pension should be granted to any person (members of the royal family excepted) for more than £1,200 a year. The king surrendered his hereditary revenue, and received in exchange a fixed civil list, which was not to exceed £225,000 a year. But though something was yielded on each account, full relief was not given in one. By thus paltering with all great interests, and rescuing none from the impending danger, the government and the parliament afforded the last remaining

proof which it was in their power to offer of extreme vacillation, and their utter incompetence to deal efficiently with the affairs of the nation. The most mistaken and injurious of these penurious experiments upon the excited temper of the age, was the narrowminded attempt to conciliate the attachment of the Roman Catholics by the act, 33 Geo. III. c. 21, better known as the Forty Shilling Freeholders' Act.* Mr. Grattan had wisely called upon the ministers to give liberally, if they gave at all, and to place the whole body of Roman Catholics upon an equal footing with all other dissenters from the established church; but instead of admitting to political power the nobility and gentry of that persuasion, the men of wealth, independence, and information, the government conferred the elective franchise upon the poor and ignorant peasant, making his wretched dependance upon the landed oligarchy still more slavish, and adding new instruments of oppression and corruption to that inveterate, and overbearing influence in the state which had always been a principal cause of agrarian insubordination and national distress.†

* This instalment of relief had been preceded by the 32 Geo. III. c. 21, which admitted Roman Catholics to the bar, permitted them to practise as attorneyes, allowed them to teach schools, and suffered Protestant barristers to marry Roman Catholic wives, &c.

† A subsequent part of this work will be the proper place to expose the disastrous effects produced by this law upon the social condition of the Irish peasant. As an instrument of party power and class legislation, it pleased its authors, having proved, for some years, an apt invention, and realized the ends which it was designed to bring about. In point of fact, so long as the great landlords succeeded in keeping their tenants to themselves, they held in their own hands the election of members of parliament. When, however, in process of time, the religious feelings of the voter came to be worked upon, this unprincipled franchise was turned against its patrons, and became the means of breaking down their tyranny. All this appears to have been clearly foreseen when the law was first made. Sir Laurence Parsons, afterwards earl of Rosse, then said:—"There never was a more important moment. Public expectation is wound to the highest; we must give what will gratify, but will not destroy; an error now may bring on years of calamity. * * * Some, I know, think that these inferior Catholics would be so dependent upon their landlords, who are mostly Protestants, that they might be admitted to the franchise without any danger. To this I say, that, though they might vote with their landlords, they might also vote against them; interest might lead them one way, but bigotry might lead them another. * * * By giving franchise to the inferior Catholics what do you do? You give the franchise to a body of men in

Having rendered homage to the patriotism of the opposition, by thus resorting to a lame adoption of their principal recommendations, the government turned quickly, and obtained with ease, additional powers to repress the still active spirit of discontent amongst the public. They prepared and carried bills for preventing the sale and use of arms and gunpowder,—for increasing the regular army from 12,000 to 17,000 men,—for levying a militia of 16,000 men,—and for prohibiting the election or appointment of conventions or other assemblies under the pretence of petitioning the crown or parliament.

The complete failure of the ill-digested measures of half satisfaction passed in 1793, became apparent as soon as they were enrolled amongst the statutes of the realm. They neither gratified the Catholics nor the reformers, and they strengthened the ministry in no respect. The little that was granted only served to whet the desire to gain the much that was still withheld. Party dissensions and popular collisions continued

great poverty and in great ignorance—bigotted to their sect and their altars—repelled by ancient prejudices from you, and at least four times the number of you. You propose to give them the elective franchise, by which they will almost, in every county in the three provinces out of the four, be the majority of electors, controlling you, resisting and irresistible. But still, some men think that the inferior Catholics would not abuse this power. I do not say it is certain that they would; neither can you say it is certain that they would not; and this is a case in which nothing should be left to uncertainty. Suppose you gave the inferior Catholics the franchise, and that they should meet in all their parishes to determine the exercise of it, and that they should nominate in their chapels their representatives to parliament, what would there be to stop them? The power of their landlord might do much, but the power of religion might do much more. How much might these people be wrought upon by their priests at their altars, working upon their superstition and poverty? How easily might they be persuaded that their temporal as well as their eternal felicity depended upon their uniting together in the exercise of their franchise! * * * In short, there never was a measure pretending to be a great one, more narrowly conceived than the present bill. It courts the Catholic rabble, and insults the Catholic gentry. It gives power to those who are ignorant, and therefore dangerous, and withholds it from those who are enlightened, and therefore safe. It gives equal powers with the Protestants to the lower class of Catholics, who are the most numerous, and thereby gives them a superiority, and it does not give equal powers to the upper class, who are less numerous than you, and who could, therefore, have had no superiority—that is, it does the very reverse of what it ought to do."

to prevail. The united Irishmen invited the volunteers to resume effective service ; an attempt was made to act upon the invitation, but the government dispersed the few who ventured to meet, by a decisive proclamation and the demonstration of military force. In the midst of these proceedings the year 1794 witnessed the conviction of Mr. Hamilton Rowan for a seditious libel, and his subsequent escape from prison to France under the suspicion of a much graver offence. About the same time, the Rev. Mr. Jackson,* an English Protestant clergyman, who had recently arrived in Dublin from Paris, was committed to gaol upon a charge of high treason. Agrarian turbulence and sectarian contentions continued to increase ; the country, though ruled by a coercive policy, offered no signs of returning order or growing improvement ; and the earl of Westmoreland having failed to inspire confidence in the middle, or to restore tranquillity amongst the lower classes, rendered his removal from office unavoidable.

The following year, 1795, was one of the highest expectation and profound disappointment. An important change in the English cabinet led to a brief interval of buoyant rejoicing amongst all men of liberal politics in Ireland. Mr. Pitt having brought over to his ministry the duke of Portland, Earl Fitzwilliam, and the other members of the Rockingham section of the English Whigs, seems to have felt that the season had at length arrived for substantially improving the condition of Ireland. The plans of his new colleagues for the welfare of that country had often been detailed, and were universally known. When the earl of Fitzwilliam's appointment to the lord lieutenancy was announced, confidence took possession of the public mind, and the conviction became ge-

* This unfortunate emissary saved himself from an ignominious death upon the scaffold by taking poison : he actually expired in the dock. Before he proceeded to Ireland he divulged his intentions to a London attorney, named Cockayne : this man betrayed the plot to Mr. Pitt, who despatched him to Dublin, as an accomplice. As soon as Jackson had fully committed himself, Cockayne gave the necessary information to the Irish government, and the officers of justice cut short his career.

neral that a full and complete measure of parliamentary reform would be quickly acquiesced in, and that a total emancipation of the Roman Catholics from civil and political disabilities would no longer be denied.

But these visions of a bright and prosperous future were soon dispelled. Mr. Pitt gave a second proof of his want of firmness and consistency in his government of Ireland, while he raised another large sum of money from that country upon the credit of a boon which he never conferred. As in the year 1785, he had approved and then abandoned the commercial propositions of Mr. Foster and Mr. Orde, gaining additional taxes to the amount of £140,000, pending the consideration of his specious overtures ; so in 1795 he procured £1,700,000 by first encouraging and then disappointing a general expectation that power should be entrusted to the hands of those who would use it freely for the public good. After calling over to England, and repeatedly consulting, the leaders of the opposition, Mr. Grattan and Mr. Ponsonby, the new arrangements appeared to have been definitively settled, upon mature consideration, and to the satisfaction of all parties engaged in them. Accordingly Earl Fitzwilliam took possession of his government, Jan. 4, 1795, announcing that it would be his duty to call to his council men distinguished by their wisdom, their integrity, and their talents, and possessing the confidence of the people. Assisted by their advice, he proposed to effect a full and cordial union of all his majesty's subjects, as the surest means of securing their happiness and placing the strength and prosperity of the nation upon a solid basis.

The governing oligarchy at this juncture was led by the Beresfords. Earl Fitzwilliam found this family rioting in emoluments greater than had ever before been accumulated by one branch of the nobility ; and Mr. Beresford, their political head, possessed of an extent of power exceeding that of the lord lieutenant. This gentleman had swayed every preceding lord lieutenant, from Lord Townshend to the earl of West-

moreland. Earl Fitzwilliam signalled the commencement of his viceroyalty by dismissing Mr. Beresford, and in less than three months was himself recalled.

This summary transaction was followed by violent demonstrations of grief and indignation, and it must be admitted that circumstances justified all the resentment displayed. The popular party denounced with vehemence the duplicity practised against them. The malversations in office had long been so gross and notorious,—the progress of corruption so monstrous,—the unpopularity of the Beresfords and their colleagues, as the authors and abettors of every species of abuse, peculation, and oppression, had been so general,—that the prospect of a total change in the management of affairs, and the introduction of new men and a purer system, seem to have acted like so many charms—to have instantaneously refreshed the public mind, and restored it to a healthy tone of confidence and strength. The country, it was believed, was no longer to be enthralled ; the new ministers were empowered to reduce their well known professions into practice ; the parliament was to be reformed ; the Catholics were to be emancipated ; and the interests of Ireland were to be forwarded by a united ministry and legislature, secure alike of popular support and the approbation of the crown. Full of this idea of overflowing good fortune, the Irish were invited to aid the English minister in carrying on the war in which he was engaged, and the Commons echoing the public voice in his favour, voted him extraordinary supplies to the amount of £1,700,000.

At this point, however, the mellow sunshine of the political atmosphere became suddenly overclouded. Mr. Pitt was known to have expostulated with the new viceroy, and to have remonstrated against his proceedings. In the end, as Sir Laurence Parsons observed, the country was deprived at a most critical juncture, “ of the auspices of a nobleman who came the harbinger and the hostage of her political salvation, and to whom the people looked up with confidence—after voting the enormous supply of £1,700,000 to save, if

possible, the empire from destruction. The great and salutary measures of reform, retrenchment, and responsibility vanished,—the Catholics instead of the accomplishment of their hopes had the gates of the castle slapped in their faces, and were refused the blessings of the constitution,—Mr. Pitt, not satisfied with having involved the empire in a disastrous war, intended to complete the mischief by risking the internal peace of Ireland, making the friends of that country the dupes of his fraud and artifice, and swindling the nation out of £1,700,000 to support the war, on the faith of measures which he intended should be refused.” *

From the period of Earl Fitzwilliam’s recal in the year 1795, to the Union in 1800, no form of constitutional government can be said to have existed in Ireland. The stoudest hearts trembled for the peace of the country when the old task-masters returned in triumph to the castle of Dublin. They soon showed that to whatever lengths the popular disaffection might extend, their faction was prepared to go farther still. Violence upon the side of the people was to be encountered

* All the writers of this period dwell more or less emphatically upon the charge of duplicity brought against Mr. Pitt for allowing Earl Fitzwilliam to believe that he was supported by the cabinet in his views of Catholic emancipation. Looking at all the circumstances, it is almost impossible to say that the conduct of the prime minister was not highly censurable. Putting the best construction upon it which the ascertained facts will admit of, he must be censured either as having intended to deceive his lord lieutenant, or to have been content that a very dangerous and unbecoming experiment should be tried. Unfortunately on most occasions of this kind, the witnesses who could best settle the points in dispute are those who either do not come forward, or only communicate information indirectly. Here Mr. Pitt does not speak himself, but the earl of Westmorland asserts for him in the House of Lords, that Earl Fitzwilliam had no authority whatever from ministers in England for taking the steps he did on the Catholic question—they were taken not only without their authority, but with their positive disapprobation. On the other hand, we find the earl writing to Lord Carlisle, that he never would have undertaken the government, if the duke of Portland and Mr. Pitt had not concurred with him in the policy of relieving the Catholics from every remaining disqualification. On the same side, we have Mr. Grattan positively affirming, that being informed that the ministers sent for him and his friends to adopt their measures, he distinctly informed them that Catholic emancipation was one of them. It was upon this faith that Mr. Grattan moved the address in answer to the lord lieutenant’s speech at the opening of the session.

and mastered by more excessive violence upon the part of the government. We have thus to trace under the administration of the earl of Camden, the repeal, in quick succession, of the several laws which protected liberty, and guaranteed the safety of individuals and the augmentation of property. In their stead we behold the severest measures enacted by which despotism could be fortified, and a government of military violence enforced. The Habeas Corpus Act is suspended ; civil oppression and agrarian outrage proceed at rival paces ; insurrection and indemnity bills are hurried through parliament ; increased discontent seeks a vent in partial insurrection ; and continued insurrection expands into wide-spread and desperate rebellion. Foreign invasions take place, and late in the struggle, the British army, realising the description of Sir R. Abercromby, having proved formidable to every one but the enemy, flies before a forlorn hope of Frenchmen. In vain had Grattan invoked freedom and conciliation ;—in vain proclaimed every other policy contemptible as well as cruel ;—in vain propounded the generous truth that all the people should instantly embrace, and the ministers should greatly emancipate. In 1797, the expedition under General Hoche, after having been defeated by the hostile elements, hung over Bantry Bay and returned to Brest ; several persons were charged with treason ; lenient measures were earnestly recommended in the parliaments of England as well as of Ireland, and rejected in both ; the conspiracy of the united Irishmen was published by authority ; Mr. Grattan, Mr. Ponsonby, Mr. Curran and others,—now a small but firm band,—made a last effort to defend the rights of their country by moving the standard questions of parliamentary reform and Catholic emancipation. They failed in them, and withdrew from parliament.* Ireland was now

* The address in which Mr. Grattan now took leave of his constituents, and the Whig-club petition, which he drew up, to the king, describing the recent events and the consequent state of the country, are documents too long to be inserted here, but every way entitled to the attention of those who would understand the true nature of the contest carried on between the ministers of this period, and the Irish liberal politicians. For power of statement, for vigorous and affecting eloquence, for beautiful noble composition, these two pieces are and beyond all measure admirable.

surrendered to military violence, executed by 80,000 furious soldiers.

Although much has been written of the rebellion of 1798, our information is confused and indistinct of the sources from which it emanated, and the objects to which it was directed. It remains to this day nearly as profound a mystery as it appeared at the moment of its first explosion. The organization has been fully detailed, and the opinions of some of its leaders have been explicitly recorded; but the real aim of the multitude who took the field on this occasion in scattered masses has never been clearly explained. Looking at the number, extent, and gallantry of the popular operations, we are tempted to recognise a general attempt to revolutionize the country; but upon examining separately the persons who were engaged, and the events which took place, we fail to detect the certain characteristics of a national conspiracy. That identity of purpose,—that common interest and understanding,—that universal sympathy and agreement upon certain rallying points, which constitute the firm bonds of union, and knit together all great rebellions, are wanting here. There is no hero—no battle-cry—not even a watchword. We have before us a dark and irregular outline,—outbreaks of violence, crime, and bloodshed; but no settled ulterior plan, no fixed goal, no fully developed movement. Nearly a million of men may have taken the oath, and risked their lives at the impulse of the society, but they neither appear to have known the principal leaders,—to have adopted their particular principles,—nor to have agreed amongst themselves what grievances they would redress, or what franchises they would secure. Both the persons who took part in the encounter and the opinions entertained by them, present a heap of contradictions and incongruities. The confederation originated with the Protestants and Presbyterians in the North; the battles were fought by the Roman Catholic peasants in the South. Wolfe Tone, Napper Tandy, and Lord Edward Fitzgerald were republicans; but there is nothing to show that a republican form of government was desired by the courageous hordes who turned out, pike in hand, and maintained a series of running fights for

nearly a year with the king's troops. By them the example of France, the great cotemporary incentive to popular commotion and political change, was hardly known, and certainly not understood. What, then, it may be asked, was the rebellion of 1798?—what produced it?—what sustained it?—what was sought by it?

The true answer to these questions will be readily given by those who have studied the history of the country attentively, and made themselves correctly acquainted with the condition of the inhabitants. This rebellion was the general result of intolerable misgovernment. Ireland, always the land of oppression, had always been the congenial soil of conspiracy. Where wrongs had been continually borne, and transmitted for ages from father to son, like so many heir-looms of vengeance, private hostile combinations became habitual in the suffering class. There are, moreover, natural qualities in the constitution of his character, which particularly dispose the Irishman to indulge in associations of this kind. Loving enterprise and mystery, he fed his courage and his imagination with these indulgences, while he gratified his desire of throwing off, and taking satisfaction for, the degradation by which his pride had so long been wounded. His position was surrounded by other circumstances decidedly favourable to these predispositions. For a long term of years—in truth, for preceding centuries—society in Ireland had never been found without a class of persons who possessed and deserved, not alone the commiseration, but the respect of the community upon the skirts of which they hung and barely subsisted. These were persons who had been wronged in due course of law, or pauperized by the political misdeeds of their forefathers. There was always, therefore, a period at which the unsightly object of unmerited suffering, on an extended scale, was present to humane and right-minded men. There followed, of course, sympathy for the sufferer, and often pity for the violator of the law, who was believed to have been goaded into violence by his sufferings. These feelings lit up a strong flame in many bosoms which served to point the way to those retired haunts in which the

oath of the secret society was administered at midnight, and the vain hope of better days for Ireland was made the spell that led to deeper sufferings than had been endured before.

Innumerable provocations and temptations had thus poured their influence together, in order to accustom the Irishman to habits of conspiring. He could scarcely stir or speak without receiving a hint to consult for the redress of his wrongs, or the relief of his misfortunes. Secret combination and midnight conference thus became ordinary avocations, and were prized as the only form in which consolation or enjoyment were admitted to his destitution. In this way of life the rebellion of 1798 was fostered, and attained shape and strength. It was presented to old customs, and wearing a familiar guise was adopted inconsiderately and followed blindly. There was in the masses the sense of oppression—the loud outcry constantly raised, and never answered meetly—the passion for revenge, wildness and despair. These were its elements; but they were not combined with any clear or positive design amongst any considerable portion of conspirators to pull the Irish crown from the head of King Geo. III., or to substitute another form of government in the place of that which his ministers and peers had imposed upon them. We behold a general outburst for the purpose of throwing off a galling yoke, but no unanimity of opinion, and scarcely any concert as to the nature of the institutions which it would be proper to frame in the event of success.

One of our shortest accounts of the composition and designs of the Society of United Irishmen, is furnished by the Committee of the House of Lords in 1797. We are thus informed that—

“ The system was first represented to be for purely civil or political purposes. The inferior societies, at their original institution, consisted each of thirty-six members, afterwards reduced to twelve; these twelve chose a secretary and treasurer; and the secretaries of five of these societies formed what was called a lower baronial committee, which had the immediate direction and superintendence of the five societies who thus contributed to its constitution. From each lower baronial committee, thus constituted, one member was delegated to an upper baronial committee, which in like manner assumed and exercised the superintendence and

direction of all the lower baronial committees in the several counties. The next superior committees were, in populous towns, distinguished by the name of district committees, and in counties by the name of county committees, and were composed of members delegated by the upper baronials. Each upper baronial committee delegated one of its members to the district or county committee, and these district or county committees had the superintendence and direction of all the upper baronials, who contributed to their institution. Having thus organised the several counties and populous towns, a subordinate directory was erected in each of the four provinces, composed of two members, or three, according to the extent and population of the districts which they represented, and were delegated to a provincial committee, which had the immediate direction and superintendence of the several county and district committees in each of the four provinces; and a general executive directory, composed of five persons, was elected by the provincial directories; but the election was so managed that none but the secretaries of the provincials knew on whom the election fell. It was made by ballot, but not reported to the electors; the appointment was notified only to those on whom the election devolved, and the executive directory, thus composed, assumed and exercised the supreme and uncontrolled command of the whole body of the union.

"The manner of communicating the orders issued by the executive directory was peculiarly calculated to baffle detection. One member of the executive alone communicated with one member of each provincial committee or directory; the order was transmitted by him to the secretary of each county or district committee in his province; the secretaries of the county and district committees communicated with the secretaries of the upper baronials in each county; they communicated with the secretaries of the lower baronial committees, who gave the orders to the secretaries of each subordinate committee, by whom it was given to the several inferior members of the union.

"The leaders having completed their system in the province of Ulster, so early as the 10th of May, 1795, and having made considerable progress in establishing it in the autumn and winter of 1796, in the province of Leinster, proceeded at that period to convert it into a military shape and form, for the undisguised project of rebellion; this was distinctly acknowledged by Arthur O'Connor, William James M'Nevin, Thomas Addis Emmet, and Oliver Bond, who confessed themselves to have been leading and active members of this conspiracy, as will appear more distinctly from the appendix to this report. From the confessions of these persons, it appears that the military organization, as they termed it was grafted on the civil. The secretary of each subordinate society composed of twelve, was appointed their petty or non-commissioned officer; the delegate of five societies to a lower baronial committee, was com-

monly appointed captain of a company composed of the five societies who had so delegated him, and who made up the number of sixty privates ; and the delegate of ten lower baronials to the upper or district committee, was commonly appointed colonel of a battalion, which was thus composed of six hundred men. The colonels of battalions in each county sent the names of three persons to the executive directory of the union, one of whom was appointed by them adjutant general of the county, whose duty it was to receive and communicate military orders from the executive to the colonels of battalions, and in general to act as officers of the revolutionary staff. In addition to this establishment, it appears that a military committee was appointed by the executive directory to prepare a regular plan for assisting a French army, if any such should make a landing, by directing the national military force, as it was called, to co-operate with them ; or to form a regular plan of insurrection, in case it should be ordered, without waiting for French assistance : and it appears to your committee, that a regular and digested plan of insurrection was actually formed and reduced to writing in April 1797, which was given up, for that time only, from the representations of the executive directory of the union, that speedy and effectual assistance was promised from France. For the purpose of arming this body, orders were given to the Irish directory that every member of the union who had the means, should provide himself with fire arms and ammunition ; and that such persons whose means would not afford any other weapons should provide themselves with pikes ; which order appeared to your committee to have been executed in a very great extent throughout the provinces of Ulster, Leinster, and Munster. In the province of Connaught the emissaries of the union seem not to have been enabled to proceed farther in their system of treason than by administering oaths to the people : their farther progress seems to have been obstructed by the vigorous exertions of the executive government, when rebellion broke forth in acts of open hostility. It appears to your committee, that the directory of the union, having thus established a revolutionary government in themselves over a great body of the people, issued an order forbidding the use of any article of consumption liable to the excise duties ; which order was stated to your committee by the aforesaid persons, who had been members of the republican directory, to have been generally and implicitly obeyed ; and it further appeared to your committee, from the testimony of the same persons, or some of them, that an order had also been issued by the same directory to stop the currency of bank notes, and to forbid the purchase of quit rents payable to the crown, which, by an act of this session, have been vested in the lords commissioners of the treasury, to be sold for the service of the current year ; with a threat on the part of the directory, that such a sale would be disallowed at the approaching revolution, as an anticipation of its resources."

This, it must be confessed, was a scheme contrived with skill and effect. It displayed an intimate knowledge of the Irish character, and organized a tremendous power. The forms adopted were exactly suited to the dispositions of the people. The frequent meetings, the reserve of the principals, and the concealment of the head, harmonized at once with the popular love of action and mystery, and allowed each member to feed his imagination with the hope that the real object of the combination was the redress of the particular grievance upon which his own heart was set. But, notwithstanding all the facilities and attractions which were offered by it for binding the people together, the design was only calculated to realize that species of abortive rebellion to which it actually gave birth. The arrangements were infinite, and as plastic as could be desired; the connecting links were subtly framed and easily commanded; the channels were ingeniously provided for pouring the blood of active existence through the whole great framework;—but the vivifying spirit, the electricity of some directing genius to animate the whole, to act upon every part, and excite a reciprocating action in each, was altogether wanting. It was a monster of infinite animal powers—all legs and arms—but without the intelligence, or the soul to move the vast machine to greatness or to good.

The tame reception uniformly given to the French evinces in the strongest manner the total absence of any common understanding between the originators and heads of the society, and the masses who composed its body. There were two French invasions, or rather attempts at invasion; the first under Hoche, the second under Humbert—the small squadron, with the high-spirited but unfortunate Wolfe Tone on board, was an aid to Humbert, and not a separate expedition. In each of these instances, the people proved that they were neither anxious nor prepared for a republic, or a French alliance: their support of their foreign friends was desultory and feeble. As little was it Parliamentary Reform or Catholic Emancipation that stirred them. These were questions warmly desired in the middle class, but not cared for in the lower: an idea of carrying one or the other by force was never bruited. Whence,

then, was elicited the concealed fire that lit up this vast conflagration? From agrarian oppression,—from the wanton tyranny of landlords,—from the daily injuries inflicted upon the peasantry. There lay the strong and active aliments that fed the rebellion and communicated to its ravages the most daring spirit. The peasantry of Kildare and Wexford understood nothing of the political innovations for which Lord Edward Fitzgerald, Mr. Wolfe Tone, the brothers Sheares, and so many others lost their lives. The knowledge of the peasantry was of a very different kind—it moved from a far deeper seat, and possessed more invigorating qualities. Each man of them carried in his breast the profound and embittering conviction that he had been reared as one of an inferior race of men,—that he had always been goaded by the contumelies and exactions which are never launched but against a degraded caste,—that he had lived uniformly a life of incessant toil, linked with the most miserable poverty. This was the knowledge that made him bound forward with joy to avail himself of an opportunity of striking a manly blow to elevate his abject condition, and vindicate in his person the rights of suffering humanity. If it had not been for all this, the rebellion would have expired when its leaders were thrown into prison and led to the gallows. Subsequently to those events, however, came the period of its fiercest outbreak: the body did not move until the head had been cut off. A more conclusive proof could not have been afforded to show how ill-informed were the people as to who their leaders were, or what were the particular principles for which they had been instigated to fight.

The government, however, appear to have been well instructed in all these respects. The cabinet in London, as well as the privy council in Dublin, had long been informed of the existence and the nature of the conspiracy. When they permitted it to proceed, did they not desire that it should ripen? Jackson's mission from the French republicans to the disaffected in Dublin, was executed with the privity of the home office in Whitehall; and Lord Clare affected to complain, in 1798, that the conspirators had been left undisturbed for three years, in despite of his remonstrances. The admissions made upon both

sides of the House of Commons, when the treason was formally proclaimed, tended still further to explain the general understanding that prevailed as to the true origin of the evil. By one party it was avowed that disaffection pervaded the whole kingdom, and could not be suppressed by ordinary means of coercion. The house was told that disorganization had been produced by general misgovernment, and that the retributive justice of mere punishment for actual excesses could neither check the disorder, nor stop up the sources from which it flowed. Mr. Secretary Pelham echoed this view of the case, apologizing not only for the mass of the people generally, but for several United Irishmen whom he represented as being much less criminal than the rest. Many amongst them, he said, had been misled by specious pretexts. Parliamentary reform, he observed, especially during the French Revolution, must prove a very questionable topic for agitation, both in its motive and tendency. Assemblies of men, which would be innocent, and therefore lawful in times of tranquillity, might, in the present crisis, assume a far different character; and in this way he did not hesitate to confess that many well-disposed persons had continued to be members of the confederacy.

Had the mischief been dealt with in the spirit of these observations, the history of the kingdom would have escaped the lasting disgrace with which a series of flagitious enormities has blackened its pages. Mr. Pelham was succeeded in his office by the Right Honourable Robert Stewart, Lord Castlereagh,* afterwards marquis of Londonderry, and leader of the British House of Commons under the administration of Lord Liverpool. The vigour beyond the law which this nobleman supported, together with the means which he countenanced "to make the rebellion explode," have attached an indelible stain to his memory. But he was not the author of the terrible system with which his name is so darkly associated. He found it in full operation, and pushed to its most

* The Right Hon. Robert Stewart was a member of the convention of delegates, elected by the volunteers in the year 1783, to present Mr. Flood's plan of reform to the House of Commons. At the general election in 1790 he stood for the county of Down, and was returned because he professed the principles of an uncompromising reformer.

unmerciful and brutal extremes. Luttrell, earl of Carhampton, well known in the parliamentary history of England as the ministerial opponent of Mr. Wilkes at the celebrated Middlesex elections, was the Irish commander-in-chief, when the earl of Camden became viceroy, and soon rendered himself odiously conspicuous by his conduct. While he served as general, military licentiousness reached a daring pitch of cruelty. The soldiers living at free quarters in districts reported to be disturbed, and having been authorized to act without the presence of a civil magistrate, made it sport to seize the devoted peasantry, and subject them to the most capricious punishments. Earl Moira asserted in parliament, that a company of soldiers, searching for arms, would burn thirty houses in one night. Imprisonment upon suspicion, torture to extort confession, and transportation without trial, were excesses of daily occurrence. Lord Carhampton patronised a tribunal worthy of the darkest era of the Spanish inquisition. We are assured that he and other magistrates used to make a practice of meeting and examining together the private reports sent in against persons who had been arrested without any evidence of guilt: these examinations proceeded in the absence of the accused, who, whenever the suspicion appeared strong, were sent on board a transportation tender, as "being otherwise likely to elude justice."* For this display of "wholesome severity," the earl of Carhampton was repeatedly honoured with the warm thanks of county grand juries and Orange corporations, while an approving parliament shielded him from all liability to the lawful consequences of guilt, by passing an act of indemnity.

General Lake, commanding the province of Ulster, emulated the example of Lord Carhampton. A proclamation under this officer's hand to the disturbed districts in the north,—the manner in which he enforced martial law, at the

* "Lord Carhampton, impatient or dissatisfied at the law's delay, undertook to exert a rigor beyond it. He emptied all the prisons of their tenants, and, without form of trial, sent them, and every one he chose to suspect of dissatisfaction, on his own authority, to serve on board the fleet: above 1,300 were thus transported from their homes during 1796." —*Plowden's History of Ireland*, vol. ii. p. 372.

instigation of spies and informers, and the reckless acts of wanton outrage committed by the officers and men under his command, excited a general feeling of horror and indignation. Amongst these a mid-day attack upon the office of the "Northern Star" newspaper at Belfast, and the destruction of the types and the house, by a party of his soldiers, deserved, the severest punishment, but was allowed to pass without even reprobation. Another monstrous case was that of the unfortunate Mr. Lucas, who was sabred to death with his hands tied behind his back, because some countrymen flocking round, suggested to the colonel who was marching him to prison the fear of an intended rescue. The body falling into the hands of relatives, was waked according to the custom of the country; but Sparrow, the officer, followed to recover it, broke into the house where it lay, and severely cut and mangled several of the mourners who had assembled around it. Having been tried and found guilty of this murder, Sparrow drew from his pocket a royal pardon, which had been previously forwarded to him by the government, and thus escaped all punishment.

The character of the period and the spirit of the government during the year 1797, are but too emphatically explained by such occurrences as these. The tampering of the French republicans with the United Irishmen had been distinctly revealed in 1796, upon the dispersion of the expedition from Brest. From that moment the great object of the government seemed to be a measureless chastisement of the nation at large, because a portion of it had been tempted to entertain treasonable propositions. The state policy in Ireland remained unmodified, the admitted grounds of discontent, and many an injustice, afterwards redressed, were left untouched, and rebellion proceeded with Lords Clare and Castlereagh as its ministers. Two disheartening lessons were taught to the United Irishmen early in the progress of their fate: the first, that upon this as on all former occasions, all those who relied for success upon French co-operation,* were doomed to disappoint-

* A fatal propensity has always led the Irish to look upon the French as necessary allies in their struggles against English oppression. The

ment; and the second, that notwithstanding the rigid care paid to secrecy in the construction of their plan, the whole had been divulged to government long before the time fixed upon for its development. The memoir drawn up for the purpose of making the Directory in France acquainted with the strength of the society, the turbulence of the people, and the most vulnerable parts of the kingdom, found its way into the hands of the English minister. When Mr. O'Connor, Dr. M'Nevin, and their fellow prisoners, were brought before the privy council, they were surprised to find a copy of this document lying before them. In April, 1797, the Ulster committee was betrayed at Belfast; in March, 1798, the Leinster committee was betrayed in Dublin; on the 19th of May following Lord Edward Fitzgerald, and on the 22nd, the brothers Sheares were betrayed. The principal informers were one Reynolds,* a united Irishman, and a captain Armstrong,

indisputable fact, that the character of the French as conquerors and colonizers is much worse than that of the English, has been either wholly overlooked, or but slightly considered by the majority of Irish combatants against the dominion of England. In the years 1688 and 1798 we see the feeling for France impelling the same course of action and producing precisely similar results. Regarding France as the natural enemy of England and confiding in the Roman Catholic religion as a common bond of sympathy and connexion, the hostile Irish trusted on both occasions to a French force as their surest instrument of victory. That aid never once arrived either opportunely or according to promise; and when it did appear, too often excited by its numbers and composition the fear of having been designed more for conquest than co-operation. If the Irish leaders of that age could have brooked the demonstrations given by the French generals of a design to rule the Irish, and to treat them in every respect as inferiors, the treaty of Limerick, in all probability, would not have been signed on the 3d of October, 1693. Some community of sentiment and interest derivable from the profession of the same religion seems to have been dreamed of by many of the Irish and to have been despised by the French. National and not religious enthusiasm has animated that gay and gallant people in all their wars and adventures for years past. Their design, equally in 1688 and in 1798, was to make Ireland a French dependency. The idea of raising that country to a state of freedom and then leaving it independent of France or England has as little entered at any period of time into the policy of the statesmen of one country as of the other. To what mutations the kingdoms of the world may be destined no man can tell; but if a negative prophecy may be tolerated, it may be confidently predicted that the separation of Ireland from England will never be effected by the co-operation of France, whether religious or political.

* This informer fared well with the English government. He had been a silk manufacturer, struggling for years on the brink of ruin, but con-

who had wormed himself into the confidence of the members, whom he delivered up to justice, and who encouraged their plot while revealing its objects to Lord Castlereagh. These men received large rewards for their infamous services. The force enrolled was 99,411 men, who were thus distributed through ten counties :—Antrim, 22,039 ; Down, 23,769 ; Derry, 10,000 ; Tyrone, 12,169 ; Armagh, 12,273 ; Monaghan, 3,075 ; Donegal, 9,648 ; Cavan, 1000 ; Fermanagh, 2,000 ; and Louth, 3,438. The arms of this body amounted to 6,346 guns, 2,536 bayonets, 3,816 pikes, 465 pistols, 18 blunderbusses, and 8 cannon :—of money they had only £144 2s. 1d. In Leinster, the total number of members was 67,295, who were thus enrolled in the following counties :—Wicklow, 12,895 ; Carlow, 9,414 ; Kildare, 10,863 ; Meath, 14,000 ; Kilkenny, 604 ; and the Queen's County, 11,689 :—their funds amounted to £1,485 4s. 9d.

The principals were all in gaol or had fled from certain arrest, when the insurrection broke out in the counties of Kildare and Carlow on the appointed 23d of May. The deluded peasants were everywhere destroyed. The government met their opening violence with a spirit of savage defiance, and exhausted in its suppression every horror which it seems possible for the most unrelenting inhumanity to perpetrate.

While Mr. Pelham continued in office, the authorities, civil and military, shocked at the growing excesses of the military and the magistrates, appear to have made an effort to restrain them within the bounds of discipline. Some strong observations, in a well-known general order issued by Sir Ralph Abercromby, justify this opinion :—“ The very disgraceful

triving to keep up his credit by making a dashing appearance. As a part of this plan, he took a lease of Kilkea Castle and some adjoining ground, from the duke of Leinster, and lived somewhat in the style of a gentleman. The first sum he received for betraying the conspiracy was £500 ; he afterwards received a place in the post-office at Lisbon, a pension of £1,000 a year, and, by way of getting him out of the way, and furnishing an excuse for paying him more money, was made consul at Iceland. He continued to importune the government for money and preferment, until Lord Londonderry's death opened the foreign office to Mr. Canning's talents, when an end was quickly put to the unworthy connection so long subsisting between the king's government and such a person.

frequency of courts-martial," said that eminent commander, "and the many complaints of the conduct of the troops in Ireland, having too unfortunately proved the army to be in a state of licentiousness, which must render it formidable to every one but the enemy, the commander-in-chief thinks it necessary to require from all generals commanding districts or brigades, as well as commanding officers of regiments, that they exert themselves, and compel from every officer under their command, the strictest and most unremitting attention to the discipline, good order, and conduct of his men; such as may restore the high and distinguished reputation the British troops have been accustomed to enjoy in every part of the world."

But ordinary severities could not appease the fury of the Irishy privy council. Lord Camden issued a proclamation, giving notice, that "his majesty's general officers had orders to punish, according to martial law, by death or otherwise, as their judgment should approve, all persons acting, or in any manner assisting in the rebellion." Even Sir Ralph Abercromby found himself constrained to echo this virulent language, and to declare, that unless the people gave up their arms in ten days, troops should be sent amongst them to live at free quarters,—to act without the presence of a magistrate, and to enforce obedience by other severities. It has been forcibly remarked, that the revolutionary army of France in all its invasions, never published such orders as these. That a truly gallant soldier who afterwards died in the arms of victory while defeating Napoleon, should have signed them, suggests painful reflections. It is due to his memory to add, that he appears to have regretted the act as soon as it was performed. He wrote to England immediately afterwards, praying for leave to retire,—and was removed from Ireland during the course of the same month.

From Kildare and Carlow the insurrection spread into Wexford and Wicklow; it also broke out in Antrim and in Down; but it only proved formidable in Wexford. There, the towns of Wexford and Enniscorthy were captured and held

for three weeks, and several movements and engagements took place, in which the peasantry distinguished themselves by a wild spirit of bravery and some hardy fighting. Their efforts, when the disparity of the contending forces is examined, seem wonderful. They rose in the face of a numerous army, well trained, well appointed, commanded by experienced generals, and abundantly supplied with ammunition, food, and money. They were a raw, ill-armed, and irregular body, struggling to make head,—without officers or discipline, provisions, concert, or any plan of systematic operations ; and yet they were able to gain victories, and to occupy the field for a considerable time. The treatment to which they were subjected after their forces had been scattered, when the danger had ceased to be imminent, and, even at times and in places where no outbreak whatever had occurred, was marked by a wanton cruelty and unrelenting malice, which were disgraceful in the last degree, not only to the officers, magistrates, and men who committed, but to the government which tolerated them. The more the military proclamations of the period are examined, the more indignation will be excited, and censure justified. General Nugent commanding the northern troops, in June, 1798, concluded an address, in which he had called upon the insurgents to lay down their arms, with these sanguinary intimations :— “ Should the above injunctions not be complied with, Major-General Nugent will proceed to set fire to, and totally destroy the towns of Killeleah, Ballynahinch, Saintfield, Killinchy, and every cottage and farm-house in the vicinity of these places, and put every one to the sword who may be found in arms : it behoves all well-affected persons to exert themselves to have these terms complied with, as it is the only opportunity there will be of rescuing themselves and properties from the indiscriminate vengeance of an army necessarily let loose upon them.”

This being the tone in which the insurgent districts were addressed, let us take a specimen of the language held in places where no rebels appeared. The following document was issued from the adjutant-general’s office in Cork, during

the month of May, 1798 :—“ Whereas it has been reported to Lieutenant-General James Stuart, that in some parts of the county where it has been necessary to place troops at free quarters for the restoration of public tranquillity, that general subscriptions of money have been entered into by the inhabitants to purchase provisions for the troops, by which means, the end proposed, of making the burthen fall as much as possible upon the guilty is entirely defeated, by making it fall in a light proportion upon the whole, and thereby easing and protecting the guilty: it has been thought proper to direct, that wherever the practice has been adopted, or shall be attempted, the general officers commanding divisions of the southern district, shall immediately double, triple, and quadruple the number of soldiers so stationed, and shall send out regular foraging parties to provide provisions for the troops, in the quantities mentioned in the former notice, bearing date the 27th day of April, 1798 ; and that they shall move them from station to station, through the district or barony, until all arms are surrendered and tranquillity be perfectly restored, and until it is reported to the general officers, by the gentlemen holding landed property, and those who are employed in collecting the public revenue and tithes, that all rents, taxes, and tithes are completely paid up.”

Innumerable tales of horror, and endless cases of outrage and crime are our evidences of the effects produced by the various proclamations from which these quotations have been made. The presence of a troop of soldiers appears to have been every where the signal for proceedings to which the history of Europe furnishes no parallel. These usually began with searches for arms, the employment of spies, the receipt of secret accusations, and arrests upon suspicion. Magistrates and military officers were instructed and authorized to take informations in private, to keep the names of the informers profoundly secret, and to proceed against the accused according to their discretion. Ignorant zeal, blundering loyalty, and religious bigotry, innocent fear, and mercenary vigilance, dissimulation in its worst forms, frauds of every kind,

wanton malice, private vengeance, and the whole host of bad passions were cast wildly over the face of the country, and allowed to riot in blood. Wherever an individual became obnoxious, soldiers were quartered upon him, and their numbers were proportioned to the extent of his imputed guilt or his means of supporting the imposition. When arms were found in a house, it was set on fire and reduced to ashes. Men were daily seized in numbers, and scourged, picketed, or otherwise tortured, to extort confessions of local combination or arms concealed. Persons imprisoned on private information were sometimes half hanged, or strangled almost to death, as tests of their guilt or innocence, when no trial or court martial could be held.* The disaffected were supposed to wear the hair cut short. From this fashion arose the nick-name of croppy, and a most barbarous practice. A peasant or tradesman caught near a barrack wearing short hair, was crowned with a cap of coarse linen or strong brown paper, besmeared with melting pitch on the inside. As soon as this adhered, it was pulled off, and the hair torn from the roots, and the skin barbarously lacerated. A sergeant was rewarded for a peculiar invention in the art of tormenting, with the sobriquet of Tom the Devil. This fellow used to cut the hair close to the roots, in the form of a cross, and filling the furrow with moistened gunpowder, set fire to the train, which, burning slowly, prolonged the torture to madness. There was also a particular company of fencible cavalry, who were familiarly denominated Lord Jocelyn's Foxhunters, from the rapidity and expertness with which they used to run down and sabre the flying peasantry.

The number and the notoriety of these outrages, and the absence of all effort upon the part of the government to restrain or discourage, would justify us in holding the ministers of this period responsible for their guilt. But we are not driven to charges of constructive participation in lawless

* One Hepenstall, a tall lieutenant of militia, was called the "Walking gallows," having repeatedly swung men from his shoulders as a substitute for the gallows.

cruelty and excessive oppression. There are cases of direct connection, and of positive approval of reward, and even of honours conferred, which bring the whole system, with its long train of sanguinary brutalities, home to the very door of the cabinet, and close to the touch of the officers who acted immediately under their orders.

Lord Clare admitted in the House of Lords a distinct charge of picketing, and thought it better that the victim, a blacksmith, should be thus tortured than that pikes should be manufactured for the peasantry. As if the law had not provided condign punishment for the offence, supposing it to have been really committed. Late in the month of May, and before any proclamation of the district had been made, Mr. Francis Arthur of Limerick, says Plowden, was apprehended in his own house by the recorder, under an order from General Morrison. All this gentleman's keys, papers, and property having been seized, and his wife and family expelled from his house, which was immediately filled with soldiers, he was himself led away by the sheriff, General Morrison, and a large party of horse and foot, and confined in a small garret. The weather was sultry, but he was refused permission to break a pane of the window for the admission of air. If he attempted to look out of it, the sentinel on guard had orders to fire upon him. He requested that Mr. Thwaytes, a medical gentleman on the staff, might be allowed to visit him, but this was refused. His wife sent her servant with some drink to him, the servant was recognized and severely beaten. While thus detained, without a warrant, and cruelly abused, a Colonel Cockell condescended to inform him that he was charged by a person who had never seen him; that it was uncertain whether he would be tried at Limerick or Dublin, but that certainly no counsel would be permitted to defend him. After languishing in his garret, attacked by illness, deprived of the use of pen, ink and paper, and all human intercourse but the periodical visits of his turnkey, for above three weeks, he received notice, on the 22nd of June, at nine o'clock at night, that he was to be tried for his life on the next morning. At that hour, for the first

time, the president informed Mr. Arthur, that he stood charged with having aided and assisted the rebellion—1st. By offering money for the use of Lord Edward Fitzgerald, after notice had been published of that nobleman's rebellious pursuits—2nd. employing one Higgins to raise men in the west—3rd. having firelocks and pikes concealed in hogsheads. The only witness brought to substantiate the first charge was William Maume, a convict, then under sentence of transportation for life for treasonable practices. The case for the prosecution having closed on a Saturday, the prisoner was ordered to prepare his defence by Monday, without being allowed in the intermediate time to speak or communicate with any human being, not even with the turnkey. On Sunday Colonel Cockell visited the garret, and rejected the prisoner's pressing entreaties for an extension of time, some facilities for procuring witnesses, and the aid of counsel. When the court reassembled, the convict Maume was called in, and the president, without any suggestion from the witness, announced that Maume was now cooler than he had before been, and would correct his previous evidence. But he prevaricated still more deeply respecting his knowledge of the prisoner. A letter written by himself having been produced, in which he acknowledged that he had never seen the gentleman in his life, he turned full of confusion to the president, and said, "You know, sir, that it was but lately that I gave information against Mr. Arthur, and that I did not wish to do it."

Notwithstanding the rigorous secrecy of the proceedings, Mrs. Arthur and her friends had obtained some material witnesses from Charleville and other places. These persons, in order to be ready to answer the call of the court, had engaged a room in the hotel, adjoining to the court-house. While thus awaiting the progress of the trial, a Protestant clergyman handed in a paper to the president, and the court declared that there was a revolutionary committee sitting in the adjoining tavern, and that the judge advocate should instantly take the parties into custody. Sentinels were accordingly placed in the front and rear of the house, with orders to let no one es-

cape. All the papers and written documents procured for the prisoner's defence, were seized and kept by the president. When the trial was over, the witnesses who had assembled at the tavern, and had not been examined, were called in and sharply rebuked by the president as a revolutionary committee. At nine o'clock that night, Colonel Cockell brought Mr. Arthur the following sentence of the court martial : " You are to be transported to Botany Bay for life, to be sent off to-morrow morning at six o'clock, and to pay a fine of £5,000 to the king forthwith, or your entire property will be confiscated."

After a thousand pounds, found in his house, had been seized, and his family had been compelled to make up the remainder of the fine, the lord lieutenant sent a peremptory order that the money should be repaid, and the prisoner allowed to go to Great Britain, or any other part of his majesty's dominions. The terms in which this news was communicated by Colonel Cockell, preserved the arbitrary character of the proceeding to its last stage: " You must go," said the colonel, " to your house in a hand-chair, with the curtain drawn about you. You are not to stir out of your house, and in twenty-four hours you are to quit Limerick." The only reparation obtained by this unfortunate gentleman for all this insult and suffering appears to have been the following short note, written by the under secretary of state :—

" SIR,

" Castle, Oct. 10, 1798.

" I examined William Maume, whose evidence I am clear is false; he will be sent off and transported, and there cannot be any objection to your going whither you think most eligible. As far as I can give testimony to your character, I shall ever do it by saying that I think it by no means implicated by any thing asserted by Maume; and I certainly never heard any aspersion upon you from any one else.

" I am, &c.,

" To Francis Arthur, Esq.

" E. COOKE."

During the autumn of the same year a court martial, of which the earl of Enniskillen was president, sat to try Hugh Wollaghan, a yeoman, for the murder of Thomas Dogherty. The charge was proved with every aggravating circumstance.

No attempt was made to contradict any part of the evidence, but a justification was set up,—that the murder had been committed by an order from the commanding officer, to the effect, that if the yeomen should meet, while patrolling the country, with any whom they knew or suspected to be rebels, they were to shoot them on the spot; and that it was almost the daily practice of the corps to go out upon scouring parties, and to act upon this order. The fact was confirmed by one private, one serjeant, and two lieutenants of yeomanry, and the prisoner was acquitted.

The following letter shows that in this instance the Marquis Cornwallis, who succeeded Earl Camden as viceroy in June 1798, behaved in a manner worthy of his position.

“ SIR,

“ Dublin Castle, 18th Oct. 1798.

“ Having laid before the lord lieutenant the proceedings of a general court martial held by your orders, in Dublin Barracks, on Saturday, the 13th instant, of which colonel the earl of Enniskillen is president, I am directed to acquaint you, that his excellency entirely disapproves of the sentence of the above court martial, acquitting Hugh Wollaghan of a cruel and deliberate murder, of which, by the clearest evidence, he appears to have been guilty.

“ Lord Cornwallis orders the court martial to be immediately dissolved, and directs that Hugh Wollaghan shall be dismissed from the corps of yeomanry in which he served, and that he shall not be received into any other corps of yeomanry in this kingdom.

“ His excellency further desires, that the above may be read to the president and members of the court martial in open court.

“ I have the honour to be, Sir,

“ Your most obedient humble servant,

“ H. TAYLOR, Sec.”

“ To Lieut.-Gen. Craig, &c. &c.”

“ P. S.—I am also directed, that a new court martial may be immediately convened, for the trial of such prisoners as may be brought before them; and that none of the officers who sat upon Hugh Wollaghan be admitted as members.”

There were, however, numerous cases in which the government marked the lawless tyranny of its officers with their special approbation. Amongst the monsters of this period was John Judkin Fitzgerald, sheriff of the county of Tip-

perary. It appeared, on a trial for damages, at Clonmel assizes, that a respectable woollen manufacturer, of the name of Doyle, had been seized by this Fitzgerald in the street, at Carrick-on-Suir, in the same county, and flogged. In vain did the victim urge his innocence,—in vain did some of the most respectable inhabitants of the place bear their testimony to the excellent character he had always borne,—in vain was the most searching inquiry into his conduct invited, and bail offered to any amount for his appearance. “No,” said the sheriff; “I know by his face that he is a traitor, a Carmelite scoundrel:” and accordingly the unfortunate man was tied to the whipping-post: he received one hundred lashes, till his ribs appeared; his breeches were then let down, and fifty more lashes given on his posteriors. This man’s innocence was afterwards established: he applied to a court of law for redress: the action was tried, the facts were fully proved, and the defendant was acquitted.

Another revolting act of barbarity is related of Fitzgerald by Plowden, from whose faithful pages the preceding cases have been condensed.

A Mr. Wright was employed as a teacher of the French language by several boarding-schools and families of respectability in the neighbourhood of Clonmel. Having heard that some charges of a seditious tendency had been made against him, he went to the house of Fitzgerald for the purpose of satisfying his mind. When he was shown in, Fitzgerald drawing his sword, said, “Down on your knees, you rebellious scoundrel, and receive your sentence,” which was first to be flogged, and then shot. The unfortunate man gave up his keys that his papers might be searched, and expressed his readiness to suffer any punishment which the proof of guilt could justify. “What, you Carmelite rascal,” exclaimed Fitzgerald, “do you dare speak after sentence?” As he said this, he struck his victim, and ordered him to prison. The next day, Wright being brought forth to undergo his sentence, and conceiving his life in danger, knelt down to pray, and, while thus engaged, held his hat before his face. Fitz-

gerald snatched his hat from him, and trampling on it, seized him by the hair, dragged him to the earth, kicked him, and cut him across the forehead with his sword. He then ordered him to be stripped naked, to be tied up to a ladder, and to receive fifty lashes. Major Rial, an officer in the town, came up as the fifty lashes were completed, and asked the cause of the punishment. Fitzgerald handed him a note, written in French, saying that he did not himself understand the language, but that the major would find enough to justify any man in flogging the scoundrel to death. Major Rial read the note, which was directed to Wright, and which he thus translated for Fitzgerald :—

“ SIR,—I am extremely sorry I cannot wait on you at the hour appointed, being unavoidably obliged to attend Sir Laurence Parsons.

“ Yours,

“ BARON DE CLUES.”

Notwithstanding this, and as if to show that the severity of his punishments was apportioned to the groundlessness of his suspicions, Fitzgerald ordered fifty more lashes, which were inflicted with so much violence that the bowels could be perceived working through the wounds. As the application of his cat-o'-nine-tails could not be continued on that part without cutting into the body, the waist-band of the breeches was opened, and fifty more lashes were laid on lower down. This done, the unfortunate man was left bleeding and suspended from the ladder, while Fitzgerald, hurrying to the barrack, demanded a file of soldiers to come and shoot him. The commanding officer refused the application, upon which Fitzgerald returned and sought for a rope to hang him, but he could not procure one. Finding it impossible to carry the torture further, he ordered Wright, at length, to be cut down and sent back to prison, where he was confined in a small dark unfurnished room, and lay on a wretched pallet of straw, without covering, and without medical assistance, six or seven days.

These scenes should be painted in every account of the period in their true colours; not alone because they furnish the proper illustrations of the “ reign of terror” which was

now maintained ; but also because, when fully examined, they will be found to involve irresistible evidence of the complicity of the government in the full measure of these frightful enormities. For instance—this Fitzgerald, for his services as sheriff of the county of Tipperary, was created a baronet, and rewarded with a pension.

The circumstances connected with the close of the insurrection in Wexford, were marked in the strongest manner by want of faith, by dishonour, and cruelty upon the part of the government. Amongst the few persons of rank taken by the insurgents was Lord Kingsborough. When the approach of the royal army to Vinegar Hill had weakened the force of their opponents in the town of Wexford, the inhabitants repaired to Lord Kingsborough, and offered to give him possession of the place, and to procure the submission of the armed peasantry in the neighbourhood, provided security for life and property was promised to all but murderers. Lord Kingsborough accepted these conditions, and received possession of the town ; while the insurgents, apprised of the convention, and, relying upon its fulfilment, withdrew to their camp and prepared to disperse. But no sooner did the troops of the implacable Lake find the insurgent army beaten and the town of Wexford recovered, than they rushed over the country, committing every crime to which lust, rapine, revenge, and the thirst for blood could impel human nature. In the towns, the insurgent leaders and all connected with them, or implicated in the late events, were seized upon, notwithstanding the Kingsborough convention, and after having been exposed to revolting indignities, were summarily punished by courts-martial. Lord Kingsborough himself sat on these tribunals, and the government adopted, and the parliament sanctioned their proceedings by passing acts of attainder and forfeiture against the men who were executed under their sentence.

Extreme cruelty and cowardice are generally found together. A memorable instance of this close alliance was given at the end of the rebellion. The disturbances had all been put down when General Humbert landed in Killala Bay, with a forlorn

hope of 1,100 Frenchmen and one curidle gun. Lake, the general who has been already mentioned, had an army of 4,000 men and 14 pieces of cannon, to oppose this force; yet he fled before it almost without firing a shot. It required a month's preparation and manœuvring, the presence of the conqueror of Tippoo Saib, and an army of nearly 30,000, to compel General Humbert and his handful of Frenchmen to surrender.

It will now be proper to review the conduct of the other party. The insurgents dealt back upon the military, magistrates, and yeomanry engaged against them, a dreadful measure of revenge. They were neither so refined nor so hardened in their cruelties as their opponents; they never imitated the base example set them by the foreign mercenaries who darkened the land, of rape, robbery, and plunder; but their courage in the field was ferocious, and they displayed on all occasions a wild excitement and appalling exultation in the shedding of blood. They killed fiercely but they did not torture. It was their custom when they met with cases such as they knew would have been visited with the triangle and the pitch cap, on the other side, to crop the obnoxious person's hair, and so to mark him as one who deserved the pains which they scorned to inflict. If it had not been for this natural repugnance to deliberate cruelty in the Irish character,—for an instinctive susceptibility in it of tender and generous emotions,—and also for the highminded repudiation of persecution, upon the part of the first leaders of the United Irishmen, the war of the peasantry must have been equally demoralised by predatory licentiousness and unbounded malice. With regard to those leaders, it is particularly observable that they offered in the excellence of their private characters, the strongest evidence of being actuated on this occasion by principle: in point of personal virtue as well as ability, they are entitled to high praise. Perhaps if they had prepared their revolution with less moderation and more indifference to the object which they had in view, the result would have been more formidable than it actually proved. Southey—he was not then poet

laureate—made an observation upon the execution of the brothers, Sheares, which suggests strange reflections :—"The Irish business has been a counterpart to the death of the Girondists ; yet who would not be content so to die, in order so to have lived ?"

Amongst the evidences adduced to show that the men who headed the peasantry when they first rose in the county of Kildare, were not prepared to act upon the rules of honourable war, is the confession of the prisoners taken at Naas—a confession confirmed by written papers found in the pockets of the killed and wounded—that the orders of the day were to put to death every officer, and to disarm every common soldier who would not instantly join in the insurrection. These indefensible instructions, providentially, failed of their effect at Naas ; but they succeeded too fatally at Prosperous, and other places, where the government, though forewarned of the attack, neglected to prepare their men for it.

Much stress had been laid upon a proclamation found in the house of John Sheares, and intended to be used when the movement took its course. But the same attention has not been paid by all writers to the well ascertained rules by which Dr. M'Nevin, Mr. Emmet, and the members of the first directory had determined to govern their conduct. It was a settled point with that party to discourage bloodshed by all the means in their power. They held, that for every prisoner who should lose his life they would lose an hostage. Any one who would not submit to their government, and who was considered valueless as an hostage, was to be sent out of the country unhurt ; wives, and such children as were under the age of discretion, were to be maintained out of the estates of their husbands and fathers. These two claims being allowed in every case, the remaining property was to be confiscated to national uses. The first directory evidently sought to rely not on the Irish alone, but upon the succour and the strength which an invasion, sooner or later to take place, would bring. Thus animated, they laboured to repress, as far as they could, the forward spirit of insurrection, trusting

to augmented resources and a riper case. But when the members of the first directory were arrested, March 12, 1798, other men were introduced, who, being irritated at the danger in which their predecessors stood, or more sanguine of success, agreed to bring the conspiracy to a summary issue, and begin the long threatened struggle with a notice that "many tyrants had bled, and more must bleed."

All the massacres at Wexford were terrific. Some of the worst of them were the work of a fiend named Dixon, who was the captain of a trading vessel then lying in the harbour. When the peasantry first poured into the town, numbers fled to sea. Dixon was the first to re-land the fugitives he had received, and on these (particularly ladies) he vented a brutal ferocity. Returning himself ashore at the same time, he was made a captain in the rebel army. His influence being thus increased, and his means of exciting the rabble extended, he was joined by his wife, a monster as inhuman as himself. She had purloined, says Plowden, two fire-screens with emblematical figures, from the drawing-room of Mr. Le Hunte, four miles from Wexford. Dixon informed the mob that this room had been a meeting place for Orangemen, and that the figures denoted the manner in which the Roman Catholics were to be put to death:—they were to be first deprived of sight, and then burnt alive: not even children were excepted. Wexford being a sea-port, appropriate horrors were reserved for Roman Catholic seamen—they were to be roasted to death on red hot anchors. Upon the publication of this wanton fabrication, Mr. Le Hunte, who had hitherto been permitted to remain quietly in a private house in the town, was dragged into the street by the rabble, who would soon have torn him to pieces, had he not been saved by the exertions of two Catholic gentlemen, who prudently insisting that he should be immediately brought to trial, hurried him to prison, and parried, on the way, the thrusts of the pikes which were aimed at his life, two of which, in spite of their endeavours, wounded him slightly in the back.

It appears from the same authority, that when Wexford

fell into the hands of the rebels, the number of resident Protestants did not consist merely of the inhabitants of that town and its environs, but of many refugees and prisoners from more distant parts of the country. About two hundred and sixty of these were secured in the gaol and other places of confinement, while some were kept in their own houses; but the dread of massacre fell indiscriminately upon them all. On the 6th of June, ten prisoners at Wexford were selected for execution, under an order from Enniscorthy, and suffered accordingly. The limitation of the victims to half a score, under this order, was made upon the principle of retaliation; the insurgents who gave it, having received information that a similar number of their people had suffered in like manner on the preceding day. A general slaughter of the prisoners was twice attempted by the sanguinary Dixon, at the head of bands of peasants; but he was bravely resisted, first by one Hore, a butcher, and next by one Scallion, a nautical trader—the former with a sword, the latter with a pistol, defying him to single combat, and insisting that he must approve his own courage, before he could be allowed to put defenceless men to death.

This Dixon sometimes displayed art in his barbarity. He had a relative, a Roman Catholic priest, who, having been ordered for transportation, was sent to Dungannon Fort the day preceding the insurrection: he had been found guilty, on the testimony of one Francis Murphy, whose evidence had been positively contradicted by three other witnesses. Under these circumstances, Dixon took a summary mode of avenging the fate of his kinsman, who was generally beloved. He brought Murphy out of gaol, upon his own sole authority, conducted him down to a spot called the Bull-ring, in Wexford, and compelled three revenue officers, who were then prisoners, and whom he brought out at the same time, to shoot him, and afterwards to bear his body to the quay and throw it into the water. This execution took place with all its glaring circumstances, during the hours of public prayer, and was utterly unknown to the principal inhabitants. The

most diabolical feat performed by this wretch was the immolation, in one day, of thirty-five persons, on the bridge of Wexford, whom he deliberately killed in batches of fifteen, one after the other. He commenced the butchery at two o'clock in the afternoon, and continued it without interruption until seven in the evening, when a Roman Catholic clergyman humanely interfered. By calling, in an authoritative tone, upon the firing party to pray before they proceeded further, that gentleman brought them to their knees, and then dictating the natural prayer that God might show to them such mercy in their extremity as they should now show to the remaining prisoners, stopped the further effusion of blood.

It seems impossible to exhaust the store of enormous crimes accumulated on both sides. Thus we find the yeomen at Carnew marching twenty-eight prisoners out of their place of confinement, and shooting them without trial in a ball-alley. The same process is repeated at Dunlavin, where a fusillade of thirty-four men took place, including the informer, upon whose evidence they had been arrested. Some runaways from the battle of Ross, pretending to retaliate these horrors, surrounded the house and barn of Mr. King, at Scullabogue, in which a number of loyalists and respectable Roman Catholics were detained as hostages. Thirty-seven persons in the house were shot, and one hundred in the barn were burned to ashes ! Soon after this a house, used as an hospital by the insurgents, was entered by a party of troops, who, beginning to fire upon the sick and wounded in their beds, set their clothes on fire with the wadding, and wrapped the building in flames, which consumed every patient within its walls.*

* A remarkable estimate of the general effects produced by the rebellion appears in O'Driscol's "Views of Ireland," vol. II. p. 220:—

"The rebellion was of use (for the worst things have their use) to exhibit and certainly to raise very high the character of the lower Irish. It threw back the cloud which a barbarous system of policy had spread over the moral powers and qualities of the people, and showed them undoubtedly in all their wildness, but also in all their original brightness. The high mindedness of the peasantry, their heroism in the field, their fidelity, which no species of torture (and all were tried) could shake,

It has been computed that the rebellion of 1798 occasioned the loss of 20,000 lives upon the side of the royalists ; of 50,000 lives amongst the insurgents ; and the destruction of property worth three millions sterling. Not a few writers

which no blandishments could seduce ; the terrors of solitary confinement, whipping even to lay bare the bones of the breathing skeleton, strangling, mutilation, the pitch-cap, picketing ; death, direct and awful, with or without torture, suffered in the reflected agony of crowds, or solitary and without sympathy, or meeting, in the last convulsions of the departing spirit, scorn and brutal derision ;—all this, and more than all this, was endured, was submitted to voluntarily by thousands, with a calm and composed resolution, when a word might have changed the scene, and presented to these poor victims, not death and scorn, and unutterable sufferings, but life and safety, and patronage, and rich reward. Never were we prouder of our native land, than in considering this amazing faithfulness, in a countless multitude of poor deluded people, in the cause which they believed to be that of their country. To betray only the name of one of their associates was life, and all that could make life desirable—to be silent was death, accompanied with whatever makes death most terrible : and the untutored peasant resolutely died. In the enduring fortitude that scorned complaint,—in the tranquil magnanimity of his death,—he would have shed a lustre upon the cause for which he suffered, more bright than the splendour of a thousand victories, if that cause had been without objection.

" It is some consolation, that all this prodigality of fine feeling and steadfast principle, and firm unflinching purpose,—all this lamentable waste of life and shedding of human blood, was not wholly in vain. Since the day of the treaty of Limerick, and the infraction of that treaty, the people had been so trampled upon, and abused with such impunity, that they began to consider themselves as something below human nature ; and their oppressors became convinced of it : but when at length the wild and mighty power of the people broke from its chain, in all its savagery and grandeur ; displaying itself in the field in feats of courage almost sublime, and assuming on the scaffold a still loftier dignity ; their enemies were astonished, and could not refuse their admiration : neither could they avoid feeling that such a people were not to be abused with impunity. The peasantry conquered at length the respect which was their due ; and in putting forth those high moral and physical powers, which had surprised their adversaries by their unexpected splendour, they had learned also to feel and to understand somewhat of their own importance. They discerned in their sufferings what they were able to endure, and in their very defeats they acquired a consciousness of strength, from which they derived a portion of self-esteem they had never yet enjoyed since days long past. Upon these circumstances, upon this feeling, they founded claims to a new consideration,—claims which have been tacitly though reluctantly admitted and established for ever. These are no inconsiderable advantages ; and those who can recollect the contempt with which the peasantry of Ireland were regarded by the gentry previous to the year 1798, and the mischiefs which flowed from this unnatural scorn, will readily admit the change which has taken place, and know how to estimate its importance."

would hold the government directly responsible for this great waste of human blood and capital, and by tracing the hands of the minister busily employed throughout the different stages of the work, do not hesitate to charge him with a guilty participation in all the crimes which it covers and embraces. They go farther, and state that the whole was the result of design, and a means to an end : such an insurrection as that of 1798, they tell us, was necessary to produce the legislative union in 1800.

There is no period of Irish history more prolific of suspicious incidents and matter for grave accusations. It is certainly not a matter of charge against the government that vigorous measures were taken to insure the public safety, when it was threatened with danger, and that the arm of the executive was strengthened in the hour of peril ; nor is it a charge that property and life received the protection of the extraordinary safe-guards which it was thought prudent to throw around them ; and still less is it a charge that offences were severely punished when they were detected. But it is matter of grave charge that a popular ferment was for a series of years neither allayed nor overpowered ;—that although forewarned of the existence of a formidable conspiracy, the ministers, English and Irish, suffered the preconcerted scheme to proceed in secret,—to bring its humours to a head, to ripen, and break out into extremities, with scarcely an act of prevention, denunciation, or interference upon their parts. It is also a grave charge that the lord chancellor of Ireland should have remonstrated ineffectually with his colleagues for the term of three years against the notorious treason of these practices, and that the secretary should have allowed Lord Edward Fitzgerald to be at large for three months after his objects had been divulged by the spy who was hired to betray him. Still more is it a charge against them, that when having bided their time, having seen the whole kingdom become convulsed, and the lower orders every where unlawfully banded together and sworn to violence—and having, at last, resolved to defy the monster whose birth and growth they had carefully

watched, they abandoned all the forms and principles of civil law—never tempered justice with mercy, or punishment with policy ; but let slip a vindictive array of ill-disciplined soldiers and armed civilians, who disgraced the honour of war, and produced almost in every rank and file a public executioner and a slaughterer in cold blood.

The difficult office of mitigating by degrees the Irish “reign of terror,” was entrusted, in the month of June, 1798, to the Marquis Cornwallis, a nobleman who obtained general praise for the manner in which he fulfilled his instructions. Quiet had scarcely been restored, and the different ranks of the people had barely laid aside their arms, and returned to the homely cares of industry, when the legislative union was proposed and pressed forward with determined spirit. The moment was certainly, in some respects, not an inauspicious one for the purpose, and the manner in which various facts and arguments were applied in its favour displayed ability of a high order, and the most unscrupulous dexterity. For years the Irish parliament had been the submissive instrument of corruption and misgovernment. Waiting at the English minister’s table, like an overfed menial, and proud of the hand that pampered, it had ever been ready to act the part of a pimp or bully, as the pleasure of its master directed. The minister now turned upon his creature, and tearing aside the last flimsy rag by which it vainly attempted to conceal its debasement ; he enlarged upon its cupidity and foulness ; painted in the blackest colours its notorious character ; summed up its numerous misdeeds and its continual crimes ; described the inveterate depravity of its constitution, and pronouncing such a complication of disorders beyond the reach of art, he appealed to the country to preserve no longer the existence of a guilty and wretched thing, impossible to reclaim, and sure to circulate contagion and reproduce ruin, the longer it was allowed to live.

There was great ingratitude, but also great truth in all this. The Irish parliament answered, in too many respects, the picture drawn by a master hand ; the prostitution had been so

continual and indecent; the falling into the arms of the seducer had been so often repeated, and upon the slightest invitation, that the case was felt to be desperate almost as soon as it was opened.

The parliament certainly had no party in the country when its destruction was proposed. The friends of Irish independence and all those who desired to correct the manifold abuses included under the various heads of parliamentary reform, the penal laws, tithes, and agrarian distresses, found in the Irish parliament an insuperable bar to the attainment of their wishes and the progress of improvement. In their eyes, that body still remained what it always had been—the engine of a faction—of the landed oligarchy—the parent and sustainer of all the monopolies and abuses by which the country had become depressed and weakened. The struggle between the ministry and the parliament might be mortal, but the people were unconcerned in the issue, and disinclined to interfere. They owed nothing to the latter, and hoped nothing from it; they reflected that if ever it had moved in accordance with their wishes, or had promoted in any degree their interests, the permission from England had always been an indispensable preliminary to concession; and knowing that the measure of every good depended upon the extent of the support that could be found for it in a small circle in London, they seemed to feel no decided objection to a change which could hardly add to their misfortunes, and which presented, at least, one certain advantage—the merit of simplifying the complicated machinery of a mode of government which had effected little or no good.

But if there were men who took this view of the union, there were others who looked upon it in a very different light, and were inspired to pursue a course upon the occasion marked by strength, dignity, and eminent natural powers with which they were individually and collectively endowed. From the very ranks which had produced the most energetic denouncers of the profligacy of the Irish parliament, and the most resolute detectors of its guilt, there

now stood forward the ablest maintainers of its rights, and the most courageous assertors of its inherent capability to meet, if fairly dealt with, all the public wants, and to satisfy all the demands and expectations of sincere patriotism. It was the opinion of this section of the anti-unionists not only that a reform of the House of Commons would answer all the constitutional exigencies of the case, but that the Irish possessed an inalienable right to legislate for themselves, which they could neither surrender voluntarily, nor allow another nation to take away. Love of country, the pride of independence, the distinction and profits of self-government and separate establishments,—these and other kindred sentiments and feelings were eloquently descanted upon, and soon rallied a formidable opposition to the proposed measure. The party of the patriots—they at last deserved the name—for there were amongst them high-minded and disinterested leaders, who were straining all their might to preserve the last vestige of nationality,—rejoiced to find the multitude flocking round their standard with loud acclamations. They met with not a few potent allies and cordial supporters in the ranks of those who had hitherto been their strenuous antagonists. For amongst the maintainers of the old system,—amongst the families who had acquired place and property, rank, titles, command and influence, as patrons, managers, and undertakers of the local government,—there were some who foresaw, in the loss of the parliament, the loss of their own greatness,—the removal for ever of all occasions and opportunities for those convenient and profitable services by which their fortunes had been raised and their ambition had been gratified. These men hastened to make common cause with the patriots and anti-unionists; they possessed talent, address, and station; and they brought their united weight to bear upon the public mind, with all the art, energy, and effect which the dictates of invaded self-interest could marshal for the struggle. Mr. Foster, speaker of the House of Commons, particularly distinguished himself in this section of the anti-unionists. His knowledge of Irish affairs, and his experience as a public

man, were set off and enhanced by natural abilities and many personal accomplishments. To these advantages was super-added the consideration, not improperly due to a certain degree of politic moderation by which his career had been tempered, and some display of dignity in his seat of office. His intimate connection with the privy council had identified him with the horrors of the rebellion, and heaped a load of obloquy and hatred upon his name ; but when he descended from the chair of the House of Commons, and delivered a speech, eloquent, argumentative, and stored with facts, against the Union, he rose to the highest pitch of popular regard, and divided for a while the public admiration and gratitude with even the great genius of the epoch,—Henry Grattan himself.

By these united forces,—by the popular enthusiasm,—the energy of the old opposition and the resentment of the aristocracy, who could not refuse to feel for the country, when their own privileges were put in peril,—the first proposals made for a legislative Union were defeated. There were two debates and two divisions upon the subject at the very beginning of the session in 1799 ; and the minister was in a majority of one upon the first occasion, and in a minority of five upon the secn^l.

One of those hearty and astounding out-pourings of general joy was now indulged, for which the vivacity of Irish feeling is famous. But the transports of the people were short-lived. While the Irish parliament buoyed up by the cheers of all classes of their fellow-countrymen, had been indignantly repudiating the Union propositions, the English parliament had adopted them by an overwhelming majority. Undoubtedly his repulse in Ireland took the minister by surprise, but it did not long embarrass him nor retard his proceedings. The character of the body with which he had to deal was too notorious to render the task of making it completely subservient to his purposes either doubtful or arduous. He well knew that the only point to be settled was the extent of the corruption requisite to ensure success, and it would seem as if he cleared that difficulty at a bound by issuing an unlimited order to satisfy

all demands and expectations however exorbitant and extravagant. Bribes were lavished with profusion in all directions and under every possible form. There was no art by which converts could be brought round and hostility appeased, that was not put into active requisition and diligently exercised. The hopes held out and the promises made, included all that could give the nation wealth and content; no man who would listen to the minister, was allowed to believe that the interest to which he was most attached, or the cause which he esteemed most highly, could receive from the change anything but increased strength and security. The Protestant Church, with its property and pre-eminence, was to be placed on a stronger and more enduring foundation than it had ever before occupied; and the Roman Catholics were to receive from the parliament of the United Kingdom, the rights which had hitherto been refused by the separate legislature of their own country.* The apparent inconsistency of these different undertakings may have struck a few thoughtful minds, but it passed without comment or reclamation. Some bowed to the coming event as to the doom of fate; others recognised the heavy retribution of justice overdue, but the majority hailed in it the magic of an irresistible enchanter, who captivated his victims with a shower of gold, and a pageant of starry honours.

The Irish parliament was assembled for the last time, January 15, 1800, and upon the same day a majority of 42 in favour of the Union, bore decisive testimony to the approaching triumph of the minister and his measure. It was a moment of deep excitement—a scene of melancholy interest. In the midst of the debate, Grattan, who had retired from the public service, re-entered the house resolved to lift once more

* Mr. Pitt's subsequent resignation of his office, because he found "insurmountable obstacles to the bringing forward of measures of concession to the Catholic body," proved that an unequivocal arrangement had been privately entered into at this crisis. His resumption of office again without redeeming his pledge, only confirmed the impression produced by his conduct on more occasions than one; and established the conviction that the policy of his government in Ireland was regulated not by the unerring rule of principle, but by a convenient sense of expediency.

in the hall, already sacred to his genius, that voice which had raised the oratory of Ireland to the immortal standard of ancient Greece and Rome. He was admirably supported. Sentiments more noble,—a passion more pure and patriotic,—principles more enlightened and profound,—more consummate art, and a power of expression more accomplished, affecting, and sublime, were never delivered in a deliberative assembly; but all was vain. The citadel was undermined, and the brilliancy of this display only served to make the crumbling ruin more painfully distinct. It showed the impossibility of preserving an institution which support and succour so strong and splendid could not avail to maintain. With the Irish parliament Irish independence ceased to exist, and it only remained for Grattan by whose genius it had been occasionally vivified to lament its extinction in words of mournful beauty: “ I watched at its cradle and followed its hearse.”

It will suffice to enumerate here some of the principal means employed to accomplish this great end. Twenty-six new peers were created on the occasion, and twenty old peers advanced to higher titles. Besides nearly one quarter of a million voted by way of damages to persons who had suffered losses in the rebellion, but which, as the payment was left to depend on the good will of commissioners appointed by government, was regarded as a largess to their party, half a million was dedicated to the improvement of inland communication by the means of canals; and nearly one million and a half sterling was given as compensation to the patrons of disfranchised towns and boroughs, as well as to certain holders of public offices whose duties were now dispensed with, and whose profits, as they affirmed themselves, were likely to be diminished by the suppression of the local parliament. Amongst these, was Mr. Foster, the speaker, who was pacified after a strenuous opposition. He consented to surrender quietly upon an annual pension of upwards of £5,000, and a title. Lord Clare who had supported the measure consistently throughout, received a pension of £4,000, which was to be made £5,000 whenever he should resign the great seal. He was also created an earl of the

United Kingdom. That Mr. Foster's pension was a bribe, and Lord Clare's an illegitimate recompense, will be felt by those who bear in mind that the retiring allowances of the English lord high chancellor and the speaker amount to no more than £4,000 a year.

The presence of many radical imperfections appears to be an inalienable property of all Irish measures of improvement. The legislative Union was not exempt from the common fate. An organic change of the greatest magnitude was introduced, unaccompanied by the lesser modifications which were indispensable to its fair and successful action. The design was full of merit, and the execution full of defects. These were quickly detected and strongly exposed. The several articles professing equal terms and principles of government for both countries were denounced, and not without reason, as a specific enumeration of the distinct interests which were to be preserved in each of them for the future. Amongst the more prominent inequalities, stress was laid with much bitterness upon the fact that Great Britain was to retain her Houses of Parliament undiminished, while two-fifteenths of the Irish peers and two-thirds of the Irish House of Commons were for ever extinguished.* The complete and entire union left separate treasuries, exchequers, and different interests in each—separate proportions of expence, separate modes and laws of taxation, separate national debts, and separate sinking funds. Not only in taxes and in revenue, but in trade and manufactures, distinct interests were continued. In corn, the great necessary of life, the project that was to identify and consolidate, retained prohibitions and bounties. The Irish peerage, instead of being placed on a level with the English, was kept a distinct body, and degraded like the Scotch into an inferior order of nobility. In law and in the administration of justice further distinctions were preserved. The Catholics were

* See "Lords' Protest against the Union," signed Leinster, Arran, Mountcashel, Farnham, Belmore, Massey, Strangford, Granard, Ludlow, Moira, R. Waterford and Lismore, Powerscourt, De Vesci, Charlemont, Kingston, Riversdale, Meath, Lismore, Sunderlin. See, also, "Commons Motion for an Address to the Crown," June 6th, 1800.

secretly promised their rights—a promise not kept for nine and twenty years. To sum up the anomalies by naming the most noxious of all: this portion of the United Empire was not only to retain monetary, fiscal and commercial regulations of its own—and these and its weights and measures were to be less convenient than those used in Great Britain—but it was to be governed like a province, by a viceroy and a distinct set of ministers; by which means the old arts of corruption were preserved and the landed oligarchy were still enabled to practise the abuses in which they so fearfully excelled. If we would account for the dissatisfaction and complaints of the Irish, we should couple the length of time that has elapsed since the Union was carried, as the sure means of perfectly consolidating the affairs of the two islands, with the detailed manner in which that measure has been put into operation,—and we should inquire carefully after the official establishments which still remain, either as the memorials of a past independent condition or as the supports of existing divisions. For until the whole plan has been fully accomplished, and the test of experience has been brought to bear upon its perfect action, we are but trying an experiment, and are inflicting an injury upon the one country as well as the other.

Having brought these “Outlines of the History of the Connection between England and Ireland” to a close, it may not be amiss to copy from “Newenham’s View of Ireland,” the public income, expenditure, and debt of the country from the year 1783, which immediately followed the date of the shortlived independence of the Irish parliament, to the year 1800, when it ceased to exist. The figures tell a clear story. In the progressive increase of all the branches of revenue, we see the plain evidence of developed resources and augmented wealth; but in the heavy additions made to the expenditure in the ever growing amount of the pension list, in the vast military establishment, and the enormous accumulation of the national debt, we behold the sad proofs of obstinate misgovernment, and the total failure of the system that produced such results.

ORDINARY REVENUE OF IRELAND.

GROSS RECEIPT.						
Two Years.	Customs, Excise, Loan Duties, &c.	Carriage Duty.	Hearth- money in- cluded in the foregoing Columns.	Stamps.	Post Office.	
2 Years, ending March 25 :						£
1781 . . .	1,863,057	4,629	123,301	53,660		
1783 . . .	2,227,947	7,664	125,824	69,458		
1 Year, ending March 25 :						
1784 . . .	1,227,397	4,917	61,309	34,580		
1785 . . .	1,213,801	5,084	61,380	38,512	27,512	
1786 . . .	1,440,324	6,412	64,106	54,381	42,440	
1787 . . .	1,343,963	9,996	63,425	49,983	44,336	
1788 . . .	1,460,300	11,020	66,750	57,172	44,268	
1789 . . .	1,464,787	12,654	70,625	58,606	46,635	
1790 . . .	1,497,862	16,752	71,909	62,377	46,419	
1791 . . .	1,560,116	17,957	76,983	61,644	50,209	
1792 . . .	1,590,543	17,987	77,358	63,341	52,245	
1793 . . .	1,502,542	17,784	78,996	66,120	55,666	
1794 . . .	1,435,261	17,553	70,274	67,027	59,122	
1795 . . .	1,749,660	18,414	69,725	93,664	60,799	
1796 . . .	2,099,442	23,603	44,386	89,190	67,763	
1797 . . .	1,947,690	22,998	38,104	109,035	68,256	
1798 . . .	2,057,215	24,627	40,249	101,265	78,755	
1799 . . .	2,525,527	43,760	45,078	102,134	79,471	
1800 . . .	3,192,123	51,622	61,777	169,555	84,040	

EXPENDITURE.					
Two Years.	Civil Establish- ment, including Pensions.	Pensions	Military Establish- ment.	Total Ex- penditure, including Extraordi- naries, Par- liamentary Grants, &c.	National Debt.
2 Years, ending March 25 :					£
1781 . . .	328,502	85,456	920,224	1,883,178	1,554,125
1783 . . .	343,635	91,375	898,620	2,239,783	2,034,953
1 Year, ending March 25 :					
1784 . . .	174,918	93,252	429,686	1,233,061	1,997,417
1785 . . .	187,145	97,366	480,727	1,068,729	2,157,031
1786 . . .	193,272	96,881	504,320	1,236,328	2,300,671
1787 . . .	197,727	104,844	501,289	1,384,933	2,296,706
1788 . . .	197,515	101,565	506,047	1,383,022	2,362,847
1789 . . .	206,174	99,870	535,093	1,406,270	2,477,425
1790 . . .	207,808	102,129	535,086	1,436,164	2,244,652
1791 . . .	206,389	101,936	536,331	1,490,624	2,271,280
1792 . . .	208,430	104,495	541,351	1,448,734	2,240,637
1793 . . .	213,753	122,760	586,078	1,592,767	2,219,694
1794 . . .	214,666	120,172	978,818	2,028,055	3,760,508
1795 . . .	267,760	119,075	1,362,385	2,636,302	4,206,313
1796 . . .	265,172	116,683	1,804,376	3,455,671	5,958,591
1797 . . .	264,075	114,444	1,891,967	3,689,484	9,413,501
1798 . . .	261,683	113,819	3,612,424	5,476,637	11,732,299
1799 . . .	259,444	168,403	3,430,596	7,086,635	13,427,026
1800 . . .	258,819	172,405	4,965,122	7,023,166	25,293,679

END OF HISTORICAL OUTLINES.

CHAPTER XIV.

PUBLIC WORKS AND JOINT-STOCK ENTERPRISES.

INTRODUCTION.—GENERAL PRINCIPLES.—THE GOVERNMENT SYSTEM, AND THE ARGUMENTS UPON WHICH IT IS BASED.—NATURE OF THE EVILS IT HAS PRODUCED.—NUMBER, HISTORY, AND STATISTICS OF THE JOINT-STOCK COMPANIES MAINTAINING PUBLIC WORKS.—GRANTS AND LOANS OF MONEY TO AID THEM.—OFFICIAL BOARDS APPOINTED TO DIRECT AND CONTROL THEM.—DIRECTORS GENERAL OF INLAND NAVIGATION.—COMMISSIONERS OF PUBLIC WORKS.—PROGRESS OF TRAVELLING.—RAILWAYS.—GENERAL PROSPECTS.

“The Statesman who should attempt to direct private people in what manner they ought to employ their capitals, would not only load himself with a most unnecessary attention, but assume an authority which could be safely trusted, not only to no single person, but to no council or senate whatever, and which would no where be so dangerous as in the hands of a man who had folly and presumption enough to fancy himself fit to exercise it.”—**WEALTH OF NATIONS**, Book IV., Chap. ii.

THE progress of modern civilization has been mainly expedited by three great moving powers—the sword, the gospel, and municipal corporations. Each of these has had its critical stage, and all three are at this moment less effective than they have hitherto been in directing the course, and influencing the good or evil of passing events. The sword established fiefs and feudal dominion ;—the barbarous excesses of this form of arbitrary power were tempered first, and gradually subdued by the gospel. But from the gospel sprung the church, which, becoming despotic and martial in its turn, exacted from its vassals military service, as well as ecclesiastical duty and pecuniary tribute. Against the rapid advancement of these two interests,—against the lord of the soil and the ruler of the conscience ;—against the harsh prince, who sometimes made but oftener marred the happiness of mankind

in this world, and the unctious prelate who dispensed happiness in the world to come,—the merchant, tradesman and mechanic erected, with indescribable perseverance and indomitable spirit, a sufficient barrier, and saved their common labour and its profits from being despoiled by the feudal chief, and the bishop possessed of feudal rights. Rallying energetically together, and assigning to each other their respective ranks and rights, the early municipal corporations raised a bulwark which resisted the combined assaults of every form of tyranny—royal, noble, ecclesiastical and military,—and which survived the desperate shocks and the incessant wear and tear of centuries of oppression and change. The success with which this effort was crowned, rendered these institutions not merely the centres and supports of political liberty, but the main-springs of local improvement, the examples and incentives of adventurous enterprise and prosperous confederation. They proved the cradles of industry, the homes of the arts, the strongholds of wealth; and they taught mankind almost in every instance, that the true levers and steadiest producers of independence and fortune are the resolute and untiring reliance of every man upon his own exertions, or, where separate action is inadequate, the junction of all to effect for the general good what the hands of an individual are too weak to accomplish. The force of this truth led to the discovery of another,—that the progress of improvement, to be legitimate and enduring, should invariably be the work of the people, and never be solicited as a boon, or accepted as a reward from the government.

In Ireland modern civilization advanced at a pace and in a manner different from those which marked or shaped its course in the other countries of Europe. The modification of the feudal system imposed upon Ireland rose to a greater height, and endured to a later date, than any other known to western Europe. Monarchy was firmly established, and the forms of civil government were broadly defined in England, France, Spain, the Netherlands and Italy, when the house of Desmond waged the feudal war with Elizabeth, in which the head of that potent race was ignominiously slain by a common

soldier. A principal cause, perhaps, of the longer duration, as well as the more barbaric splendour of the dominion under which that palatine and a few other feudal lords so rudely prospered, is to be ascribed to the partial resistance offered to their sway by the church. That circumstance undoubtedly contributed much to the strength and continuance of the feudal principle in Ireland, and much also to the weakness of the English crown.

The want of municipal corporations also favoured it; for although these institutions were called into existence at an early period of the connection with England, they were ill-formed, inefficient, and scarcely in a single instance the patrons of freedom, industry, the arts, manufactures, commerce, or local improvement. Until within the last three years, they have been upon a scale so very limited, and a form so imperfect, as to have neither proved the exponents nor the agents of the public sense of what was either desirable or necessary in the way of useful measures. To those who examine their history, they will appear to have retarded rather than to have promoted the improvement of their respective localities, or the development of the resources, whether general or particular, of the country at large. Instituted originally by the English invaders, the Irish of former days were excluded from them: more recently the Roman Catholics, though legally admissible, were practically denied their right to belong to them; in our own day only have men of all political opinions, and every form of religious worship, been fairly introduced to participate in the distinctions they confer, and contribute to the good they are calculated to create. The great bulk of the population has thus had no share of municipal power, from the original date of the first English charter down to the close of the year 1841. To this depressing circumstance, unquestionably, is to be attributed no small portion of the backward state of the country at large, and the awkwardness of not a few efforts made from time to time by individuals to turn their own energies and the capabilities of the soil to a good account, by means of public works and the promotion of undertakings

for developing the national resources and increasing the employment of the people.

For men who have had no experience in the habit of self-government—who have not enjoyed an opportunity of bettering the condition of their own immediate locality, by consulting and co-operating with their equals—who have never been roused to enlarge their views by conducting enterprises of this useful description with economy and effect,—must be admitted to be ill-adapted, or rather wholly unprepared for the noble avocations by which the accomplished spirit and disciplined industry of long-established mercantile and municipal institutions have elsewhere, by a combination of superior advantages, so extensively added to the means of human happiness and fortune. The citizen accustomed to take part in measures of internal improvement, acquires a sound habit of consulting the interests of the community to which he belongs while promoting his own advantage : from this the moral as well as the pecuniary gain is large. He learns that men better their fortunes as they improve the place in which they seek to make them. He is thus taught to feel that the public prosperity is the true standard of his private fortune ; and that if the one is not secured, the other cannot be safely retained, even when it has been meritoriously acquired.

In Ireland, however, this knowledge is even now in a state of infancy. In no other country of the world, claiming the privilege of free government, have the people been systematically shut out from the opportunity, and debarred of the occasion, of indulging in salutary exercises and improving avocations of this kind. For a long period of her history, the chief misfortune of the country was to be detected in the positive inability of the government to do any thing. A reaction at last took place ; and, for more than a century, it has been the just complaint of all reasonable minds, that the government has insisted upon doing every thing. Between these two extremes the people have always been heavy sufferers. From time to time they have aspired to do much for themselves, but they have always been prevented ; or, if ever

allowed to occupy themselves in measures of local improvement, they have been held in leading-strings like children, and forced to move puppetways, as the fastidious notions of the few Englishmen happened to prescribe, who have time out of mind been the only persons entrusted with the administration of Irish affairs. How much has been lost, and how little gained by this course of senseless dictation and impertinent meddling, will, to some extent, appear in the sketch now about to be given—a sketch in which it will be seen, that the vicissitudes naturally incidental to the progress of all public works have been enormously aggravated in Ireland by the policy adopted with regard to them by successive ministers—a policy doubly injurious, inasmuch as while it steadily upheld the system of government interference, it frequently changed the mode of that interference. That government would interfere, appeared always certain; but how the government would interfere, was always uncertain. To such a length has inconsistency gone in this respect, that each man, as he has succeeded to office, seems not only to have felt himself bound to differ with his predecessor, but with himself also. There is scarcely a single undertaking of the class now under consideration, in the history of which repeated instances have not occurred of the most contradictory proceedings upon the part of the government—and in which the most decisive evidence has not been afforded, that no one principle of political economy, and not the slightest observance of a sound and steady system, are to be expected to result from the way in which these things have hitherto been conducted.

The case is so extreme and hopeless, that to reform the system—if, indeed, system it can be called—altogether, will hardly suffice. The cause must be uprooted—and that cause is the vain and pernicious establishment of a separate form of government for an integral portion of the United Empire. It is a strong reason in favour of the absolute necessity of abolishing it, that its chief organs are obliged to descend from their sphere, in order to find something to do. This is a conclusive proof that such a form of government is unnecessary. There is, in reality, not enough of proper or legitimate admi-

nistrative business to occupy the time of the retained functionaries, and to satisfy the appetites of their craving dependents. The consequence is, that work, patronage, and places are sought and found in directions where, strictly speaking, the hands of power ought not to be extended. Thus is the wholesome action of an energetic community prevented from developing itself. In its stead, the slow and deadening process of an impure ministerial agency is set in motion ; under which no one person or project is suffered to stand upon its own merits. One and all are driven to rely for success upon the grace of the government of the day. That partial support, if the suppliant be artful and abject enough, is often to be obtained, but it is seldom to be retained for any length of time. Plausibly as the favourite may have argued in private, the public eye quickly detects, and the public discontent loudly denounces the unseemly exercise of party power. In order to avoid the opposition of the just, or the hostility of rival claimants, the job is made to struggle into life, curtailed of half the powers and privileges upon which its deluded promoters had founded their chimerical hopes. Confusion follows quickly upon the heels of disappointment ; men of character and real property, with the exception of a few enthusiasts, withdraw from the venture—distress ensues—and a long series of misfortunes is painfully evolved.

Such, in a few words, is an abstract of the history and present state of public works and private enterprises in Ireland. The leading characters of the country, warned by repeated failures, have, for a length of time, laid it down as a rule, to avoid, as a certain source of loss, the slightest connection with projects for the improvement of the country. Joint-stock companies are no where held in lower estimation by the only persons qualified to conduct them with good effect—experience men of independent minds and unincumbered capital. But the government, though constantly at fault, is continually importuned to interfere, and being generally unpopular, it is often unable to resist the temptation to curry popular favour by illegitimate avocations. Establishments, alike ill-conceived and ill-conducted, have thus been fostered, by some in simple

folly, by others in sheer knavery, under the specious pretence of directing and assisting private enterprise in developing the resources of the country, and bettering the condition of the people. As it is impossible to go right in a wrong direction, these have necessarily furnished innumerable grounds of serious complaint, and produced effects of the most depressing and injurious character.

And so it must always be—so must the people continue to be poor and discontented while kept every way dependent—while debarred the wholesome liberty and strengthening discipline of applying the accruing profits of business, and the accumulations of industry, to create new avocations, and open out fresh sources of emolument, as their own self-improving spirit and the energy of successful experience may suggest. So must it always be, on the other hand, while the chief occupation of the local government that restrains and impoverishes them, consists in fashioning out, in filling with abject dependents, and feeding with the public money, pompous institutions for taking all measures out of the hands of those who, in a free country, are the fittest to perform them.

In Ireland the government monopoly of every thing of this kind has been penetrating and rigid beyond all example. If it is to be matched any where, it can only be in China. There is not a single department or office of private enterprise for which a government board has not been set up, with a liberal staff of officers and clerks, with good salaries, and the royal arms on all the seals. As stated in Chap. I., you cannot offer to make a road, improve a navigation, drain a marsh, cut a canal, construct a railway, pave a street, or light a town with gas, but you are stopped by a government board already established to point out to all men how in such cases they shall proceed;—or by a government commission appointed to furnish the necessary excuse for putting you down upon authority as a presumptuous adventurer, ignorant of the matter with which you are meddling, and every way unqualified to compete with the intelligence and acquirements of men selected by government as the only competent persons to be entrusted with the task of informing the country that no undertaking of

the kind can be so well understood, or so efficiently accomplished as by a government officer, with a cabinet minister as his patron, and the treasury as his paymaster. Thus, at every turn, and upon all occasions, the powers that be fail not to extend their guardian care, and overpower with officious assistance. Either by a commission to inquire, or a board to execute, her majesty's loyal subjects in Ireland are sure to be spared the trouble of thinking and acting for themselves wherever it happens to be the peculiar province of the community to provide as it seems best for the attainment of objects which are exclusively and pre-eminently its own. Hence it is that in Ireland a man with some money and time at his disposal, and a turn for useful exertion, is driven to be a place-hunter by the force of circumstances. For unless he can prevail upon the government to employ him, he is doomed to perpetual inactivity. No matter what his talents, or what his resources ; —no matter what pursuits, an apt ability, or adequate powers may incite him to engage in, he finds the ground pre-occupied by a government board : he finds this board attempting every thing, and improving nothing, of which all the patronage and profit are not wholly its own ; and thus, ere long, he abandons the vain idea of bettering his country or himself, disgusted as often by the indifference as by the conceit of the heads of office, or thwarted by the manœuvres of their jealous dependents who dread in the progress of independent talent the subversion of the wretched system upon which they have contrived to raise themselves to good salaries and some rank in the tinsel suite of the second-hand royalty of Ireland.

And, wretched, indeed, is that system,—spreading everywhere like an epidemic, and corrupting everything with which it connects itself. To its paralyzing consequences, much of the evil under which Ireland deeply suffers, is to be traced. The prominent place assigned in these pages to the subject-matter of this chapter, proceeds from a deliberate conviction, that, however grave the causes and heavy the influence of other distresses, the mischief produced by the manner in which the public works of Ireland have long been mismanaged, constitutes an evil so gross, as to be perilous to the well-being of the

country, and subversive of the wisest plans for its improvement. The danger, moreover, is made greater, by the seductive appearance given to the successive schemes and the commanding position of the principal supporters of the system under which they are produced.

A liberal application of capital to develop the resources of Ireland, is one of the oldest and most captivating panaceas for the cure of the manifold disorders of the country : the minister, therefore, who advances the public money largely for such an object is sure to be popular,—and with none more so than with members of the House of Lords and members of the House of Commons possessing extensive properties in Ireland ; and the various sets of professional men deriving emolument from the liberal sums expended under this sounding title. But if there were no other reason for questioning the policy of voting grants or loans, as they have hitherto been voted, to encourage public works, than is afforded by an attentive observation of the conduct of these very parties, and the address with which they constantly turn the public aid to their private succour, enough would be discovered to startle the most sceptical, and confound the confidence of those who rely so strongly on the hope of deriving good from such a source.

True, it is, that the slightest allusion to any department is quickly met in either House by some well-turned compliments to the gentleman at the head of it. The distinction with which he served his country before he was appointed to his present situation, and the anxiety he invariably displays to render his post efficient, and to promote the interests of the country are extolled with equal cordiality, by peers of the realm, by titled placemen, and members of counties and boroughs. Praise from persons of their rank and property imposes upon the public ear—it is supposed to be disinterested. No man willingly suspects the patriot whose name is always identified with measures of amelioration,—who, if a public work is proposed, and a preliminary survey is desired, proves one of the first to subscribe towards the expense of it ; and who, when the undertaking has been fiatcd by authority, and one half of the required capital is to be borne by the country, will put down

his name for £1,000, and perhaps more, in order to expedite the project through its remaining stages. And yet, mortifying confession ! these improvers, in nine cases out of ten, are only actuated by selfish motives ; their eulogy is one of the many forms of political gratitude—a lively sense of benefits to come, inspired by the memory of benefits that have been received. One has had money for a road,—another for a bridge or a pier,—a third for a reclamation of waste land ; and each has his desirable improvement still to carry out. How can they, then, abstain from praising the policy by which they hope to profit ? They are patriots animated by that strong love of country which invariably takes a lucrative turn. It has too often been remarked, that he who begins by subscribing £100 for the survey of a public work, generally ends by carrying it into the heart of his own estate ; and if he happens to follow up his first contribution by adding, as has occasionally happened, £1,000 towards its completion, £10,000 at least of the public money comes to be eventually expended upon his property.

If this general statement be not enough, and particular evidence is still desired of the improper influence required to procure good measures under the existing administration of public works, it will perhaps be enough to mention that when the Whigs held office, two leading members of the party, locally interested, succeeded in obtaining nearly £700,000 for the improvement of the river Shannon ; and that now that the Tories are in power, a leading Tory, also locally interested, has obtained a survey of the Blackwater at the public expense. A number of cases, even more specific, are to be met with in the annual reports of the commissioners, where peers and private gentlemen may be distinctly traced in the receipt of large sums of public money for personal objects. Year after year the items have run plainly enough,—to such a one, "for improving his estate," so many thousand pounds ;—to such a one, "for draining his land," so many thousand pounds ;—to such a one, "for working a mine," so many thousand pounds ;—to such a one, "for making a road" through his estate, so many thousand pounds ;—to such a one, "for building a pier" on his estate, so many thousand pounds,

&c. &c. How neat a machinery of political corruption may thus be set to work,—how aptly the wasting strength of party warfare may thus be recruited,—how reluctant votes may thus be won over, and the public service may be shamefully abused, while large personal fortunes are unblushingly realized, can require no explanation here. As little can it be necessary to point out that this is neither a just nor a substantial development of the resources of the country, but a foul and scandalous sustainment of private advantages subversive of all public virtue and national improvement. The value of such resources in the hands of an adroit and sedulous manœuvrer may be estimated by the assertion of close observers, who do not hesitate to declare, that there are not a few estates in Ireland the rentals of which have been doubled by a cunningly contrived application of the public money to their improvement in the manner here adverted to.

These mercenary practices have not been of recent origin. The writer of the MS.* “Account of Ireland,” in the British Museum, repeatedly quoted from in Chapter XII., observes, under the date of 1753, “as a redundancy in the treasury had occasioned so much discussion and dispute, it seemed now determined that the same cause of contest should never occur again. For this purpose the House of Commons now began to appropriate a considerable part of the additional duties to their own use. This was done under the pretence of encouraging public works, such as inland navigation, collieries, and manufactories of different kinds. But the truth is that most of the public works were private jobs carried on under the direction and for the advantage of some considerable gentlemen of the House of Commons. By this means the parliamentary leaders perfectly answered their own views —they gratified their friends, impoverished the treasury, and

* When this manuscript was first quoted in this work, the author's name was not given in the catalogues of the King's Library; it has since been added. The writer was Sir George, afterwards Earl Macartney, who was Irish secretary at the commencement of Lord Townshend's lieutenancy, and is better known as the author of the “Journal of an Embassy to China.”

kept government under a constant necessity of asking supplies. By repeated jobbing the purpose was effected, and what is most unaccountable, government seemed to acquiesce in it without complaining." The statements made in this chapter, and the further details still to be given, will abundantly prove that the example set by the Irish parliament in this respect has been keenly followed up and excelled by an unbroken succession of Irish members in the British legislature.

Precisely the same ideas were expressed upon the subject by Lord Clare in his celebrated Union speech. "But the Commons took effectual care that the question should not occur a second time, by appropriating every future surplus to their private use under the specious pretence of local public improvements. Windmills and watermills, and canals and bridges, and spinning-jennies were provided at the public expense; and the parliamentary patrons of these great national objects were entrusted with full discretionary powers over the money granted to complete them. From this system of improvement a double advantage arose to the Irish aristocracy: it kept their followers steady in the ranks, and, by reducing the crown to the necessity of calling for supplies, made the political services of the leaders necessary for the support of government. But the precedent was fatal, and a system has gradually been built upon it which would beat down the most powerful nation of the earth."

This system served Lord Clare with an argument for the Union, but its abuses were continued in full play long after the Union was carried. Parliamentary loans and grants, in aid of public works and for the employment of the poor, up to our own time, have either been treated as bounties to the landed interest, or have been distributed, with a very few moderate exceptions, as favours and rewards amongst the political partisans of the government of the day, or applied to the improvement of districts in which persons of that description have held large possessions.

Parliamentary jobbers, and improvers of their own properties out of the national funds have not constituted the only

noxious body thus engendered. An impudent race of unprincipled pretenders sprung up as soon as it became understood that the gleanings of this political harvest yielded large profits to those who were hired to reap it. As political influence decided the merits of almost every project, the profits of working each in its turn were dropped as prizes into the laps of adroit political agents. Whole families have thus made fortunes by nothing but trading in government grants and public works. While such plotters flourished, no measure, however beneficial, had the least chance of success, without official patronage in the first instance. The jackals of the jobs thus fastened upon the treasury, were not slow in teaching the dependants and instruments of the Castle of Dublin how much it would be to their interest also if all undertakings of this class were to become, in one shape or other, government concerns. Mercenary combinations quickly followed; every thing was meddled with, but nothing flourished. These men—and their race is not yet extinct—have eaten like locusts into the heart of the public good in Ireland. Insidious, plausible, insatiable, and ever sedulously alive to gain, they have equally been remarkable for their advocacy of the cause of national improvement, and for the large sums which they have obtained under the pretence of advancing it. Destitute of honour, and incapable of party attachment, they have marked every new administration upon its accession to office as their prey, and made it their especial policy to render themselves agreeable or serviceable to it early in its career. Once their talons are fixed, they take a firm grasp, which they never relax while there is a boon to be granted, or a shilling to be expended. They have been the creatures of all governments, and have used each in its turn to their selfish purposes. Successive administrations have decayed and broken down, while these, the parasites of their power, have clung, like ivy, to the ruin, the only green and flourishing spots upon the extending waste. They have touched everything, and nothing has prospered in their hands, or been profitable to any persons but themselves; and yet such has

been their address, or the infatuation of almost every minister in Ireland, that they continue to enjoy constant regard, and are pluralists of the most lucrative offices and employments in the country. With them government mines, government canals, government navigations, government roads, and government railways, have always been favorite objects of praise and attachment. In this way the country has been made to bear the loss of millions; enormous prizes have been won in the great lottery of jobs, and proportionate gains have accrued to the flatterers and retainers of those through whose weak and partial hands these profuse applications of the national resources have passed. Nothing has been too high for their ambition, or too low for their avarice; they have taken £500 for working a quarry, and half a million for improving a navigation. Carefully and minutely should their professions and conduct be studied by all persons who, to borrow the words of one of the oldest and most painstaking of Irish statistical writers, "would represent the most natural causes of the poverty of the country, by discovering, not only the grand robbers of its treasure, but the lesser thieves that creep in at every window, and pilfer every house, and pick every pocket, whereby, not only the noble and wealthy, but the mean and poor are daily made poorer."*

Passing from these illustrations of the manner in which the integrity of public men has been sullied, and the national energies have been abused, and ascending to the higher considerations by which the general question is governed in other countries, we shall not find ourselves in want of evidence to confirm the reasonableness of the opinions already forced upon us. The superior efficacy of private enterprise over a government administration, as the proper medium for conducting the public works of a free people to a successful issue, is strongly sustained by almost every argument and example applicable to the subject.† It seems as if it were part of the genius of a constitution like ours, that great public works

* "The Interest of Ireland," by Richard Lawrence.

† This, and some other passages in the present chapter, appeared in a pamphlet published by the author in 1839, on Railways and Public Works in Ireland.

should belong, not to the government, but to private parties. We may even go farther, and, extending the proposition generally, maintain, that exactly as a government is, in its form and administration, absolute and tyrannical, it is well fitted for the execution of public works on a large scale ; but on the other hand, exactly as the institutions of a country are liberal and representative, the people are sure to surpass the government in all the labours of original speculation, and the prosperous conduct of undertakings which demand for their accomplishment the spirit of bold adventure, an ardent energy, and the excitement produced by calculations of considerable profit. Looking not only at the progress of public works, but also at the development of all those useful inventions by which society has been most benefitted and enriched in England and in America, we perceive that private enterprise has invariably taken the lead and obtained by far the most splendid results. The joint-stock canals, docks, and railways of England and the United States, far exceed in number and value any corresponding works projected or completed by the executive authorities in either country, while they exhibit the continental governments in a state of comparative depression and insignificance. So irresistible has been the pressure of this truth, that even in France, where the fear of democratic innovation imposes severe restrictions upon the liberty of the subject, extensive powers in the projection, support, and management of public works, are conceded to the people. Although a political crisis enforced the construction of railways upon the state in Belgium, efficient provision is made to secure to the community full permission to make and maintain at their own risk all other public works, as they may deem them to be for their advantage.* But in Ireland the exercise of similar privileges has not been tolerated. There the people, however free in other respects, have never been free in this one. The government has uniformly interfered, and its interference has always embarrassed.

In manufactures, again—in gas, in steam—the world owes

* There is an interesting account of the Belgian system of public works, in "Measures for Ireland," by A. H. Lynch, Esq., M.P. *Lond: 1839.*

almost every thing to private enterprise, and little or nothing to its governments. England devoted for a series of years her ample resources in men and money to resolve the problem of a north-west passage. Successive expeditions tried the experiment without effect, when the humble servants of a private company stepped in and made the discovery at a single but most wonderful effort.

Should it not then be received as a settled doctrine, that the government of this country is, by its very nature, incapable of managing extensive undertakings, which, to be completed with skill, economy, and the desired effect, demand years of the most exact superintendence, and the sensitive cares of a penetrating and tenacious self-interest? Are not these views fully warranted by the history, so peculiarly discouraging, of all our government undertakings of this kind? Where has the executive stepped in for the purpose of taking the place of private enterprise, and attempted to accomplish objects which our habits have made the peculiar province of the people, without encountering utter failure? The more we examine the multitudinous avocations, and the ever-fluctuating interests of the government of such a state as ours, the more convinced we must feel that the minister of the day is wholly incapable of that persevering labour and close attention to details, of that warm sympathy and hearty identification with the object pursued—joint offsprings of the hope of fame and emolument—which these proceedings imperatively require. As little is it possible to establish a firm and constant subordinate agency, unshaken and uninjured by the frequent shocks and interruptions to which it is sure to be exposed, and really independent of the varying influences which the lapse of a few years will be sure to bring to bear upon it. We change the mind of the deputy when displacing the principal, upon whom he depends for support, and by whom he must at all times be directed; we substitute for the man who has always thought highly of a particular measure, an opponent who has always been of opinion that it was a mistake from the beginning, and can only involve in discredit the department to which it belongs.

If sceptics are still to be found upon the subject they should be referred to Ireland, where cases are to be met with so numerous and strong as to be overwhelming. Out of Ireland, amongst others to be specially noticed, is the Caledonian canal, projected some forty years ago, by Telford, prosecuted by the government, and unfinished to this hour. Upwards of a million sterling had been applied to this work, and in 1837 its patrons were reduced to an unprecedented dilemma. They were called upon to answer a question no less difficult than this :—Can we do better than to discontinue the navigation and destroy the works altogether ? The walls, long in a state of imminent insecurity, were falling in in some places, and threatening a general inundation. Mr. Walker, President of the Society of Engineers, reported to the treasury that, if the canal was to be kept open at all, there could be no doubt as to the propriety of executing extensive repairs, which would cost a further sum of £129,317. After that expenditure, vessels would take from three to four or five weeks to pass through the canal, which is only 60 miles long ! To expedite so slow a transit, it was proposed that five steam tugs should be procured, which would make the additional sum required, £150,000. The average annual tonnage navigating this canal was then about 25,000 tons, which is about $2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. of the whole trade of the Pentland Forth. The canal was intended for frigates, but vessels of the smallest class only attempt the use of it, as it is confessedly inadequate to large ones. The gross annual receipts have never exceeded £2,500, while the expense of maintenance and repairs amounts to £3,000. If all the £150,000 were expended, it would still take days to navigate the 60 miles. To finish the picture, Mr. Walker stated that it would cost just as much to destroy the canal as to repair it ; and to complete the string of perplexities, if it was neither destroyed nor repaired, the country would be inundated, and whole districts full of property would be ruined ! After two years of deliberation, it was determined, in 1842, to adopt Mr. Walker's plan of repairs and spend £300,000 more.

The Rideau canal, in Canada, teaches just the same

lesson. The original estimate for that work was only £150,000, but it has actually cost £900,000, and is, even now, unavailable for the uses it was intended to serve. But without travelling to the colonies, let us look at the Holyhead roads and harbour. These were constructed by government, at an enormous expense, aided by some of our most eminent engineers, with the view of making that line the main stream of communication between London and Dublin. But it never once has been able to compete with Liverpool. There the superior energy of private wealth has overcome the natural difficulties of a bad port and long sea voyage, and drawn all the Irish trade to the inconvenient Mersey.

The rapid extension of railways during the last ten or twelve years, has suggested some formidable ideas of a very contradictory nature to many persons. Negligence and usurpation, mismanagement and extortion, are charges often brought against the system under which they have been produced. It must be confessed that we have no reason to ascribe perfection to that system—on the contrary, it is impossible to resist the force of the evidence which goes to show that the public convenience has not been as fully or as satisfactorily consulted in many of these undertakings as their respective circumstances admitted. But although this may have been the case in several instances, he would be a very precipitate reformer of abuses who would leap to the conclusion that the only proper way of correcting existing or prospective evils is to take all such works out of the hands of private companies and transfer them absolutely to government. For, unquestionably, the pressure of public opinion against any grievances that may be inflicted while they are conducted by individuals, must in almost every instance prove invincible. As they are now circumstanced, the community at large unites itself in one compact and overwhelming body to resist any wrong, and put down any usurpation that may be threatened by the partial monopolies it has called into existence for its own advantage. The government, too, in the present state of things, enjoys a counteracting influence, which it will be generally found disposed to bring to the public relief the moment a pro-

per case for interference is made out. This has been pointedly evinced by the prompt enactment of the successive laws which have already consulted the public accommodation and safety by placing all railways under the supervision and controul of a particular department of the board of trade. But if we change the system that prevails, and hand over all the railways in the empire to be made and managed by government, we may happen to realize the fable of the frogs who desired a king. Instead of the public, arrayed against a small body of individuals, we shall have the public divided against itself, and ultimately crushed by a power of predominant weight. Our railways, like our post-office, as a government enterprise, would be made a source of revenue to the exchequer, and of considerable patronage to the minister. Every complaint against the government system of railways would be construed into a censure of the administration of the day, and every attempt to procure a reduction of the government charges for travelling would be opposed, as the general effort lately was opposed to cheapen the high rates of postage under which every branch of the national industry had so long been suffering.*

* Amongst those who contend for a government board to make and maintain railways, no point has been more strongly urged in the attempt to establish a case, than the expediency of settling by a competent authority the breadth of way and various other scientific details, so as to render them fixed and uniform, and to enforce the adoption of the best upon every line under commensurate penalties. But the policy of such an interference with the progress of improvement seems to be very questionable. If every new line we may have to make is to be, necessarily, a counterpart of the lines already in existence, we are not likely to advance beyond the point of excellence at which we may be considered to have already arrived. If we leave companies free to effect improvements as skill and experience may suggest, we may rest assured that ingenious experiments will be frequently made, and that they will be frequently successful. If you lay down one rule and form, from which there shall be no digression, you forbid experiment—you forbid improvement—you degenerate, in short. A good conveyance, at convenient times, the public has a right to demand; but the introduction of a power to determine, *ex cathedra*, whether that conveyance shall be on rails of this or that form, or at this or that breadth of way, could not fail to prove as injurious as it would certainly be vexatious and puerile. If such an authority had been in existence when the Great Western line was in a course of construction, Mr. Brunel's inventions and particularly the wide gauge, would in all probability have been interdicted. In the only instances, moreover, where official intelligence has been brought to bear upon this very detail, contra-

When the turnpike-road system was coming into general use, it was assailed, as every successful improvement is invariably assailed, by much of the same sort of clamour and objection as we now find levelled against our incipient railway system. Adam Smith notices, in his "Wealth of Nations," how, then, as now, the government was called on to interfere, and how the people were told that government, if it took the turnpike-roads into its own hands, could not only make them better and more cheaply than private parties, but also how it would derive a certain revenue for the state from them. The passages in which Adam Smith disposes of these suggestions, bear pertinently upon the present discussion, and will be found full of instruction.

"In Great Britain, the abuses which the trustees have committed in the management of those tolls, have, in many cases, been very justly complained of. At many turnpikes, it has been said, the money levied is more than double of what is necessary for executing, in the completest manner, the work which is often executed in a very slovenly manner, and sometimes not executed at all. The system of repairing the high roads by tolls of this kind, it must be observed, is not of very long standing. We should not wonder, therefore, if it has not yet been brought to that degree of perfection of which it seems capable. If mean and improper persons are frequently appointed trustees; and if proper courts of inspection and account have not yet been established for controlling their conduct, and for reducing the tolls to what is barely sufficient for executing the work to be done by them; the recency of the institution both accounts and apologizes for those defects, of which, by the wisdom of parliament, the greater part may, in due time, be gradually remedied.

"The money levied at the different turnpikes in Great Britain is supposed to exceed so much what is necessary for repairing the roads, that the savings, which, with proper economy, might be made from it, have

dictory decisions have been pronounced. There are only three railways in Ireland, and a government board has been more or less consulted upon the subject of the breadth of way for each of them, and yet they all differ. Sir J. Burgoyne and the board of works approved the plans of the Dublin and Kingstown railway; in 1837 the same officer and the Irish railway commissioners recommended another gauge for general adoption, and upon that the Belfast and Portadown railway was constructed. In 1843, however, Sir John Burgoyne and his brother commissioners decided in the case of the Dublin and Drogheda railway in favour of a third gauge, so that in Ireland the gauge of every railway made has been fixed upon after deliberate inquiry by official authority, and the consequent benefit enjoyed by the country is a different gauge upon each!

been considered, even by some ministers, as a very great resource which might, at some time or another, be applied to the exigencies of the state. Government, it has been said, by taking the management of the turnpikes into its own hands, and by employing the soldiers, who would work for a very small addition to their pay, could keep the roads in good order at a much less expense than it can be done by trustees, who have no other workmen to employ, but such as derive their whole subsistence from their wages. A great revenue, half a million, perhaps, it has been pretended, might in this manner be gained without laying any new burden upon the people; and the turnpike roads might be made to contribute to the general expense of the state, in the same manner as the post-office does at present.

“That a considerable revenue might be gained in this manner, I have no doubt, though, probably, not near so much as the projectors of this plan have supposed. The plan itself, however, seems liable to several very important objections.

First, if the tolls which are levied at the turnpikes should ever be considered as one of the resources for supplying the exigencies of the state, they would certainly be augmented as those exigencies were supposed to require. According to the policy of Great Britain, therefore, they would probably be augmented very fast. The facility with which a great revenue could be drawn from them, would probably encourage the administration to recur very frequently to this resource. Though it may, perhaps, be more than doubtful whether half a million could, by any economy, be saved out of the present tolls, it can scarce be doubted but that a million might be saved out of them, if they were doubled; and, perhaps, two millions, if they were tripled. This great revenue, too, might be levied without the appointment of a single new officer to collect and receive it. But the turnpike tolls being continually augmented in this manner, instead of facilitating the inland commerce of the country, as at present, would soon become a very great encumbrance upon it. The expense of transporting all heavy goods from one part of the country to another, would soon be so much increased, the market for all such goods, consequently, would soon be so much narrowed, that their production would be, in a great measure, discouraged, and the most important branches of the domestic industry of the country annihilated altogether.

Secondly, a tax upon carriages in proportion to their weight, though a very equal tax when applied to the sole purpose of repairing the roads, is a very unequal one when applied to any other purpose, or to supply the common exigencies of the state. When it is applied to the sole purpose above mentioned, each carriage is supposed to pay exactly for the wear and tear which that carriage occasions of the roads. But when it is applied to any other purpose, each carriage is supposed to pay for more than that wear and tear, and contributes to the supply of some other exigency of the state. But as the turnpike toll raises the price of goods in pro-

portion to their weight, and not to their value, it is chiefly paid by the consumers of coarse and bulky, not by those of precious and light, commodities. Whatever exigency of the state, therefore, this tax might be intended to supply, that exigency would be chiefly supplied at the expense of the poor, not of the rich; at the expense of those who are least able to supply it, not of those who are most able.

"Thirdly, if government should at any time neglect the reparation of the high roads, it would be still more difficult than it is at present to compel the proper application of any part of the turnpike tolls. A large revenue might thus be levied upon the people, without any part of it being applied to the only purpose to which a revenue levied in this manner ought ever to be applied. If the meanness and poverty of the trustees of turnpike-roads render it sometimes difficult at present to oblige them to repair their wrong, their wealth and greatness would render it ten times more so in the case which is here supposed."—*Wealth of Nations*, Book v. c. i.

The provisions introduced into the recent acts for the control and regulation of railways, have put an end to an objection not unfrequently urged against those modes of communication. It used to be said that as railways must soon put down all other public conveyances, the travelling of the country will necessarily fall into the hands of the companies, who will then have the power of imposing such charges as they may please. This apprehension can no longer exist, but even when it was most reasonably expressed the essential distinction between a high road and a railway was seldom borne in view. A high road is public property—not solely by reason of its public utility, but because the land through or near which it passes and the public are rated to its support. A railway, on the contrary, is constructed by private capital only, and the proprietors rely for their profit upon the receipts to be obtained from travellers who find it their interest to avail themselves of the superior accommodation it affords. Above all, it should not be forgotten, that, if the railway is introduced, the high road is also maintained as of old, for the convenience of all those whose means or inclination may dispose them to prefer it. The public, therefore, has a double option, and gains one great advantage without losing another. Had the railway companies demanded the suppression, or could they altogether supersede the common roads, the people would then be entitled

to such rights on the railways as they now possess on the high roads of the kingdom, but not otherwise.

In short, what the public really wants, and properly calls for, is, not a government board to make roads, canals, or railways, nor a board to determine where, or when, or how such works shall be made; but some general provisions, of easy enforcement, to the effect that, when they have been made, the covenant created between the trader and the traveller upon them, shall be fairly executed by the parties who, by the very condition of things, have the power of fulfilling it well or ill, to a great extent, in their own hands. That a government board to make public works is not called for, must be now regarded as a plain truth, requiring no further argument and illustration. But we go farther, and maintain, that a board to determine where, or when, or how roads, canals, or railways shall be made, is not desirable. If such a power was once given, it could not but grow, by slow and sure degrees, into a stronghold of injustice and corruption. Its very extent and vastness would render it too dangerous to be trusted, and too unwieldy to be useful. Jobbing would be one of its least evils. Political interests would insinuate themselves, and obtain the pernicious influence common to their nature; party ties would usurp their undue share of places and emoluments; and the public good, in process of time, would be attended to only as a secondary consideration by those who filled and by those who appointed to the principal situations in such a department. But the people require, and it has already been found expedient to provide, a general law for the public protection, to which all undertakings of this class, in the terms of their respective acts, shall be subject. There is now a specific authority to enforce that law readily and cheaply,—its leading principles, moreover, and conditions direct that a just proportion shall be, at all times, maintained between the profit accruing to the company, and the accommodation gained by the public;—that neither caprice, ignorance, nor great powers, shall be allowed to produce irregularity, disappointment, or exaction;—that safety, expedition, com-

fort, economy, and civility shall be secured. Beyond these guarantees no reasonable man would desire to proceed. The chief aim of every one who understands the structure and movement of the system by which the wealth and greatness of the empire have been produced, will henceforward be directed to preserve capital and enterprise free from and unprejudiced by further restraints or the deadening pressure of an extended government controul.*

When the Irish, incited by the example of England, began to turn their attention to the improvement of their navigable rivers, and the construction of canals, as desirable means of increasing their commerce, and elevating their country to its proper rank in the scale of nations, the form of companies, and the investment of the capital of individuals, were proposed to carry the different plans into execution. Persons, however, were not wanting to oppose such efforts, much after the same fashion, and nearly upon the same grounds, as have been urged of late years against the introduction of railways by private enterprise. No sooner was the first of these projects started, than a clique was formed, which, at the Castle of Dublin, affected exclusive-zeal for the administration of the day, and, out of the castle, professed to enjoy its confidence, to express its sentiments, and to move upon its impulse. By that clique companies in Ireland were deprecated and denounced with hardened perseverance. They paid court in the outer offices of the castle, they flattered the under functionaries, they in-

* We frequently hear instances cited to prove the incompetency of parliament to determine matters of private interest and utility; and, doubtless, many such are to be shewn. Nor can we, much as the mode of conducting private business has been improved of late years, still assert, with truth, that parliament is yet a perfectly adequate tribunal in this respect. Parliament, however, has one advantage which we cannot hope to find elsewhere. Any one member in either house, by rising in his place and exposing a job, is almost sure to defeat it. It is impossible to constitute any board, tribunal, or department, to which we could attach that one invaluable good. Many jobs, no doubt, have been carried in both houses; but that has seldom happened when they have been denounced. The care now taken to give publicity to all the proceedings on private bills, renders the quiet progress of a deliberate job, all but impossible. There are few government boards, on a large scale, of which it would be safe to make the same boast.

voked the interference of ministers with a constant voice; they asserted that Ireland did not possess sufficient capital for such undertakings, nor sufficient trade to support them, if completed. As nothing of the kind, it was argued, could remunerate private undertakers, government alone should embark in them upon public grounds, and by so doing protect the community at large from imposition, and truly develop the resources of the country. Nor did they contend in vain. Assistance was craved on the one hand, controul demanded on the other. At the beginning private enterprise struggled to make way, but so obstinate was the resistance offered to its progress, that it was forced to yield. Government did interfere, and, obtaining new means of patronage, distributed amongst its partizans the good things placed at its disposal.

But the assistance was much greater than the controul: the purse-strings of the Irish treasury were unloosed, and grasping hands were always to be found within. The efforts of individuals, through the press, and in parliament, to arrest a course of scandalous jobbing, were unavailing. The most glaring exposures of ignorant extravagance and gross corruption took place; but the favourite system, though suppressed at intervals by the force of public indignation, has always been revived, after an interval of disuse, and has invariably produced the same consequences. When the amount of one vote was wasted, another was carried. When one form of administration exploded in depravity, another was artfully set up to repeat some modification of the experiment, with the same fatal effect. The false principle of government controul and government aid has been attempted in banking and railways, and has been constantly applied to navigation and canal companies. Millions have been lavished to work it out, and they have been lavished in vain. May we not then ask, what security there is against the recurrence of the same results, if, in defiance of all experience, we should still farther extend or tolerate it? Is it not the unchangeable nature of things, that what was badly done before, by such means, will be badly done again? Is it to be credited that the estimates will not be exceeded?—that

there will be no improvident advances of public money!—that no poor relatives and inconvenient dependants will be provided for in unnecessary places, and no party interest or political prejudices fostered and encouraged in filling up the places that are necessary? Can any man venture to limit the unfair premium to which, at a period of excited speculation, the shares of the government works may not be raised, or the discount to which a momentary panic may not precipitate them? These are consequences which every person of ordinary information, and the most limited sagacity cannot fail to regard as inevitable, and which no integrity or ingenuity can either prevent or subdue.

But why resort to arguments when we may decide the question by referring to facts? We have the experience of more than a century and a quarter to guide our judgment. We have paid away millions of money to buy that experience. The vain attempt to work out with success the principle of a state direction of private enterprise has been made time after time, and in every shape; successive parliaments in Ireland, and in the United Kingdom, have aided the repeated efforts with no mean or contracted hands; as one modification of the system has broken down, we have had another quickly raised upon its ruins; and what remains? For a period of 128 years, only fifteen public works for all Ireland,—the Shannon, Barrow, Lagan, Boyne, Tyrone, Tralee, Suir, and Moy navigations;—the Grand, Royal, Newry, and Ulster canals;—and the Dublin and Kingstown, the Belfast and Portadown, and the Dublin and Drogheda railways. And what, respectively, are their circumstances? With exception of the three last,—large debts—scarcely any dividends—and overwhelming difficulties.

To begin with the Limerick navigation, which is a part and was the commencement of the Shannon navigation—we find the project of improving the Shannon, started in 1715, under the act 2 Geo. I. c. 13, at the instance of private enterprise, but quickly taken up by a government board. Its cost, in 1823, had been £123,000, for six and a half miles of canal, and five and a half miles of river navigation, and its produce

£1,514 2s. a-year.* In 1826, the pressure of so dead a failure became intolerable, and the inland navigation directors encouraged the formation of a company, with a joint-stock capital of £3,000, to be expended in further improvements. The company was formed—the property, which had cost £123,000, was vested in them—and, in 1833, they began to borrow again from the state. The present board of works has paid £14,000 to maintain the Limerick Navigation Company of 1826†. But the "government system" did not stop there. The Shannon improvements were projected, and to complete them, it was held desirable that the public should not only buy back from the company the rights transferred in 1826—giving £6,000 for a capital stock of £3,000, and £6,000 to pay off miscellaneous debts incurred in the interval, but also that the particular debt of £14,000 to the public should stand over as a lien on the tolls which are expected to accrue—*ad Græcas Calendas*—from additional improvements! This is the government system in Ireland down to the present moment. An expenditure of £146,000 has been required to

* Irish Railway Report, Appendix A, 74, and B, 54.

† Reports of commissioners of public works in Ireland, 1834-36. Limerick, it must be confessed, has been extremely fortunate in its connexion with this board. The following sums of the public money have been awarded to that city and its approaches within a recent period:—

Road from Woodford to new line to Limerick	£959	14	0
Road from Glenquin to Goulburn Bridge, County Limerick	600	0	0
Limerick Navigation Company to improve Works	8,910	0	0
Road leading to Ennis	205	0	0
Ditto Waterford	560	0	0
Wellesley Bridge and Docks	25,000	0	0
Ditto ditto	37,550	0	0
Ditto ditto	29,000	0	0
Road leading to Waterford	296	3	6
Road leading to Ennis	117	6	8
Road leading from Abbeyfeale to Glinn	1,181	15	3
Rebuilding Thomond Bridge	9,000	0	0
Barrington's Hospital	2,500	0	0
Limerick Navigation Company to improve Quays, &c.	6,500	0	0
Road from Mitchelstown to Kilfinnane	1,150	0	0
Building Athlunkard Bridge	9,850	0	0
Road from Buttevant to Kilfinnane	400	0	0
<hr/>			
	£133,779	19	5

produce an income of only £1,514 2s., and parliament sustained Lord Monteagle, then Mr. Spring Rice, in compelling the country to pay for that paltry income, in addition to the large grants previous to 1826, no less than £6,000 + £6,000 + £14,000 = £26,000.

The Grand Canal grew out of the first plans for improving the Shannon and effecting an uninterrupted stream of navigation from the Irish Sea at Dublin to the Atlantic Ocean below Limerick. Like the work just noticed it soon became a government undertaking ; it was then thrown into a private enterprise, aided and directed by the state, and has in both conditions borne a heavy share of the misfortunes inseparable from all such auspices and authorities. The works were commenced in 1756, but their progress, far from corresponding with the patronage under which they had been projected, was so tardy and fruitless that the government was obliged to fall back upon the only legitimate ground, and invite private individuals to come in and take a share in the speculation. Under this new encouragement a subscription in aid of the work was set on foot, and in 1772, after large sums of public money had been expended, an act of parliament was passed, incorporating the subscribers of a sum of £60,000 which was to be made £150,000, as the Company of Undertakers of the Grand Canal ; and vesting in them all the property and powers with respect to that navigation, previously possessed by the directors of inland navigation. By this body which surmounted not a few difficulties and impositions, involving the necessity of an augmentation of capital, the line was completed from Dublin to Monastereven in 1786. Subsequently the line was extended westward to Tullamore, and from Tullamore to the Shannon ; it was opened, October 25th, 1803. The branch canal to Ballinasloe was completed 29th September, 1828 ; that to Mountmellick, 1st March, 1831 ; and that to Kilbeggan, 1st January, 1835.

This navigation, including the main line from the Liffey to the Shannon, and the branches to Ballinasloe, Mountmellick, Kilbeggan, Naas, Corbally, Miltown, Blackwood, and Eden-

derry, extends in various directions about 160 miles. The rise from its mouth at the Liffey, near Ringsend, to the summit at Robertstown is 278 feet; the fall thence to the Barrow at Athy is 97, and to the Shannon at Banagher 162 feet, making a total rise and fall upon the whole navigation of 537 feet, which divided by the length, 160 miles, gives 3 feet per mile for lockage. The cost in Irish currency stands thus:—

Stock debentures issued by the company	£670,000	0	0	
Parliamentary grants, exclusive of the sums received from the directors-general of inland navigation, for the improvement of the Middle Shannon.	. . . . .	93,258	0	0
Grant from government for the reduction of the debt	. . . . .	150,000	0	0
Debt created	£1,167,750	0	0	
Less amount of grant	150,000	0	0	
		1,017,750	0	0
Loan for making the branch canals	. . .	97,670	0	0
		£2,028,678	0	0

or about £12,000 a mile.* We have no very exact relation of the progress of travelling or traffic upon these various streams of intercommunication. Accounts however of the annual amount of tolls received by the company have been regularly published. From these we learn that at the close of the war in 1814, when agricultural prices were high, the tolls derived from the traffic reached to about £50,000. This income gradually fell off during the subsequent depression of the agricultural interest, until in 1823 it was reduced to £25,000. In 1835 and 1836 it again rose to about £40,000, and in 1839, 1840, and 1841, fell back, in consequence of the deficient harvests of those years, to about £30,000. It has since rallied, and may be now fairly estimated at £35,000 a-year.

* As this summary will be found to differ materially from that relied on in the Report of the Irish railway commissioners, where the total cost is set forth at £18,000 a mile, it may be proper to intimate that a careful computation of the cost and mileage was made, to ensure a correct statement of the fact upon the present occasion.

It was during this latter period of declining revenue, that the proprietors suffered one of those acts of violent interference with their settled property, which can only be committed with impunity under an arbitrary system like that practised by the government in Ireland. They were possessed of the navigation of the Middle Shannon, between Lough Derg and Lough Ree ; upon the improvement of which they had,—in addition to £54,534 8s. 7d. granted for that purpose by the commissioners of inland navigation in 1806,—expended of their own money £30,000, borrowed from the public, and for which they are still paying interest to the amount of £12,000 a year. The deed of contract between the government and the company contained no clause of forfeiture or resumption ; yet this property was valued by the Shannon commissioners, in 1837, at £5 ; and for that sum, they were authorized by the Shannon Navigation Act of 1839, to take the Middle Shannon from the company. These were the commissioners, who at the same time awarded £26,000 for the Limerick navigation. The injury inflicted upon the proprietors of the Grand Canal is shown in the reports since laid before parliament, where it appears that the commissioners took as tolls upon this £5 property, £700 15s. 5d. in 1840, £654 6s. 4d. in 1841, and £526 1s. 4d. in 1842, besides £40 a year, the rent of adjacent premises included in the award.

Against this deprivation of their rights and property in the Middle Shannon the Grand Canal Company remonstrated, and claimed the consideration of government—as yet without avail. They proposed, according to the second Report of the Shannon commissioners, that the branch canals to Ballinasloe, Mountmellick, and Kilbeggan, which were constructed by means of advances from the exchequer loan commissioners, of monies directed by parliament to be lent for the employment of the poor in Ireland, and which as far as they were unredeemed were the property of the government, should be made over to them. After six years of tedious solicitation this proposal was at last adopted, but not upon the grounds assigned by the company. The principle of making compensation for errors

committed or an injury inflicted by the Shannon commissioners, seems to have been repudiated. The marketable value of the branch canals appears to have been estimated, and the company were allowed to purchase them at that price.

The tolls levied upon the Grand Canal are generally low: for agricultural produce from the distant parts of the Shannon and the Barrow, the maximum rate does not exceed three farthings per ton per mile; and when brought to Dublin for exportation it is one halfpenny only. Its supply of water is abundant; from 40 to 50 boats pass its summit level daily, and for several years past there has not been experienced the slightest want of water throughout the whole line of navigation. It is thus impossible to regard the condition and prospects of an undertaking so long established, and so well calculated to develop the resources of an agricultural country without a feeling of strong interest. It is true that when we refer to its earlier affairs we discern that which appears to deserve neither praise nor imitation. Great attempts there meet the eye, and small results—an extravagant outlay—dilatory and inefficient proceedings—a concern now basking hopefully under the bountiful patronage of government, now sinking under the pressure of indefensible interference; and an impoverished deprivation of its rights and property,—a state of things in short full of change and vicissitude, involving a heavy loss of money, public and private, and severe injustice to the majority of the persons who have speculated in its fortunes. But if we dwell upon the economy with which it is now conducted, if we contrast with the excessive expenditure of the original works the reasonable prices at which the late branches have been constructed—£12,000 against £3,600 a mile;* and above all, if we note the rates of toll which are unprecedentedly low, we shall not find it difficult or unpleasant to believe that the wellbeing of the Grand Canal, and of the various districts it pervades, are intimately connected together.

- Two acts of parliament, recently passed, appear likely to pro-

* The Kilbeggan Branch, upwards of eight miles in length, was made for £18,000.

duce considerable effects upon this long established company : the first is the act for making the Dublin and Cashel Railway ; the second, the act, already referred to, authorizing the commissioners of public works to sell to the Grand Canal Company the mortgages held by government upon the Kilbeg-gan, Mountmellick, and Ballinasloe branches for the sum of £10,000. Of the former measure a candid view has been taken by the company, in a statement publicly distributed :—

“The entire cost of completing the Grand Canal, with its off-branches, docks, harbours, &c., was, as is well known, little short of two millions sterling. Of this sum £670,000 was subscribed by the shareholders, and forms the present capital stock of the company ; the remainder having been taken up by loans under the authority of parliament. Of the amount so borrowed, there remains still undischarged, a sum of £720,000, for which interest is paid at different rates, averaging about 4 per cent. per annum ; and which, with a small sinking fund, which the company are enjoined by statute to keep up, for the ultimate redemption of the debt, requires a provision amounting to £30,000 annually. This sum the directors of the company have in some years found difficulty in realizing, so much so, that for the last 30 years and upwards, *four years only have occurred*, during which it was found possible to pay so small a dividend as one per cent. annually, upon the capital stock of the company ; it is quite clear, therefore, that when their passenger traffic, which at present yields a clear revenue exceeding £4,000 a year, and a large portion of their more valuable traffic in merchandize and produce, shall have been, (as it inevitably will be,) withdrawn by the railway, the payment of the present rate of interest to their creditors, and the maintenance of the sinking fund, which by the statute they are bound to uphold, under severe penalties, will be attended with difficulties, which they cannot contemplate without the greatest apprehension.”

Against this saddening prospect is to be set off the advantage gained by the extinction of the government debt due upon the branches—a measure so fair in point of principle, and so beneficial in its tendency, as to suggest a hope that it will not long be allowed to stand by itself a solitary example of the policy which ought to be applied to several other cases. The branches in question were begun at a period of general starvation, with money humanely voted by parliament for the employment of the poor. They never paid the interest of the sums borrowed to make them. In the 12th annual Report of

the board of public works, there was returned an accumulation for arrears of interest of—

£27,938 15s. 9d. on £46,254 3s. 1d. lent to the Ballinasloe extension.
£17,765 3s. 5d. on £33,416 6s. 1d. — Mountmellick ditto.
£8,449 6s. 7d. on £18,000 0s. 0d. — Kilbeggan ditto.

In this state of things, the lords of the treasury very properly determined to rid the company of the pressure of growing difficulties, which it was impossible to reduce by ordinary means. It was found that an annuity, equal to the average income of the three canals for ten years, might be purchased, according to the government tables, for £10,000; and that sum accordingly the board of works was authorized to take from the company, for the unencumbered possession of the property. It is most desirable that this should prove the commencement of an equitable adjustment, between the government and the parties interested, of the pecuniary difficulties by which not a few other works are heavily oppressed.

"A history of public works in Ireland," said Mr. A. Young, in his "Tour," Vol. II. p. 66, "would be a history of jobs." We are presented with rather strong evidence of the truth of this remark in the rise, progress, and present state of the Royal Canal. There is a significant description of the origin of this undertaking in the Report of the Irish railway commissioners. In 1789, a director of the Grand Canal, having some trifling difference with his colleagues, left them, and resolved to form a rival company. Being a person of considerable plausibility and energy he succeeded. Had his object only been to injure the property he had ceased to take an interest in, he could not have devised a better plan for the attainment of such an end; but he seems to have overlooked the material fact, that the ruin of the second venture was an inevitable consequence of his proceeding. Mr. Wakefield has made a striking abridgement from parliamentary documents of the stages of this destructive folly. Commencing with an act of parliament and that common accompaniment, the patronage of the government board for the time being, and a large grant of public money, which was continued to the last point, it consumed in its construc-

tion £1,373,635 ; of this money, £172,964 8s. 10d. had been contributed by the shareholders, and no less than £842,550 borrowed. It was opened for traffic in 1796, and produced for that year a revenue of £108 ; which in 1800 rose to £1,583, and in 1810 to £15,024. At this date the debt contracted by the directors was £1,142,550, charged with an annual interest of £49,624 10s., towards the payment of which there was only a sum of £4,131 4s. 6d. Thus desperately embarrassed the proprietors petitioned parliament for relief; and after two years of inquiry and exposure, the company was declared bankrupt, and the property vested in the creditors, who were stated to be "for the most part persons of a poor description, orphans and widows, no less than 2,000 in number." At this juncture the works had not been carried farther than Coolnahay, a little beyond Mullingar. Ultimately £200,000 were granted by parliament to complete the original plan by carrying the navigation to Tarmonbarry on the Shannon, a distance of 25 miles—and the present company, composed of the creditors of the old company, was incorporated by an act of parliament passed in 1818. The summary of the statistics of this rash undertaking, furnished by Messrs. Henry, Mullins, and Macmahon in 1823, runs thus :—length, 72 miles—rate of lockage, 7½—cost of execution, £19,749 7s. 5d.—Total cost, £1,421,954 13s. 1d. The new company have paid a dividend of 2 per cent., but that partial prosperity has not been regularly sustained. In the year 1836 the total receipts were £25,148 19s. 7d., and the total expenditure £11,912 2s. 10d. At the half-yearly meeting, held October 1st, 1843, the total receipts for that term were £11,756 6s. 10d., of which £5,729 19s. 9d. had been expended for maintenance, leaving £6,026 7s. 1d. as profit. This yielded a dividend of 17s. 6d., making, with 17s. declared at the preceding meeting, £1 5s. 6d. for the year.

The Shannon navigation, which is connected with the port of Dublin by the Grand and Royal canals, is to be considered under two separate heads :—the first comprises the extensive works now in a course of construction at the public expence,

under the management of a government board. These it will be most convenient to describe in the review we shall presently have to take of the history and composition of the institutions set up and sustained in Ireland for encouraging and controlling public works. The other head of the subject embraces the operations of the Inland Navigation Company of Ireland,—a body acting in conjunction with the City of Dublin Steam Packet Company, and the Dublin and Liverpool Steam Ship Building Company. These three companies appear to have been conducted with judgment, energy, and effect. The Inland Navigation Company was projected in 1826, by Mr. Grantham, an engineer employed by government, who was the first to introduce steam-boats on the Shannon. He failed in his laudable attempt; but a joint-stock company followed, which had nine steamers plying in 1836, according to the returns furnished to the railway commissioners. If the statistics of tolls, traffic, &c., then made public could be brought down to the present time, they would be instructive. The company, however, refuse to divulge them. Thus the only detail respecting their operations to be particularly adverted to, is the amount of their tolls, which is high, 40s. a ton from Dublin to Limerick; and which being enforced against towing-boats, cuts away the advantages of the Shannon and its improvements from the many small agriculturists living along its extensive banks, who cannot afford to ship their produce on board the steamers of this company. It is here worthy of remark, that the only profitable undertaking connected with the navigation of the Shannon is afforded in the case of this company; one which has all through been an independent private enterprise, and in noway indebted to government for pecuniary aid, advice, or any assistance.

The Barrow navigation was begun in the year 1759, but the company was not incorporated until the year 1788. We are told, in the Report of the Irish railway commissioners, that “The river Barrow becomes navigable at Athy, in the county of Kildare, 42 miles from Dublin, where, joining the Grand Canal, it affords an uninterrupted line of inland communication

from Dublin to the sea below Waterford, a distance of upwards of 120 miles. The rivers Nore and Suir fall into it, the former one mile above the town of Ross, the latter a short distance below Waterford. The depth of water from Athy to Carlow is nearly three and a half feet during the summer, and five feet during the winter months, which proves enough for boats carrying 50 tons. A considerable interruption prevails in the navigation between Carlow and St. Mullins, but it is available for boats of from 30 to 40 tons during six months in the year. Between Athy and St. Mullins' Scars, a distance of 43 miles, there are 12 stages and 23 locks. There is a trackway for horses, 40 miles in length, from Athy to below St. Mullins; there are five considerable towns upon or adjacent to its banks, and several very extensive flour-mills. The usual rates of freights charged range from 10*s.* to 15*s.* per ton. The following account will show the progressive increase of tonnage and tolls for the undermentioned periods, and the receipts and disbursements of the Barrow Navigation Company for five years:—

TONNAGE AND TOLLS.

Years.	Tons.	Tolls.	
1790 .	16,000 .	£ 121	
1800 .	19,828 .	1,405	Irish Currency.
1810 .	36,262 .	3,965	
1820 .	41,262 .	3,827	
1830 .	58,100 .	4,290	British ditto.
1835 .	66,084 .	4,966	

RECEIPTS AND DISBURSEMENTS.

Years.	Receipts.	Disbursements.
1832 .	£5,003 17 0 .	£2,363 17 10
1833 .	4,815 17 4 .	2,691 15 4
1834 .	5,905 11 10½ .	5,845 0 3½
1835 .	5,100 11 11 .	4,311 12 11
1836 .	4,975 6 0 .	2,449 6 2½

" The expenditure on the works of the Barrow navigation, exclusive of establishments, amounting, in 1836, to £812 a year, was, from 1790 to 1802, £62,215 18*s.* 1*d.*; from 1802 to 1811, £62,807 9*s.* 2*d.*; and from 1811 to 1836, £52,829 9*s.*; making a total of £177,852 16*s.* 3*d.* The company have

not received any loans, but they have received two grants made to them from the public; namely, in 1790, the sum of £17,600, and in 1802, a further sum of £20,625,—making a total of £38,225." These however do not tally with the amounts given in the parliamentary proceedings as those voted in aid of this undertaking. The following sums appear in the Irish statutes to have been given to the Barrow navigation:—

£2,000	.	.	.	.	.	33 Geo. II. c. 1.
2,000	.	.	.	.	.	1 Geo. III.
1,800	.	.	.	.	.	3 Geo. III.
3,000	.	.	.	.	.	5 Geo. III.
2,000	.	.	.	.	.	7 Geo. III.
1,000	.	.	.	.	.	11 Geo. III.
20,000	.	.	.	.	.	29 Geo. III. c. 33.
<hr/>						£31,800

The printed Reports of the directors of inland navigation further state, that in 1811, a sum of £27,500 was given; which would make a total of £59,300. Correct information respecting the affairs of this undertaking is difficult to obtain. It is in the hands of a few individuals, who have not been in the habit of publishing any reports or accounts for a series of years.

The progressive improvements of the navigation may be thus stated. In 1790, when the company first became incorporated, the river was navigated by boats, which in the summer months carried a loading of from three to five tons, and in the winter from eight to ten tons. The boats were hauled by men, at the rate of one man per ton in summer, and two in winter, there being no horse trackway. The subsequent improvements consist of the formation of a trackway for horses from Athy to below St. Mullins, a distance of 43 miles; and the construction of 17 additional locks, with their respective weirs and embankments.

The Boyne navigation, which dates its origin from the year 1759, is twofold; Upper and Lower. The Upper Boyne navigation (which is part still water, according to the Report of the Irish railway commissioners, and part a canal,) extends from the borough of Drogheda, in the county of Louth, to the

town of Navan, in the county of Meath, and is 19 statute miles long. The Lower Boyne, which is in the hands of the commissioners of works, runs from Drogheda to Carrick Dexter, passing by the town of Slane; it is 12½ miles long.

The rate of freight charged by boatowners is 3s. per ton from Drogheda to Slane, and 4s. 6d. per ton from Drogheda to Navan; out of which they pay a toll of 1½d. per ton per mile on the Lower navigation, and 2d. per ton per mile on the Upper. The draught of boats in winter is 4 feet 8 inches, in summer 3 feet 6 inches; and the time consumed between Drogheda and Slane is, in summer 7 hours, and in winter 6 hours; and from Slane to Navan, 4 hours in summer, and 9 hours in winter. The whole of the traffic, with the exception of what is delivered at Slane, and to a few individuals above that place, goes on to Navan. Neither the amount of public money laid out upon the Boyne navigations, nor the total income derived from the traffic upon them are positively known; according to one statement, they have cost £120,000; and produced in the year 1837, £775 15s. The accounts of the Lower Boyne are laid before the House of Commons, in the annual Report of the commissioners of public works. The receipts for the year ended April, 1844, were £734 12s. 4d., and the expenditure £460 6s. 9d.

The river Lagan, which connects the town of Belfast with Lough Neagh, was not navigable up to the middle of the last century. In the year 1753, an act of the Irish parliament imposed a local duty on beer and spirits, for the purpose of raising a fund for opening a navigable channel between these points. The duties were imposed in the first instance for a period of ten years, but they were continued by subsequent acts until the year 1814. The amount of money received in this way by the managers of the navigation appears by the parliamentary votes to have been about £50,000. To this is to be added a sum of £62,000 advanced by the marquis of Donegal, to complete the canal. The latter advance was secured by debentures, which were sold, and transferred from hand to hand, from time to time. In the year 1843, the holders of these

debentures, after a resolute contest with the commissioners of public works, were incorporated into a company; for the future management and improvement of the navigation.

The length of this navigation, from the bridge at Belfast to the lock at Lough Neagh, called Ellis' Gut, is $2\frac{1}{2}$ statute miles, and it is partly river and partly still water. The whole is thus described by the railway commissioners:—"From Belfast to the western end of the summit level, where there is a treble lock, a small basin, and a single lock in connection with the summit; these are called the Union Locks. Between Belfast and the first lock is a tidal navigation, the distance $2\frac{3}{4}$ miles; the next two levels are seven-eighths of a mile long each; the fourth $2\frac{1}{2}$ miles; the fifth, half a mile; the sixth, seventh, eighth, and ninth, three quarters of a mile each; the tenth and eleventh, half a mile each; the twelfth, thirteenth, and fourteenth, three quarters of a mile each; ending at the Union Locks;—the number of locks being 17, and the distance thirteen miles. The summit level is $11\frac{1}{2}$ miles in length, and from it to the Lough are 10 locks of equal falls, seven feet each, except the lowest one, which varies with the level of Lough Neagh. The average tonnage of trading boats is 50 tons: in summer they usually draw 4 feet water; and in winter 4 feet 9 inches. The usual time consumed in navigating from Belfast to Lisburn in summer is one day, in winter one-and-a-half day; from Belfast to the Summit, one-and-a-half or two days in summer, and two or three days in winter; and from Belfast to Lough Neagh, one, two, or three days in summer, and three or four days in winter. In 1836, the tolls for boats of 50 tons from Belfast to Lough Neagh were £3 per boat; and the rates per ton from Belfast to Newry 7s., and from Belfast to Lough Neagh 6s. The total amount of tonnage conveyed on the navigation during the years 1831, 1832, 1833, 1834, 1835, 1836, and 1837, was 265,750 tons, and the rate of toll on each ton $9\frac{1}{2}d.$; amounting in the whole to the sum of £10,738 7s. 1d. The landing-places in the interior, with which this navigation affords means of communication, are these:—on its own line,

the bleach greens, mills, and factories, between Belfast and Lisburn ; the town of Lisburn, and the limekilns and brick-fields in its neighbourhood ; the towns of Hillsborough and Moira, and the distilleries, breweries, and limekilns adjacent to Magheralin and Soldierstown ; the villages of Aghalee, and Kilmore, where grain is purchased and sent on the canal ; and the town of Lurgan, with its distillery and breweries. The Lagan navigation also affords a means of communication to the country adjoining the shores of Lough Neagh and the Lower and Upper Bann rivers, and the river Blackwater. The tolls charged being alike for every article, no register was kept in 1837, when the railway commissioners made their Report of the cargoes of the different lighters passing on the canal. The principal lading from Belfast is coals. Foreign timber, to the amount of about 15,000 tons, was taken in rafts, during the period mentioned in the last return, besides a considerable quantity of planks of various scantlings, in lighters : herrings, salt, groceries, iron, bleaching stuffs, spirits, barm, bark, &c., &c., are also conveyed on the canal ; but neither the precise quantity, or any correct approach to it, could be stated to the commissioners. They were informed, however, that during the preceding seven years, above 35,000 tons of grain and flour, potatoes, sand-stone, fire-brick, tile, &c., have been brought to Belfast, from the interior. This quantity is included in the statement already given."

There are not any passage boats on the Lagan navigation, nor was it conceived that any could be beneficially established on it. The managers were of opinion, that the Ulster railway would not materially, if at all, interfere with the conveyance of goods on the Lagan navigation ; but their anticipations in this respect have proved erroneous.

Both Arthur Young and Wakefield, in their works on Ireland, describe the Newry navigation as the only undertaking of the kind in the country presenting a flourishing appearance. It is to be regretted that the compliment no longer applies. The capital of the company is set down at £80,000, but upwards of £100,000 have been expended. The income has not yielded

a dividend to the shareholders for the last 13 or 14 years; there is no annual report or statement of accounts made public.

The length of the canal from its entrance at Fathom, (two miles nearer the sea than the borough of Newry,) to its termination at Whitecoal, where it joins the river Bann, is 16½ Irish miles. The communication between Newry and the sea is by canal to Fathom, a distance of 2 miles. From thence by the river to the deep water at Warrenpoint, a distance of 3½ miles, a further canal is in a course of construction, at an estimated cost of £30,000, lent by the board of public works. The goods conveyed on this navigation in the year 1831, was 70,479 tons; and the amount of toll paid thereon £2,414 3s. 10d. In 1837 the goods conveyed weighed 102,332 tons, and the amount of toll was £3,005 11s. 5d. This was the sum of the tolls for boats fully laden; but if the boats should be only partly laden, the toll is proportioned. The sea tolls chargeable on vessels coming to and leaving Newry, are, if laden, 1s. 1d. per ton for both cargoes; if light, 1d. per ton on the registered tonnage.

The Tyrone navigation runs into the Newry canal. Thence to Coal Island, where the Tyrone navigation joins the river Blackwater, and to Lough Neagh the distance is 11½ English miles. The tonnage of the boats trading on this canal is from 30 to 50 tons. In summer the draft of water is 4 feet 6 inches, and in winter 5 feet; the rates of freights are from 4s. 6d. to 6s. 6d., and the rates of toll from 2s. 6d. to 18s.: the amount of tolls collected in the year 1842 was £202, and the expenditure £537 3s. It is now and has for some years been in the hands of the commissioners of public works. There is an uninterrupted line of navigation from Coal Island to Belfast, a distance of 61 miles, and the distance is performed in 3 days; also from Coal Island to Newry, a distance of 39½ miles, which is performed in two days..

"The Ulster canal, extending from the river Erne, near Belturbet, in the county of Cavan, to the navigable water of the river Blackwater, in the county of Tyrone, and connecting Lough Erne and Lough Neagh, has been principally con-

structed by the aid of public money. It was opened throughout for the passage of boats during the year 1842; and two steamers have been established on Lough Neagh, for the purpose of towing boats between the Ulster canal and the Lagan and Newry navigations, leading to the seaports of Belfast and Newry. A steam-vessel has also been placed on Lough Erne, so that a quick and regular communication will be maintained throughout the line." Such was the description of the commissioners of public works in 1843, who added, "that a large increase of traffic was expected to be the result, as well as the opening of new sources of trade in the districts embraced by the Ulster canal and the extensive lakes with which it is connected." Unquestionably very considerable increase of traffic will be required to justify the use of this language, and to enable the proprietors to repay the money lent to their undertaking, and to derive a profit from it. But it would be hazardous to express a positive opinion upon the subject, as the affairs of the company are conducted with a degree of reserve amounting almost to profound secrecy. It appears however that the capital amounts to £300,000, one-half of which has been paid up; that £120,000 have been lent on mortgage of the undertaking and the accruing tolls, by the exchequer loan bills commissioners, and that £10,000 have been lent by the board of works. In the Report of the directors for the year ending May 1843, the quantity of goods carried on the canal during the year then concluded, amounted to 13,454 tons, showing an increase in the year of about 3,000 tons; the amount of cash received for tolls was £1,188 10s. 11d., and the amount paid for directors' fees of attendance, office expences, and management in Ireland were, £1,252 12s. 11d. There were moreover about £1,000 more charged for the salary and disbursements of the resident engineer, law expences, &c.

The Suir Navigation Company was incorporated by act of parliament in the year 1836, for the purpose of improving the tidal waters of the river between the city of Waterford and the town of Carrick-on-Suir. Some of the principal obstacles to the navigation have been removed by an expenditure of about

£8,000, a bed of rocks has been blasted, several sand-banks have been removed, and a new channel has been cut for ships within a short distance of the town of Carrick. In consequence of these works, vessels of 180 tons are now enabled to take in and discharge their cargoes at the quays of Carrick. But though much has been effected by the judicious application of a small sum of money, there is still room for considerable improvement; and it is particularly to be regretted that the greatest expenditure incurred by the company has been applied to a cut so much narrower than the one originally proposed as to be but partially adapted to the wants of a fruitful, and, it is pleasant to add, a very thriving locality.

The Moy Navigation Act was passed in 1838, when a few spirited landowners, merchants of the town and neighbourhood of Ballina, in the county of Mayo, were appointed commissioners to straighten and deepen the course of the river, and to enable sea-borne vessels to reach the town of Ballina. The Moy, however, is valuable as a salmon fishery; and some difference of opinion between the proprietor of the fishery and the commissioners for the improvement of the river, as to the effects likely to be produced by the proposed works, have hitherto rendered the act inoperative.

The Tralee harbour and canal, originally in the hands of local commissioners appointed by the act 9 Geo. 4, c. 118, is now under the management of the Board of Works. The ground assigned for this change was the stale one—that the public money had been borrowed and spent, and the proposed improvement had not been executed. The Board therefore, on behalf of the public, entered upon the undertaking, after a grant had been made from its own funds of £4,220, and two loans amounting to £10,500 had been obtained from the Exchequer Bill Commissioners; but the former do not appear to have done much better than the private parties whom they have displaced. They have applied to parliament twice to renew the authority originally given for the construction of the works, and for these acts the country has

paid:—but no report or accounts respecting the Tralee harbour and canal are included in the papers annually presented to parliament. The public only knows that the undertaking remains in the hands of Government and is unfinished.

The total tonnage carried by all the canals * and navigable rivers in Ireland was computed by the Railway Commissioners, in 1837, at about 600,000 tons, and the amount of tolls at £71,242 a year,—assuming the charge for tonnage to be on the average 1*d.* per ton per mile. The total cost of the several navigations and canals, and of the improvements effected in navigable rivers was not estimated by the commissioners. Those noticed in this sketch cannot have cost less than £5,000,000: the income produced from their traffic in the year 1843 was about £80,000.

More modern works are now to be examined. The Dublin and Kingstown railway deserves the especial notice of those who would insist upon the superior advantages to be derived from government railways—for this work has been a government aid and control railway, in as fair and binding a sense of the expression as can be used. It is a short line of six miles, connecting the harbour of Kingstown with the city of Dublin. The railway was begun in the year 1831, after having been approved in its various details by the Government Board; and it was not completed without a liberal supply of the public money. The capital of the company is £200,000, in 2,000 shares of £100 each,—the full amount of which was well paid up during the progress of the undertaking. Besides this money, the Board of Works contributed two loans to the Company,—the one of £75,000, and the other of £40,000. This assistance, by the terms of the act of parliament under which it was given, conferred on that body the rights of mortgagees, with full powers of superintendence, direction

* Two or three other small canals and navigations have not been described, by reason of their insignificance; such as the Lismore canal, which is the private property of the Duke of Devonshire; the Maig navigation,—a short cut with a turning bridge, connecting the town of Adare with the river Shannon, &c.

and control : and what was the consequence ? Unfortunately this—the Dublin and Kingstown railway was, in point of construction, one of the dearest and—while controlled by the Board of Works—one of the least profitable that has been made in the three kingdoms ;—its cost per mile amounted to £60,000, while that of the Manchester and Liverpool, a first experiment, was only £50,000. Its receipts, which for a length of time had barely justified a dividend of 5 per cent., bore one of 6 per cent. in the month of August, 1844. About the same period a new spirit appeared amongst the directors. They determined to pay off the debt due to Government and to make the company independent. The character of the enterprise changed as soon as this intention became known. The stock, long at a discount, rose quickly in price and stood at a high premium before the details of the plan were published by which the incubus of Government assistance was finally thrown off. At the half-yearly meeting held in the spring of 1845, the dividend declared was 9 per cent., and the total amount of debt provided for after paying off the Government was £150,000.

In looking back to the origin and earlier progress of this the first railway constructed in Ireland, it is not to the directors and still less to the subscribers, that blame is to be imputed for the state of things occasionally presented to our notice. The great wonder is, that even so good a result should have been produced under all the circumstances of the case. Considerable talent and perseverance must have been required to ensure the completion of the line ; and it would be ungenerous to deny its promoters credit for those qualities, or to conceal the honours they may justly claim for having carried out the undertaking upon the government system in Ireland to a finished state and having made it pay so respectable a dividend to the proprietors, while so largely indebted to the state and to private persons.

Attached to the Dublin and Kingstown railway is a small branch to Dalkey, one mile and three quarters long, worked

upon the atmospheric principle. For this experiment the Board of Works lent the company £25,000, at 5 per cent. Whether the whole of this sum was expended, or more, does not precisely appear by the report of the directors, dated August 1844. It was there recommended, and afterwards agreed by the company, that £30,000 should be raised, at 4 per cent., to pay off £25,000, borrowed from the Board of Works. A few months afterwards appeared the prospectus of the Kingstown and Bray railway, in which the cost price of the Dalkey branch was declared to be £35,000. For the period of the year during which the branch had been opened, the receipts were £1,574 13s. 8d., and the expenses £758 0s. 1d., upon which the report claimed a surplus of £836 13s. 7d. But if interest on the loan of £25,000 had been taken into the account, a deficiency of more than £400 would have been shown; and if £35,000 had been the real cost of the undertaking, the deficiency would have been still greater. Should the Company, however, proceed with the published plan of an extended line to Bray, means will soon be in their hands to balance this account. For the proposed railway must prove a lucrative one, and add enormously to the value of the land through which it passes.*

The Ulster railway was the first enterprise of the kind undertaken and completed in Ireland by a joint-stock company, who relying from the outset upon their own resources and rectitude, were animated by a spirit of manly indifference to the patronage or disfavour of government. The work, both in point of design and execution, affords another striking proof of the intelligence and the energy by which Belfast has been rendered the principal seat of Irish commerce, manufactures, and wealth. As originally projected, the line was intended to run to Armagh; but it has not up to the present date

* The Dublin and Kingstown Railway has extended the Metropolia of Ireland a distance of seven miles. The Railway has literally drawn the town along with it. The Longford and De Vesci estates at Kingstown, which were valued before the Railway was made at £6,000 a year, are now rated to the poor at the annual value of £100,000 and upwards.

been carried farther than Portadown. Its length is 25 miles; the capital of the company is £500,000; and the total cost of the undertaking has been £348,646. Of this expenditure, the only portion derived from government was a small loan of £20,000. According to the two reports of the directors, dated March and September, 1844, the gross income for the former period was £13,453 4s.; and for the latter, £13,856 17s. 10d.; and the expense of working the line having stood for each half-year respectively at the sums of £4,698 19s. 3d., and £5,401 5s. 1d.: the total net income for the year amounted to £17,235 5s.; and the rate of dividend was £5 1s. 8d. per cent. upon the paid-up capital. It appeared by the same documents, that the actual debt of the company then consisted only of a balance due to the Board of Works of the small loan already mentioned.

Contrasting the Dublin and Kingstown and the Ulster railways,—seeing that the one which is only 6 miles long has cost more money than the other, which is 25, and observing that the latter is incumbered with no heavier debt than £17,000, while the former owes £155,048, it is impossible not to feel that in point of spirit, economy and effect, the hardy measures of private enterprise are always likely to prove far superior to the aid and control system with which the English government has so long harassed Ireland.

But there is still a stronger case to be brought forward. The Dublin and Drogheda railway was projected in the year 1835, and legalised by an act passed in the following session of parliament. An amended act, in 1837, reduced the original estimate from £600,000 to £450,000: but the whole was disparaged in pointed terms, during the course of the same year, by the report of the Railway Commissioners. That injudicious stigma paralysed the undertaking for several years. Fortunately for the country, a considerable portion of the capital had been subscribed at Manchester; and the English shareholders, unused to the Irish practice of crushing independent exertions for the promotion of local improvements,

by the pressure of government authority, and the application of the public money to a competing enterprise, resolved to proceed as they had begun. Success crowned their perseverance: they brought their labours to an honourable conclusion, and have conferred an invaluable benefit upon the country. The whole line of this railway, $31\frac{1}{4}$ miles long, was opened for traffic in May 1844, at a cost of £377,165 exclusive of plant,—by which the directors of the company and their accomplished engineer, Sir J. Macneill, enjoyed the satisfaction of claiming credit from the proprietary and the public for two very uncommon and praiseworthy acts of merit—making the line within the estimated cost of £14,000 a mile;* and opening it for public traffic within the appointed time.

The strength of the only cases in which private enterprise had been able up to this date to throw off in Ireland the restraints imposed by government upon it has proved so imposing, and the impulse given by its action to the emancipated energies of the country, has been so considerable, that the question at issue between the two systems might almost be regarded as at last finally decided and disposed of. But no full history of the administration of Irish public works has been written,—no detailed accounts have been collected of the amount, or the application of the various large sums of money intrusted by the legislature to this mode of management; the government system, moreover, has not been abandoned; arguments and appeals in its favour are frequently presented to the public eye; senators still are, and for a length of time will surely be found anxious to retain a set of establishments propitious in so many respects to personal and party interests;—it may therefore be useful, though perhaps tedious, to revert once more to the past; and having

* By the printed accounts produced with the Report, dated August 29, 1844, it appears that the total receipts for the construction of the works, &c., had been £504,777 19s., and the total expenditure £500,971 18s. 5d.; and further, that an existing debt of £96,608 would require to be increased by a further outlay for stations and stock to the amount of £80,000.—Total additional cost £176,608.

shown the actual condition of the several joint-stock enterprises in Ireland, to sketch the gradual progress of mismanagement and abuse in the proceedings of the successive boards and commissions under which, waste, delinquency, corruption, insolvency and failure have more or less prevailed in every undertaking with which they have interfered,—boards and commissions, which have authorized and encouraged the expenditure of about five millions sterling upon a few navigations and canals, the total receipts from which cannot be estimated at more than £80,000 a year.

It should be constantly borne in mind that this outlay, large and unproductive as it unfortunately is, does not constitute the gravest of the evils we have to deprecate. The system not only deteriorated the Irish character, but operated as a positive bar to improvement. The practice of making the progress of every undertaking depend upon the support given to it by government, contracted the views, and humbled the spirit of all classes, mercantile as well as agricultural. It deprived them, too, of no small portion of that independence, or, rather, self-dependence, which is essential to greatness. Men, reared in the habit of looking for the helping hand of the minister of the day to lead them through every difficulty, and reach for them every attainable advantage, will rarely be found to rely for success upon their own exertions. They may stand in no actual need of the requisite funds or talent, but they will be sure to lack the skill and energy to use them well. It is in vain to indicate to such persons the valuable consequences that must ensue, if they will only exercise the powers they possess, and bring the resources at their command into proper action. They are unaccustomed to pursuits of the kind in the only form in which they can be truly honourable or securely prosperous. As far back as their memories serve, these have always been government concerns; by far the greater portion of the money they have seen applied to them, has been public money;—they further know that it has been wasted,—they cannot find a single venture

thus set up which has repaid the promoters; and having been so warned and repeatedly instructed, they have not unfrequently been disposed to treat a proposal to embark in a new project as a deliberate attempt at imposition.

The Irish Parliament had existed for a length of time before it began to pay attention to those measures of internal improvement, without which it is impossible to promote the export and import trade and navigation of a maritime country. We may also observe, that the first efforts made in this direction were crude in the extreme, and deeply impregnated with the vicious character of the general government. According to Newenham, the only legislative provisions of this class passed between the years 1665 and 1786 inclusive, were "An Act for enclosing the Strand on the north side of the River Liffey," 1 Geo. II., c. 26 :—"An Act for cleansing the Ports, Harbours, and rivers of Cork, Galway, Belfast, Sligo, and Drogheda, and directing Ballast-offices therein," 3 Geo. II., c. 21 :—"An Act for promoting the Trade of Dublin, by rendering its Harbour and Port more commodious," 26 Geo. III., c. 19.

The grants of the Irish Parliament during the same period for harbours, piers, &c., were as follow :—

1756	£2,000	0	0	Skerries Pier.
1757	500	0	0	Bangor Pier
1765	1,200	0	0	Killeleagh Pier.
—	1,000	0	0	Dingle Bay.
—	1,300	0	0	Sligo Harbour.
1771	500	0	0	Galway Quay.
1775	500	0	0	Portrane Pier.
1783	600	0	0	Liscanner.
1761	1,000	0	0	Galway Harbour.
to	500	0	0	Carrickfergus Quay.
	21,500	0	0	Cork Harbour.
1783	1,000	0	0	Dublin Harbour.
1761	6,752	0	0	Balbriggan Pier.
1763				
1765				
	£38,352	0	0	

Brought forward £38,352	0	0	
1756 } to }	18,500	0	0
1765 }			Dunleary Pier.
1756 } and }	1,870	0	0
1767 }			Enver Pier.
1771 } and }	1,500	0	0
1777 }			Youghal Harbour.
1781	500	0	0
1765	2,500	0	0
1767 }			Dungarvan Quay.
1771 }	2,800	0	0
1777 }			Limerick Quay.
1767 } and £400 a year, for 8 years.	2,000	0	0
	3,200	0	0
			Dundalk Harbour,
1765 }			
1767 }	4,590	15	0
1771 }			Londonderry Quay.
1745 }			
1763 }	13,290	19	6½
			Ballycastle Harbour.
1759 } to }	9,264	9	8
1767 }			Wicklow Harbour.
1765 }	2,705	0	0
1777 }			Donaghadee Harbour.
<hr/>			
	£101,073	4	2½

According to the same author it would be difficult to conjecture, how much of this sum was faithfully expended on the different works for which it was destined. We may suspect, however, that little more than one-half, if so much, was properly applied; for it is well known, that among those in the Irish community who enjoyed the patronage of government, there has almost uniformly been, with a few individual exceptions, not only a shameful want of public spirit, but an inveterate propensity to outrageous jobbing.

For an account of the illusive and ineffectual acts passed to encourage internal navigation, we must still have recourse to Newenham. The Commons first adopted a right principle, but unfortunately they applied it in a wrong direction. By the act 2 Geo. I. c. 12,* four gentlemen, George Frizell, Henry Crossdal, Samuel Eyre, and John Ringrose, were empowered to make the river Shannon navigable, at their own expense, from Limerick to Carrick-drum-rusk, a distance of 100 miles, and to demand a toll of 4d. per ton per mile on all goods, wares, and merchandise conveyed on the improved navigation. Everything counteracted the success of this bold undertaking. In the first place, the Shannon, though the largest river in Ireland, is the least favourable to the current of trade. There was, besides, no adequate traffic along its course,

* The scale of operations embraced by this act was amazingly comprehensive: its authors had the twofold object in view of prosecuting internal navigation and draining and improving the bogs and waste lands, which were much more extensive in Ireland at the beginning of the last century, than they now are. The intended works were to render navigable part of the Liffey and the Rye, part of the Boyne, the Mungah and Brosna, and to make canals between them, bearing south-west from Dublin, and falling into the Shannon at Banagher; to make the Barrow navigable from Ross to the Grand Canal leading from Dublin to Limerick; to make the Upper and Lower Bann navigable from Newry to Coleraine; to make the Nore navigable, or extend the navigation thereof from Waterford and Ross to the Grand Canal at Eyre-court; to make the Liffey navigable from Dublin to Kilcullen, and thence into the Barrow at Carlow; to make the Blackwater navigable from Youghal to Newmarket; to make the Foyle and part of the Finnberg navigable from Londonderry to Omagh; to make the Erne navigable from Ballyshannon to Killishandra; to make navigable, or employ in navigations, the Martin, the Cloydagh, part of the Blackwater, the Ownbeg and Maig, between Cork and Limerick; to make the Uincion, the Arrow, and part of the Boyle navigable from Sligo into the Shannon at Carrick; to perfect a navigation by the Corb, Mask, and Moy, from Galway to Killala; to make the Slaney navigable from Wexford to Baltinglass; to make the Suir navigable to Roscrea; to make the Colgan navigable, or extend its navigation, from Galway into the Shannon; to make the Suck navigable from Castlereagh into the Shannon: to make the Inny navigable from Lough Shelan into the Shannon; to make the Lee navigable from Cork to Macroom; to make the Bandon navigable from Kinsale to Dunmanway; and to make the Lane navigable from Castlemaine harbour to Ross Castle—in all thirty-two rivers, which, with the projected canals in connexion with them, were to give upwards of one thousand miles of inland navigation, and to place 10,000 square miles, or 6,400,000 acres within five miles of navigable river or canal.—*Newenham's View of Ireland*, p. 27.

to render the improvement remunerative. The tolls, moreover, were so high as to discourage trade, and the heavy rate of interest, eight per cent., charged upon the money, which the improvers had to borrow in order to carry on their works, rendered the stated rate of toll indispensable. Thus, the first effort made to improve the Shannon was abortive.

The act, 3 Geo. II. c. 3, was passed to supply a remedy for this failure. The principle originally applied to the undertaking was wholly changed by this second enactment, which recited that the expense was discouraging to individuals, and that it was expedient that works of public benefit and advantage should be carried on by means of a public fund to be set apart for the purpose. In order to form this fund, taxes were imposed, for a term of twenty-one years, of 20*s.* on four-wheeled, and 5*s.* on two-wheeled carriages; 6*d.* the pack on imported playing-cards; 5*s.* the pair on dice; and 6*d.* the ounce on gold and silver plate. The produce of these taxes, at the end of the twenty-one years for which they were imposed, was £63,128 9*s.* 7*1/4d.*, or on the average £3,006. 2*s.* 4*1/2d.* a year.

With this small revenue, with the Lord Lieutenant, the Lord Chancellor, the four Protestant archbishops, and eighty peers and members of parliament, twenty for each province, as commissioners, and with a power in the act to apply the fund created to the improvement of tillage as well as navigation,—it will be readily supposed that but little was done for any works of the one kind or the other.

Twenty-two years afterwards the act, 25 Geo. II. c. 10, transformed these commissioners into the Corporation for promoting and carrying on Inland Navigation. This body was authorized to hold courts in Dublin four times a year, to elect from amongst its members twenty-four assistants vested with extensive powers, to appoint suitable officers, to increase their salaries and fees, and to cause the country to be surveyed; to lay out new roads from mines to navigations, to make any river navigable, to demolish weirs, &c. But, according

to Newenham, it must have been evident to every reflecting man that the business of inland navigation could not have been more expeditiously or skilfully conducted under this than under the former acts ;—on the contrary, jobbing and peculation were rather facilitated than precluded by it. It proved therefore as illusive in effect as the others.

Every step taken in legislation testified the inefficacy of the state system. The act 29 Geo. II. c. 10, after complaining of the difficulty experienced in procuring three out of the eighty-six members of the corporation to meet and adjust disputes with landowners, and also the general incompetency of the body to deal satisfactorily with questions of that nature, directed that persons, not members of the corporation, should be employed to transact this business. The act 3 Geo. III. allowed so much of the duties already specified as should be found necessary, to be applied to build and furnish a house for the meeting and accommodation of the corporation. Thus, again, says Newenham, was a wide field opened for jobbing and peculation, while the business of inland navigation was left in its former state.

It would be curious, but very tedious, to trace the proceedings of this ill-chosen Board, step by step, and to examine closely the many great schemes projected and the few small improvements actually accomplished under its auspices. Incessant legislation became indispensable to sustain the establishment ; but at last a reaction set in. About the year 1766, the faith of parliament and the public evidently began to be shaken ; doubts arose as to the soundness of the policy which maintained such a body in existence ; and it became a question, whether any real benefits had been conferred by it. Several parties, interested in works proceeding under the authority of the board, availed themselves of this state of public opinion to revive the salutary action of private enterprise. The act 7 Geo. III. c. 26, incorporated a company for making the Shannon navigable to Killaloe, and directed the inland board to deliver up all money and materials belonging to the under-

taking. A power of control, however, was specifically reserved to the Board, and the right of interference thus given had the usual depressing influence, and proved an insuperable obstacle in the way of prosperity.

Further evidence of the bad working of the state system was afforded by the Act 11 and 12 Geo. III. c. 4, which provided, that in case a navigation appeared to be too expensive, &c. for the public alone, the Inland Corporation, upon a scheme approved for the purpose, might transfer it from their sole charge to any private company, undertaking to pay the estimated sum required for its completion. The Board, however, was still to retain the power to aid and control the works so transferred, but the aid was to be limited to one-sixth of the estimate, and that was only to be given upon proof being made that the subscribers had paid in and expended five times the amount of the sum demanded, together with all former aids. With a view, evidently, of still further encouraging private enterprise, it was enacted, that any number of persons might enter into a contract of partnership for works of inland navigation, with such stock or capital as they should deem sufficient. The Grand Canal Company was incorporated during the same year, and became invested, as far as the portions of that undertaking then executed, or in progress, were concerned, with all the powers and property of the Inland Board. By this act another blow was struck at the dominion of that now rotten corporation. Having issued warrants for the payment of money far beyond its means, it had fallen heavily into debt, and it was at last forbidden to issue new warrants for raising or paying money until all outstanding warrants and debts should be discharged; and afterwards, unless funds should be in hand to pay all warrants as issued. For these purposes the dice duties formerly imposed were continued, but salaries, rents, and the repair of breaches were to be satisfied as usual; and thus the staff being kept up, the machinery of abuse and corruption remained in full play. As if to show, that in restraining the corporation it was

not intended to restrict the progress of public works by withdrawing government aid from them, the act granted £10,000 for the improvement of Lough Swilly.

The longer this board continued to exist, the more corrupt and noxious it became. The total amount of the duties for fifty-six years ended in 1786, when its dissolution—one of the modified improvements that succeeded the establishment of parliamentary independence—took place, was £382,292, and the amount of the parliamentary grants made to it during the same period, was £227,629,—together, £609,961, or, on the average, £10,892 a year. Had the whole of this sum, according to Newenham, been faithfully or skilfully expended on navigations only, it might perhaps have produced some effect; but it was convertible, as already stated, to other purposes also, and subjected to deductions for salaries, fees, rents, and buildings. Hence the residue left was small; and even that was not only most injudiciously applied, but in part, as there is strong reason to suspect, converted by individuals to private purposes. In a report made to parliament, it was declared that the persons to whom the money warrants were issued were accountable to the corporation, but that several of them never passed accounts. Nevertheless no dissolution took place until the year 1786; and, perhaps, more instructive means of indicating its true character cannot be offered, than are supplied by the act 27 Geo. III. which put an end to it altogether, and made null and void all the powers exercised by it or its agents. The several canals, navigations, lands, &c., &c., belonging to it, were vested temporarily in the local parties connected with them. All books, plans, estimates, and accounts, were ordered to be delivered up to the auditor of impress accounts at the Treasury, in twenty-one days, and the salaries of the secretary and treasurer for ten years were forfeited to the King. Separate companies were incorporated for the Newry, Boyne, Barrow, Shannon, and Tyrone navigations, and to them were given all the rights, privileges, tolls, &c., held by the board.

There is, perhaps, no one reason which ought to inspire us

with more anxiety to nip abuses in the bud, or, rather, to make us more determined in resisting the introduction of any measures out of which abuses are likely to shoot, than the painful reflection that we can seldom rid ourselves of an abuse, even when most gross, without inflicting a positive amount of damage where it is frequently undeserved. It happens in this case, as in that of a field or garden, which, through the neglect or ignorance of those to whom its cultivation has been intrusted, becomes overrun with weeds or vermin. In clearing away what is rank and noxious, we tear up the roots of generous plants, and brush the bloom and sap from many a leaf and stem, which, suddenly deprived of their customary support, too frequently wither away and die. The suppression of the Board of Inland Navigation, by breaking up all existing arrangements for the maintenance of the different works in progress, and throwing each one upon its own resources for support, naturally caused general confusion and greatly distressed undertakings which had hitherto drawn their main sustenance from extraneous quarters. The invariable accompaniment of sudden or violent changes of system was now presented. Much money had been lost under the old mode of proceeding, and still more money was expended, as compensation to those whom the new arrangement deprived of their usual resources. The number of instances in which this improvident practice has since been repeated, furnishes perhaps the most extraordinary feature in the whole case. Petitions for relief were addressed to the Irish parliament; and it was suggested in them, that it would be equitable to provide that the government should issue debentures against the revenue accruing from the duties which had been imposed for the promotion of these improvements, and that the proceeds should be fairly distributed, by law, amongst the new companies. This led to the act 29 Geo. III. c. 33, which provided that debentures should be issued for £20,000 to the Barrow navigation; £8,300 to the Shannon navigation from Limerick to Killaloe; £57,100 to the Grand Canal Company, for an extension to the Shannon near Banagher;

£10,000 to the same company, for an extension to the Liffey; £66,000 to the Royal Canal Company, for a canal from Dublin to Tarmonbarry on the Shannon; £12,500 for a canal from Drogheda to Trim; 4,000 to the Newry canal; £2,400 for a canal from Osberstown to Naas; £3,300 for a canal from Osberstown to Kilcullen; and £5,100 for a canal from Belturbet to Lough Erne.

Other measures of the Irish parliament, connected with enterprises of this class, were the act 29 Geo. III. c. 3, which amended and new-modelled the Grand Canal Act, and the act 30 Geo. III. c. 20, for the better enabling the Royal Canal Company to carry on its works; as to which it may with safety be incidentally added, that no such body could have come into existence under any other condition of things than that produced by a state system of directing the progress of public works. There was also, an act creating the Lough Erne and Ballyshannon Navigation Company, from Belturbet to Lough Erne, in the terms of the act 29 Geo. III. c. 33; and the Hibernian Mining Company was incorporated by the act, 32 Geo. III. c. 24, with powers for opening Arklow harbour, and making a canal from Meetings Bridge, and thence to the Kilkenny collieries. This last undertaking never proceeded beyond the purchase of some land required for the work, which lapsed to the proprietors after having been paid for with the public money.

From these data, and other particulars lying in their track, we are able to estimate the amount of money applied to public works, before the legislative union. Up to the year 1777, there had been voted,—as already mentioned, upon the authority of Newenham,

£101,073

Twenty-one years' produce of the taxes mentioned at page 315 gave	63,128
---	--------

Fifty-six years' produce of the duties received by the Inland Navigation Board, realised, as stated at page 317	609,961
---	---------

£774,162

Brought forward £774,162

The following sums are taken from Irish Statutes:—

INLAND NAVIGATIONS.

3 Geo. II. c. 3	.	.	.	.	£63,128
29 Geo. II. c. 10	.	.	.	.	34,800
33 Geo. II. c. 1	.	.	.	.	28,500
1 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	36,000
3 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	17,500
5 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	28,403
7 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	21,506
11 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	6,714
12 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	3,500
23 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	2,000
					242,051

BARROW NAVIGATION.

33 Geo. II. c. 1	.	.	.	.	£2,000
1 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	2,000
3 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	1,800
5 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	3,000
7 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	2,000
11 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	1,000
29 Geo. III. c. 33	.	.	.	.	20,000
					31,800
					1,048,013

GRAND CANAL.

29 Geo. II.	.	.	.	.	£20,000
31 Geo. II.	.	.	.	.	17,000
33 Geo. II.	.	.	.	.	10,000
1 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	10,000
3 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	6,000
11 and 12 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	2,000
16 and 17 Geo. III.	.	.	.	.	1,000
27 Geo. III. c. 30	.	.	.	.	12,000
29 Geo. III. c. 33 (extension to Banagher)	.	.	.	.	57,100
					135,100

Brought forward £135,100

31 Geo. III. c. 42	ditto	to Circular Road	.	.	10,000
	ditto	to Junction between Athy			
		and Barrow	.	.	2,120
	ditto	to Kilkenny Collieries	.	.	4,370
	ditto	to Ballyrider	.	.	1,204
	ditto	to finish Docks	.	.	22,000
	38 Geo. III. c. 79	.	.	.	30,000
					204,794

Carried forward £1,387,907

	Brought forward	£1,387,907
TYRONE AND NEWRY NAVIGATION.		
27 Geo. II. c. 1	£4,000	
29 Geo. II. c. 1	4,000	
1 Geo. III. c. 1	3,000	
3 Geo. III. c. 3	4,000	
5 Geo. III.	{ 1,154 5,000	
7 Geo. III	5,000	
11 Geo. III. c. 4	3,000	
11 and 12 Geo. III. c. 1	1,500	
23 and 24 Geo. III. c. 1	2,000	
29 Geo. III. c. 1	2,000	
	—	34,654
BOYNE NAVIGATION.		
33 Geo. II. c. 1	£2,000	
1 Geo. III.	2,000	
21 and 22 Geo. III.	1,000	
23 and 24 Geo. III.	1,000	
29 Geo. III. c. 33	12,500	
	—	18,500
ROYAL CANAL.		
1789	£66,000	
1792	7,500	
1798	25,000	
	—	98,500
	—	£1,539,561

Amongst the numerous palliatives administered by the government, for the purpose of reconciling the Irish to the legislative union, was a grant of half-a-million sterling, to promote public works. The expenditure of this sum was intrusted, as of old, to a set of Directors-general of Inland Navigation, who are clearly shown, in more than one parliamentary return, to have proceeded in their office as if this money had been given less for the public use than for their personal gratification and benefit. They do not appear to have done anything but pay salaries up to the year 1810; when they proposed a series of general surveys in various parts of the interior of the country, to ascertain by what lines canals, with ample supplies of water, might be carried, "with a view

of assisting noblemen and gentlemen in their objects for the improvement of the country." This wild scheme was entertained by the Irish government; but the result differed in no respect from the many other devices of the same kind which had been so repeatedly devoted to the satisfaction of the same interests. A good deal of expense was incurred, and a good deal of information acquired. Extensive lines of canal to the north and south were suggested; and their courses were to have been much in the direction subsequently recommended for the government railways. The proposal was grand, but nothing came of it. The improving noblemen and gentlemen of that period, like their heirs and successors of a later day, looked to government for the money to make the canals; and as the government did not happen to give it, the noblemen and gentlemen went without their canals. The idea of improving the country at the smallest risk to their own purses had not then found its way into the category of duties which the patriotism of Irish landlords had prescribed to the numerous members of their body.

In the year 1811, the bankruptcy of the Royal Canal Company under circumstances of scandalous delinquency recalled the particular attention of parliament to the utter inefficiency of the prevailing system, and exposed a variety of details which laid completely bare the worthlessness of the government board, either as a means of giving a proper direction to the spirit of private enterprise, or of controlling the abuses of the joint-stock companies, unwisely brought into existence by its countenance and authority. Upon this occasion the directors of the Royal Canal Company confessed that the holders of their debentures for the most part were poor people, orphans and widows,—estimated in round numbers at not less than 2,000.—The majority of this large body of sufferers had bought some at a premium, from the directors themselves, who were the original loan-holders, and were sellers also with a perfect knowledge of the insolvency of the undertaking. The Government Board of Inland Navigation appears to have been intimately acquainted with the particulars of this flagrant imposition—they had seen

this company expend £1,373,635 ; they knew its revenue barely exceeded £15,000 a year—and yet they permitted dividends of 2 per cent. to be declared out of the monies borrowed from poor orphans and widows. How far the forbearance shown to the guilty directors of the Royal Canal may have emanated from a tender conviction of the unsoundness of their own administration, is a problem now difficult of precise solution. We know, however, that their disbursements of the half-million sterling granted at the time of the Union had proceeded, up to the period now under consideration, March 1811, as follows :—

For the salaries and expenses of their own establishment, and the four navigations in their charge	.	.	.	£172,238	17	11½
To the Royal Canal	.	.	.	98,831	6	7
The Grand Canal Company, to improve the Middle Shannon	.	.	.	53,231	17	8
The Barrow Navigation	.	.	.	41,881	8	9½
The Corporation of Dublin, to improve the Port of Dublin	.	.	.	15,463	18	3½
Sums appropriated, but not paid	.	.	.	9,875	0	0
In the Bank of Ireland	.	.	.	9,147	10	6½
Poundage and bills at the Treasury	.	.	.	5,587	10	2½
Balance not received or appropriated	.	.	.	93,742	10	0
				£500,000	0	0

The third great experiment of government interference with private enterprise began to be tried in the year 1831. Mr. Spring Rice, now Lord Monteagle, having presided over the inquiries of a Committee of the House of Commons,—which embraced an infinite variety of topics, and amassed an unexampled fund of information,—produced the act 1 & 2 Will. 4, c. 33, by which the Directors-general of Inland Navigation were at last got rid of, and three Commissioners of Public Works were appointed in their stead, with enlarged salaries* and powers, a more extended range of duties, ad-

* The old directors were paid £500 a year : the present commissioners receive—chief, £1,200 ; and two juniors £600 each.

ditional patronage, and a sum of £500,000, to be expended in a re-invigorated career of mingled encouragement and control.

The office of Commissioner of Public Works embraces numerous services of very different kinds. The whole, however, may be reduced into two classes,—positive, and incidental. Under the several acts of parliament by which the post has been created and continued, certain definite functions are assigned to the commissioners; and the manner in which these are performed is communicated to both Houses in an annual report. But from time to time inquiries and investigations, akin to their ordinary pursuits, have been demanded; and for them, upon the grounds of convenience and familiarity with the subject-matter, one or more of the commissioners has usually been nominated. In this way Commissioners of Public Works have become Shannon Navigation and Railway Commissioners; and they have, until very recently, been so mixed up and identified with every project for the improvement of the country as to have been in no inconsiderable degree the arbiters of its destiny.

The establishment (according to the evidence given by Sir J. Burgoyne to the Commons Committee on Public Works, Ireland, in the year 1835) consisted originally of a chairman and two commissioners; a secretary, with three clerks; an accountant, with two clerks; and an engineer, who is also architect to the board. The total cost of these functionaries, according to the same authority, is about £5,500 a year.* The various services for which this money is paid, include the making of loans and grants for public works in the terms of the acts of parliament

* The expense doubtless was as here stated by the chairman, but the sources from which that amount was obtained are obscure. There is a vote taken always in the annual estimates, under the head of public works, Ireland,—and the sum is generally about £2,700. The accounts of the commissioners appended to their parliamentary reports, show expenses, under the heads of salaries, for incidents, travelling, &c., to the extent, one year with another, of about £4,500. How the difference is made up between the parliamentary vote and the actual expense does not appear, nor where the odd thousands are obtained, which the chairman declares, and the annual reports prove, to be the actual cost over and above the parliamentary vote. It is probably a charge upon the Consolidated Fund.

passed for those purposes; obtaining repayments of old loans, and superintending fisheries, certain inland navigations, roads, bridges, harbours, the government buildings in Dublin, lunatic asylums, &c. It further appears by the Twelfth Report of the Commissioners, that the following is the sum-total received and applied under the chief head of their operations—making loans and grants for public works:—

LOANS.

1st. Original appropriation by the act 1 & 2 Will. IV., c. 33	£500,000 0 0
2nd. Additional sum by the act 6 & 7 Will. IV., c. 108, but not considered re-issuable	100,000 0 0
3rd. A portion of the monies received in repayment of principal re-issued under the act 1 & 2 Will. IV., c. 33, s. 60	244,650 0 0
4th. Out of the sum of £50,000, made applicable to public works in Ireland, under the act of 1 & 2 Vict. c. 88, s. 14, there was appropriated the further sum of	46,000 0 0
5th. By the act of 6 & 7 Vict. c. 44, which put a stop to all issues of Exchequer bills, and consequently of re-issues under the act 1 & 2 Will. IV., c. 33, a new appropriation of a sum of £15,000 per quarter was charged upon the consolidated fund, for issues on account of public works in Ireland, and to continue for the space of four years, commencing on 10th October, 1843	
Under this act the occurrence of two quarters has added to the fund, 10th October, and 5th January	30,000 0 0
	<hr/>
The issues out of these funds have been, Exchequer bills to 10th October, 1843	890,650 0 0
By the Commissioners for Reduction of the National Debt, to 5th January	4,050 0 0
	<hr/>
Leaving a balance, not yet issued, of	£25,950 0 0
	<hr/>

The net amount of loans sanctioned, acted on, or in operation (including £850, advanced pursuant to 1 Vict.) to 5th January is	£932,601 17 0
Deduct issues	894,700 0 0
Balance due on loans	37,901 17 0
Deduct balance of fund	25,950 0 0
The difference or excess	11,951 17 0
will not be required until long after a fund shall have arisen sufficient to meet it.	
The whole amount transferred to her Majesty's Exchequer, to 5th January, has been, viz.	
Principal repayment of	£398,657 0 0
Interest, payment of	135,555 18 3
	534,212 18 3
From net amount of loans	932,601 17 0
Deduct amount issued under 6 & 7 Will. IV., the repayment of which has been directed through another channel	100,000 0 0
Deduct also principal repaid, as above	398,657 0 0
	498,657 0 0
Leaving a balance of loans yet outstanding	433,944 17 0
Thus it will be perceived that the balances of loans outstanding have, by means of repayment of principal, been far reduced below the amount	546,000 0 0
Which before the passing of the late act would have been re-issuable . . . .	. 112,055 3 0

GRANTS.

Sums made applicable to grants by sundry enactments:

1st. The fund originally appropriated by the act

1 & 2 Will. IV., c. 33 £50,000 0 0

2nd. A further sum provided by the act 1 Vict.

c. 21 50,000 0 0

3rd. A portion of the sum of £50,000, provided by the act 1 & 2 Vict. c. 88

4,000 0 0

4th. A sum provided by the 17th section of the 6 & 7 Vict. c. 44

21,000 0 0

£125,000 0 0

This statement of accounts enables us to see how the system has worked in some essential particulars. For twelve years the total amount of loans and grants stands thus,—£920,650 + £125,000 = £1,045,650. The money actually issued, moreover, on loan has been £894,400 ;* of which £398,657 are set forth as having been repaid, and £433,944 as outstanding, while interest has been received to the amount of £135,555 18s. 3d.; a small sum, when the rate charged, 5 per cent. per annum, is borne in mind.

The expenses of the establishment must be added to these amounts, if the full sum contributed by the country for public works in Ireland is to be calculated with accuracy. These expenses,† including not solely the amounts of the votes taken every year in the Irish Estimates, but the sums entered as

* The sums here given—£920,650; £894,700; £398,657; and £433,944, are taken from the twelfth report (page 2); but at the foot of another account in the same document (page 15) the amount of loans sanctioned is returned at £963,515 0s. 10d.; of loans issued, £886,950; and of repayments, £434,955 13s. 10d.

† EXPENDITURE of the COMMISSIONERS of PUBLIC WORKS in IRELAND, extracted from their Annual Report.

1832.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	£3,930	10	2
1833.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	5,067	11	5
	Law expenses	.	.	547	17	6
1834.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	2,751	9	0
	Law expenses	.	.	214	4	2
	Law expenses for deposits paid to engineers, &c. on applications for loans and grants	.	.	108	1	8
1835.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	3,008	5	10
	Law expenses	.	.	265	16	5
1836.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	3,264	6	9
	Travelling expenses	.	.	139	16	2
1837.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	3,652	5	7
	Law expenses	.	.	218	10	1
1838.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	3,652	8	7
	Law expenses	.	.	181	2	10
1839.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	3,796	3	2
	Law expenses	.	.	574	9	8
1840.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	3,918	12	7
	Law expenses	.	.	465	6	9
1841.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	3,806	1	1
	Law expenses	.	.	882	8	2
1842.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	3,678	15	7
	Law expenses	.	.	1,900	17	1
1843.	Salaries and incidents	.	.	6,519	6	10
	Law expenses	.	.	264	12	4
				£52,808	19	5

having been actually expended in the annual Reports of the Commissioners, show a total of £52,808 19s. 5d. paid since the act 1 & 2 Will. IV. c. 33 was passed ; which, added to £1,045,650, makes the total contribution £1,095,458 19s. 5d.

By examining the details furnished in the appendix to each report, we perceive that the sums returned under the head of repayments and interest, have mainly proceeded from loans advanced for making roads at the instance of grand juries on the security of county rates. So far this principle of lending money for the public use may be considered safe ; and the object being decidedly beneficial, the whole principle and practice will deserve commendation. There are persons, it is true, to be found from time to time who complain that individual and political considerations have led to not a few undue preferences even in this branch of the service, and there may be tenable grounds for reproaches of the kind. Where open and unblushing corruption has long been the order of the day in government offices, it is but natural to suspect that the taint of its influence should linger in many a public department. Nevertheless the principle being sound, and its operation in the main efficient, our future care should be directed against the recurrence of the old abuses. Upon the whole we appear to be justified in affirming, that wherever a district is found susceptible of an improvement of this kind, and the inhabitants are content to pay for it out of their own rates, the power to borrow the necessary capital for the work should be placed within their reach. Nor perhaps are roads the only public works to which the people should be restricted. Of them at least it is not too much to record, that, in many instances where they have been constructed wholly at the public expense, the country has not lost money. The increased consumption of exciseable articles, in districts thus opened for the first time to the progress of civilization and commerce, has been known to produce to the revenue in a few years a sum greater than that expended upon the roads themselves.*

* The evidence of Mr. Nimmo, Mr. Wye Williams, Mr. Weale, of the Woods and Forests, and other unquestionable authorities, repeated before different parliamentary committees, is conclusive upon this point.

This fact involves another important conclusion: where a district is too poor to tax itself in this respect, the state is bound to provide the improvement. In this view of the case, some remarks in the twelfth report of the Commissioners claim at once the most serious and favourable consideration:—

"The principal object to which this (grant) fund has been applied is the opening up of wild uncultivated districts, capable of improvement, but from which they are shut out by the want of the means of communication for the most ordinary vehicles. By the formation of roads, facility is given for the introduction of manures best adapted to the amelioration of the soil of the districts with which they communicate, and for the conveyance of the produce to fair and market. Much has been done, with the aid of this fund, towards the improvement of the condition of the people in several parts of the country,—but much more remains to be done: and it is to be apprehended that the districts standing most in need of this description of assistance are, from local circumstances, the least likely to be brought under the consideration or the power of grand juries to relieve them.

"The execution of such works leads to the adoption of improved modes of cultivation, and the abandonment of the rude and primitive implements in common use; and opens to the officers of justice and local authorities, places which had been the secure haunt and impenetrable refuge of the outlaw and the robber. We conceive that the advantages of affording aid to the promotion of such works in a statistical, moral, or political point of view, are too obvious to make it necessary to dwell on the subject at greater length.

"We are also under a conviction, that without the aid of a Grant Fund of this nature, very many measures of improvement that are to be effected by it will remain unaccomplished for many years."*

* Another page in an earlier (the second) report, expressed the same good opinions:—

"In Ireland, where agriculture affords the principal means of natural wealth, the opening of new districts, by the construction of new roads upon well-considered plans, gives to an accumulative source of productive industry an immense power, and at little cost.

"Such are the effects, while the means are equally encouraging.

"There are few countries where good roads can be made so readily; and at so little expense. The levels are usually easy; large bridges or embankments seldom requisite; materials of good quality very abundant: and the land of so little value in its present state, that it is in most instances cheerfully given in return for the great benefit to be derived from the work. £300 or £400 a mile will frequently cover any expense attendant upon the construction of a good road. £500 or £600 may be esteemed a reasonable average rate; and those under circumstances of comparative difficulty seldom exceed £1,000 or £1,200 a mile.

"The repairs will be in proportion to the expense, varying from £10 to £60 per annum."

Sound judgment, humane sense, and a correct appreciation of some of the most trying wants of the country, characterize these observations. Equal praise is not due to the opinions entertained, nor to the line of conduct pursued, by the Commissioners in other material respects. Their aim from the first, and their unceasing study throughout their whole career, has been to bring the construction, support, and management of all the public works of the country under their own care and patronage. They would have nothing planned but as they advise,—nothing executed, but as they may direct. In their second report, they address the Lords of the Treasury in this significant language.

“ Having thus added our humble testimony in favour of the policy of making gratuitous advances and loans on an extensive scale; we would suggest, that in all cases where grants are made, either of the whole or part of the cost, or where loans are advanced on the security of the revenue to be derived from the work,—the public providing the entire of the fund, the sole charge and control of the works and expenditure should be vested in some responsible government department, and that no corporate body or local commissioners should be authorized by distinct acts of parliament or otherwise to have the management, except in cases where they themselves subscribe for, or deposit a fair proportion of the required funds.” *

* As Dame Partlet, the hen, says to Chanticleer, in the Fable,—

“ The dominating humour makes the dream.”

This extract presents us, reflected as it were, with just those thoughts, feelings, and dispositions which seem to arise naturally in the minds of men employed as these gentlemen had for some time been. We know that persons, placed in a given position, as commonly receive a particular bias from it, as the tree bends according to the direction of the prevailing wind to which it is exposed. Throughout all their labours, these and other commissioners have constantly borne with them the sentiments and predilections exclusively appropriate to men in office. They view the question before them, be it what it may, in all its bearings, with eyes partial, by habit, to the principle of a pressure from above; and to that systematized authority, which it is their daily province to exercise in one shape or other. Having held, for a considerable period, different situations of no small power and emolument; being trained and subdued to the formality and order of office; having imbued the second nature, so often stronger than the original, which use and custom give,—it is not strange that the working of the system under which they prosper and enjoy a

The drift of this language is not to be mistaken ; nor is it possible to overrate the injury that would be inflicted if the policy it recommends came to be enforced upon a people so little in the habit as the Irish hitherto have been of relying upon their own exertions for the improvement of their country. Yet the writers of this report never missed an opportunity of impressing it upon the mind of the government from which they obtained their office. Abetted by a subtle party, they succeeded in carrying it into effect upon their own "extensive scale"—in the case of the Shannon commission. The same ambitious experiment was tried again ; but, fortunately for the country, was defeated, in the subsequent case of the Railway commission. From that failure we may date the commencement of a new era in the history of public works and joint-stock enterprises in Ireland ; one which, if it be not injudiciously broken in upon, must soon give a new fortune to the island, and a new temper to its inhabitants.

However cursorily the proceedings of these commissioners may be reviewed, we shall be sure to note the poor effects produced by their office, and be convinced of its extreme inutility. If it was in the nature of things that good could come of such an institution, they must have brought it forth. Every thing favored their cause :—the treasury supplied abundant funds, the parliament conferred ample powers ; the ministers were all confidence and encouragement ; the people

certain extent of patronage and command, should seem to them beyond all doubt excellent in the extreme. Thus prepossessed in favour of routine duties, prescribed discipline, and the wedge-like influence of a government board, they will maintain that an administration for canals, and railways and roads may be admirably devised, which shall supersede every other in point of convenience and efficacy by conforming in all its forms and departments to the condition of things immediately around and under them. Thus, in Ireland, they were led to suggest a railway board : which was little more than an extension of one already extant, and in their own possession. With such gentlemen the greatest of all wants, and the source of all evils, is the want of sufficient power in their own department ;—only give them power, and they will undertake any thing. They, therefore, propose to surmount the defects and misfortunes of all preceding boards and commissions, by imparting to the new one they desire to fashion an extent of absolute authority, perfectly Rhadamanthan.

all hope and gratitude ; and yet now that thirteen years have passed, and nearly two millions sterling have been expended in one way or another under their direction, it is painful to mark how little the labours of the new functionaries differ in their result from those of the old ; and how backward still the country remains with respect to useful and profitable undertakings of the class under consideration.

The more conspicuous enormities of the system, under its former administration, were three,—an extravagant waste of money in the works constructed ; inadequate returns ; and a notorious partiality. This last fault was carried to an indecent extent. Particular persons and places were favoured in the distribution of the parliamentary funds, while others were always excluded from a share of them. The same evils are manifest, in nearly the same degrees, under the administration of the present commissioners. A few examples will suffice to prove the truth of this observation, and to show not only that these gentlemen have not improved the state of the concerns which they took out of the hands of their predecessors ; but that they have not imparted a much better character to those which have been undertaken, under the exclusive protection of their own authority.

Limerick, as already observed, has enjoyed a large portion of the money voted by parliament in aid of public works. Wellesley Bridge and Docks, in that city, were projected before the present commissioners came into office. The old commissioners had sanctioned an advance of £54,346, for this purpose ; but the money was not issued until the year 1832, after the plan had been considered and approved by their successors. The money having been spent ; we find the latter confessing, in the year 1834, that very great and unforeseen difficulties had occurred, principally from the imperfect manner in which the earlier works had been executed ; and that the completion of the dock, as originally projected, was impracticable.—(Third report, page 17.) Accordingly, the advance of more money was called for, and obtained,—namely, a sum of £25,000 in 1832 ; and two sums

of £40,000, and £5,000, in 1833. The pecuniary result of this liberality is exhibited in the twelfth report, as follows:—

	Loan.	Repayments.	Interest Due.
Wellesley Bridge } and Docks.	£55,384 12 4	.	£27,699 8 6
Do.	25,000 0 0	2,500 0 0	658 3 8
Do.	40,000 0 0	.	1,638 9 10
Do.	5,000 0 0	.	676 3 9
	125,384 12 4		
Less one repayment	2,500 0 0		£30,672 5 9
	122,884 12 4		
Add Interest due	30,672 5 9		
Present Debt	153,556 18 1		
	Principal.		Interest Accrued.
Athlunkard Bridge	£6,000 0 9	.	3,846 13 7
Do.	. 9,889 19 2	.	1,962 1 6
Total Loans	15,889 19 11		
Total Interest	5,808 15 1		£5,808 15 1
Loans & Interest due	£21,698 15 0		

If we look at the population and trade of Limerick, we shall see nothing in them to justify such a state of embarrassment as these figures present: both are considerable, and they have been steadily on the increase for several years past. But if, as common report represents, the origin of these works and the aid afforded them lay in the influence of political interest, which took their plan and management out of the hands of the mercantile classes, to whom they properly belonged, there will be nothing in the result to excite surprise,—unless, indeed, it be the patience with which abuses so obstinate have hitherto been endured.

Some ludicrous anecdotes are related, to prove the want of skill and judgment manifested in the plan and structure of these bridges:—On one occasion a ship, breaking from her moorings in foul weather, was driven against Wellesley Bridge. In such a collision it was to be expected that stone

would have proved stronger than wood : but the reverse was shown ; and we are assured that the ship, being better built, broke the bridge !—Again, there is a toll on Wellesley Bridge ; and none on Athlunkard, so the traffic of the free bridge acts against that of the toll-bridge ; and the commissioners, as if to make the competition inevitably ruinous to the more expensive work, advanced a sum of money to construct a new road running straight from the foot of the one to the foot of the other!*

The works of a high class with which the present Commissioners have exclusively identified themselves, and by which the character of their administration is to be tested, are comparatively few ; and, taken as a whole, they are far from being in a creditable or prosperous condition.

The Limerick Navigation has already been spoken of. An account was given, at page 288, of the improvident manner in which the public was compelled to buy back their own loans to this undertaking, paying for them nearly twice the amount originally lent. The Ulster Canal has also been described. The approving terms in which the Commissioners repeatedly advocated the merits of this work, led to a loan of £100,000 from the Exchequer bill commissioners in England ; but the receipts, as already mentioned at page 304, do not cover one-half of the expenses of management.

Another favourite object of praise and assistance is the Dublin and Kingstown Railway.† Of this the commissioners

* Anecdotes of this kind abound. In their report for the year 1837, the Commissioners account for the expenditure of £300 given to them for the relief of the poor. The account is a curiosity in its way. The starving poor got £100, and for distributing that sum the Officers of the Board of Works got £200. The Commissioners built Portumna Bridge, a wooden structure, which cost £26,000, and is so narrow that two carts cannot pass it at the same time. It is asserted that when the Commissioners entered into the contract for this work, they had before them a tender for building a stone bridge for the same money, the width of which would have given room for a double transit of passengers and conveyances.

† The large sums lent to this railway, and to the Ulster Canal, are represented in certain circles in Dublin to have been matters of personal obligation. A capitalist, holding a considerable interest in both undertakings, is familiarly described as always carrying a *commissioner* in his breeches-pocket.

remark, in their first report (page 5), that although they did not consider the work in the very first class of public utility, they recommended a loan of £50,000; to which they were induced to add £25,000, in consideration of the offer of very prompt payment, namely, in the first five years—to be secured by a bond, binding the company, should the tolls fail in producing the promised amount, to make up the instalments by calls on their several shares. So far the first report. The second assures us, (page 18), that as a work of art the undertaking promises to be as perfect of the kind as any ever executed; and that the whole of the apparatus does great credit to the directing management, the engineer, resident engineer, and the contractors. In the fourth report it was announced, (page 19), under the head of Repayments, that several of the larger balances had been liquidated; and amongst them, that to the Kingstown Railway. Turning to the fifth report for particulars, we find this "liquidation" to consist; first of the repayment of £5,000 off the principal sum lent, with some arrears of interest; and, secondly, of a new loan of £40,000! These curious facts prepare us for the subsequent state of the account. The cost of the line, estimated at £150,000, reached 350,000; and by the commissioners' report for the year 1844, it appears that the concern then owed the state £111,333,—being only £38,667 less than the original estimate of the line. By the company's report for the same year, it further appeared that the total amount of debt then due by the railway amounted to £155,048.

These features of the case demand special notice. There is no argument urged with more pertinacity or persuasiveness, by those who contend for a government administration of all enterprises of this kind, than the healthful and economical condition assumed to be the certain effect of vesting large powers in such hands. Government commissioners, in their language, are the men of all others to check the extravagance of headlong speculators, to hold reckless engineers within proper bounds, and to ensure order and economy in all things; yet here is a railway over which the state, through its officers, has

had full authority, which from first to last the state has aided, controlled, directed, patronized, and praised ; and yet the estimate here was £150,000, and the cost £350,000 ; and while the undertaking owed the state £111,333, it owed other parties £50,000 more ; yielding, at the same time, a dividend of nine per cent. to the shareholders, out of the current receipts.

The following extracts, from the Commissioners' twelfth report, will exhibit a clear view of the general character of some operations in this department of their office.

No. of Loan.	Name of Work.	Amount Lent.	Date of Loan.	Repayments.	Principal and In- terest due in 1843.
5	Limerick Navigation	£8,910	1832	£1,500 0 0	£7,400 0 0
70	Ditto .	6,500	1835	812 0 0	5,487 10 0
20	Galway Docks .	17,000	1832	4,217 18 10	14,098 2 5
126	Ditto .	4,000	1837	80 0 0	4,410 5 5
157	Ditto .	3,000	1838	. .	3,389 11 9
28	Newry Navigation	12,000	1832	4,652 11 9	7,433 19 2
255	Ditto .	*10,000	1841	. .	10,281 8 1
32	Drogheda Harbour	10,000	1832	2,135 3 2	8,150 19 5
116	Ditto .	3,000	1837	. .	3,143 8 6
31	Kingstown Railway	75,000	1832	27,151 17 1	47,848 0 0
101	Ditto .	+37,200	1836	. .	37,800 0 0
256	Ditto .	25,000	1842	. .	25,685 4 5
57	Boyne Navigation	1,750	1834	680 0 0	1,070 0 0
113	Ditto .	1,000	1837	200 0 0	811 1 3
Total .		214,360		41,429 10 10	177,009 10 5

The aggressive spirit of these gentlemen, their discouragement of private enterprise, and their anxiety to prevent the introduction of joint-stock companies have been displayed with equal vigour in the discharge of their ordinary and their incidental duties. Their opinions upon this subject were promulgated, as has already been observed, at an early period, and it must be admitted that the firmness and address with which

* The amount of loan sanctioned is £30,000, but only the sum stated had been advanced up to December 31, 1843. The whole is understood to have been advanced during the course of the subsequent year.

† The amount of loan sanctioned was £40,700, as stated in another page ; but the actual advance was no more than is given here.

they adhered to their professions, soon effected considerable changes, and at one time promised unmeasured success.

In their second year of office they availed themselves of a summary process to take the Lower Boyne Navigation from a private company. The right of the parties holding possession of that navigation to levy tolls becoming matter of dispute, the points were referred to the law officers of the Crown, who decided in favour of the Crown ; and upon the strength of that opinion the Commissioners entered into the receipt of the tolls and the management of the Navigation. Judging by the furnished accounts, no benefit has accrued from this change. When the Navigation was seized by the Commissioners it was not in debt. The amount of tolls in the year 1834 was £707 2s. 5d., and the charge for salaries and allowances £213 6s. 4d. But at the end of the year 1843, the undertaking stood indebted to the state for money borrowed, £1892 17s. 11d., while the amount of tolls received was £734 12s. 11d., and the charges for salaries, allowances, and incidents was £291 7s. 11d., exhibiting after a term of nine years an increase of tolls to the amount of £27 10s. 6d. an increase in the charges of management to the amount of £78 1s. 7d., and of debt to the amount of £1881 1s. 3d.*

But the great triumph of the Board was the commission for improving the navigation of the river Shannon. In this novelty long and studiously prepared and completely fashioned to the taste and ambition of its authors, every principle has been carried into active practice, for which the state-system party in Ireland have ever been the advocates. Nothing desired was omitted or withheld—money was unsparingly

* The other concerns of this class in the hands of the Commissioners are still smaller, and the evidence of improvement in their management is even more scant. In Report 1, the receipts from the Tyrone and Maghery Navigation are returned at £166 4s. 1d. ; and the expenditure at £268 16s. 4d. ; deficiency £102 12s. 3d. for the year. In Report 12, the receipts are £144 9s. 8d. , and the expenditure £172 11s. 5d. ; deficiency £28 1s. 9d. The state of the Maig Navigation, in Report 1, is, receipts £41 16s. 1d. ; expenditure £139 12s. 3d. ; deficiency £97 12s. 3d. In Report 12, receipts £51 9s. 1d. ; expenditure £253 15s. 3d. ; deficiency for the year £202 10s. 2d.

granted, power conferred without restraint, and all the assistance and facilities held to promise success to the undertaking were liberally contributed. The theory of the proceeding was monstrous, and the authority created by it arbitrary beyond all precedent*—but address, perseverance and the influence of an approving ministry soon availed to render them part and parcel of the law of the empire.

The business of the Shannon Commission, or rather the solicitations of its importunate patrons, may be said to have begun when Col. Burgoyne, Captain Mudge, and Mr. Rhodes were called upon to survey the river below Limerick, and to point out the works required for its improvement. Reports and plans from Captain Mudge and Mr. Rhodes were produced to both Houses of Parliament in the session of 1832. A discreet beginning having thus been effected, the scheme was quietly cherished and advanced to maturity by slow degrees. A Committee of the House of Commons, with the late Earl of Kerry in the chair, made a strong report in favour of the measure during the year 1834; and during the next session of Parliament the Marquis of Lansdowne and Mr. Spring Rice carried the Act 5 & 6 W. IV. c. 67, which vested the control, conservation, and improvement of the river Shannon

* The Commissioners under this and the subsequent Act were officers during pleasure; and their powers were undefined in many respects and in no wise interfered with. The general improvements to be effected, the engineers and other persons to be employed—the particular works to be executed and maintained—the bridges, piers, embankments, and excavations—the localities and means to be made use of in each case—the counties, baronies, and lands to be taxed for their construction and support, and the specific rates and proportions for each—the lands and houses to be seized to those uses, and their respective valuations were all left to the three Commissioners. The nature and extent of the undertakings were in many respects open questions, but the funds to proceed with them were supplied by a preliminary vote. Before this extraordinary tribunal all rights and interests, public and private, were made to give way. The fiat of the Commissioners was armed with a rigour previously unknown to the law of the land; once made it became final, and tolerated neither correction nor evasion. No reference was allowed to a jury for the assessment of damages, nor was there an appeal permitted to the Superior Courts from the decisions of the Commissioners. One process only was prescribed, and the result of that was irrevocably conclusive.

from the sea to Lough Derg, embracing a continuous navigation, 232 miles long, in the chairman of the Board of Public Works and other Commissioners, who were directed to hold Courts of Inquiry, and to make surveys, plans, estimates, and reports, by way of preliminaries to such final measures as might be deemed fit for execution at the public expense.

A term of more than four years, and a sum of £32,000 were devoted to this first or preliminary commission. Five elaborate reports with numerous maps explanatory of the various works to be performed and estimates of the outlay demanded were presented to Parliament; and the Act 2 & 3 Victoria, c. 61, was passed during the year 1839, at the instance of Mr. Spring Rice and the Marquis of Lansdowne. The more the subject had been investigated, the greater proved the estimate of the probable cost. Moderate sums of £50,000 and £75,000 were mentioned to the Committee of the year 1834; but the second Report from the Commission under the Act 5 & 6 Wm. IV. c. 67, called for a sum of £266,777, the third Report for £64,351, the fourth £243,974, making a total amount of all the proposed works of £584,805 17s. 9½d, to be defrayed in the following way:—

Proportion to be paid by the public	£290,716	1	4
By the adjoining counties and districts	266,334	6	2½
By proprietors and districts	27,755	10	3½
<hr/>			
	£584,805	17	9½

Some feeble opposition was offered in the House of Commons to the whole scheme, and more particularly to the application of so large an amount of the public money to a new administrative body; but the measure was adroitly carried and a fresh establishment was set up to give immediate effect to its provisions. The cost of maintaining this office is to be added to the total expenses of the improvement. Up to December 31, 1844, the amount was

£14,326 8s. 1½d.,* which will make the money already voted by Parliament towards this last scheme for improving the Shannon, £631,135 5s. 11d.† A sum of £18,447 9s. 0d.‡ has also come into the hands of the Commissioners, as their receipts from rents and tolls during a term of five years; the whole of which being expended from time to time upon the river and works, raises the full outlay of the undertaking to £649,582 14s. 11d.

No definite opinion can as yet be properly formed of this bold and expensive measure. Before the works have been thoroughly completed, and a fair interval has been allowed to test their efficacy, it would be rash to affirm how far the experiment has failed or succeeded, or whether the public money has been applied with economy or whether it has been wasted either wholly or in part. There are at the same time not a few features of the case quite marked in their character, and being unchangeable in their nature, we are already justi-

* The sum from year to year appears by the Commissioners' reports:—

Dec. 31, 1839	.	.	.	£630	4	3
Ditto 1840	.	.	.	2,362	5	9½
Ditto 1841	.	.	.	2,940	5	8½
Ditto 1842	.	.	.	2,451	10	6½
Ditto 1843	.	.	.	2,819	13	3
Ditto 1844	.	.	.	3,122	8	7
				£14,326	8	1½

† Expenses of the Commission under the Act
5 & 6 Will. IV., including the vote of July
27, 1840, for £11,300 law expenses . . . £32,003

Grants and advances authorised by the Act 2 & 3
Vict. c. 61 584,805 17 9½
Subsequent grants for office expenditure . . . 14,326 8 1½

£631,135 5 11

‡ Rents and Tolls, 1840 £3,960 6 4
Ditto 1841 4,411 1 3
Ditto 1842 3,025 16 10
Ditto 1843 3,279 18 9
Ditto 1844 3,870 5 10

£18,447 9 0

fied in treating them as positive events, and adding the moral they convey to the many similar lessons we have been taught in this history of public works.

The Irish are so proud, and writers upon Ireland are so fond of lavishing praise upon the Shannon, that it seems almost unpatriotic to speak of such a river in any other than glowing language, or to question the policy of expending upon its improvement the large sums contributed by Parliament for that purpose. Washing, from its rise in Lough Allen, to its mouth in the Atlantic, the lands of ten counties — some of them the most fertile in the island;—connecting together a chain of lakes so long and broad; receiving in its course the tributary waters of so many navigable rivers; traversed in different parts by full-sized steam-boats; it appears to offer extensive facilities to commerce, and to be the open and ever flowing spring of unbounded wealth and profit. But the Shannon, notwithstanding its many noble properties, has great defects and some of them are irremediable. It abounds with shoals, it is in various places too shallow for the purposes of navigation, and it runs against the prevailing course of trade. All the main and most valuable lines of Irish traffic wend from west to east, while the Shannon flows from north to south with a curve to the west before it joins the sea. The most considerable marts and ports of the country are those nearest to England on the eastern coast—the Shannon pours the long volume of its waters to the west, and deep and broad as they are at many points far from its mouth and high up towards its source, it becomes contracted above Limerick for a space of fifteen miles into a stream so shallow, so narrow, and so precipitous in its fall as not to be navigable in its natural state. The canals and lateral cuts of the Limerick navigation correct this evil so far as to give a passage to barges between Killaloe and the town of Limerick. But the use of the steam-boat and the splendid scheme of rendering the river navigable throughout its whole course, is only fulfilled in so restricted and literal a form as to become in every enlarged

sense of the expression a chimera and deceit. To talk of an uninterrupted navigation in such a state of things is more than an abuse of terms—it is a positive misrepresentation of important facts. Worse still, an uninterrupted navigation is all but impracticable. The fall of the Shannon waters in the fifteen miles between Killaloe and Limerick is ninety-seven feet, and its contracted bed for that distance is for the most part a solid rock, which no engineer has as yet been bold enough to propose to cut through and enlarge.*

If then the Shannon should eventually be improved according to the plans produced and within the promised time, and the estimated expense, the praise really due to the work will be small, because the benefit derivable from it will be limited. The author, who writes for the sake of effect, and travellers led by his descriptions to follow in the track of pleasant scenes, may dwell with emphasis upon the charms of an inland voyage one hundred miles in length, made upon the deck of a trim steam-boat ; they may extol the splendour of that long river when its clear waters and green banks are lit up by the summer sun ; but they will find the splendour solitary ; they will feel that the activity of commerce and the energy of profitable speculation—the crowded dock and loaded pier are wanting ; they will see that no conspicuous trade flourishes ; and they will close their journey in disappointment, considering how so much of the public money has been laid out upon a district and a work furnishing so few elements to justify the expenditure. Surprise will not end here. The traveller will be struck with astonishment when leaving that great river without commerce, he comes to others flowing eastward, upon which the whole traffic of the

* "The Thames," says Inglis, "Trent, Mersey, and Severn, when they lose the character of streams and become rivers, hold a noiseless course ; but the Shannon, larger than all the four, here pours that immense body of water, which above the rapids is 40 feet deep and 300 yards wide, through and above a congregation of huge stones and rocks which extend nearly half-a-mile, and offers not only an unusual scene, but a spectacle approaching much nearer to the sublime than any moderately-sized stream can offer even in its highest cascade."—*Inglis's Ireland*, p. 181, 5th edition.

country export and import is conveyed. Upon every one of the easterly rivers—upon the upper and lower Bann, the Boyne, the Barrow, the Nore, the Slaney and the Suir, obvious improvements strike the eye, all easy of execution—all calculated to be immediately remunerative, and yet all left unattempted.

Amongst the positive advantages*—few when compared with the outlay—derived from the works on the Shannon, are a few substantial bridges, (particularly those built at Athlone and Banagher) some piers erected in the lower river, and the drainage of 32,500 acres of land. The Commissioners estimated the pecuniary benefit of this last improvement at from 40 to 100 per cent. upon the previous value of the reclaimed land; and of this the Government made the owners a present. So much liberality appears as yet to have been indifferently requited, for a decided majority of the land-owners affected have neglected to observe one of the few obligations imposed upon them by the Commissioners. The cost of the piers constructed upon private estates was to be provided partly by the public and partly by the proprietors of the sites adopted: and the proportion of expense so borne by the latter was £18,593 9s. 2d. The public half appears to have been always forthcoming, but of the landlords' proportion, according to the reports of 1843, 4, and 5, only £3,423 have been paid.†

A fact or two of considerable importance remains to be

* An unwillingness to run into minute details has led to the suppression of several faulty practices to which the Commissioners have frequently leaned. For instance, in their 5th Report repeated cases are set forth in which the contractors failed to complete their engagements, but in no one of them does a penalty appear to have been recovered from the sureties. The Commissioners submit to these misfortunes with exemplary patience, placing the suspended works in the hands of an engineer of their own choosing; and allowing the defaulter and his sureties to go their ways absolved of consequences.

† More than one return has been made specifying the amount advanced and repaid by counties, and showing the particular balances outstanding in each case at the period of the return; but no such information has been vouchsafed either by the Commissioners or Parliament with respect to landlords who have not observed their engagements.

noticed. Two great objects were proposed to be attained by this work. First, an equalisation in the level of the waters of the river, so that destructive land-floods should no longer be of frequent occurrence ; and secondly, increased facilities for internal traffic. But it is asserted, that the waters of the Shannon have risen more irregularly, and that land-floods have been more extensive since the works of the Commissioners have been erected here, than they were ever before known to be. The plans have not included the construction of a single towing-path or track-way along the banks of the river, to enable farmers and merchants to expedite the conveyance of produce or commodities from place to place ; and it further appears, that although towards the close of the year 1844, the greater part of the money voted by Parliament had been expended, the trade of the river, notwithstanding the improvements effected, had decreased to a marked extent in different branches.*

The total receipts on account of tolls and wharfage at the stations along the river produced in the year 1840, £1,849 9s. 2½d. ; and in 1844, £1,564 17s. 7d.—decrease, £284 11s. 5½d.

The quantity of goods conveyed to and from the Grand and Royal Canals and the Shannon in the year 1840, was

From the Shannon to the Canals . . .	16,721 tons.
From the Canals to the Shannon . . .	14,266½
Total . . .	30,987½

* The expenditure on works, according to Reports 2, 3, 4, 5, and 6, stood for each year as follows :—

1839	£586 17 7½
1840	87,627 13 3½
1841	54,642 8 6½
1842	78,964 1 3½
1843	73,606 14 2½
1844	64,486 14 11½
Total	£359,914 9 11

In the year 1844, the corresponding amounts stood thus :—

From the Canals to the Shannon	10,924 <i>1</i> ₄
From the Shannon to the Canals	14,838 <i>1</i> ₄

Total	25,752 <i>1</i> ₄
Decrease	5,234 <i>1</i> ₂

The total number of steam-boat passengers on the river in the year 1840, was 18,544*1*₂

1844 16,113

Decrease 2,431*1*₂

So large a measure as the commission for improving the navigation of the river Shannon having been fully secured, not a few persons inclined to the opinion that the fate of private enterprise in Ireland had been decided by the occurrence, and that the course which all works of the class to which it belonged were to take for the future, had at length been definitely settled upon the state system. Animated by the hopes to which this view of the case gave birth, a far more extended field of patronage and power was quickly occupied by the expanding genius of its authors. A number of Irish railways had been projected, Acts of Parliament had been passed for making several lines, and the construction of some of them having commenced, the opportunity seemed favourable for a bold and comprehensive effort to bring the whole under the control of commissioners appointed by Government. If this ambitious movement had succeeded, it would have crowned with success the untired labours of many years; and thus would have been perfected to the fullest extent the artful scheme of forcing the country to depend for every improvement upon the will and authority of the set of persons who might happen to execute in Ireland the functions of her Majesty's ministers for the time being.

Amongst the numerous evidences of misgovernment exhibited in the social condition of Ireland, no two are more conspicuous than the lateness of the period at which all the great improvements distinctive of the progress of modern civilization

have been introduced, and the slowness of the rate at which, when they have found their way into the country, they have struggled into a state of feeble and insecure existence. This remark applies with equal force to the construction of common roads, as well as canals and railways.

Irish roads were principally made by compulsory labour so late as the reign of Charles I. The act 10 C. I. sess. 2, c. 26, compelled the occupiers of land in every parish to furnish, when required for this purpose, horses and carts on six days in each week, and it obliged the peasantry to contribute their labour at the same time. When these authoritative means failed to produce the desired result, grand juries were empowered to levy whatever money might be found necessary to complete the work. But compulsory labour proved ineffectual, and the money raised by grand juries was misapplied, says Newenham, "by the practice of jobbing, which has ever prevailed in a peculiar degree in Ireland, and from which no assembly, authorised to raise money on the subject, from the House of Commons to the vestry, has been exempt."

Several Acts of Parliament were passed to rectify the latter abuse. Amongst those most frequently cited are the acts 4 Anne, c. 6.; 6 Geo. I. c. 10.; 1 Geo. II. c. 13. They availed but for little good. No road Act passed the legislature during the reign of Wm. III. and in the reign of Anne there were but two. After this statement, one reads with surprise the remark of Arthur Young in his tour—"For a country so far behind us as Ireland to have got suddenly so much the start of us in the article of roads cannot fail to strike the English traveller exceedingly."

The turnpike plan perhaps may be credited with some portion of this improvement. It appears to have been first resorted to about the year 1729, when the Acts 3 Geo. II. cc. 18 & 19, were passed together, for making roads from Dublin to Kilkullen, and from Dublin to Navan. This example kindled a lively spirit of emulation. When the Parliament next met, in the year 1731, separate Acts were passed for making roads from Dublin to Dunleer, from Dublin to Kinegad; from the

Black Bull in Meath, to Athboy, from Kilcullen to Kilkenny, from Kilkenny to Clonmel, from Cork to the foot of the Kilworth mountains, from Naas to Maryborough, from Newcastle to Limerick, and from Limerick to Cork.

The turnpike plan, however, proved unsuccessful when pushed to an extensive scale. The trusts were mismanaged and fell heavily into debt. Ere long the system now general came into use ; that, namely, which authorizes the Postmaster-General to direct the construction and repair of such mail-coach roads as he may deem necessary for the public service, but leaves all other roads to be made upon the concurrent agreement of the proper grand jury, and the rate-payers of the district requiring the accommodation. In the former case the county at large is rated for the work—in the latter the rate-payers of the baronies through which the road cuts.

The small number of turnpike roads in Ireland would excite surprise, but for the known difficulties so long experienced by the people of that country in prosecuting works of internal improvement. The facts connected with the turnpike-road system are few, and they deserve to be commemorated.

The first persons who afforded Ireland the benefits of good turnpike roads, and the use of mail-coaches upon an extended and respectable scale were Scotchmen. Their names were William Bourne, John Anderson and Alexander Taylor, and their operations commenced about the year 1793. Mr. Taylor,* a Major of Engineers, was employed by Government in the survey and repair of some of the principal roads of the country. Finding these everywhere in a bad condition, and the trusts so overloaded with debt as to render the duty of executing the necessary repairs onerous in the extreme, he suggested to Messrs. Anderson and Bourne (who were natives of the part of Scotland from which he sprung) the idea of undertaking to keep certain main lines of road in good repair, and to pay off by degrees the debts due upon them, in consideration of a grant from the Government of the right of taking

* He was the author of a set of Irish Road Maps, which were published with his name.

tolls upon them for a definite term of years. Agreements having been entered into upon these conditions, and ratified by Act of Parliament,* Mr. Bourne and Mr. Anderson obtained the road from Naas to Limerick, and Major Taylor the road from Dublin to Kilcullen for a term of fifty years. The Major's principal engagements thenceforward were those of a road-contractor, which he carried on upon a scale far more extensive than had been previously attempted in Ireland, an observation which applies with equal force to the proceedings of his associates, who maintained as road lessees and coach proprietors very large and flourishing establishments. Mr. Bourne settled in Dublin, and Mr. Anderson in Fermoy, where he became a banker, and was created a baronet. But though he outshone his early associates for a length of time by the superior brilliancy of his career, his end was unfortunate. He acquired a large estate in lands and houses, many of which he built, at Fermoy, when the Government, at his recommendation, made that town the principal military depot of the south of Ireland, but he subsequently failed as a banker, and died impoverished.

While the Messrs. Taylor, Bourne and Anderson were in the zenith of their prosperity they engrossed in their respective districts the best and largest portion of the business of the country. The right possessed by them of imposing a heavy toll upon all coaches and carriages travelling along the roads of which they were lessees, while their own conveyances passed free, gave them advantages which forbade competition and practically invested them with a monopoly of the principal routes of communication between Dublin and the southern counties. It is affirmed, however, that they executed their contract with the government and the public energetically and faithfully. Their coaches were commodious and well appointed, the debts due upon the different roads of which they became lessees were gradually discharged, the accruing interest was paid with regularity, and the condition in which the roads had been kept was sensibly improved.

* The Acts 33 Geo. III. c. 32; 38 Geo. III. c. 33; and 59 Geo. III. c. 108, are those which chiefly regulate the terms of these contracts.

But however well the public convenience was then consulted in particular directions, and however suitable were the facilities provided for travelling and correspondence on four main lines of road, namely, one from Dublin to Limerick, a second from Dublin to Cork by Cashel, a third from Dublin to Cork by Clonmel, and a fourth from Dublin to Waterford, other parts of the country were left for a much longer period to what may be literally defined as their natural resources.

One rather curious instance of this state of things will bear to be described, because it also furnishes striking evidence of the rapid pace at which improvements will proceed and fructify in Ireland whenever they happen to be wisely accommodated to the public wants. So late as the year 1807 the mail bags between Waterford and Clonmel were carried in a common cart, and there was no public mode of conveyance between Carrick-on-Suir and Waterford but passage boats, the chief of which is well remembered as Tom Morrissey's boat. These dropped from one town to the other as the tide served, fare fourpence a head—distance twelve miles—time occupied seven hours. Such was the state of travelling between Waterford and Carrick-on-Suir in the year 1807, and in the year 1836 there passed between those towns and on to Clonmel daily a four-horsed mail coach and eight public cars, each carrying from eight to twenty passengers, and all together making eighteen journeys backwards and forwards.

Almost the whole of this large increase was the unaided work of a private individual, Mr. Charles Bianconi of Clonmel. This gentleman so eminent for intelligence, ability and success, is a native of Piedmont, and came over to Dublin at an early age as an apprentice to a carver and gilder. But his master, who was also an Italian, seems to have had but little capital beyond the sums he had received as fees with his apprentices, of whom there were two besides young Bianconi. The occupation of these boys was that of selling religious prints in the streets of Dublin. Bearing this hard lot with patience Bianconi acquired in process of time sufficient knowledge of his master's art to start on his own account. His early career was a very

humble one. He walked from town to town with his pack on his back, vending picture frames and small looking-glasses and soliciting orders. He opened his first shop in Waterford, but ultimately fixed himself in Clonmel, where by indomitable industry and economy he established a good trade. Some profitable dealings in the purchase and sale of guineas during the war with Napoleon augmented his means and enabled him to set up that particular mode of conveyance which has since been carried so extensively into use, and proved useful beyond description.

It has generally been thought that the idea of enlarging the common jaunting car of the country and turning it into a public conveyance originated with Mr. Bianconi. But such is not the case. The first car that is known to have been run in this manner was one set up between Waterford and Carrick-on-Suir about the year 1812. The projector broke down under the experiment. Mr. Bianconi boasts that he has often been a passenger in Tom Morrissey's boat; it is therefore reasonable to believe that he often travelled by Withers' car, and that he adopted from that failure the plan of his own extensive and successful establishment, as to the growth and character of which the following paper, read by him at the meeting of the British Association held at Cork in the year 1843, furnishes an interesting account:—

“Up to the year 1815, the public accommodation for the convenience of passengers in Ireland was confined to a few mail and day coaches on the great lines of road.

“From my peculiar position in the country, I had ample opportunities of reflecting on many things, and nothing struck me more forcibly than the great vacuum that existed in travelling accommodation between the different orders of society.

“The inconvenience felt for the want of more extended means of intercourse, particularly from the interior of the country to the different market towns, gave great advantage to the few, at the expense of the many, and above all great loss of time. For instance, a farmer living twenty or thirty miles from his market town spent the day in riding to it, a second day doing his business, and a third day returning.

“In July, 1815, I started a car for the convenience of passengers from Clonmel to Caher, which I subsequently extended to Tipperary and

Limerick; at the end of the same year I started similar cars from Clonmel to Cashel and Thurles, and from Clonmel to Carrick and Waterford; and I have since extended this establishment, including the most insulated localities, namely, from Longford to Ballina and Belmullet, which is 201 miles north-west of Dublin; from Athlone to Galway and Clifden, 183 miles due west of Dublin; from Limerick to Tralee and Cahirciveen, 233 miles south-west of Dublin; and numbering 110 vehicles, including mail-coaches and different-sized cars, capable of carrying from four to twenty passengers each, and travelling eight or nine miles an hour, at an average fare of one penny farthing per mile for each passenger, and performing daily 3,800 miles, passing through over 140 stations for the change of horses; consuming 3 to 4,000 tons of hay, and from 30 to 40,000 barrels of oats annually, all of which are purchased in the respective localities.

"This establishment does not travel on Sundays, unless such portions of it as are in connexion with the Post-Office or Canals, for the following reasons:—First, the Irish, being a religious people, will not travel on business on Sundays; and secondly, experience teaches me that I can work a horse eight miles per day, six days in the week, much better than I can six miles for seven days.

"The advantages derived by the country from this establishment are almost incalculable; for instance—the farmer who formerly rode, and spent three days in making his market, can now do so in one for a few shillings, thereby saving two clear days and the expense and use of his horse.

"The example of this institution has been generally followed, and cars innumerable leave the interior for the principal towns in the south of Ireland, which bring parties to and from markets at an enormous saving of time, and in many instances cheaper than they could walk it.

"This establishment has now been in existence twenty-eight years, travelling with its mails at all hours of the day and night, and has never met any interruption in the performance of its arduous duties.* Much surprise has often been expressed at the high order of men connected with it, and at its popularity; but parties thus expressing themselves forget to look at Irish society with sufficient grasp of mind. For my part I cannot better compare it than to a man merging to convalescence from a serious attack of malignant fever, and requiring generous and nutritive, in place of medical treatment. Thus I act with my drivers, who are taken from the lowest grade of the establishment, and who are progressively advanced according to their respective merits, as opportunity offers, and who know that nothing can deprive them of this reward, and a super-

* It is to be regretted that this language can no longer be held. Mr. Bianconi's cars have been attacked and robbed since this account of his establishment was made public.

annuated allowance of their full wages, in old age, and under accident, unless their wilful and improper conduct: and, as to its popularity, I never yet attempted to do an act of generosity or common justice, publicly or privately, that I was not met by manifold reciprocity.

"I regret my friend Doctor Taylor should have so suddenly called upon me to take part in this association, in place of giving me an opportunity of preparing a document worthy of their acceptance, but such as this is, it is perfectly at their service, with the best wishes of

"CHARLES BIANCONI."

While Mr. Bianconi was thus laudably occupied in providing an economical mode of travelling for the agricultural and trading classes, an Irishman particularly distinguished himself in the higher branch of the same business. Peter Purcell of Halverstown in the county of Kildare, coach proprietor and mail contractor in Ireland was the son of an eminent physician who realized a good property by his practice in Dublin. Peter it is said was originally intended for the profession of the law, and articled to an attorney. Mr. Bianconi relates that he was forced to become a car proprietor by the weight of the pack he used to carry on his back, and the time he lost in toiling from one place to another. But we are not told what was Mr. Purcell's prompter when he exchanged the dull confinement of a lawyer's office for the open avocations involved in the care of a coach and four. Perhaps it was that lively taste for horse flesh by which almost every young fellow in Ireland is animated. Be that as it may, his career proved highly useful and full of merit. He started under formidable circumstances. The best and principal lines of road were pre-occupied in every direction by Scotchmen and Englishmen, fortified by the favour of government, and supported by parliamentary grants and exclusive privileges. The Irishman entered the field of competition alone and unaided under peculiar disadvantages, and he succeeded in beating off all his rivals but one. With the exception of the Messrs. Bourne, who still retain by virtue of their unexpired right of toll the Naas and Limerick road, and maintain upon it mail and stage coaches, Peter Purcell had almost the whole of the business of the south of Ireland, and no small

portion of that of the north, in his own hands during the year 1836. In the year 1840 another Scotchman, Mr. Croal, underbid him in the government contract for mail coaches, but Mr. Purcell continued to horse them. His other coaching business continued undiminished until the opening of the Dublin and Drogheda Railway in the year 1844, when becoming chairman of the Great Southern and Western or Dublin and Cashel Railway Company, he wisely began to transfer into the new style of locomotion the large and valuable interest he had so well established in the old one. The majority of those persons who visit Ireland or write of the country are sure to extol Mr. Bianconi, who certainly is deserving of every praise, and constitutes a real notability, but few seem to notice, or at least to commend in appropriate terms, all that Mr. Purcell has done. And yet, perhaps, his achievements have been more difficult than those of the enterprising Italian. The one, though a foreigner, had the field of operations to himself, the other laboured constantly with great odds against him, and his undertakings have been of a higher kind. It is not too much to add of him that a man more usefully employed, one evincing sounder judgment, steadier talent, or acquitting himself of the various duties of his station with more diligence, probity, temper, and success has not appeared in Ireland during the last forty years.*

The sketch given in the last few pages will enable the reader to form an opinion of the condition and extent of travelling accommodation in Ireland about the year 1836, when railways upon an extensive plan were first projected by competent engineers for the further improvement of the country. Only two Irish acts had been obtained from the legislature up to that date, namely, the Waterford and Limerick Railway Act, passed in the year 1826, but never put in force,†

* Mr. Purcell had one partner, Mr. Jamieson, a Scotchman, who died in the year 1844. Mr. Purcell himself died the year after. Mr. Jamieson left Mr. Purcell all the fortune he had realised with him, amounting to £30,000.

† The shareholders quarrelled amongst themselves, but worse still, it was discovered after the act had passed that it would not be safe to

and the Dublin and Kingstown Railway Act, passed in the year 1832. Four years afterwards capital abounded, and speculation in Ireland as well as in England ran into extreme measures; prospectuses were issued for more than twenty lines of Irish railway, and acts of parliament were passed for constructing the Ulster Railway from Belfast to Armagh, the Dublin and Drogheda Railway, the Dundalk Western, and the Cork and Passage Railways. The bill for incorporating the Great Leinster and Munster Railway Company from Dublin to Kilkenny was rejected upon a point of form by the House of Commons during the same session, but a better compliance with the standing orders insured the royal assent without much difficulty in the following year.

The old faction, however, was by no means inactive on that occasion. There was no public display of opposition, but its secret exertions were admirably managed. Its patrons and allies were advancing rapidly in office and in power, and ere long a display of strength was made, in which capital advantage was taken of all the favourable circumstances of the period, and appeals were addressed to the public mind and to the legislature, of which it is not too much to record that they were distinguished by consummate art and by talents in many respects most commendable and imposing.

The Great Leinster and Munster Railway Bill had reached its last stage unopposed in the House of Lords when the Marquis of Lansdowne interfered and insisted upon the insertion of two clauses in behalf of the Irish Railway Commissioners. By one of these the construction of the line was suspended beyond Sallins, a distance of eighteen miles from Dublin, in order to give those Commissioners time to produce the report upon which they had now been engaged more than a year, and by the other it was provided, that if the Commissioners should report in favour of any line in another direction the Company now incorporated should not be permitted to

adopt curves so sharp as those resorted to by the engineer, and that the capital subscribed would barely cover a third of the cost of constructing the line.

oppose the construction of the new work, or to claim compensation for any injury inflicted upon their interests by its construction. Clogged with these restrictions the act became no longer a working measure, and a sum of £20,000 was vainly expended on a well-digested plan for introducing into the South of Ireland the greatest improvement of the age we live in.

We are thus led to consider the Irish Railway Commission, appointed in the year 1836, under the most promising auspices, but followed by most disastrous consequences. The history and moral of that clever piece of mischief may be comprised in one significant sentence. The object contemplated, was to facilitate the progress of railways; the result produced a positive arrest of those undertakings for the full period of eight years. The proceedings of a body at once so fatal and so skilful deserve to be carefully examined and faithfully recorded. The Commission originated in a meeting of Irish noblemen and gentlemen of high rank and considerable property held in London, who presented a requisition upon the subject to the government. The Marquis of Lansdowne submitted a motion in the House of Lords affirmatory of the course thus recommended, and the Crown soon after issued the Commission. In looking back to this early stage of the business, it is impossible not to be struck with the moderation and propriety of the opinions put forward by the different parties who took part in the proceedings. When the Marquis of Lansdowne opened the question in the House of Lords, August 2, 1836, he spoke in terms worthy of his official station.

"There are parties," he said, "in Ireland, and parties in England, who I am perfectly confident will be ready to come forward hereafter to aid projects of this description, if supported and guided by such investigation and such a report as this motion contemplated. It would not however be proper that such individuals should be directed to look up to the Commissioners or to their report for an estimate of the remuneration they were likely to gain by becoming undertakers in works of this description. That must depend on the prudence of individuals themselves—a quality too seldom exercised. It is for those who are on the

spot to estimate the supply and the demand, as well as the degree in which that supply and demand may be increased. It is for persons thus situated, to form a judgment of the utility of an undertaking ; and to decide whether they ought to purchase shares in it. . . . I make these observations the more pointedly, knowing as I do that high expectations are easily created in the minds of individuals, but more especially in that country to which I particularly allude, that public assistance will be afforded when any plan seems to receive the sanction of government. In such, public assistance is usually looked for. Now *I will distinctly state that whatever information can be given by the Commissioners with reference to the practicability of particular lines of railroad will be afforded, but that all public assistance will stop there. Those who embark in such projects should have, at the public expense, information as to the practicability of particular lines of railroad, but beyond that they are not to look for public assistance."*

With this suitable introduction, His Lordship moved and carried the following resolution :—

"That an humble address be presented to his Majesty, praying that he will be pleased to appoint persons of competent authority to consider and report upon the best lines for forming railroad communications through Ireland, pointing out the comparative advantages and facilities afforded for such communications with the principal places in that country, for the information of individuals willing to embark in joint-stock companies for the purpose of carrying such projects into effect ; and that such assistance with respect to the lines to be adopted shall be given by the Board of Works as his Majesty may deem expedient."

Letters patent constituting the Commission issued October 20, 1836, and the gentlemen appointed to carry into effect the resolutions of the House of Lords, and the views of the government in general, were General, now Sir John Burgoyne, Chief of the Board of Works ; Lieutenant Thomas Drummond, Under Secretary to the Lord Lieutenant ; Peter Barlow, Professor of Mathematics at Woolwich Academy ; and Richard Griffith, head of the Irish Boundary Survey, an engineer of considerable experience, and high reputation in Ireland. Captain Harry David Jones was made Secretary.

The letters patent, after reciting the terms of the address—praying for the appointment of competent persons to ascertain the best lines between any of the principal places in Ireland,

might be willing thereafter to apply to parliament—proceeded to direct,

First, a general survey of railways to guide the legislature in the consideration of the projects that might be brought forward.

Secondly, The best mode of directing the development of this new and important means of intercourse in the channels, whereby the greatest advantages must be obtained at the smallest outlay.

Thirdly, To inquire into the port or ports from whence the navigation to America might best be carried on, and

Fourthly, To inquire generally into all essential matters.

In order that these duties might be satisfactorily performed, the Commissioners were authorized to examine persons the most competent by reason of their situation, knowledge, or experience, and to call for all documents, papers, or returns, calculated to assist their researches.

They were further instructed in a Treasury Minute admirably expressed respecting the particular course to be pursued on the occasion and the nature of the benefits expected to result from their labours.

"My Lords," ran the Minute, "will watch with the greatest interest the progress of the inquiry thus instituted; they feel it however to be the duty of government to guard against any inference that it is their intention to interfere with private enterprise in its legitimate application to purposes either of local or general improvement; they also feel it necessary that it should be distinctly understood that by obtaining this information, no intention or pledge is either expressed or implied that works of this description should be undertaken at the public expense."

"The main benefits to be obtained, appear to my Lords to be the impartial and authoritative information which may thus be laid before parliament, and which will aid the legislature in deciding between rival and conflicting interests, the tendency it will have of preventing ruinous competitions, and the losses and expenses of litigations before Committees, and the facilities which may be afforded to capitalists and to companies to judge of the most advantageous mode in which investments in railroads can be made."

The state of railway enterprise in Ireland stood at this juncture as follows:

1. The Dublin and Kingstown Railway was at work, having been constructed by Mr. Vignoles.
2. The Ulster or Belfast and Armagh Line was in progress ; two calls had been made : capital £600,000 ; length of line thirty-six miles ; Engineers Messrs. Stephenson and Bald ; estimated profit 12 per cent.
3. The Dublin and Drogheda Line, work begun, capital £600,000 ; two calls made ; length of line $31\frac{1}{2}$ miles ; Engineers Messrs. Cubitt and Macneill ; estimated profit 10 per cent.
4. The Great Leinster and Munster Railways ; First Extension from Dublin to Kilkenny ; act obtained, capital £800,000 ; two calls made ; length of line $73\frac{1}{2}$ miles ; Engineers, Meassrs. Macneill and Aher ; estimated profit 13 per cent.
5. Great Leinster and Munster ; Second Extension Dublin to Limerick ; length of line 111 miles ; Engineer, Mr. Bald ; survey lodged ; proposed capital £1,000,000 ; estimated profit 10 per cent.
6. Waterford and Limerick ; length of line 75 miles ; Engineers, Messrs. Brunel and Bald ; survey lodged ; proposed capital £1,000,000 ; estimated profit 10 per cent.
7. Dublin and Galway ; length of line 120 miles ; survey lodged ; Engineers, Messrs. Bald and Henry ; proposed capital £1,000,000 ; estimated profit 10 per cent.
8. Dublin and Armagh (Inland) ; length of line eighty-four miles ; survey lodged ; proposed capital £1,000,000—estimated profit 10 per cent.

These works and projects having all been laid before the Commissioners, pursuant to a requisition issued for the purpose by their own secretary, may be fairly held to have constituted the business of the Commission. Private Enterprise had at its own impulse projected 532 miles of railway, and proposed to invest in their construction a capital of £6,200,000. Some portions of this work had already been undertaken by joint-stock companies—for others companies were making the usual parliamentary preparations. It was therefore the marked duty of the Commission—a duty marked out not less definitively and strongly by the nature and circum-

stances of the case, than by the express terms of the documents constituting their authority and conveying instructions respecting the proper course of their inquiries—to have considered these projects separately and to have reported upon each—to have examined and brought to bear upon their details the knowledge of persons most competent to speak of their applicability to purposes of local and general improvement—to afford information to capitalists and companies—by no means to interfere with private enterprise, and above all neither to express nor imply that works of this description should be undertaken at the public expense.

Most unfortunately for Ireland the duty so clearly and wisely prescribed was not performed. The issue of this exquisite labour took all men by surprise, except the small and anxious band of those who, panting for office, are fain to applaud everything that bears the stamp of official authority. The new recommendations startled the warmest friends of the government, but it was found upon examination that they did not possess even the poor recommendation of novelty. When extremes are rushed upon, and attempts are made to carry arbitrary measures, the apology usually tendered is that every other effort having been tried without avail, the one proposed is thrown out as a last resource. There was, however, no pretext for such an excuse in this case. The plan of the Commissioners was as old and hackneyed as the history of Public Works in Ireland. The practice of all such functionaries resolves itself into a very simple proceeding. They inquire in order that they may be appointed to execute. These last Commissioners it is true had been more expensively educated, and upon a broader scale than any of their predecessors; they evinced moreover a higher style in the treatment of their subject; they displayed considerable information, a polished art, keen sagacity and consummate dissimulation. But superior as they proved themselves in almost every respect to those who had gone over the same ground before them, they only proposed to repeat in a more arbitrary manner and upon a wider range an experiment

resorted to over and over again, and in every instance found to fail. It cannot be too often repeated that the progress of Irish public works had been, up to this period, nothing but a history of government interference with private enterprise and complete consequent failure. Before the Union and after the Union, Irish enterprise had never been allowed to proceed without government commissions and government boards, which, under the pretext of directing their public works and encouraging their execution by loans and grants of public money, had only impeded their advance and rendered them the most expensive and unproductive of modern speculations.

But it is not upon these grounds of general policy alone that fault is to be found with the recommendations of the Irish Railway Commissioners. Actual facts opposed their conclusions, and the statistics of their own report supplied the evidence to prove the errors of the position in which they sought to establish themselves. If we set the points at issue fairly in *juxta-position*, they will clearly establish their respective values.

Private enterprise had taken the field in the first instance, and looking at the established traffic had placed four principal lines in advanced positions:

1. One north of Dublin, by Drogheda, Dundalk, Newry and Armagh, to Belfast.
2. One south of Dublin, by Naas, Carlow, Kilkenny, Clonmel, Mitchelstown and Mallow, to Cork, with a western extension, by Kildare, Roscrea and Nenagh, to Limerick.
3. One to the west, by Mullingar, Athlone and Loughrea, to Galway.
4. One from Waterford to Limerick, through Carrick, Clonmel, Cahir and Tipperary.

The chief merit claimed for these projects was equally legitimate and strong. They connected the most populous towns with the metropolis in the most direct lines and according to the prevailing streams of traffic. Upon that double ground the case of private enterprise was presumed to rest securely.

Let us now trace the course of the commissioners and explain the system they sought to establish. One of their first acts escaped public attention at the time, but it was so disingenuous as to render every proceeding taken by them an object of suspicion. A demise of the crown having occurred while they were still prosecuting their inquiries, new letters patent for the purpose of continuing their powers were deemed necessary. Those originally issued recited, as was truly the case, that the Commission had been called for to ascertain *the best lines between any of the principal places in Ireland which it may be advisable to connect by railways, and for which joint-stock companies may be willing to apply to parliament.* But this important passage was secretly struck out of the new Commission issued as a matter of form upon the accession of her present Majesty! From that moment the business of the Commission became a foregone conclusion. Unable in all probability to resist the temptation presented to them of establishing the Shannon Commission as a precedent for railways, and erecting themselves into a permanent body armed with extraordinary power, and gratified with abundant patronage, the Commissioners appear to have resolved to depart from their instructions and to disappoint the public expectation. But apprehending the resentment of the large and influential class whose vested rights and interests they would thus commit to destruction, and aware that their plan was directly contradicted by the letter as well as the spirit of their instructions, they contrived at least one excuse for their premeditated misconduct. Taking advantage of the unexpected incident that had occurred those words were picked out of the new letters patent which defined their office. This being done they were bold enough to pursue the very course which those words had interdicted, and at the same time to affect that they had fulfilled their functions in their integrity. It was not without reason that many public writers exclaimed against the pretensions of a cause and the trustworthiness of men whose justification of the most critical act of their career was made to depend upon the success of so mean a

trick, as the liberty taken on this occasion with the public and the House of Lords.

We have next to enter upon an examination of the published acts of this Commission. A short report containing an eminent remark or two having been sent out by way of pilot balloon in the year 1837, their complete work was presented to both Houses during the following session of parliament. It would be uncandid to refer to that document without commending the care and ability with which its various contents were collected, the judgment with which they were displayed, the unprecedented body of highly instructive and important information which was thus conveyed to the public respecting the actual condition of the people and the nature and extent of their trade and commerce, as well as the general resources of the country and the progress of improvement in every direction. As far as subsidiary matters could be made to illustrate the subject proposed the report fulfilled most creditably every condition imposed upon its authors; but it dealt with the main subject itself in a manner so much at variance with established precedents and every rule of authority* laid down for observance, not only in that particular

* It is to be observed that these Commissioners had even more information before them respecting the main object of their inquiry than has been as yet noticed in these pages. The opinion of the Irish landowners who first brought this question before the government, the resolution of the House of Lords upon it, the Marquis of Lansdowne's speech when moving that resolution, the Treasury minute explanatory of the light in which it was properly regarded by the government, and the letters patent issued by William 4, were not the only exponents, accessible upon the occasion, of the true principles for governing proceedings of this description. Committees of the House of Commons and the highest authorities in parliament, had repeatedly considered the question and reported their opinions upon it. These should have been respected by the Commissioners, or at least refuted before they were overruled. They emanated from no common men, and spoke a language not in the least degree hesitating or equivocal. For instance, the Railway Committee of the House of Commons which sat in 1836, and which, with Mr. Poulett Thompson, as President of the Board of Trade, in the chair, consisted of the most eminent men from both sides of the house. Amongst them were Sir R. Peel, Lord Stanley, Sir J. Graham, Mr. Hume, Lord Granville Somerset, Sir J. (afterwards Lord) Wrottesley, Mr. Loch, and others. That Committee inquired "into the expediency of attempting, by some general survey, undertaken by a commission, or

instance, but in all similar ones; and it hazarded conclusions so directly contradicted not by experience alone but by the

through the Ordnance department, to afford assistance to persons willing to engage in making lines of railway through the country, and likewise for the purpose of guiding the judgment of committees on the merits of competing lines." And the report stated that "a close examination of this proposal convinced them that such an attempt would be productive, in Great Britain at least, of no practical good. The various local interests of intermediate places, which must form an important element in deciding upon the particular line which any proposed railway is to traverse, could not be sufficiently considered by such a commission, if its attention were directed, as it must be, to ascertaining the best engineering line between two given termini; and if this consideration were to be taken into account, the advantage that might be expected to result from having ascertained the line which afforded the least engineering difficulties could no longer be expected. Upon the whole, therefore, *it appears decidedly best to leave railways in Great Britain, like all other undertakings, to be decided upon according to the judgment and interest of those who are willing to embark their capital in them, subject only to the scrutiny and control of parliament*, and to the increased observation and attention by the public, which your Committee consider will be exercised in consequence of the opportunity afforded by the proposed prolongation of time.

"With regard to Ireland, where no great lines have hitherto been commenced, it is possible that some assistance may be afforded by the Board of Works, and your Committee have received from his Majesty's government a memorial presented to Viscount Melbourne by a great and influential body of Irish proprietors, desiring a general survey with a view of making out the best lines in that country. *But although it may not be inexpedient to direct that some aid should be given by the above-mentioned Board, in assisting in surveys of lines, at the request of the parties interested and at their expense*; your Committee cannot recommend that government should undertake the responsibility of deciding upon the points between which railway communications should be undertaken, or entering upon the extended survey which seems to be desired."

A motion was made, in the session of 1837, calling upon government to direct a survey to fix upon the best line for connecting the North of England railways with Scotland. The numbers, on a division, were equal, and the Speaker, Mr. Abercrombie, gave the casting-vote against the motion. Aware that this act might be displeasing to his constituents, the citizens of Edinburgh, who were much interested in the question, he addressed a letter to them, containing this passage:—"The Select Committee on Railroads, one of the best committees that ever sat, and who have done very great service to the public, sifted and considered this question, and decided against the interference of government. I know too much, from experience, of the benefits conferred by the report of that Committee, to do anything, in my situation as Speaker, to shake or weaken their authority. I was bound also to look at the interests of the public; and I saw already enough to convince me, that if a precedent were once established of getting government to interfere, there would have been other similar applications, supported by

evidence adduced in the document itself; that severe censures were now justly levelled at the Commissioners, and that most difficult of all imputations to substantiate or refute, and yet one at all times most convincing to the public at large, was cast upon them—of having been biassed in their judgment by the hope of producing, as the result of their labours, a state of things which, however questionable on the ground of national policy, would certainly be advantageous to themselves.

Having already described the plans* offered by private enterprise it will be proper to produce the counter project of the Commissioners and the mode they suggested for carrying it into execution. These are to be found expressed in the following passages.

"First then we are of opinion that the main line to the south-west should pass near Maryborough; there or a little beyond it throw off a branch to Kilkenny; thence continue its south-western course through a

canvass and jobbing." Again, while the Commissioners were in the midst of their labours, there appeared an official return bearing in pointed terms upon one branch of their inquiry. It is dated February 21, 1837, and entitled, A Report and Survey of Liverpool, Holyhead, and Port Dynllaen Harbours. With that paper the Commissioners were unquestionably well acquainted, for they not only quoted it, but did something more. Lord Melbourne, and the Chancellor of the Exchequer, state in it—"that whilst they consider the importance of a safe and expeditious line of communication between London and Dublin to be such as to justify the interference of the public, they are by no means prepared to recommend any survey of a line of railroad. Several private 'bills,' they add, "have passed, and works are either in contemplation, or are actually undertaken, upon the successful completion of which a direct line of railroad from Dublin to London must depend. They, therefore, consider, that any interposition on the part of the state, even if it were limited to the single object of a survey, would have a tendency of interfering with private enterprise, and discouraging the application of capital where it may be required for the general improvement of the country."

* Singularly enough, plans, sections and estimates of the several lines referred to were called for by the Commissioners and laid before them as early as the year 1836. But though the report did not appear until the year 1838, the case made out by the Companies formed no portion of its contents. Even a list of their lines was not given. Sums of from £5,000 to £20,000 had been expended in preparing documents to be reported upon—as was imagined—but the whole was treated as so much waste paper.

very easily traversed country by Thurles to Holycross ; there ~~threw~~ off a second branch to the right, which sweeping close round the Keeper mountains should run through the rich district of the Golden Vale to Limerick ; while the main branch continuing its course through Cashel and winding round the base of the Galtee mountains close by Cahir, should pass through Mallow to Cork.

" As part of the same combination, Limerick should be connected with Waterford by a branch crossing a little to the south of the Golden Vale, and passing through Clonmel and Carrick to Waterford ; and thus a railway communication would be completed between the towns of Dublin, Cork, Limerick, Waterford, Kilkenny, Clonmel, Tipperary, Cahir, Thurles, Mallow, Maryborough, &c.

" Second, with respect to the Northern districts, we are of opinion that the main line should run to Navan, whence a branch might easily be carried by Kells and Virginia to Cavan and Enniskillen. From Navan the main line continuing its course to the north should pass by Castleblaney to Armagh, and thence to Belfast.

" We therefore earnestly recommend that every effort be made to combine into one interest, and under one management and control, the whole of the southern system of intercommunication between Dublin and Cork, Limerick, Waterford and Kilkenny ; and that the northern line by Navan—to Armagh at least—be treated according to the same principle, and considered as one concern.

" We proceed therefore to suggest :—

" First, That government should advance, by way of loan, a considerable proportion of the amount of the estimates at the lowest rate of interest, and on the easiest terms of repayment, to be secured by a mortgage of the works. We think that many landholders may also be found to subscribe towards carrying into effect an object which, in addition to its importance as a national concern, cannot fail to benefit and improve their own properties.

" As a further assistance in filling the subscriptions, perhaps powers might be given to the counties interested, as well as to corporate towns, to become shareholders to certain amounts ; the government in such case advancing the money on the security of presentments, in the usual manner, and the return on such shares being available for the reduction of the county or other rates.

" A provision however will be necessary in this case, to insure the co-operation of the whole of the districts interested ; the approval of a certain majority having been obtained.*

* " We should have wished the general arrangement to have included in the line the distance between Armagh and Belfast ; but as that is already occupied by a company in full operation with the works, it is to be hoped

"Secondly, If these means be rejected, or fail to produce sufficient subscriptions to insure, in the first instance, the execution of the entire system, we would suggest that the work might still be allowed to go forward ; beginning at Dublin, or other fixed terminus, to any other determinate point ; such portion, however, not to be considered as an integral line, but only as a part of the general system, and to be considered from that point towards the ultimate intended termini of the several lines and branches, as new subscriptions are received. The subscribers to these continuations should be entitled to all the privileges and advantages arising from the whole portion of the line already executed, from the date of the payment of their respective subscriptions, equitably estimated according to the time when each subscription shall be made.

"Thirdly, We would venture to suggest, that the government should undertake either or both of the proposed combined lines on the application of the counties interested ; the outlay to be repaid by small instalments at the lowest admissible rate of interest, and under the provision that in the event of the returns not paying the stipulated amount of interest the counties shall supply the deficit by presentments.

"In offering this proposition we may be allowed to state, that, relying on the result of our estimates, our impression is that the local districts, under such an arrangement, would, to insure a certain great benefit, incur but a very inconsiderable risk, freeing themselves at the same time from many inconvenient arrangements.

"This proposition is somewhat on the principle adopted for the improvement of the Shannon Navigation. It is of course susceptible of various forms and modifications ; but we purposely avoid entering into details, which, however, we see no difficulty in filling up to suit all the circumstances of the case.

"Should either of the two latter suggestions be adopted, the government will possess an immediate interest in the due execution of the work, and must of course have a great share in its direction. But even were the work undertaken without public aid, we are still of opinion, that it should in a certain degree be subject to the control of the state."

Such being the case of the Commissioners, numerous and weighty objections soon began to pour in against it. The discontent of one set of complainants was forcibly expressed by a correspondent of the *Times* newspaper, under the signature of "A British Engineer."

that a readiness to unite in the same system for fares, &c., as shall be adopted for the rest, may render the ruinous expedient of a distinct line unto Belfast unnecessary."

"The Commission," said this writer, "has performed the duties assigned to it in a peculiarly Irish way. The gentlemen were instructed to do certain things, and they have done just the contrary. They were told not to interfere with private enterprise, and to give facilities to joint-stock companies offering to execute their lines between the principal places in Ireland; and they have smothered or strangled all such bodies by reporting that none of them should be allowed to proceed. They were told that no works of this description should be undertaken at the public expense; and they recommended a gross government monopoly by which the minister of the day is to undertake either or both of the only two great lines they recommended. They were further told that no assistance beyond information was to be given for the purpose of executing their recommendations; and they wound up their report by calling upon government to advance the outlay required to complete their scheme, at the lowest admissible rate of interest, and with the proviso that the whole is to be repaid by small instalments!"

Other parts of the case received a full, though not perhaps so pointed an answer. In truth, the Commissioners erred most egregiously in the matter of their own manifesto. The statistics contained in the volume published by them demanded deductions the very reverse of those which they had drawn.

A glance at the map of Ireland will satisfy the most careless observer, that the principal towns in the island lie on the eastern coast, or only a little removed from it, at the heads of the navigable rivers emptying themselves into the Irish Channel. The preponderating settlements of trade and population observable from the earliest times in this direction, was occasioned without a doubt by the proximity of England, and the ready markets offered by her for the purchase of Irish produce. Wakefield alludes to the fact, in his Statistical Survey, and it is repeated by Lieutenant Harness in the Report, Appendix III., p. 42. Talking of the amount of actual tonnage, which he ascertained to be moved into and out of the ports of Ireland, that officer says, "Such estimates must necessarily be vague in their results, but they are not likely to be incorrect to the same extent, when applied to Ireland, as they would be for other countries. Her inland traffic is almost exclusively

confined to the conveyance of articles to and from the ports. She has no great manufacturing inland towns receiving a variety of materials from different parts, and returning their commodities in complicated streams for exportation, or consumption. With the exception of the trade occasioned by four collieries, as yet of small importance, the linen, and some cotton manufacture in the northern counties, there does not appear to be any transit worthy of notice, of other than agricultural produce. The inland towns are only important in proportion as they offer good markets for such produce ; and it is, in almost every case, to the facilities afforded by a navigation, that those of note owe their superiority. It may safely be said, then, that the only towns of real importance, in a trading point of view, are the ports ; that the traffic of the country is confined, almost entirely, to forwarding agricultural produce to them, and receiving small supplies of imported articles in return."

Thus pursuing the north-east coast from Dublin, we trace successively Drogheda, Dundalk, Newry, Belfast, Carrickfergus, Coleraine, and Londonderry ; and from Dublin, again, to the south-east, we find, within the limits described, Carlow, Kilkenny, New Ross, Wexford, Waterford, Carrick-on-Suir, Clonmel, Youghall, and Cork. In the following table, filled up from the Railway Report, will be found the population, tonnage, and value of the exports and imports of these eastern coast towns at the period referred to. By these details, it will be seen that the total population of the towns on the eastern coast was more than half a million ; and that the total value of their exports was £15,111,159 ; and of their imports, £14,511,795 per annum. Now, in the Appendix to the Report, B 90, there is a summary of the value of all the exports and imports of Ireland, which makes the exports £17,394,813, and the imports £15,337,026. It is, therefore, manifest upon the showing of the Commissioners themselves, that nearly all the trade of Ireland, out and in, is confined to the side of the country nearest to England. The following is the table :—

	Population in 1881.	1885.		
		Exports.	Value of	Imports.
Dublin . . .	204,155	£2,528,543	£4,430,331	
Drogheda . . .	17,365	766,027	259,854	
Dundalk . . .	10,078	452,813	107,953	
Newry . . .	13,065	616,836	568,711	
Belfast . . .	53,287	4,341,794 3 7	3,695,437 11 10	
Carrickfergus .	8,706			
Coleraine & Portrush	5,752	105,685	65,900	
Londonderry . .	19,620	1,040,918	708,054	
Carlow . . .	9,114 }			
Kilkenny . . .	23,741 }			
Ross . . .	5,011			
Wexford . . .	10,673	312,136	621,417	
Waterford . .	28,821	1,821,245	1,274,154	
Carrick-on-Suir .	9,926 }			
Clonmel . . .	15,134 }			
Youghal . . .	9,608	215,316	28,310	
Cork . . .	107,016	2,909,846	2,751,684	
	550,372	15,111,159 3 7	14,511,795 11 10	

On the opposite coast, there were only three places with populations exceeding 10,000, namely, Limerick, Galway, and Sligo ; as to which, again, it is further observable, that the disproportion between their exports and populations, as compared with those just set forth, was very marked. For Limerick, with a population of 66,554, exported only 56,818 tons, value £726,430 ; Galway, with 33,120, only 61,937 tons, value £251,864 ; and Sligo, with 13,159, only 28,032 tons, value £369,490.

So far, the Report furnished decisive evidence to prove that Railways in Ireland, if they are to suit the trade and population of the country, as at present distributed, should mainly follow the eastern coast. This view of the subject was pointedly confirmed by the report in an analysis made of the map, compiled by Lieutenant Larcom, to indicate "the direction and relative amount of travelling throughout the country :—" "It will be seen, observes that officer, that the largest stream of traffic is from Dublin towards Naas, where it divides into three branches—the one by Carlow, Kilkenny, and Clonmel, to Cork ; the other by Mountrath, Roscrea,

and Nenagh, to Limerick ; while the third, passing along the Grand Canal, is chiefly dissipated among the small towns on its banks, a small portion reaching Ballinasloe. Next in importance are the streams through Balbriggan and Ashbourne, uniting at Drogheda, and thence continuing to Newry ; at which town a branch separates towards Armagh, where it is again subdivided into smaller branches ; the principal of which pass by Caledon, to Omagh and Strabane, on the left, and to Moy, Dungannon, and Cookstown, on the right. The main line from Newry continues through Lisburn to Belfast. Next in magnitude to these two great lines is the stream direct to the west through Lucan, Maynooth, Enfield, Clonard, and Kinnegad, where a branch separates to Athlone by Kilbeggan ; the main line continuing to Mullingar, and thence to Longford ; from which a small stream passes through Carrick-on-Shannon and Boyle to Sligo. The Athlone branch continues to Ballinasloe, where another small division takes place, a portion diverging to Tuam and Castlebar, while the larger passes on by Loughrea to Galway."

These passages bear decisively upon the main question at issue. Lieutenants Harness and Larcom had no ulterior objects to realise. They accordingly described the condition of things as it really existed, and pointed clearly to the proper deductions. They proved the case against the Commissioners, unless, indeed, we are not to act in Ireland upon the received opinion which upholds the expediency of making railways where trade, travelling, and population are greatest ; and also, unless of two competing lines, with equal engineering facilities, that is not to be esteemed the better which affords the most direct communication to the principal places. Upon the map which accompanies these observations, the main trunks projected by private enterprise are delineated. It will be seen that they pass, in the most direct manner possible, through the chief towns in every direction—that they pursue the existing streams of traffic and travelling ; and, consequently, that, though laid down before the Commission was appointed, the information and judgment upon which they were founded were borne out and confirmed in the most

complete manner by the evidence of the very document which, by a most extraordinary process of reasoning, it was now pretended to erect as an authority for putting them down.

First came the line from Dublin to Drogheda, to be extended, by Newry, to Armagh and Belfast. Let us compare its statistics with the one by which the Commissioners would supersede it. Omitting Armagh, as alike incidental to both, we have the following data to guide us :—

Company's Route.	Population.	Post-office Revenue.	Commissioners' Route.	Population.	Post-office Revenue.
Rush . .	2,144	£ s. d. No Return.	Navan . .	4,416	£ s. d. 663 11 3
Skerries . .	2,556	Ditto	Castleblaney	1,826	378 2 9
Balbriggan	3,016	Ditto			
Drogheda	17,365	2,244 7 1			
Dundalk . .	10,078	1,895 12 0			
Newry . .	13,065	2,378 10 10			
	48,214	6,518 9 11		6,242	1,041 14 0

The characteristic gradients of the two lines differed to the full as remarkably as their statistics,—that of the Company being 1 in 308 ; that of the Commissioners, 1 in 180.

The travelling, according to Lieutenant Larcom, averaged per week as follows :—

Dublin to Drogheda, two roads, 903 ; Drogheda to Dundalk, 373 ; Dundalk to Newry, 517 ; Newry to Armagh, 210 = 2,003.

Now the travelling, according to the same authority, on the Commissioners' line, was only to near Clones, eight miles, 452 ; thence to Navan, 258 ; to Drumcondra, 24 ; to Castleblaney, 52 ; and thence to Armagh, 122 = 908, or less than one-half of the amount of the other.

The case of the Leinster and Munster Company was even stronger. The Leinster and Munster Railway admitted with facility extensions to Cork, Limerick, Waterford, and Wexford, and it comprehended within its branches an immense portion of the agricultural and commercial interests of the South of Ireland. Mr. Vignoles, the Commissioners' engineer, confessed " that it had been laid out with great judgment, and

that its gradients were very favourable." The characteristic gradient of the main trunk of this Company to Cork was 1 in 380, while that of the Commissioners was 1 in 180. They reported that—"The largest stream of traffic is from Dublin towards Naas, where it divides into three branches; the one by Carlow, Kilkenny, and Clonmel to Cork; the other by Mountrath, Roscrea, and Nenagh, to Limerick."* To comprehend the application of that passage with all the force properly belonging to it, the map must be referred to, and it will then be seen that, town by town, this is the precise course assigned by the forbidden lines of the Leinster and Munster Company between Dublin, Cork, and Limerick. It seems impossible to produce, or to imagine, a closer or more cogent testimony in favour of any case than the one here brought forward by the Commissioners themselves, to confirm the exact fitness of this project for the purposes it was intended to suit. Nevertheless, the whole was emphatically denounced.

The subjoined lists of the population, and Post-office revenues of the towns served by the two systems, omitting, however, those common to both, supplies rather a striking contrast.

Company's Line.	Popula- tion, 1831.	Post-office Income, 1836.	Commissioners' Line.	Popula- tion, 1831.	Post- office Income, 1836.
Naas . . .	3,808	£ 647 s. 3 d. 7	Rathangan .	1,163	£ 206
Newbridge .	577	252 0 0	Monasterevan	1,441	256
Kilcullen .	699	402 0 0	Portarlington	3,001	428
Athy . . .	4,494	519 10 6	Mountmellick	4,577	586
Carlow . . .	9,114	1,441 6 9	Maryborough	3,223	436
Leighlin Bridge .	2,035	341 0 0	Mountrath .	2,593	444
Bagnalstown	1,315	388 4 4	Borris-in-Ossory . .	650	160
Goresbridge	634	366 0 0	Rathdowney .	1,214	246
Kilkenny .	23,741	2,112 11 6	Templemore .	2,956	778
Callan . . .	6,111	317 6 6	Thurles . . .	7,084	559
Clonmel . . .	15,134	2,930 9 7	Cashel . . .	6,971	842
Clogheen .	1,928	277 4 1			
Mitchelstown	3,545	394 9 2			
	73,135	£10,389 11 0		34,873	£4,941

* Report, page 20.

Upon the first appearance of the Report, the monopoly contemplated by its authors was quickly perceived and strongly condemned.* The government, nevertheless, accepted the recommendations of the Commissioners with unhesitating favour, and submitted them for adoption to par-

* Having been one of many who joined in an earnest effort to prevent the mischievous recommendations of the Irish Railway Commissioners from being carried into effect, I may perhaps be allowed to explain that this chapter is little more than an extension of a pamphlet addressed on that occasion to the present Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, and already referred to, page 267. Looking back at the year 1838, and contrasting the promising appearance of private enterprise in Ireland at this moment—January 1845—with the dead blank produced during the intervening six years by the support which Lord Melbourne's administration gave to the scheme of this Commission, I see no reason to regret the part I then acted, or that I ventured to conclude my address in these words :—

"To a statesman of your experience, my Lord, it were an extreme platitude to observe, that Ireland, for many ages, has been a prey to almost every form of misgovernment : but it may not, perhaps, be altogether irrelevant to point out, that it never has been oppressed by a more baneful evil than the one upon which I have already dwelt in these observations ; the evil which, far from encouraging, has never allowed the Irish to enter, of their own free accord, upon any of those great industrial undertakings, by which the genius of an enlightened nation is exercised, invigorated, and advanced to the highest state of prosperity. The only standard of true excellence, in a commercial people, that of labouring for themselves and by themselves, has never been fairly admitted in Ireland. Unfortunately for that country, a corrupt set of canting hypocrites and interested knaves have always prevailed in it, who have found their account in persuading the people that they are wholly unequal to the arduous task of bettering their own condition, or the condition of the country, if left to themselves. The Irish have thus been systematically broken in, and trained to the impression, that government is to do everything for them, that is or can be done, and the consequence has been that nothing ever is, or can be, well done in Ireland. The time, however, has at last arrived when this most vicious and depressing state of things may be safely corrected. Ministers have now an opportunity of introducing that best of all reforms, which, if promptly and prudently taken advantage of, will redound to their highest honour and be of the most substantial and enduring service to the people. Let the progress of public improvement in Ireland be no longer loaded, under the captivating promise of government assistance, with the heavy drawback of party patronage ;—let it not, under the plausible appearance of state control, be subject to the rude checks and dogmatical experiments of mere placemen ;—let the Irish people, by careful steps and moderate degrees, be led, won, taught, nay, if necessary, constrained to originate themselves and perfect the improvement of their country,—instead of being the task-led instruments of an ever-changing and seldom useful policy in the hands of those upon whom, though unconnected with the country, every high post under government is almost invariably bestowed ;—let this, the truly liberal and only honest system, be fairly attempted for a short period, and, assuredly, it will prove successful.

liament with an apparent unconsciousness of the violence they were offering to established principles. This conduct presented not the least strange of the many extraordinary features of a most singular case. The ministerial proposal was brought forward by the Irish Secretary, Lord Morpeth, in the House of Commons, March, 1, 1839. According to this scheme, railways in the North of Ireland were to be left to private enterprise, while in the South they were to be constructed at the public expense. The most opposite systems were thus to be established simultaneously. For the latter scheme a sum of £2,500,000 was called for in the first instance, intimation being at the same time given that ten millions sterling in the whole would be required to complete the main trunk from Dublin to Cork with the proposed branches. The profit calculated upon this expenditure was 4 per cent. but if the hopes of the projectors should meet with disappointment in this respect, and a loss result, the deficiency, whether great or small, was to be met, and covered by an assessment to be levied upon the counties traversed by the line.

A long debate ensued, but with the exception of a speech

Then, indeed, we may reasonably indulge the expectation of seeing Ireland honourably emulous of England, and her generous equal in all those pursuits so distinctive of the excellence of the English character, which dignify, while they enrich society, and prove that to be the happiest condition of a people which is sustained, as it has been produced, by their own independent exertions. This, as regards Ireland, has hitherto been only a vision of poetry. Beautifully painted and warmly described in flowing numbers and ingenious verse, the vivid aspiration flashes occasionally upon the mind, and vanishes like a dream. How noble the task to embody the poet's imagination in the forms of living truth—to turn into reality his buoyant fancies—to crown the faithful hopes and fulfil the long desires of a race, animated for ages throughout the rudest shocks of danger and the most trying distresses, with a noble confidence in tardy justice and a better fortune—to evolve in fruitful order, and give their full measure of practical utility to the still sound and vigorous capabilities of a country which have proved stronger than the most galling tyranny and the most insinuating corruption—to gather, in short, for a great and generous people the rich harvest of peaceful prosperity, the seeds of which, so constantly sown by God, have never yet been reaped by man.

I have the honour to be,

My Lord,

Your very faithful and obedient servant,

GEORGE LEWIS SMYTH.

against the motion by Sir R. Peel, the eloquence displayed upon the occasion was neither animated nor instructive. Sir Robert examined the question with his usual judgment and practical ability. He deprecated the attempt to depart from the principle hitherto considered the only one which ought to guide the application of capital to works of this description. He denied that it would be for the benefit of Ireland to teach it to rely on the intervention and support of the government, and urged that competition should be left free, and that the sister country should be allowed to follow the example of England, "trusting for the same improvement, the same prosperity, and the same facilities for communication, to precisely the same means as had insured them in England."

On a division there appeared for Lord Morpeth's resolution, 144; against it, 100; majority, 44. This was moderate success, but it was more apparent than real. Many of the most decided supporters of government left the House without expressing their opinions, and not a few of those who constituted the majority took care to intimate that their future votes in favour of so monstrous an experiment were not to be expected. Out of the House, the scheme was not unfrequently denounced in terms of indignant reprobation. Pressed by this force, Lord Morpeth was soon constrained to retire from the contest, and announce that the government would abandon the field altogether to private enterprise. But he was weak enough to neutralize any good effects that might have resulted from this declaration, by making another before the session closed, which again involved the whole case at issue in doubt and uncertainty. In the month of July, and in a House of thirty-six members, his Lordship announced "that if, next session, it should be found that private enterprise was insufficient and incompetent to complete these works, the duty would devolve upon government to propose that which they thought would be most conducive to the interests of Ireland!" In this language every one who took an interest in the question read the old fable of the Dog in the Manger, and the result was, that while the cabinet of which his Lord-

ship was a member remained in office, no progress was made in the construction of Irish railways.

The last attack, and that too was unsuccessful, made by the Board of Public Works upon private enterprise, was the one directed against the Lagan Navigation. In the session of 1840, a bill for vesting that undertaking in the Commissioners was presented to the House of Commons by Viscount Morpeth. By that measure all the powers of the undertakers, and their lands, tenements, and property of every description were to be taken away and vested in the Commissioners, together with all the claims and rights of their predecessors, the long defunct Commissioners of Inland Navigation.

A short account of the Lagan Navigation, and of the taxes granted to support it, has already been given. Private persons had contributed money towards the work as well as the state. But the taxes had been granted for limited periods, and as they expired, the undertaking became considerably embarrassed, and disputes arose between the Treasury on the one side, and the Company and its creditors upon the other. These appear to have been adjusted to a certain extent in the year 1825, when an award was made for the payment to the debenture holders of a perpetual annuity of £2,900, redeemable upon the payment of £62,000. The award also vested the navigation in the debenture holders on certain stipulations for a period of twenty years.

In the year 1834, disputes again came to a head between the Treasury and these parties, which led to a suit in the Irish Court of Exchequer. The cause was instituted by the Crown, was argued for five days, and then dismissed by the Barons in terms decidedly affirmatory of the rights insisted upon by the undertakers and their debenture holders. But the navigation was not sufficiently productive, and five years were spent in vainly soliciting the Treasury to adjust the outstanding claims of these parties. At length a Minute was made, by which it was agreed that an act of parliament should be applied for and the moneys in dispute should be settled by arbitration.

It was in consequence of this arrangement that Lord

Morpeth, as Secretary for Ireland, introduced the bill already spoken of. The Commissioners on this as on other occasions evinced considerable diplomatic talent. In point of fact they proposed to get rid of the claims of their opponents by a summary process. The bill contained an arbitration clause, as had been agreed upon, but it recited that the claimants affected by it had repaid themselves by dividends made out of the annual profits of the navigation the sums they had paid for their debentures, and that no money was due to them! The arbitration thus became a plausible nullity, for it is obvious that if the bill had passed into a law with the recital referred to in the preamble, there would really have been nothing to arbitrate upon. The parties claimed a debt due for money paid on debentures in their possession, and they agreed that all particulars should be decided by arbitration. The bill declared that nothing was due, and then gave the parties leave to arbitrate!

This disingenuous proceeding was followed by three years of parliamentary litigation. At the end of that period the Commissioners were wholly defeated, and an act was very properly passed, 6 & 7 Vict. c. —, incorporating the claimants upon the Lagan Navigation as a joint-stock company, and providing for the future maintenance and improvement of the undertaking under their management. In this result there appears no ground for the expression of dissatisfaction save this one—the expenses of the discomfited Commissioners were paid with the public money.

We owe to the controversies and discussions elicited by the government scheme of railways for Ireland a number of parliamentary returns respecting Irish public works, and the amount of money expended upon them. Having already particularised the sums voted by the Irish parliament for these purposes, and having also specified the outlay of the Board of Public Works and the Commission for improving the Shannon, it will now be proper, in order to complete the subject of this chapter, to fill in some other items of expense, and thus exhibit in one view the contributions made by the

parliament of the United Kingdom to the improvement of Ireland by endeavouring to aid and promote public works in that country.

A return, dated 17 August 1839, was ordered to be printed by the House of Commons, which furnishes in detail "all the sums of money voted or applied either by way of grant or loan in aid of Public Works in Ireland, including all sums advanced for making roads, and the employment of the poor in fisheries or otherwise. The total advances, according to this authority, from the year 1800 to June 1, 1839, was £8,828,141 14s. 1d. An explanatory analysis prefixed to the return furnishes the general heads of account, by which it clearly appears that a considerable portion of the money was voted and applied to objects altogether different from those referred to in this chapter. The Royal Dublin Society received £285,438, the Dublin Farming Society £87,132, and the Dublin Linen Board £537,656. The account further includes £749,541 for churches, £486,995 for gaols, £435,167 for hospitals, £80,414 for law courts, and £693,399 for the relief of the poor, besides other items.

Had even a few conspicuous good works come of these numerous Commissions we might be induced to reconcile ourselves to their frequency, and the expense they have occasioned. When we find them equally at variance with sound principles, and unproductive of improvement, we are bound to stigmatise and condemn them whenever the opportunity offers.

Amongst other items explanatory of the manner in which these millions were applied, are the following:

Howth Harbour, already choked up with sand . . .	£420,472	3	5½
Kingstown Harbour; a good and convenient work	576,521	19	0½
<hr/>			
	£996, 994	2	6½

The Port and Harbour of Dublin (improved certainly, but by no means to the full extent) obtained the following sums:

1801	Survey of Bay, &c.	.	.	£595	7	2
1806	Quay walls to the river Liffey			8,546	12	7
1808	Improving Harbour	.	.	951	12	5
1811	Ditto Port	.	.	10,992	10	7
1812	Ditto ditto	.	.	8,580	19	7
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	6,890	14	3
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	18,228	10	10
1813	Ditto ditto	.	.	6,976	19	5
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	5,258	10	6
1813	Improving Port	.	.	4,434	0	9
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	6,568	11	6
1817	Ditto ditto	.	.	5,671	19	5
1818	Ditto ditto	.	.	2,977	2	10
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	3,794	6	11
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	7,358	11	1
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	4,135	2	10
1819	Ditto ditto	.	.	5,603	1	7
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	4,563	13	3
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	6,715	6	8
1821	Ditto ditto	.	.	10,608	2	0
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	7,050	6	10
"	Ditto ditto	.	.	4,478	18	7
1823	Ditto ditto	.	.	14,132	4	0
1825	Ditto ditto	.	.	8,361	0	3
1826	Ditto ditto	.	.	8,787	14	0
1831	Ditto ditto	.	.	11,090	12	2
1836	Ditto ditto	.	.	10,411	12	4
1837	Ditto ditto	.	.	5,851	9	7
<hr/>						
£199,615 13 11						

Personal interests are seldom neglected when pecuniary favours are in a course of distribution under the patronage of government. By these returns Lord Annesley appears to have received for a pier on his estate at Dundrum in the year 1807, £7173 19s. 6d.

The Marquis of Sligo appears to have received in 1805 for improving the town of Westport, his own estate, £3,452 6s. 2d., in 1806 for a lighthouse on his estate at Clare Island, £1,361 15s. 8d., and in 1808 for improving the Harbour of Westport, also his estate, £738 9s. 3d.

The Bishop of Down and Connor obtained for building a suitable residence, between the years 1826 and 1837, £10,000.

For Courtown Harbour, the estate of the Earl of Courtown, there was advanced between the years 1824 and 1838 a sum of £20,458, which has all been expended. The harbour is now so shallow that a fishing smack can seldom navigate it with safety.

Mr. P. Leader, to work a colliery in the county of Cork, received between the years 1818 and 1833 £19,230 15s. 4d.

Other instances of this class are to be found, and it is with them and the whole outlay before our eyes that we have now to put the serious question—what is to be done for the future? Is there any other than but one alternative, either to persist in the old system—if such indeed it may be called—hoping to moderate its excesses occasionally, or by a vigorous exertion to renounce it for ever as wholly unimprovable? Superficial observers may indulge in fanciful theories, interested persons will be always biassed by their peculiar stake in the issue, but the more attentively the case is examined by impartial judges, the more powerfully will the conviction impress itself upon the mind that experience supplies no fact of any importance, and political economy suggests no argument of any weight, in favour of the old course of proceeding. That is evidently worn out, and every way unsuited to the present circumstances of the country. Where are the benefits at all commensurate with the outlay that has taken place? Where are the great works achieved by these Government Boards, where the marked improvements in the condition of the people or the country traceable to their exertions, and justly due to the many millions intrusted to their hands? They are not to be found—they have never existed. Nor could it have been otherwise, for these functionaries never possessed the confidence of the community and have seldom been held even in respect. Is it necessary to add that they have never stimulated the energy of the people—that they have in no degree elevated the national character, nor directed the national industry, to any result worth commemorating. They

have been endured under one denomination or another for upwards of a century, and during it, it is no exaggeration to assert, that they have mitigated no evil, but created many, and have invariably proved the ready instrument of manifold corruption.

Let the Board of Works then be abolished, and let all moneys lent for Irish purposes be advanced by the Exchequer Bill Commissioners, but at the same time let the Irish department of the Woods, Forests, and Land Revenues, who have always exercised authority in Ireland, be enlarged. Let there be a suitable office maintained in Dublin for the transaction of the business properly belonging to the Irish branch of that office, and let it be the duty of the Crown Commissioner for Ireland to spend a fair portion of his official life in that country, and personally superintend the local interests more immediately committed to his charge. By the adoption of this change there will soon be a considerable gain in point of economy and practical efficiency. England, Scotland and Ireland will then be brought under the action of the same principles and system, legitimately applied to their common service by one governing body. Then we shall no longer have the Board of Works doing one thing in Ireland and the Woods and Forests another. An equal administration of affairs will prevail throughout the empire at large, and all the conveniences of centralisation will be united with the advantages of a local or departmental administration. The Commissioner sitting occasionally at the Board in London, and occasionally superintending the progress of his own particular business in Ireland, will carry with him in council an extent of information not commonly brought to bear upon the transactions of business, and he will be sure to season and regulate his official acts in Ireland with a spirit and a system at all times much wanted in that country.

We repeat, therefore, let the Board of Works be abolished, and let the great field of improvement offered by the country be thrown open for the future to the energies of private enterprise upon honest conditions. For this purpose, and to

ensure a fair trial of the system recommended, the different undertakings, so long overloaded with public debts, ought to be relieved of their incumbrances. It is but equitable that they should enjoy the opportunity of starting in a fresh career of usefulness, clear of all restrictions and embarrassments arising from past misfortune or mismanagement. By this process the old debts due by the Wellesley Bridge and Docks, by the Galway Docks, by the Ulster Canal, and other undertakings similarly circumstanced, would one and all be compounded. And wise would it be to make such compositions, for those debts are bad in every sense of the expression. They should therefore be treated without further delay according to the precedent furnished by the Treasury in the case of the Branches of the Grand Canal. In that case, as in those now under consideration, a sufficient income had never been raised from the works to pay the interest of the money advanced by Government to make them, which, accumulating year after year, periodically augmented the amount to be repaid. At last the Lords of the Treasury disposed of the whole debt, principal and interest, upon the common terms adopted in mercantile and other matters of business. The actual net value of the property was ascertained irrespective of the mortgage upon it, and a sum equal to the purchase of that income, considered as an annuity according to the government tables, was accepted as a full satisfaction of all that was due. The same relief ought to be afforded in the remaining cases. The money due amounts to a large sum, but it has long since been virtually lost. The produce of the works does not suffice to pay the interest upon their respective debts—where then is the policy of maintaining a set of claims that are really of no value?

Another desirable measure to accompany the proposed change would be the consolidation of several small works, kindred in their nature and objects, and not far removed from each other in point of situation, into one large and respectable undertaking. In this way several enterprises taken by the Board of Works from joint-stock companies

would be restored to the management of their legitimate promoters; and they might, at the same time, be considerably benefited in several instances by appropriate amalgamations. For instance, the Upper and Lower Boyne Navigation and Drogheda Harbour ought obviously to be in the hands of one company. All three under separate managements will be petty speculations, and scarcely equal to the discharge of their respective expenses. If united together and managed under one staff and one direction, they would constitute a respectable and a profitable undertaking. The same remark applies with equal force to other cases, but it is unnecessary to particularize them.

Clear, however, as must be the conviction upon the mind of every calm and disinterested observer respecting the advantages that would quickly arise from an abandonment of the institutions hitherto so fruitlessly, yet so expensively, maintained in Ireland for the promotion and extension of Public Works, there is too much reason to fear that no reform in them will be immediately attempted.

There is unfortunately in every government, and in the government of Ireland more than any other, an irresistible tendency to regulate and restrain the popular action, and this passion grows stronger the longer it is indulged. The Ministry of Lord Melbourne was deeply imbued with its spirit, and owed the unpopularity under which it ultimately dropped from office more to that fault than any other in its composition.

There was displayed by that cabinet an irrepressible partiality for men who played the part of general busy-bodies. With them the best recommendation for office too frequently seemed to be a restless fancy for meddling with all things public and private—an indomitable determination that whatever was to be done in the country should somehow or other be done through the instrumentality of government. Where the nature of things rendered it impossible for such a body to act directly, it was to superintend and control. Poor Law Boards, Education Boards, Railway Boards, Drainage Boards,

and Navigation Boards and Commissioners too numerous to be described or remembered, were then the order of the day. When a ministry falls into an extravagance of this kind, we detect the error of its ways by a simple reference to the proper functions of government, which are confined to defending the people from foreign injury, and preserving peace, order, and comfort at home. Beyond this duty there are few acts which can be undertaken by a government without trespassing upon the constitutional liberty of the subject, and almost every obligation incurred by a government which has a further tendency is a mistake most likely to eventuate in a mischief, or a wrong.

As to Ireland it is impossible to track the current of events in that country, without perceiving that among the various causes to which the distress and disturbance so constantly prevailing in it are to be assigned, not the least powerful is the total want of those intermediate interests so naturally and efficaciously promoted by private enterprise in the successful prosecution of public works. These produce a new estate in a country, and they are most desirable in one where the existing sources of employment and profit are almost wholly agricultural—where no fruitful body whatever intervenes between an ill-devised, poorly appointed, and inefficient local government, and a mass of peasantry utterly helpless, though distinguished for great bodily strength, patient labour, and a lively intellect.

To such a people the prevailing system in Ireland cannot but prove injurious. While the Government is found willing to undertake every great work that is required to improve the country, the people are effectually discouraged from studying how to promote national improvements themselves. They are kept in a state of impotent pupillage, and degrading inactivity. The more a minister does, the more he is expected to do. No bounds are put to the demands made upon the state for the employment of the poor and the development of the national resources, and so often have these been pressed with plausible eloquence and importunate assiduity, that it has

repeatedly been deemed a matter of course to give them a colourable encouragement. While such a habit prevails, how vain to hope that the vital principles of social and commercial progress, self exertion, and competition, will ever be cherished! Low indeed must the condition of that country always remain, and limited the skill and enjoyment of its inhabitants where the Government is the main promoter of improvement, the only patron of merit, and the principal rewarder of industry.

Well then may it be asserted that the state of Ireland will never be sound, nor its prosperity be based upon a sure foundation, while the practices here condemned are continued by the Government. Nor let it be said that the subject has been dwelt upon at too much length in this chapter. Its importance cannot be overrated. They only can estimate correctly the sum of the injury thus vexatiously inflicted upon the country, who have been witnesses of the extent and intensity of its effects. Take one of the latest instances. About the year 1843, the contract held by a London Company for lighting Dublin with Gas being about to expire, some members of the Town Council of the latter city and other gentlemen proposed to form a company for supplying the article themselves. One would have supposed that the citizens of Dublin would have been permitted to undertake amongst themselves and of their own accord, an office so simple and so natural, as that of lighting their own city with gas. But it was not so. Even here the Government interfered. The Under Secretary at the Castle, and the Lord Mayor, entered into a formal correspondence upon the subject, different opinions were broached, as a matter of course where different interests were felt to exist, and ultimately a commission was appointed to inquire and report. And a report was made but never printed.

Its authors—or possibly the Government—grew ashamed, and the document was suppressed. The citizens were thus able to carry their object at last, but their success cost them a struggle of two years' duration, with the pressure of the

Government—no light odds bearing against them all the while. To some persons this matter may perhaps appear too insignificant for serious notice; but as an example of the obstacles habitually thrown in the way of improvement in Ireland, by persons who intercept the influence of Government, it is by no means an unimportant incident. Its very insignificance, moreover, bears a particular value, if rightly construed. For if so small an affair was impeded by so much delay, what, we may fairly ask, would be the difficulty and discouragement produced if the venture proposed had been one of considerable extent or real consequence?

It may perhaps be pleaded that the act of the Government on this occasion was well meant, and should therefore be favourably considered. But taking the Commission in its very best sense, what more can be said for it than that it was an attempt to point out to the citizens of Dublin how far it might, or might not, be advantageous to them to provide their own gas? That, however, is not one of the functions of Government. "The statesman," says Adam Smith, "who should attempt to direct private people in what manner they ought to employ their capitals, would not only load himself with a most unnecessary attention, but assume an authority which could be safely trusted, not only to no single person, but to no council or senate whatever, and which would nowhere be so dangerous as in the hands of a man who had folly and presumption enough to fancy himself fit to exercise it."—*Wealth of Nations*, book iv. c. 11.

CHAPTER XV.

LAND HISTORICALLY CONSIDERED.—ANTAGONISM OF THE TWO GREAT CLASSES.—LANDLORDS AND TENANTS.—ANCIENT TENURES OF THE COUNTRY.—PROGRESS AND EFFECTS OF CONFISCATIONS.—FORFEITURES AND LAWS AFFECTING LAND.—CONDUCT OF LANDLORDS, AND CONDITION OF PEASANTRY.—TENURES THENCE ARISING.—STATISTICAL RESULTS.—REVIEW OF REMEDIAL MEASURES.

THE subject-matter of the present chapter is beset on every side with infinite perplexities. All of these are formidable, and not a few peculiarly grave and distressing. There is not a form into which the general question can be thrown for the purpose of discussion, that will not be sure to excite some prejudice so rooted, or some animosity so violent as to render dispassionate and impartial investigation almost impossible. Above all, it is most difficult to meet with honest witnesses and correct information. The litigatory interests are marshalled into extreme parties, animated by a fierce spirit of implacable antagonism. On both sides the great object (and often unconsciously) is, to dissemble and mislead. Whether the adverse forces appear in the arena bodily, or allow their different causes to be agitated by advocates and apologists, the attention of the most intent observer is almost irresistibly drawn off in the majority of instances, from the real points at issue by a display of collateral or incidental matter, which is often managed with considerable art, and almost invariably with a superabundance

of zeal, injurious to the discovery of truth, and the progress of improvement. On both sides, moreover, there is a conscience-stricken sense of so much that is radically bad—of so much that will not bear the ordeal of strict investigation—of so much that common justice and humanity can in no shape tolerate or excuse ; that neither the parties themselves, nor their witnesses will dare to make a frank avowal of their pretensions, or venture to act boldly in the open face of society upon the impulses and feelings they really cherish. A strong and decided spirit of freemasonry pervades the country ; landlords and tenants are bound by it, each to his own class, and it is only in the innermost circle of those classes that the due measure of protection is afforded, which inspires the respective members to reveal, in all their natural force, principles and passions subversive to the last degree of anything like happiness in society, and strength in government.

He, then, who would judge fairly and rightly between the two factions, must know them both intimately well in the confidential relations of private life. There only can he hope to find the key that opens the lock of sincere opinions. There only will he be able to discern, in the full extent of its naked enormity, the positive and disheartening truth, that the most fatal symptom of the diseased condition of society in Ireland is a perverse bias, deeply seated in the minds of the two great classes—landlords and tenants. He will feel that these ought to be one and the same in point of sympathy,*

* "Whoever," said the late Chief Justice Bush, charging a Special Commission at Maryborough, "confines his estimate of the consequences of such a confederacy to the mere outrages and crimes it produces, has I fear but superficially examined the subject. Such consequences may be occasional and transient, but the moral influence upon society of such a diseased state of human character must be deep and permanent. The bad passions let loose, the charities of life extinct, those relations dis-severed, which between the higher and lower classes are the offspring of reciprocal protection and dependence—confidence displaced by suspicion, and fear, and hatred, in all classes vitiating and corroding the heart of man ; these are productive seeds which threaten a fearful growth, and if the mischief be not put down, every reflecting man will look forward to the necessary influence of such a state of things upon the future destiny of Ireland, as operating far beyond the local disturbances of a provincial district."

because they have essentially a common interest, and he will find that they are not merely opposed to, but heart-hardened against each other. He will mark the tenantry, when a landlord is murdered, struck by no sorrow. He will hear them vindicate the crime, and may catch them shielding the perpetrator from justice. On the other hand, he will meet some ten or twenty families evicted from their miserable cabins, and after listening in vain for some expressions of compassion for the outcasts, he will hear landlords commend the legal hardship by which perhaps a hundred human beings are turned out helplessly upon society, without employment, food, or the shelter of the meanest roof to protect exhausted nature from the pinching inclemency of the weather.

Nothing has been more common, and nothing more just than the censures passed upon the rapacity and heartlessness of Irish landlords. To the full as common, and to the full as just are the denunciations hurled against the habitual lawlessness of the Irish peasant, against the frequency of agrarian murders—murders of which the commonest features are those most degrading to the character of man—extreme cruelty and extreme cowardice. The unnatural antagonism of these two classes forms by far the worst of the manifold disorders to which Ireland is a prey.

In the broad statements of grievances, as they are generally put forward by the two classes, truth is seldom violated. But the whole truth is not always told. There are unquestionably very bad landlords and very bad tenants; but there are also good of both classes, and it is both unjust and pernicious to lay a particular stress either upon the harshness or the criminality of the one set of men or the other without relieving the weight of the imputation by introducing a becoming account of the virtues, neither few in number nor poor in quality, which belong to each of them.

A slight examination of the main points at issue will suffice to show how cautiously they are to be dealt with. Take the common case of a landlord in the South of Ireland. A lease drops, and he finds twenty families starving upon twenty acres

of his estate, which had originally been set to an individual as one farm. Naturally enough he desires to clear his farm of these poor creatures, and to place in their stead a few substantial tenants. But the twenty families—men, women, and children—possess no earthly means of subsistence save the potato crop grown upon the patches of land attached to the miserable cabins they have constructed there with mud. Those patches of ground they will not surrender : for if they do, they will give up with them their only food. That miserable cabin they will not stir from, because if they do, they will have to sleep in the open air. They will beg, borrow, and promise to pay any amount of rent ; they will undertake to do anything—but depart. No land, however, can bear such an infliction, and the landlord has no alternative but passive subjection to an increase of that evil or ejection. After a struggle more or less protracted and distressing, the law is aroused to vindicate his rights, and it sustains them in arms. The civil and military force, cavalry, infantry, police, subsheriffs and stipendiary magistrates, march upon the farm—the cabin doors are broken in ; the roofs are torn off, and the withered straw is scattered to the winds ; the old walls are razed to the ground, and twenty families are driven forth at the point of the bayonet. The ejection has been served, and the landlord and the land being satisfied, the soldiers march back to their barracks, the police to their station, while the forty families—men, women, and children—huddle together in a ditch by the road-side to brood over their misery. There is no reason to expect help, but there is room for revenge, and murder is committed : the landlord or his agent, or the incoming tenant is shot, and the wreck of the ejection smokes with human blood.

Now in this case—and it is not an extreme one ; on the contrary, it is one that occurs in six out of the twelve months of every year that now passes or has passed for upwards of a century—the position of the landlord claims the most serious attention. It is not with him merely a question of improving his property, but of arresting the progress of an evil which, if permitted to continue, must inevitably make him a pauper as

much as any tenant upon his estate. For no property can by possibility bear the incubus of a population increasing in numbers and in poverty, as these settlements invariably do increase in Ireland. Where the people go on subdividing the land into smaller and smaller strips, and the smaller the subdivision, the greater the number of the persons demanding subsistence from it, it is absurd to attach any idea of value to the property. The process resorted to is a subversion of the first condition of value, the first laws of property, and every essential element of private and public prosperity.

On the other hand no language can be too affecting to describe the distress of the evicted wretches. The one amongst them who desperately avenges the sufferings of the whole body by committing murder, places himself beyond the pale of the social system and is not to be pardoned. But for all the others, can pity be too tender, or charity too generous? Even when they dwelt in their cabins, and lived only upon potatoes, they were amongst the poorest, the least informed, and most simple of human beings. But now that he stands at the road side—with his old mother on one side, his wife on another, and three or four children dragging at his heels—houseless—hungry and helpless—without a single prospect or hope of succour, subsistence, or help before him—can the imagination picture to itself an extreme of existence, every way so full of hardship, as that of the evicted Irish peasant? If there be on earth a state of natural despair, it is his.

Difficult, however, as the subject undoubtedly is in its different bearings, there still appears no reason to suppose that it is invincibly obdurate and intractable. If the proper order of events be steadily followed—if the relative positions and rights of all parties affected be carefully traced and fairly defined, and if those positive facts be plainly set forth out of which the present unhappy condition of things has been so painfully evolved, we shall not find ourselves unable to discover the necessary correctives, as well as the proper mode of applying them. Long as the disorder has prevailed, and far as its ravages have extended, even a cursory survey of the

country and its history will clearly indicate that we have three principal producing causes to deal with—first, the laws, and as well those that have been, as those that remain in force; secondly, the manner in which the landlords have from time to time put those laws into execution, and cultivated the property given by them, and thirdly, the conduct of the peasantry, suffering as they have continuously done the double pains imposed upon them by the enactments of the law, and the mixed severity and indifference of the landlords and law makers.

In order to understand the present condition of the landed interests in Ireland, it is primarily necessary to ascertain the various tenures into which those interests are subdivided; and if we are to account with any degree of distinctness or satisfaction for the intricacy of those interests, and the wretchedness attending upon them, we shall require a thorough knowledge of the numerous and violent changes which were imposed from age to age upon the owners and occupiers of the soil by the force of arms, and, often more violent still, by the force of law. These have been already spoken of under the head of Historical Outlines; but a connected review of them here, even at the risk of repetition, is indispensable, if we would not plunge into the labyrinth they have formed, without a direct light, and immediate guide to clear away the surrounding obscurity, and point out a track that may be safely followed.

It is a curious fact, that about the last of the great reforms introduced into Ireland by the policy of the English Government, and of all others, perhaps, that which has been most completely executed, was one that radically affected and recast the tenure of land throughout the island. The old Irish principle of tenure in common prevailed at the period of the invasion, and was maintained with inflexible attachment for ages afterwards. The chieftain and the tribe held together the lands within their district, each, in his degree and according to his age possessing an inherent right to his share of the whole, exclusive of all strangers. The reign of James I. had been reached before this impoverishing law was abolished.

At present very few vestiges of it remain : it may be said to linger feebly in the rundale system of one or two of the northern counties — but though a large number of acres appear by the Land Commission Report to be held in joint tenancy, the people are universally found to cling wherever they possibly can to a separate holding. Leases of joint tenancy were common fifty years ago, but a lease to more than one person is now rarely applied for.

Sir John Davies differs in no material respect from the native writers in his account of this ancient tenure, nor does he fail to notice emphatically the evils consequent upon its adoption by the new settlers.

" In England," he says, " and all well-ordered countries, men have certain estates in their lands and possessions, and their inheritances descend from father to son, which doth give them encouragement to build and to plant, and to improve their lands, and to make them better for their posterities. But by the Irish custom of Tanistry the chieftains of every country, and the chief of every sept, had no longer estate than for life in their chieferies, the inheritance whereof did rest in no man. And these chieferies, though they had some portions of land allotted unto them, did consist chiefly in cuttings and cosherings* and other Irish exactions, whereby they did spoil and impoverish the people at their pleasure. And when their chieftains were dead, their sons or next heirs did not succeed them, but their Tanists, who were elective, and purchase their elections by strong hand ; and by the Irish custom of Gavelkind the inferior tenancies were partible amongst all the males of the sept, both bastards and legitimate ; and after partition made, if any one of the sept

* Cosherings, as this distinct and strong-minded author afterwards explains, when describing the extortion of coigne and livery, were an extension of the Irish custom of Bonaght, " a most heavy oppression and crying sin, that did draw down as great or greater plagues upon Ireland than the oppression of the Israelites did draw upon the land of Egypt"—cosherings " were visitations and progresses made by the Lord and his followers among his tenants, wherein he did eat them, as the English proverb is, out of house and home. Sessings of the kerne and his family called kernety, of his horses and horse boys, of his dogs and dog boys, and the like, and lastly, cuttings, tallages or spendings high and low at his pleasure ; all which made the lord an absolute tyrant and the tenant a very slave and villain, and in one respect more miserable than bond slaves, *for commonly the bond slave is fed by his lord, but here the lord was fed by his bond slave.*"

had died, his portion was not divided amongst his sons, but the chief of the sept made a new partition of all the lands belonging to that sept, and gave every one his part according to his antiquity."

Mr. Eugene Curry, an Irish scholar of considerable research, has given a similar account from the extant Irish manuscripts.

"The tenure of land among the ancient Irish was of various kinds.

"1. The land of the free tribe under a chief of their own family.—In this case the occupiers were obliged to maintain the chief's household in food, clothing, &c., and to maintain him in his offensive and defensive warfare, each contributing according to his holding. The lands were liable to sub or new division in every fourth generation, and it was competent in any of the occupiers to give 'his place' in the land (i. e. to sell his interest) to any person of the tribe, or to pledge but not sub-let it without consulting the chief or the tribe at large; but he could not sell 'his place' in the lands to a stranger without the consent of these parties. In this case the immediate chief was not absolute in the disposal of the lives or property of his dependents, as the chief prince immediately above him had always the power to compel him to the fair and faithful performance of the conditions mutually agreed on by the original constituent parties of the chieftancy. An occupier of this class could not be dispossessed except on his commission of some heinous crime, when he was deprived of his patrimony and cut off from the tribe. An instance of the interference of a superior chief occurs in an old Irish covenant, made between Conor O'Brien, Earl of Thomond, who died in 1540, and Teige M'Namara, chief of his own name at that period. O'Brien took M'Namara prisoner, and one of the conditions of his liberation was, that he (M'Namara) should not oppress the Clan Cuilan (his own tribe), nor exact any tributes from them beyond what they paid to his father and grandfather, as should be testified by the steward and bailiffs of the territory.

"2. A man holding his proportion of his tribe land, and also holding land, at rent, from the chief or any other land above him, or from the church, was allowed to dispose of his tribe land (under certain circumstances), by gift or sale, but not of the lands of the chief or of the church. These he should either keep to himself or restore to their *fundamental* owners.

"3. A stranger, who took lands from the chief, at rent and service, during pleasure, or 'at-will,' might, at any time, go away, taking with him one-third of the property on the lands, and leaving the other two-

thirds to the lord, in lieu of the use of the lands and the protection afforded him. But should this man remain on the lands during the succession of three lords he became naturalised, and entitled to all the privileges of a tribe man.

"4. If a man took land for a fixed term of years, and he enjoys it during that term, he must, if he goes away, leave all the buildings and other improvements to the landlords; and if he should go away of his own will before the expiration of the term, he must leave the improvements with the lands to the lord; but if he be forcibly turned out before the time expires, he takes all the improvements with him. The tenant at will had the same liabilities and privileges as regards building, &c.

"These are the leading features of the tenant laws in ancient Ireland as prescribed in the ancient manuscripts, law tracts, which have come down to us; and there is reason to believe—indeed it is the fact—that they came down almost in full force to the reign of William and Mary."

—*Letter to Pierce Mahony, Esq.*, 1845.

Such was the law observed by the Irish and tolerated by the English for a term of 400 years. It would be a superfluous task to show how necessarily it deprived the temporary holders of land of all the natural inducements to build upon the property, or otherwise improve it, and how necessarily also it kept the country waste and desolate. Where the extent and value of every man's interest in the soil was precarious and ephemeral, the occupier as a matter of course grew careless of its cultivation, and was always impoverished. Continual wars and the ever contending interests of the two races, English and Irish, increased in number and quality the disastrous effects produced by the transient character of this original tenure. There is no precedent or parallel for so monstrous a state of things in the whole course of history. Here were two races fighting for the soil, and the aggressors, though the more powerful, were so near-sighted for centuries together as to neglect reiterated and the most favourable opportunities for ingrafting amongst the people the vigorous and enduring customs which were the essential foundations of their own ascendancy. This anomaly will not appear the less remarkable if we bear in mind that the descent upon Ireland was the extension and completement of the Norman invasion

of England, and that in England, as Sir John Davies acutely notes, William did not give away whole shires and counties to his followers, nor deny to any Englishman who submitted the benefit of the laws by which he himself obtained a peaceable possession of the kingdom in a few years.

The land question, then, from the very first entrance of the English into Ireland constituted a grievance second to no other in point of exasperating severity. It was intimately mixed up and purposely confounded with that fatal policy of misgovernment, the division of the people into two nations, each ruled by a code of law that differed in its leading principles and practices from the other. For however ostentatiously the laws of England may have been promulgated in Ireland by Henry II. and his successors, the enjoyment of those laws was strictly limited to Englishmen. There were it is true some few exceptions to this general rule, as in the cases already referred to of the five families, the Macmurrroughs of Leinster, the O'Briens of Thomond, the O'Connors of Connaught, the Macloughlins of Meath, and the O'Neills of Ulster, as also in the cases of such other Irishmen as sued out separate acts of denization. But the Irish people at large were held to have no rights whatever in the courts of English law. Within those precincts they were not permitted to claim security for life, lands, or goods, and were treated not as aliens only but as enemies. All this is conclusively established by extant records without number, and the concurrent evidence of all writers of authority. And this was the state of the law, as Sir John Davies proves, from the reign of Henry II. to the reign of James I.

It is easy to perceive while reading the abstracts of the cases* quoted in the *Discovery*, how impossible it was age

* The case at page 123, vol. i. though not from Davies, belongs to a class from which he quotes several, and shows that the English Courts neither protected the life, nor revenged the death of an Irishman—and the case of Thomas de Botteler against Robert de Almain is adduced by Davies as a proof that it was a good answer to an action for goods had and held, to plead that the plaintiff was an Irishman.

after age that order or security or content could have prevailed in the country, notwithstanding all the treaties, compacts and submissions made by successive kings, chieftains, and subjects. For whatever may appear to have been the spirit and intention of the treaties entered into, and whatever the understanding of the parties submitting themselves to the Crown, the practical consequences for all the essential business of life remained unchanged. The English judges, putting their own interpretation upon the law, maintained that no Irishman could recover in an action for goods sold and delivered to an Englishman, and that even when an Englishman killed an Irishman, felony was not committed. In such a barbarous state of things the idea of referring any question of disputed possession to legal decision would have been absurd. The Englishman would derive a title from his own court which would put a suitable construction upon the grants made to the invaders by the invading sovereigns, while the dispossessed native would fly for different satisfaction to the judgments of the Brehon law, which still vested the soil in the kings, Tanists, and subjects of the country. While this double jurisdiction existed the actual possession of the land as a matter of course remained in those who could exhibit superior cunning or superior force. This era embraced a term of 400 years, of which it is almost unnecessary to observe that if we reflect, however briefly, upon the infamous doctrines that were solemnly propounded during all that interval of time as the inflexible rule of English laws, by the appointed judges of the land, we shall be at no loss to account for the incessant disruptions of the community, and cease to wonder that despair of justice should have so often driven the Irishman to demonstrate the enormities of the constitution by really making himself the rebel it uniformly proclaimed him.

The barbarity of the English law had somewhat begun to soften, and a few of the broader and more revolting lines of demarcation between the two races had become partially obliterated when a new arm of legal oppression was advanced

under the name of forfeitures or confiscations. The statute book from an early period of Irish history is overloaded with these monstrous enactments. There are instances in which the whole business of a session appears to have consisted in passing a single attainder, and a single statute frequently extinguished every title to property throughout a whole principality. When the number and quick succession of these terrible enactments are looked to, when the sweeping nature of the provisions contained in them, and the extent of territory and the host of persons affected by them are considered ; when also the late period down to which they continued to pass, is borne in mind, the total and continual insecurity of property and the concomitant neglect and mismanagement of land in Ireland as direct and unavoidable consequences of the laws made in the country, will appear to have constituted a plain but imperious necessity.

In the year 1537 we find the Act 28 Henry VIII. c. 1, which prays the Commons that forasmuch as Gerald Fitzgerald, late Earl of Kildare, amongst manifold enormities and abuses confederated with one James, late Earl of Desmond, an openly proclaimed and published traitor, for sending to the French King, then His Grace's enemy, and at open war with him, to send into the land of Ireland an army for the taking of the same out of our said sovereign lord's possession, and notwithstanding that his said traitorous intent would not take effect by reason of a peace ;—and being of this and divers other offences remitted and pardoned, afterwards sojourning at Newington in the county of Middlesex, willed and commanded his daughter Ellice Fitzgerald to will all his brethren, O'NEYEL, O'Conner and all other friends and servants to stir and rear war against our said sovereign's deputy, until they were by force repressed ;—and notwithstanding his grace of pity and mercy remitted the said Earl these traitorous conspiracies, the same Earl the 23rd year of our said Sovereign Lord not only permitted O'Neyle, the King's Irish enemy, to invade

and destroy the County of Uriel without any resistance made by himself, being the King's deputy, having the governance and charge of the same, but having his brother Sir John in company with the said O'Neyle—and so forth, relating the course of insurrections and anarchy by which this pattern of the genuine Independent, Lord Lieutenant of the ancient regime, made his government terrible—the Act proceeds to establish and ordain that the said Gerald Earl of Kildare late deceased, his son and heir Thomas Fitzgerald, Sir John Fitzgerald, and Oliver Fitzgerald uncles to the said Thomas, James Delahyde son and heir of Sir Walter Delahyde of Moyclare, Knight, John Delahyde, Edward Delahyde Parson of Kilberry, sons of the said Sir Walter, John Burnel of Balgriffen, Esq., Sir Richard Walsh Parson of Loughsewdie, Chale Mac Grauyl, otherwise Charles Reynold, clerk, late Archdeacon of Kells, James Gernon son and heir of Patrick Gernon of Gernonstown, Christopher Parese son and heir to William Parese of Agher, Piers Walsh son to Walter Walsh, Robert Walsh and Maurice Walsh son to William Walsh, late of Tiecroghan, and Edward Rowks yeoman, be adjudged and attainted traitors, and forfeit for ever all honours, castles, land, &c.

In the same year passed the Act headed "Delahyde's Lands in Carbrie,"—which sets forth that after the death of Sir Walter Delahyde, the king is rightfully entitled to all the lands of the said Sir Walter, by reason of that wilful and disloyal traitor, James Delahyde, son and heir of Sir Walter, was one, and the chief counsellor of Thomas Fitzgerald," and it is thought "that the said Thomas Fitzgerald and James were partly ruled and counselled by the said Sir Walter and Janet Eustace his wife, &c.,—therefore enacts that all the said lands and tenements in Carbrie shall vest in the king, &c.

The session of 1556 is memorable for the Act, 2 & 3 Philip and Mary, "for the disposition of Leix and Offalie," and the Act "whereby the king and queen's majesties, and the heirs and successors of the queen be entitled to the countries

of Leix, Slewgrave, Irvy, Glenmaliry, and Offalie, and for making the same countries Shire grounds."

By the first of these statutes it is proclaimed, "that the countries of Leix, Slewgrave, Offalie, Irrie, and Glynmalire, were of late wholly possessed by the Moores, the Connors, the Dempsyes, and other rebels; and now by the industrious travaille of the Earl of Sussex be brought again to be in the possession of their majesties, and so remain; and forasmuch as the well disposing of the aforesaid countries, and planting of good men there, shall not only be a great strength to those quarters, but also a wonderful assurance of quiet to all the rest of the English countries and a great terror to all the Irish countries bordering on the same: it is enacted, that the aforesaid Earl of Sussex shall have full power during the tyme he shall be Lord deputy, to give and grant to all her Majesty's subjects, English or Irish, at his election and pleasure, such estates in fee simple, per tail, and such leases for years or lives of the whole as shall to his wisdom and discretion seem meet and convenient."

It was thus that the Queen's County and the King's County were "settled."

In the session of 1569, 11 Elizabeth, sess. 3, c. 1, came the Act for the attainer of Shane Oneile, and the extinguishment of the name of Oneile and the entitling of the queen's majestie her heirs and successors, to the country of Tyrone, and to other countries and territories in Ulster. This as a specimen of legislative grandiloquence is a curiosity. The exordium is a master-piece in its way. The strain of plausible satisfaction and praise by which we are led on smoothly and piously to the confiscation of "the fifth part of this realm of Ireland," furnishes in point of conception and execution a piece of crafty legislative composition, which it may be possible to equal but hardly to surpass. "When we consider," says this singular law, "our most entirely beloved and no less dread sovereign ladye and princess, the loving mind and daily charges, which you incessantly spare not to employ both for the advancement of this your realm of Ireland, and the surety and

profit of us your faithful and obedient subjects, we cannot nor ought, except we would be noted to the world for ingrate and unnatural people to your royal person, being our supreme head and defender, but study, devise, and invent all the best ways and means we can possibly, both to increase your kingly estate over us, and also help to maintain the same with the rumpier of our bodies and consumption of our goods,"—and so recounting how the glory of kings does not only consist in high blood or haute progeny, and abundance of private riches and substance, with which her majesty is in every way plentifully adorned; but in populous, rich, and well governed regions, wealthy subjects and beautiful cities and towns, with which the imperial crown of England had before this time been conveniently furnished within this realm of Ireland, until through the iniquity of times past, such as yet remain were impaired, and the rest utterly lost; but now thanks be to Almighty God the one well amended, and the seals, signs, and places of the other recontinued to the quiet possession of your majesty, as well by the death and final destruction of that caitiff and miserable rebel Shane O'Neile, as also by the godly and careful trade of government used by Sir Henry Sidney; the said rebel to the perpetual damage and infamy of his name and lineage refusing the name of subject, and by high and perilous practices, enterprised great stirrs, insurrections, and horrible treasons, &c. &c. The traitorous attempt of Shane O'Neile is next set forth, and the subsequent intricate history of the proceedings relating to Con O'Neil and Mathew Baron of Dungannon, whose murder and the subsequent risings in the North are related. We are then turned backwards up to the remotest fountains of bardic antiquity, whence the statute writer deduces for her majesty three titles to the realm, anterior to those of O'Neile, the first of which deals with Biscan and Bayon, and kings Gurmonde and Belan, whence descending slowly through Henry II. and the Burghs we are reconducted to cotemporary events, and find the name of O'Neile and the ceremonies of his creation extinguished, and the rule and authority of O'Neile and the lords and captains of Ulster severed, exempted

and cut off, and all the lands, &c.: and the sept which possesseth the country of Claneboy O'Cahan, Mac Gioglin, the inhabitants of the Glynnas, sometimes the Baron Misselands, and of late usurped by the Scots, whereof James Mac Conyll did call himself lord and conqueror, Mac Gynnes, O'Hanlon, Hugh Mac Neillmore, the four septs of the Mac Mahons, Mac Kyvan and Mac Can, and all the honours, castles, lands and tenements to them or to their kindred and adherents belonging invested with the real and actual presence of her Majesty.

1569. The Act 11 Elizabeth, sess. 3, intitled The Queen's Majesty to Thomas, Knight of the Valley's Lands in Munster.—The preamble recites that Thomas Fitzgerald, Knight of Vale, otherwise Knight of Glaune in the county of Limerick, and Thomas his son and heir had committed sundry wilful murders, burnings, waste, and warlike destructions upon divers the Queen's people, for which offences Thomas the son was executed, and Thomas the father found guilty, but his execution stayed "in respect of a certain scruple or doubt conceived of the statute which maketh burning to be treason in this realm": nevertheless forasmuch as it is manifestly known in how willful and unlawful sort the said Thomas, Knight of the Valley, hath led his life from his youth to this his decrepid age, and how necessary it is that some ensample by his punishing be shewn to the great men of forces in that country; all the lands, castles, hereditaments, &c. of Thomas the father and Thomas the son are vested in the Queen.

In the same year a short session was held, and an Act passed reciting the Act of Attainder, 28 Henry VIII.c. 1, and restoring to their blood the sons and daughters of the Earl thereby attainted, but not making void or frustrating gifts, or grants, or leases of lands made by the crown consequent upon the attainder.

1570. In the Act 12 Elizabeth c. 5, for the Attainder of such as be or shall be indicted of High Treason or Petty Treason, committed or to be committed from April 1, 1569,

to April 30, 1571, if they shall not yield their bodies, &c. we have another of those curious pieces of high-flown composition which the law makers of that period appear to have taken especial delight in framing. The Act sets out with a stately description of "her Highness' right godly intendment to transform this monstrously disordered state to the perfite shape of a happy common weale, and for that in these her happy days a reformation many ways before this time attempted, and never achieved, hath by her Highness and her godly minister by law and justice, the way warranted by the mouth of God, devised, and to the comfort of all faithful hearts established, but the wicked, better acquainted with darkness than light, have chosen to wallow in their own filth and puddle of tyranny, oppression, rape, ravin, and spoil, for as it is manifest and well known the vile and ingrate traitors Mac Cartiemore, lately created Earl of Clancartie; Sir Edward Butler, Knight; Edward Butler and Piers Butler, his brethren; Piers and James Butler, sons to the Viscount Mountgarret; James and John Butler, sons to Piers Butler of the Grallagh; Walter Butler, Tebbot Butler, Piers Butler, John Butler, sons to Edmond Butler, of Pollestone; James Fitz Gerald, son to Sir Morishe Fitz Desmond, the Seneschal of Mokilly; the White Knight, with divers other wicked traitors, against whose wicked and tyrannous course of life the lamentable cry of many widows, innocent orphans and poor oppressed people resound before the throne of God for vengeance, have conspired together most wretchedly to levy sharp and cruel war against your Majesty, your true and faithful servants and the English pale, and for the better accomplishment of their devilish and wicked purpose practised with the king of Spain and the Scots our antient enemies, and combined with the traitor Tyrelaughe Leynaghe and all the Ireshry of Ulster, except Sir Hugh O'Donnell; and after a long recital of several predatory acts declared to have been committed by several of the persons named, it is enacted, that every person who shall be indicted of high or petty treason within the terms previously named, shall upon

proclamation being made of the indictment, appear at the Castle of Dublin within forty days, and there yield his body to the constable, and shall not be discharged but by order of law, otherwise he shall be attainted of the treason of which he has been indicted, as effectually and sufficiently as if he had been found guilty of the same by the verdict of twelve men ; and all honours, lands, goods, &c. of such persons are seized and united to the imperial crown.

1570. There was a second session of Parliament held in this year for the sole purpose of passing an Act for the Attainder of Thomas Queverford, late of Ballymaka.

1571. The act 13 Elizabeth, c. 3, for the attainder of John Fitzgerald, called in his life-time the White Knight, otherwise called John Oge Fitzjohn, Knight Fitzgibbons, recites that whereas the just judgment of God hath cut off from the body of this her Majesty's commonwealth, that unnatural, unkind, and corrupt member, John, &c., and enacts that he shall be attainted and forfeit and lose to her Majesty all his lands, goods, &c., &c., and that the same shall be vested in the queen, without any office or inquisition.

1585. The act 27 Elizabeth, c. 1, is for the attainder of James Eustace, late Viscount Ballinglas, and recites that he, Edmund Eustace, Thomas Eustace, Walter Eustace, and Richard Eustace, his brothers, have done many detestable and abominable treasons, and some of them have been outlawed, and others have been duly convicted and suffered the pains of death, according to their demerits ;—it is enacted, that their lands, honours, castles, &c., shall be vested in the queen without inquisition. Power is then given to her Majesty to grant leases thereof, and also of the lands and rents of all other persons who have committed the like treason or been slain in rebellion, or executed by martial law.

A general clause follows, vesting the lands of all future traitors in the Crown.

1586 produced the memorable act 28 Elizabeth, c. 7, for the attainder of the late Earl of Desmond, and others mentioned in the act. It set out by declaring that Gerrot Fitz-Gerrold, late Earl of Desmond, Sir John Fitz Gerrold,

Knight, alias Sir John of Desmond, Knight, Sir James Fitz Gerrold, Knight, alias James ne Dynnell, alias Sir James of Desmond, Knight; James Fitz Morice, of Desmond, alias James Fitz Morice, gent.; James Fitz John Fitz John, of Desmond, of the Currens, in the county of Kerry; Thomas Fitz John Fitz John, of Desmond, of the Currens aforesaid; Teige Mac Dermot, Mac Cormack, Mac Cartie, of Mollaiffe, same county, gent.; Rory O'Donogh, alias O'Donogh More, of Rossedonogho, in Desmond; Nicholas Mac Shane Peers, alias Mac Shane, of Clanary, gent.; Thomas Browne, of the new town of Clancoulbe, gent.; Finin Mac Cormock, of the sept of Clandermot, in Desmond; Thomas Fitzdavid Gerrold, of Ardengrale, gent.; Richard Fitz Thomas, gent., alias Mac Thomas, of the Palace, in the County of Limerick, David Fitz Gerrold, of the Great Wood, gent., alias David Encorige, same county, gent.; Murrogh O'Brien, of Aherlogh, same county, gent.; Hugh Wale, gent., alias Faltagh O'Don Moylen, same county, gent.; Nicholas Fitz Williams, of Courtmatraskie, same county, gent.; Thomas Cam, gent., alias Thomas Mac Shane, of Balletabred, alias Gortenetibord, same county, gent., and Lord of Clevlish; Thomas Mac Gybon, of Mahawnagh, same county, gent.; John Supple, of Kilmako, same county; Cormock Downe Mac Cartie, of Glanerime, in the county of Cork, gent.; Conocor O'Mahoyne, of Kivelmeake, same county, gent.; Morrice Fitz Garrot, of the Shean, same county, gent.; James Fitz Maurice, of the Shean aforesaid, same county, gent.; Donnel Mac Connor O'Mahowne, of Rosebyne, same county, gent.; James Mac Shane Mac Gerrot, gent., alias James Fitz John Fitz Gerrot, of Strenecally, in the county of Waterford, gent.; Morrice Mac Gerrot Mac An Earle, of Shian, same county, gent.; Richard Fitz John Fitz Maurice, of Knockmean, same county, gent.; Morice Fitz John, of Knockmean, aforesaid, gent.; Gerrot Brack, of Melcosse, same county, gent.; Brian O'Brian ne Carrege, of Kilcomerie, alias Comeragh, same county, gent.; Morrogh O'Brian, of Dongrotte, county of Tipperary, gent.; Walter Fitz John Bourke, of Knockneden, alias of the Cappagh, in Muskery Curke, same county, gent.; John Fitz Walter Bourke, of Ballingurtin, same

county, gent. ; Geffry Burke, of Killenkaakie, same county ; Thomas Fitz John Bourk, of Cowley, same county, gent. ; John Mac William Mac Tibbot Bourk, of Clanwilliam, Coshway, in the same county, gent., have since, by open rebellion, and others by sundry confederacies, and other overt acts, have committed many abominable treasons—and then proceeds to enact that they shall by the authority of this act be convicted and attainted of high treason, and that as many of them as be yet in life and not pardoned, shall at the queen's will and pleasure suffer the pains of death, as in cases of high treason.

The usual clause follows, vesting the lands of these persons in the queen without inquisition—and all attainders previously declared against them, whether by outlawry or the verdict of a jury, are by this act approved and confirmed, and every gift, grant, or lease already made by the queen, of any portions of their lands, castles, or honours, are declared as good and effectual as if they had been made after the passing of the act.

The Act 28 Eliz. c. 8, was simultaneously passed attainting John Browne of Knockmonahie county Limerick, gent. ; John Bradagh Casy of Kilderry, same county, gent. ; Moregh O'Briar of Akerlo, same county, gent. ; Mahon Mac Moragh O'Brian of Kiluehume, same county, gent. ; Thomas Browne of Kilkellan, same county, gent. ; David Mac Gibbon, gent., alias David Mac Shane, alias David Engroig, late of Kilmore, same county, gent. ; James Wall and Stephen Wall, of Cloinstrofchan, same county, gent. ; Pierce Wall, alias Peter Wall of Balleigny, same county, gent. ; Redmond Wall of Adare, same county, gent. ; Robert Oge, Cusshane of Lisnecorie, same county, gent. ; Gerald Fitz Thomas of Kilfinny, same county, gent. ; Walter Leo, alias Leogh of Donkeyre, same county, gent. ; Owen Mac Edmond Mae Sheby of Ballynoe in the same county, gent. ; John Loudon of Kileosgraw in the same county, gent. ; Donogh Moyle Mac William of Dromlare, same county, gent. ; Edmond Oge Lacy of Ballyneglochye, same county, gent. ; Gerald Duffe of Rathphrille, same county, gent. ; James Fitz David Oge Crone of Rathprile aforesaid, same county, gent. ; Patrick Wolfe of

Balliwilliam, same county, gent.; Gerald Fitz Edmond of Glanehagilsly in Clangibbon, same county, gent.; Brian Roe of Cahirduffe, same county, gent.; Cormocke Oge Hallyman of Boherouce, same county, gent.; James Reogh Lacy of Lismakerry, same county, gent.; Gerrard Balliffe of Ballinfriorie, same county, gent.; Thomas Wall of Boherbradagh, same county, gent.; Morierto Meriagh of Kilduffe in the same county, gent.; Moryegh Mac Brian of the Grange, same county, gent.; Thomas Hurly of Ballynathie, same county, gent.; William Mac Phillip of Ballyany, same county, gent.; Ulliacke Backagh Mac Thomas of Clashonye, same county, gent.; Ullicke Fitz Thomas Burk of Lymoland, same county, gent.; Owen Mac Brien Mac Rory of Karwhydore, alias Garryduffe, same county, gent.; John Ocahysy of Kilderry, same county, gent.; Morogh Mac Teige O'Brien of Killury, same county, gent.; Morice Fitz John Gerrold of Kilnenagh, county of Kerry, gent.; Conohor Odaly of Kilterchan, same county, gent.; John Oge Fitz John Fitz Morice of Killenoragh, same county, gent.; Morice Mac Shane Heysey, alias Heysey of Glangartenkarrene, same county, gent.; John Mac Edmond Mac Ullicke of Ballenata, same county, gent.; James Hussy of Dinglecushe, same county, gent.; James Russell, same county, merchant; Domenick Roe Fitz Morice, same county, merchant; Thomas Fitzwilliam Boy, same county, gent.; David Duffe of Kilkusney, same county, gent.; Teige O'Loigh Dermod Beare, same county, gent.; John Fitz James Fitz Edmond of Tymackmaw, same county, gent.; John Fitz Redmond of Ballycoynan, county of Cork, gent.; Piers Coudon of Manoge in Coudon's Country, same county, gent.; Morice Mac Edmond of Rathgorffie, county Corke, gent.; James Fitz John of Polloghkyry, same county, gent.; John Macgarret Mac Shane of the Great Woods, same county, gent.; Richard Fitz Piers Coudon ny Caliareagh of Cahirdrourny, same county, gent.; Richard Riogle Barret of Burdenstown, same county, gent.; Mahown Mac Morragh of Kildeheny, same county, gent.; John Omollownow, alias Shane Omolan of Temple Jogan, same county, gent.; John

Piggot of Dyrrenywrangle, alias Dyrrewylane, same county, gent.; Phillip Roche Fitz Edmond, alias Mac Vildon, alias Villon of Carrichymlere, same county, gent.; Thomas Oge Mac Thomas Fitz Gerald of Kilmocke, same county, gent.; William Encorrigge of Kerrylarry, same county, gent.; Thomas Niskartie of Killane, same county, gent.; John Moyle of Ballygoran, same county, gent.; David Fitz Edmond Roche of Killoughtermoy, same county, gent.; Morice Fitz John of Knockmore, same county, gent.; Morice Fitz William Fitz David of Ballynatra, same county, gent.; Garrat Fitz James son to James Fitz John of Stroncally, county Waterford, gent.; John Fitz James, gent., brother to the same Garret; Morice Fitz John of Knockmohan, same county, gent.; Thomas Fitz John Fitz Morice of Knockmohan aforesaid, gent.; Henry Fitz Garret, same county, gent., brother to Viscount Decies; Edmond Roche Poer of Kilnecarrigge, same county, gent.; Edmond Fitz Theobald, alias Rabbin of Ballebegge, same county, gent.; John Fitz Tybald of Ballibegge aforesaid, gent., brother to said Edmond Fitz Theobald; William Duff Fitz James Roche of Ballymodagh, same county, gent.; Edmond Fitz John of Croshe, same county, gent.; Rorie Fitz Thomas, same county, gent., brother to Thomas Oge; James Leigh Roch of Fortene-lentehy, same county, gent.; Mauritius Fitz John of Kilmallow, same county, gent.; John Oge Mac Thomas of Clony, same county, gent.; John Fitz Maurice of Tynnekelly, same county, gent.; James Fitz Morice Fitz Garret of Ballymowtie, same county, gent.; John Roc Fitz Edmond of Casclereogh, same county, gent.; Morice Fitz John Bourke of Balligwiry, same county, gent.; James Fitzmaurice of Sheban, same county, gent.; William O'Maugher Mac Dermot, same county, gent.; Peter Grace of Ballynecurre, county Tipperary, gent., alias Pierce Grace of Ballynecurre aforesaid, gent.; Mellaghlen Roe O'Carran of Ballynolan, same county, gent.; Edmond Hedan of Ballymore, same county, gent.; John Bourk, alias Rich Mac John Bourke of Ballymore aforesaid, gent.; William Fitz Edmond Bourke

of Killualagher, same county, gent.; John Fitz Walter Bourke of Drourgan, same county, gent.; Conogher Yckoem Mac Brien Ogonagh, gent.; Morertogh Mac Brien of Tireboy, gent.; Morogh Mac Brian of Tireboy aforesaid, gent.; Teige O'Nubrian of Bealrughim in Onhy, gent.; Kenedy Mac Brien of the country of Ogonagh, gent.; Conochor Mac Conghor Mac Brien of the same country of Ogonagh, gent.; Teige Roe of the sept of Clandonell Roe of Bantry, gent.; Teige Roe Mae Tyning Mac Dermond, same sept, gent.; Conogher Mac Douell Mac Rory of the same sept, gent.

All these persons—all who had assisted them and died in rebellion or had been executed by martial law were by this act convicted and attainted of treason—and their lands forfeited. The confirmation contained in the preceding act of previous attainers, and also of preceding grants or leases of the forfeited lands is here repeated, and so end the confiscations of the reign of Elizabeth.

1612 was the year of the confiscation of Ulster by the Act 11, 12, and 13 James I. c. 4, for the Attainder of Hugh late Earl of Tyrone, Rory, late Earl of Tyrconnell, Sir Cahir O'Dogherty, and others. The persons whose property was now seized, were in addition to the two Earls and the Baronet mentioned in the title of this Act, Hugh O'Neyle, late Baron of Dungannon, eldest son of the Earl of Tyrone; Henry O'Neyle his second son, Sir Hugh Maguire, knight, and Connaught Maguire, late of Inniskilling, county of Fermanagh; Sir John O'Reilly, of Cavan, Knight; Phillip and Edmund O'Reilly, late of the same, esquires; Oghy Oge, O'Hanlon, eldest son of Sir Oghy O'Hanlon, late of Tovegoy in the county of Armagh; Casser O'Donnell, brother to the Earl of Tyrconnell, late of Casserscovee in the county of Donegal; Caffer Oge O'Donnell, late of Starfolis, same county, esq.; Donnel Oge O'Donnell, late of Donegal, esq.; Brian Oge Mac Mahown, alias Brian ne Sarvagh Mac Mahown, late of Clonleege, in the Uppertrough, county of Monaghan, gent.; Art Oge Mac Cormack O'Neyle, late of

Clogher, in Tyrone, esq.; Henry Hovendon, late of Dungannon, Tyrone, gent.; Mortogh O'Quyn, late of the same, gent.; Richard Weston, late of Dundalk, merchant; John Bath, late of Dunalong, merchant; Christopher Plunket, late of Dungannon, gent.; John O'Pafty O'Hagan, late of the same, gent.; John Rath, late of Drogheda, merchant; Hugh Mac Donnell, O'Galloebor, late of Donegal, gent.; Terrelagh Garragh O'Galloebor, late of the same, gent.; Phelim Reagh MacDavid, late of Eloagh, Donegal, gent.; John Crone Mac David, late of the same, gent.; Edmund Grome MacDavid, late of the same, gent.; Matthew Oge O'Maltully, late of Donegal, same county, gent.; Donogh Mac Mabourne O'Brian, late of Rathmulin, Donegal, gent.; Teige O'Kennan, late of the same, gent.; Henry O'Hagan, late of Dungannon, gent.; Teige O'Hagan, late of the same, gent.; and Tiege Modder O'Quin, late of the same, gent.

In 1634, the extent to which the confiscation of land had been carried in the reign of Mary, Elizabeth, and James I., was distinctly marked by the Act 10 Charles I. sess. 3, c. 3, which passed for securing the estates of undertakers, servitors, and natives in the Plantations made in the several counties of Waterford, Cork, Limerick, Kerry, Tipperary, Wexford, Wicklow, King's County, Queen's County, Westmeath, Leitrim, Longford, Tyrone, Armagh, Donegal, Fermanagh, Cavan, and Londonderry. The details have already been sufficiently dwelt upon.

But, however this statute may have been designed to settle the existing tenures and compose the troubles of the country, fresh events sprung rapidly up, and the course of a few years again transferred all the possessions of the country. During the interval referred to the English Parliament legislated largely upon the subject, and greatly increased the prevailing confusion.

In the year 1652 there passed an Act subjecting the Irish upon religious grounds to a graduated scale of forfeitures of the whole, or two-thirds or one-third of their lands. Parliamentary Commissioners were appointed to carry this Act

into execution, and the severity of their powers may be judged of by the fact that those were regarded as favoured persons who had their lands taken away and a portion to the same extent assigned in some other part of the country.

In 1653 the English Parliament passed another act for the distribution of lands in Ireland, by which ten counties, namely, Limerick, Tipperary, Waterford, King's County, Queen's County, West Meath, East Meath, Down, Antrim, and Armagh, were appropriated, [so much of each as was forfeited] one half for the satisfaction of the adventurers who had advanced money for the conquest of Ireland, and the other half for discharging the arrears of the army, which had accrued since the 5th of June, 1649. The forfeited lands in the counties of Dublin, Cork, Kildare, and Carlow, were reserved for the disposal of Parliament. What remained in the provinces of Munster, Leinster, and Ulster, were appropriated, first to cover any deficiency that might occur in the disposal of the ten first named countries; secondly, to discharge the arrears to the army; and thirdly, for the satisfaction of debts of whatever kind, that should appear to be due from the public. This was the Act that appointed the province of Connaught, and the lands west of the Shannon, as the future residence of Roman Catholics.

The general results of the Cromwellian confiscations and displacements have been summed by Mr. Bichenoop, who takes as his authority the accounts published by the Cromwellian proprietors themselves, of which there is no reason to doubt the accuracy. In them the surface of Ireland was estimated at 10,400,000 Irish acres, of which 3,000,000 were counted unprofitable land, consisting of wood, mountain, bog, &c. Of the remaining 7,400,000, 2,400,000 were computed to be in the hands of Protestant proprietors previous to the war of the confederation in 1641. At this period the Catholic property in land was estimated to be 5,000,000 of acres.

In 1653, when the Cromwellian war, according to the proclamation issued on this occasion, had ceased, they state that

these 5,000,000 of acres had been disposed of by the Cromwellian government as follows:—Restored to Catholic proprietors, 100,000 acres; to Catholic proprietors who proved innocence before Cromwell's Commissioners of Loughrea, and at Athlone, and were decreed restitution or compensation in the province of Connaught, and the county of Clare, about 700,000 acres.

To the officers and soldiers who served in Ireland before the arrival of Cromwell in 1649, in Wicklow, Longford, Leitrim, Donegal, and between the sea and the Shannon, 400,000 acres.

To the adventurers who advanced money under the Acts 17th and 18th of Charles the First, to carry on the war in Ireland, about 800,000 acres.

To several individuals, favourites of Cromwell, &c., about 100,000 acres.

Retained in the hands of government for its own use, but let to British Protestants upon profitable leases, in the counties of Dublin, Louth, Cavan, and Kildare, about 800,000 acres, besides a considerable number of houses in the cities and walled towns.

It would appear from this account, that 800,000 acres only were left in the hands of the old Irish. The residue, 9,600,000 acres, was divided among the new proprietors, of which 2,500,000 were seized from *former settlers*. This was little less than a virtual resumption of the whole country.

The three Acts passed after the restoration of Charles II. for the execution of the declaration of Breda, for enlarging the period of time first appointed for that purpose, for explaining doubts that had arisen in carrying the measure into execution, are so many records of a series of corrupt and vexatious proceedings which continued to convulse the kingdom during the interval referred to.

The confiscations begun by Cromwell, and adopted by Charles II., received fresh additions in the reign of William III. These are briefly noticed in Wakefield's Ireland, Vol. I. p. 340.

" In the reign of King William, forfeitures were made of the lands belonging to the adherents of James, amounting in several counties to 1,060,792 acres, which being worth £211,623 a year, at six years' purchase for a life, and at thirteen years for an inheritance, amounted to £2,685,190. Out of these lands the estates restored to the old proprietors by the articles of Limerick and Galway were valued at £724,923, and those restored by royal favour at £260,863. After these deductions and several other allowances, the gross value of the estates forfeited from 13th February, 1688, amounted to £1,699,343.*

With the reign of William and Mary ended the direct violence of the confiscations which were so cruelly begun in the reign of Henry VIII. But the indirect disturbing influence of those laws continued to be felt for many years afterwards, principally in consequence of the barbarous penal code of Queen Anne, which bore with immense force upon the possession of land, and the relations of landlord and tenant, down to the very period in which we live—certainly to 1829. If it had not been for that cruel persecution, and the continual efforts made to enforce its conditions sharply, the titles to the possession of an estate would have remained fixed and undisturbed, and peace and fortune might have entered and established themselves permanently under the wings of legal security. But when the profession of the Protestant faith was made an absolute condition in the possession of an estate, and a change from it operated as a forfeiture of the estate, the courts of law and equity became constant theatres of confiscations in detail which had ceased to be practised in the

* On this occasion seventy-six grants passed the Great Seal ; the principal of which were, Lord Romney three grants, 49,517 acres ; Earl of Albemarle two grants, 108,603 acres ; William Bentinck Lord Woodstock, 135,820 acres ; Earl of Athlone 26,480 acres ; Earl of Galway 36,148 acres ; Earl of Rochfort two grants, 30,512 acres ; Lord Coningsby 59,667 acres ; Colonel Gustavus Hamilton, for his services in wading through the Shannon and storming Athlone at the head of the English Grenadiers, 5,966 acres ; and Sir Thomas Pendragast for the most valuable consideration of the discovery of the Assassination Plot, 7082 acres." —*Ibid.*

Houses of Parliament on the large scale already described. During all this time the political system of the Government was built upon the principle of these dispossessions. Every minister who took office made it the rule of his public actions and the test of his political pretensions. And as the possessors of property acted upon the same considerations, we have to point to that false principle as the parent and producer of the peculiar grievances of the country, and all the complicated vexations that have ever since harassed the relations between landlord and tenant.*

To the landlords of Ireland, all men naturally attribute the condition of that country. For the landlords have not only possessed the land, but also the power to make the laws which regulate its use and occupation. According to every period or authority to which we can refer, the general body has evinced one consistent, and that the least commendable, mode of acting towards their dependents. Authors and politicians of all classes and parties give the same account of the conduct of the landlords and the condition of their tenants. Swift,

* Roman Catholics it will be remembered were not allowed to take land on lease before the year 1778. But the practical tendency of the law for many years afterwards to create injury and discontent, and to embarrass by additional intricacies the relations of landlord and tenant, is exposed by Wakefield, Vol. I. 253.

Happening to dine with Dr. Moylan the Catholic Bishop (of Cork), he related to me the following circumstance in regard to some townlands belonging to the Duke of Devonshire:—These lands were occupied by 200 families, and on the expiration of their leases, the Duke's agents, wishing to substitute Protestants in the room of Catholics, refused to renew them. The occupiers finding that they were likely to be deprived of their possessions, drew up a memorial of the case which Dr. Moylan presented to the Right Honourable Henry Elliot, who transmitted it to General Walpole. But what was the result? It was returned to the very agent whose conduct was censured; and this gentleman, a zealous friend no doubt to the established church, disregarding the claims of the Catholics, introduced Protestants in their stead. But interest, which often assumes the appearances of liberality, and in many cases impels men to do what they otherwise would not, induced the new tenants to enter into a treaty with the old ones, and the latter obtained leases of their former lands at a small rack rent; but with this difference in their situation, that they were now sub-tenants under persons who were middlemen.

Howard's Reports, Dublin 1775, is evidence of the number of these anti-catholic lawsuits, and the importance attached to them.

Arthur Young, Hardy in his Life of Lord Charlemont, Wakefield, and many others, told years ago the miserable story which Kohl and Von Raumer have so touchingly repeated in our time. Extracts from these writers have been too frequently quoted to be reproduced here; but the following from one of Horace Walpole's letters to Sir H. Mann is not hackneyed.

"If you want any more news you must have it from Ireland, where there is a pretty substantial insurrection of 4000 men calling themselves Hearts of Steel. Whatever their hearts are, their heads are of gunpowder. Poor souls, they have had thorough provocation; reduced to starve, to be shot, or to be hanged. They are tenants of Lord Donegal, driven off their lands because they could not pay hard fines for renewing their leases; 1600 horse and infantry are marched against them. We had better have wasted an hundred hours in redressing these misfortunes than in framing acts against marriage."

In the year 1764 Mr. Serjeant Fitzgibbon described the humiliating desolation of his country to the House of Commons in these affecting terms:

"It is always with regret that I discover the nakedness of my country, but on this occasion I ought not to hide it. Upon this occasion, I must remind you that Ireland is not more than one third peopled; our trade lies under such disadvantages, that two thirds of the population are unemployed, and are consequently condemned to the most deplorable indigence, a state that cannot fail to render them wretched in proportion as the luxury of a few has multiplied artificial wants, but of which they have no further knowledge than just serves to excite envy and discontent. We have neither foreign trade nor home consumption sufficient to distribute the conveniences of life among us with a reasonable equality, nor sufficient to pay any tax proportioned to our number.

"This island is supposed to contain 3,000,000 : of these, *two live like the beast of the field upon a root picked out of the earth, almost without hovels for shelter, or clothes for covering.* What must become of a nation in this situation, which at the same time is contracting a debt which must every year increase by a very considerable excess of its expenses, above its income? What method can be found to prevent the ruin of a state in which these evils not only continue but increase.

"What mode of taxation can be devised? Shall we tax leather where no shoes are worn, or tallow where no candles are burned? What tax can be devised on the necessities of life where they consist *wholly of roots and water?*"

Years afterwards the son of this gentleman became Attorney General and Lord Chancellor of Ireland. While holding the former office he said to the House of Commons—

"I am well acquainted with the province of Munster, and it is impossible for human wretchedness to exceed that of the miserable tenantry of that province. I know that the unhappy tenantry are ground to powder by the relentless landlord. I know that far from being able to give the clergy their tithes, they have not food or raiment for themselves. The landlord grasped the whole, and sorry I am to add, that, not satisfied with the present extortion, some landlords have been so base as to instigate the insurgents to rob the clergy of their tithes, not in order to alleviate the distresses of the tenantry, but that they might add the clergy's share to the cruel rack rents they already paid. The poor people of Munster lived in a more abject state of poverty than human beings could be supposed able to bear,—their miseries were intolerable."

The Irish judges have never ceased to hold as emphatic language or to draw attention to the same thrilling facts.

"What, (exclaimed Judge Fletcher,) what is the wretched peasant to do? Hunted from the spot where he had first drawn his breath—where he had first seen the light of heaven,—incapable of procuring any other means of subsistence—can we be surprised that, being of unenlightened and uneducated habits, he should rush on the perpetration of crimes followed by the punishment of the rope and the gibbet? Nothing remains for them thus harassed, thus destitute, but with a strong hand to deter the stranger from intruding upon their farms, and to extort from the weakness of the landlords—from whose gratitude and good feelings they have failed to win it—a sort of preference for the ancient tenantry."

Later still Baron Foster told the House of Lords :—

"I think that the proximate cause of all the disturbances which have existed in Ireland of late years has been the extreme physical misery of the peasantry, coupled with their being called upon for the payment of different charges (the first and principal of which is rent), which it is often perfectly impossible for them to meet; the immediate cause of disturbance I conceive to be the attempt to enforce these demands by the various processes of law; we are also to take into consideration that they are living under institutions for which they have neither much affection nor respect. I have assigned what I conceive to be the proximate causes of the disturbances: I think the remote one is a radically vicious structure of society which prevails in many parts of Ireland, and which has originated in the events of Irish history, and which may be in a great mea-

sure palliated, but which it would, I fear, be extremely difficult now wholly to change."

The present Chief Justice of the Queen's Bench in Ireland, Mr. Blackburne, was a witness in the same session before both Houses, and his evidence is remarkable.

"Land," said the learned gentleman, "is a necessary of life (in Ireland); the alternative of not getting it is starvation; and this circumstance, combined with the extravagant price of all species of agricultural produce, had raised land in the years before the termination of the war to a price beyond anything which could be called its intrinsic value. The subdivision of it was also produced by speculations of a political kind, and the consequence was that land stood at a rent which it was impossible for the tenant to pay at any time, reserving the means of decent subsistence.

"The most remarkable recent instance within my own knowledge of great numbers of persons having been ejected from particular properties, has been the eviction of the occupants of a property of Lord Stradbroke. A lease had been made by Lord Stradbroke, or his ancestor, for thirty-one years; the lease expired in 1823; the land had been divided to such a degree that I believe there were between forty or fifty families resident upon it—it was between four and five hundred acres, I think. Lord Stradbroke's agent* upon the expiration of the lease took possession, which the people gave him in point of form, and he let them back upon an understanding that when tenants were provided and a new disposition made of the property, they should give up possession, the object being, upon the part of Lord Stradbroke, to retain a great number of the old tenants and to enlarge their tenements. I believe contracts were made by his lordship's agents for new lettings, but when possession was demanded upon the part of Lord Stradbroke it was refused, and Lord Stradbroke was obliged to bring an ejectment. Lord Stradbroke's agent—there was no defence to the ejectment—attended by the sheriff and several men to assist him, went upon the lands and dispossessed this numerous body of occupants; they prostrated the houses, leaving the people to carry away the timber. The number of persons thus deprived of their homes on that occasion was very large—I am sure there were above forty families, but I cannot tell the number of individuals. They were persons of all ages and sexes, and in particular a woman almost in the extremity of death." The learned gentleman being asked what became of these persons, answered, "I should think they have been received from charity up and down the country."

* His name was Blood, and he was afterwards murdered.

Pursuing the thread of the evidence given by official persons we are struck by the opinions of Mr. Singleton, Chief Magistrate of Police in the Queen's county, before a committee of the House of Commons in the session of 1832.

"Are the Committee to understand that you consider that the spirit of outrage has not been got under? It has not.

"Can you give any hint to the Committee as to what you consider likely to accomplish that desirable object? I think if the laws were amended in one, two, or three instances, which I will suggest, it would tend to the security of the public peace. There is scarcely an outrage committed relative to lands, but what the people assign a cause for—if I may use that expression: in some instances the unfortunate people do show one.

"What are the Committee to understand by showing a cause? Oppression, high rents, low wages, and contracts being broken. I had two prisoners before me, one of whom was a boy, a few days before I came here. They were apprehended on a warrant to give bail and keep the peace, and they told me a case which, if true, I think is very severe. They told me that their forefathers (that was the expression they made use of) were in possession of a certain plot of land; that they had a lease not expired; that they went up with half a year's rent to the landlord; it would not be taken; when they returned it was spent; by that time the second gale came round and they were not able to pay the rent; and then they were permitted to give up the lands on condition not to pay the rent due.

"That is to say they were not called upon to pay the arrear? They were not called upon to pay the rent due on the proviso of surrendering the lands.

"Do you give credence to all the oppressions stated? In many cases I do give credence. I have seen and I know land to be set one-third above its value; and I have seen, at least I have heard and believe, that small cottagers who had land without a lease before the assimilation of the currency, are now called upon to pay the same rent in British currency."

In Ireland then, to condense the emphatic language of Chief Justice Blackburne, "land is life," and we may truly add, following up the simile, that the lord of the land has hitherto been able to dictate to the occupier the conditions upon which it has been held as peremptorily as the knight of old, with his foot upon the throat of a vanquished foe, pronounced the terms upon which his life was spared: This leading fact,

illustrated by the opinions of such men as the Lord Chancellor Clare, Judge Fletcher, Baron Foster, and Chief Justice Blackburne, makes us almost fancy that we can see the insurrections, agrarian outrages, and murders with which the history of the country teems, springing like corporal realities from the land, and spreading death and horror as they stride over its devoted surface.

The first great agrarian insurrection took place in the year 1761, when Mr. Serjeant Fitzgibbon spoke of the peasantry in the terms already quoted.* From that year to the year 1833, a series of unbroken conspiracies, seeking vent every now and then in tumultuous and sanguinary outbreaks, are painfully recorded by a variety of writers. We have histories of the Levellers and Whiteboys of 1761, of Right Boys and Oak Boys in 1764, of Steel Boys in 1772, of Right Boys, Peep o'Day Boys, and Defenders in 1785, of Orangemen and United Irishmen in 1798, of Thrashers and Carders in 1806, and in each of the years 1807, 1811, 1817, 1818, 1820, 1821, 1826, 1832, and 1833 we have had White Feet, Black Feet, Shanavats, Caravats, Rockites, Terry Alts, and Ribbon Men, down to the present time. It is almost superfluous to add that Insurrection Acts, Arms Acts, and Coercion Acts, have never ceased to swell the statute-book during the whole of this melancholy period.

With the exception of Grattan's Bill in the year 1780 to remove doubts in the construction of leases, with covenants for perpetual renewal—a bill opposed by the government and the aristocracy, and only carried by a majority of three in the Commons, and of one in the Lords—the proceedings of the parliament of Ireland embraced no measure for the relief of the prevailing distresses of the country. The tenor of the laws passed since the Union has not mitigated this general

* "Exorbitant rents, low wages, farms of enormous extent let by their rapacious and indolent proprietors to monopolising land jobbers, to be relet by intermediate oppressors for five times their value among the wretched starvers upon potatoes and water;—these were undoubtedly the first and original causes of the disturbances, obvious to the slightest inspection, though resolutely denied, and every public investigation into them impudently frustrated by those whose sordid interest opposed their removal."—*Hardy's Life of Lord Charlemont*.

character. One of the latest authorities brought to bear upon this question was the highest and most positive that could be applied to it. Chief Justice Pennefather delivering judgment in the year 1843, in the case of *Delapp v. Leonard*, made use of the following language :—“ *The whole code relating to landlord and tenant in this country, was framed with a view to the interests of the landlord, and to enforce the payment of rent by the tenant. The interest of the tenant never entered into the contemplation of the legislature!* ”

In the year following, Mr. Serjeant Howley, after detailing to the Land Commissioners the several statutes relating to the occupation of land, from the act 11 Anne to the Civil Bill Ejectment Acts, said :—“ These are all beneficial to the landlord, enlarging the remedy he has at common law, and giving him additional powers either to obtain his rent, or in default, to obtain possession of the land. The Civil Bill Ejectment system I consider more advantageous to the landlord than to the tenant. It gives greater facilities and more power to the former.”

It would be here proper, in order to present the general subject in its full aspect, to set forth the laws passed, and still in force, relating to landlord and tenant in Ireland, and those also passed for the repression and punishment of offences arising out of the possession of land. But the number of the statutes in both classes forbids the task : a separate volume would be required for each. It must, therefore, suffice to state, that in Ireland the recovery of rent, and wherever that is not paid, re-possession of the land, is facilitated by a cheap and rapid process, unknown to the law of England. In the course of a few days, and by the expenditure of a few shillings, the Irish landlord obtains results which in England can only be arrived at after the lapse of many months and the outlay of many pounds. The key to this remarkable difference is to be found in the judgment of Chief Justice Pennefather already cited, and it consists plainly enough in this—that in England the law sees that there are two contracting parties in the letting of land, and it respects them both equally : in Ireland it has hitherto respected only one of them.

There are several works of repute upon the subject of the law of landlord and tenant in Ireland. One of them extends to 700 pages. The writer, therefore, who declines to enter into particulars upon the subject cannot complain of want of materials; but the following evidence relating to this code, given by Mr. Serjeant Howley before the recent Land Commission, suffices amply for general purposes:

"The statute law, as it prevails in Ireland, relative to the occupation of land, I think may be divided under three heads; first, the acts which regard ejectments for non-payment of rent; secondly, the statutes which are conversant of distress; and thirdly, where the tenant's interest has expired, or is determined. The first statute in Ireland, which was passed for the purpose of enabling landlords to recover the land, where the rent was in arrear, and where there was a condition for re-entry, was the 11th of Anne, c. 2. Previous to that the remedy for the landlord was given by common law, and there were a number of nice and previous requisites to be complied with, to enable landlords to take advantage of a breach of the condition; and that, if I recollect right, was the first statute that dispensed with those niceties, upon which landlords were frequently turned round, and gave them a more simple mode of procedure. This statute (11 Anne) enabled landlords to recover possession where above half a year's rent was due, and no sufficient distress was upon the land, and a clause of re-entry was contained in the agreement, lease, or contract. The next statute which occurs is, I think, the 4th of George I., c. 5; and by that statute, where more than one year's rent should be due, though there be a distress sufficient on the land to answer the rent in arrear, a power was given to the landlord to maintain an ejectment. The former act was, where half a year's rent was due, and no sufficient distress upon the land; but here it is, where there is more than one year's rent due, and it dispenses with the ingredient of a sufficient distress. Then comes the 8th George I., c. 2, which provided, that where one whole year's rent, or more, should be due, the landlord might bring his ejectment, and it simplified and facilitated the proof of title by making the counterpart of the lease, reserving the rent and possession of the land for three years by the lessor, or those under whom he derives title, before service of the ejectment. The next statute I think it necessary to advert to, is the 5th of George II., c. 4, and this is a statute upon which an ejectment may be brought, where one whole year's rent or more is due, although there be no clause of re-entry in the lease, or agreement. It gave a power to the landlord to recover the arrears of rent, as if no ejectment had been brought, or judgment had, or execution executed. Then came the 25th of Geo. II., c. 13: where one year's rent is unpaid an ejectment may be brought, as if the article or contract contained an

actual demise, and a clause of re-entry, the former statutes including only cases where there was an actual demise. Then came the 15th and 16th of Geo. III. c. 27, which was more in the nature of an explaining act. Doubts had arisen upon the former acts, whether it had not been necessary to make a demand of the rent, before an ejectment was properly brought. A number of ejectments had been brought without that previous demand, and after the landlord had got into possession leases had been made of the lands so ejected. Then there was a question, whether the ejectment was a good one? or whether those leases were good? "a previous demand of rent not having been made," because these words occur in the previous statute; and in order to quiet titles, and explain and amend the law in that respect, the statute of the 15th and 16th of Geo. III. was passed. There appears to have been a pause in legislation upon this subject, until the 1st Geo. IV. c. 87. That was a statute which provided, that where the term or interest was determined by notice, or the interest expired, and the tenant refused to give up possession after demand made, the landlord bringing an ejectment might give notice at foot of the declaration for the tenant to appear on the first day of term, and give bail; and then upon the appearance, or in case of default, and upon affidavit of service by the landlord, and upon the production of the lease of agreement, and the affidavit containing an averment that the premises had been enjoyed under such lease, there was a power given to the landlord to move for a rule that the tenant should give an undertaking, in case of a verdict for the plaintiff, or of default, for judgment of the preceding term, with sufficient sureties for costs and damages. I might here, perhaps, observe, that the first statute as I recollect—though not pretending to be very conversant with the English statutes upon the subject—the first statute which is equivalent to the statute of Anne, dispensing with the former niceties of the common law in England, was the 4th of Geo. II. c. 28, so that we were so far behind hand with England in legislation upon this subject. The next class of statutes, giving landlords a remedy by ejectment, are those giving jurisdiction by civil bill. The first act to enable landlords to recover possession of the premises by procedure in the Assistant Barrister's Court by civil bill, is the 58th of Geo. III. c. 39.

The first remedy which that statute gave the landlord was in cases of premises being abandoned or deserted, or left uncultivated by the tenant, without sufficient distress to answer for half a year's rent, which must be due to enable him to get possession of the land. There is, I think, an earlier analogous statute in the English statutes. The next case was, where the rent was less than 50*l.*, or did not exceed 50*l.* per annum, and the tenant's interest is determined—that is, determined by notice to quit, or where it has expired by efflux of time. The third case, where a remedy is given to a landlord, is, where the rent does not exceed 50*l.* per

year, and a year's rent is due—a power is given to bring a civil bill, but there the contract must be in writing. The truth is, that in a great multitude of cases the second remedy which I have stated as given to a landlord by this act—namely, the power to eject a tenant, where the tenant's interest is determined by notice to quit—is used for the purpose of recovering the premises where rent is in arrear, being cases of tenants from year to year, because you cannot proceed under the clause giving the power to eject for non-payment of rent unless there is a contract in writing ; and where it is a mere tenancy from year to year, and an arrear is due, the landlords proceed by giving a notice to quit, and in that way it is frequently done more for the purpose of compelling payment of the rent, or ejecting the tenant, in consequence of being in arrear, than for the mere purpose of getting possession of the land. These statutes I have referred to are all, as the Commissioners will observe, statutes beneficial to the landlord, enlarging the remedy he had at common law, and giving him additional powers, either to obtain his rent, or, in default, to obtain possession of the land. I come next to the 6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 70, which is a statute enlarging, in other causes of action, the jurisdiction of the assistant barrister in the civil bill court, and there are in it some very useful provisions regarding replevins, to enable the tenant, giving him a cheap remedy to try the question of rent or no rent, or how much rent is due between him and his landlord; so that I consider that act, though it may be very beneficial, of course, for the landlord, as one most beneficial also for the poorer class of tenants, as it enables them to contest the matter cheaply, and almost, I may say, summarily, with the landlord. Now I do not know whether there be any value in the remark, but I beg to refer the Commissioners to the circumstance, and they will perhaps derive some information from it, as to the relation of landlord and tenant in Ireland, whether it has been in former times, or at all times, amicable or not, whether it proceeded smoothly and satisfactorily between the landlord and tenant for many years, the titles and preambles of the various statutes, at least the greater portion of them, recite frauds and evasions on the part of the tenants and other charges against them. Without at all meaning to give any opinion or to deduce any inference of my own upon the subject, I merely refer the Commissioners to those portions of the statutes, as furnishing a kind of legislative history on the subject. It may also be desirable to have the attention of the Commissioners called to the 26th of Geo. III. c. 24, s. 64, that is an act regarding forcible possessions and declaring persons taking or keeping forcible possession or resisting process for giving possession guilty of felony, and subjecting them to transportation for seven years. There are statutes enlarging the common law against forcible entries and detainers which are common both to England and Ireland, and where the offence is but a misdemeanour, but the 26th of Geo. III. is peculiar to Ireland.

With reference to ejectments I may mention another act, the 1st and 2nd of Will. IV. c. 31, which contains a provision to enable landlords, to whom a right of entry accrues during or immediately after Hilary and Trinity Terms, to prosecute ejectments against their tenants, so as to have a trial at the ensuing assizes. Before that act the tenant might postpone the landlord for nearly a year. It provided that when the tenancy expires in or after Trinity or Hilary Term, facilities should be given to the landlord to proceed by ejectment and have a trial, and power is also given to the Court to issue an immediate writ of possession, according to its discretion. As the commissioners wish to know the exact state of the law as between landlord and tenant, the next subject to which I would refer would be the subject of subletting, and the first act against subletting was the 7th of Geo. IV. c. 29, and it was there provided by that statute, which was in operation till April 1832, if I remember correctly, that although there was no clause against subletting contained in the lease or agreement, subletting was forbidden, unless there was a consent in writing by the landlord and it took away all constructive waivers, where there was a clause against subletting. Whether that law was considered too stringent, or whether it did not work usefully, at all events it appeared wise to the legislature to modify and alter it, and it was so modified and altered by the 2nd of Will. IV. c. 17, which required that there should be a covenant against subletting in the lease, and provided that no act of the landlord should be deemed a waiver of the covenant, unless he was a party to the instrument of subletting, or his consent was given in writing, and that it should in such case be only a waiver for the particular instance. Nice questions of law were often raised upon those covenants which were regarded as conditions, and acts of express or constructive waiver were considered as destroying the covenant altogether. It further provided that where there is a subletting without the consent of the landlord, the mesne landlord should not have any remedy for the rent or the occupation of the land. It confers also this benefit on the tenant, that where there is a subletting with the consent of the landlord, in cases where he has paid his rent to his immediate lessor, he is relieved from all liability to distress to the head landlord for rent due by the mesne landlord to such head landlord. It also gives a power to the head landlord, in all such cases where his immediate tenant is in arrear, to serve notices on the occupying tenants, to lien their rents in discharge of it, and after such notice to recover the rent from the occupying tenants. Perhaps I should now refer the Commissioners to what is called, in common parlance, the Tenantry Act, that is, the 19th and 20th of Geo. III. c. 30. There is no corresponding enactment to this statute in England; the recital of that act declares the object of it; it was for the purpose of relieving tenants holding under leases for lives, containing covenants for a perpetual renewal, and it enabled courts of equity, upon an adequate com-

pensation being made, to relieve the tenants and their assigns against lapse of time, where they had passed the time, and had not renewed or paid up the renewal fines, where fines were reserved; it enabled or paid up the renewal fines, where fines were reserved; it enabled courts of equity to relieve tenants against such lapse of time if no circumstance of fraud was proved against such tenants or their assigns; but it took away the equity, where landlords, or lessors, or persons entitled to receive such fines, had demanded those fines from the tenants or their assigns at the time, and they had been refused, or neglected to be paid within a reasonable time after such demand. I believe I have stated as much as occurs to me upon the subject of the law regarding ejectments. I come now to the subject of distress for rent in arrear. There are various statutes regulating distresses. The first statute to which it may be necessary to call the attention of the commissioners is the 7th of Will. III. c. 33, and that enabled the landlord where the first distress was insufficient to repeat the distress, and it enabled the landlord to distrain upon sheaves of corn and hay, and such like, which, though secured, were not distrainable at common law. Such things were not distrainable at common law, because it was supposed that a distress at common law was a mere pledge for the rent; and those being articles which could not be re-delivered to the tenants in the same plight in which they were when they were taken, they were by the common law not liable to distress; for instance, the corn might be shed, and hay in cocks scattered; so that statute gave a power to the landlord which he had not at common law. It was not until long subsequent that a similar power was given in England; it was given, but by a latter statute.

Then comes the 9th of Anne, c. 8, which enables landlords to seize goods fraudulently carried away for the purpose of avoiding a distress; it enabled them to seize goods *within five days*; it also gave the power to the landlord to distrain for rent due at any time within six months after the lease was determined, that is, if the tenant, or those under him, remained in possession, and that the landlord's title continued. The 4th of Geo. I. c. 5, gave a power to the landlord, in case he made a distress, and the distress was rescued, to evict as if no distress had been made. The 8th of Geo. I. c. 2, enabled constables to assist and watch in cases of rescue, and provided a certain payment for them. I have not the exact words in my recollection. The next statute is the 15th of Geo. II. c. 15, which enables landlords to seize goods fraudulently carried off the premises to prevent distress, within twenty days—the former statute limited landlords to five days. This gave them twenty days, and it enabled them to sell them as if taken upon the premises; and it contained a further penalty making their tenants and their aiders—persons aiding them in so fraudulently removing—forfeit double the value to the landlord. It also enabled landlords to distrain tenant's stock upon a

common, as if actually upon the premises, and it further gave them an advantage also for the tenants, enabling the distress to be impounded upon the premises and not to be carried away. Then the next statute, the 25th of Geo. II. c. 13, is a statute giving a general avowry. Before that statute it was necessary, in some cases, to deduce title, which was sometimes attended with very great difficulty. In replevins it gave a general avowry, facilitating the pleading of the landlord, and double costs also, although there was no demise contained in the agreement.

The next statute to which it is necessary to call the attention of the Commissioners is the 56th of Geo. III. c. 88 : that is the statute which gave the civil bill jurisdiction in cases of ejectment, but it contained a general provision enabling landlords to distrain growing crops ; this power had been long given in England : nothing else occurs to me on the subject of distress. Upon the subject of rent there is another point : that statute to which I have referred contains what I may call a protecting clause for the occupying tenant, where he held under a middle man, or a mesne landlord : he was formerly liable to a double distress without an adequate or, rather, an easy remedy. Cases have occurred where a tenant paid his rent to an immediate landlord ; the middle man and his mesne landlord not having paid his rent to the head landlord, the head landlord came upon the occupying tenant, and distrained him for the rent, although his rent had been paid to his immediate landlord. There are certain provisions enabling the tenant to recover by civil bill the amount of the sum which he shall actually have paid, with costs and damages : and also there is a provision giving a scale of compensation—I think £10 in the 100—but not precluding him proceeding for special damage, if damage should have occurred, and he prefers that mode of getting compensation. I do not know whether it strictly comes within the law of landlord and tenant ; but in reference to joint leases, it just occurs to me, that there is a statute, in the case of the registration of freeholders, which leads so far to discourage joint leases, disabling joint tenants holding under any deed, lease, or instrument subsequent to July 1823, from registering or gaining the franchise."

Legal prescriptions are always more or less modified by circumstances. The possession of property in Ireland was powerfully affected in this way. The process of legislative confiscation persisted in for centuries was full of change and violence, and it naturally led to a corresponding variety of insecure and disadvantageous tenures.

The first remarkable consequence resulting from so many confiscations, was the enduring character of the quit and crown rents. In England similar charges were established at the Norman Conquest, but they gave way by degrees to the

progress of order and improvement, and at last disappeared, each great proprietor becoming lord of his own soil free from every species of feudal tribute or pecuniary obligation to the crown. In Ireland quit rents continue to be paid to the crown at the present day. As each unsuccessful rebellion in its turn placed the lands of its victims at the disposal of the sovereign, re-grants were made as a matter of course, subject to an acreable quit rent after the old feudal fashion. Owing to the frequent re-creation of these rents, coupled with the general instability of Irish affairs, comparatively few estates in the country down to a recent period were held in absolute and independent fee. Even at the present day, when all who are charged with them may, if they please, liquidate the incumbrance upon easy terms, they exist to some amount. Much curious information respecting them, and the rebellions of the years 1641 and 1688, to which they are more directly referable, is to be found in Howard's History of the Irish Exchequer, and in the Fourth Report of the Irish Revenue Commissioners, 1812. According to Howard they produced for the year ending Lady Day, 1773, £64,152 19s. 5½d. In the year ending March 31, 1801, they amounted according to a return of the House of Commons [266, Sess. 1834,] to £60,613 17s. In the year 1826, they rose to £93,938 5s. 3½d. In 1835 they realised (Return 222, Sess. 1842) £83,350 14s. 8d., and stood on the 5th of January, 1846 (Return 696, Sess. 1846), at £66,955 5s. 1d.

The mere continuance of these payments would not perhaps have produced by itself any unfavourable effects upon the tenure of property. But they furnished a precedent to the larger proprietors which having been extensively followed has proved extremely pernicious. After each convulsion came fresh proprietors. These were generally men ill acquainted with the requirements of the country, and the habits of the people, and also ill prepared, in most instances, to fulfil the only obligations that could have consolidated and advanced the interests inseparable from their new position. No common abilities, and no ordinary resources were demanded from those who became undertakers or settlers for the first

time in Ireland, and unfortunately for the country they were rarely supplied. The majority soon tired of a property which in a strange country and amidst a refractory population afforded neither peace, enjoyment, nor distinction. In this state of perplexity and discontent they seized upon the crown practice of a quit rent to which they were themselves subjected, as an example stamped with the prestige of the highest authority, and furnishing the readiest and most convenient means of relief.* They granted at small rents such long leases of their lands as lives renewable for ever, and terms of 500 and 999 years. They were content in short to entitle themselves to a limited but certain income from vast possessions which were not to be occupied personally without the risk of incessant danger and incalculable losses.

The quantity of land held in Ireland on leases of lives renewable for ever, and for terms of 500 and 999 years is enormous, and so numerous have been the intermediate leases granted at small profit rents that as many as six and seven landlords, each deriving sums of sixpence, a shilling, and half-a-crown an acre, have frequently been known to intervene between the crown and the virtual possessor of the property, that is to say, the actual holder of one of the leases referred to, and deriving under it the predominant interest in the soil.

The labyrinth of tenures with their concomitant settlements which occurs in a case of this kind, renders the transfer of property difficult and expensive, and proves a heavy bar to improvement. In the case for instance of 1000 acres of land held for 500 years and chargeable to anterior lessees with a rent of 5s. an acre, while to the last lessee it is worth £1 an acre, how can improvement be expected to take

* "From the unsettled state of Ireland, the various confiscations and forfeitures, landed property had formerly been considered of little value; and in order to form a good tenantry and give encouragement to improve the land, this species of tenure—leases with covenants of perpetual renewal—was devised. It was said to have been introduced by the Ormonde family, and a great proportion of the property of the country was held under it. On the fall of each life in the line (lease?) a fine was paid, and if the life was not substituted within a stated period (three or six months) the interest became forfeited to the landlord."—*Grattan's Life by his Son*, vol. ii. p. 82.

place? The persons who receive the smaller sum will expend nothing, because they cannot add anything to their present interest. The last man will also be found unwilling to invest money under such a lease, because, improbable as the result may be, it is still possible, if he should become embarrassed, that one or other of the prior lessees may step suddenly in and oust him of the estate, and with it all the fruits of his outlay.

The consequence is, that in numberless instances property held under these tenures is grievously mismanaged. It may not be quite reasonable that this should be the case, but while the fact stands prominently before us, it is vain to declaim against any prejudice or inconsistency that may be supposed to have produced it. One thing, moreover, is certain—the well-known uncertainty of the law in general, and the severity of the law of ejectment in particular, are enough to justify the reluctance of a prudent man to spend much capital upon a title of this precarious description. It is further to be noted that from time to time some imprudent or unfortunate man is sure to be seen suffering ejectment from one of these long tenures, to the manifest discouragement of all similar lessees.*

No plan for the improvement of the relative conditions of landlord and tenant will be perfect that leaves this cardinal evil without a remedy. Having been the growth of ages, it will offer a stubborn resistance to correction or removal; but a change there must be if the landed interests of the country are to be placed upon a strong and permanent foundation. One step in the right direction might perhaps be taken quickly and with ease. We know that for agricultural purposes a

* "Every day's experience," says Sir M. O'Loghlen when giving a judgment as Master of the Rolls, "shows how very uncertain the duration of an interest under such a tenure is. Forfeitures of the right to enforce a renewal daily occur through the neglect of tenants, or the dexterous management of landlords. Covenants treated in some cases for more than a century as entitling tenants to renewal for ever, have been construed by courts of justice as not conferring that right. Any person who is much engaged in the investigation of titles under leases of lives renewable for ever will find in almost every abstract of such titles a statement of the result of one or more suits in equity for enforcing the right. The usual statement is—the right to a renewal having been questioned, it became necessary to file a bill in equity."—*Lynch's Measures for Ireland*.

lease of 31 years, and for building a lease of 99 years, suffices. Might not the beginning at least of a new era be attempted by the passing of a law to forbid for the future all grants of leases for longer terms than those just named? By such a law, the further extension of an overwhelming evil would be arrested, and by that a certain gain would accrue; for such is the force of custom, that fresh leases of this kind are made even in our time,* and purchasers of these quit or head rents, as they are called, are always in the market, who prefer them as modes of investment on account of the superior security they offer for the payment of the interest created.

How far it may be wise and practicable to afford facilities to persons possessed of the predominant beneficial interest in such leases to buy up the small quit rents to which they are now subject, and whether it may not be necessary to grant compulsory powers for that purpose notwithstanding existing settlements, are questions of detail, at once too important and intricate to be entered upon in a general sketch of this description. They demand, however, the most prompt and attentive consideration; for the tenor of all experience proves that prosperity is impracticable in Ireland while such tenures continue to prevail.

* A recent instance of the kind may be worth mentioning. A Dublin merchant after realising a sum of £60,000 resolved, a few years ago, to retire from business. Soon afterwards an estate in one of the Midland Counties was put up to auction, and he became the purchaser of it for about the sum stated. Upon obtaining possession of the property he called the tenants together and asked them to name rents they would be content to pay if he continued them in their farms. The answer generally was a pound an acre. But if I give you a lease of thirty-one years said the landlord, what will you give then? Oh, twenty-five shillings for a lease, was quickly responded. And what for a lease for ever? A lease for ever! Sure your honour's joking with us, cried the astonished tenants. Not at all, replied the landlord. Here are the leases ready drawn, and he produced a little library of parchment; and I am willing to give leases for thirty-one years or for ever, as may be agreed upon, to every one of you. The upshot was that the whole estate was relet on leases for ever at thirty shillings an acre. Now this, as between the parties contracting them and there, may have been a very legitimate and satisfactory transaction; but the soundness of its policy as regards the heirs of those parties, and the state, which was also concerned, though not represented on the occasion, may be seriously debated. Every acre of that estate may in the course of fifty or a hundred years become worth more than double the present rent, and though now flourishing it may then sink into one of the most ill-conditioned and poverty-struck properties in the kingdom.

Passing over leases for 21 and 31 years, and one or more lives in reversion, which were general when a forty shilling freehold* conferred the parliamentary franchise, but which have fallen rapidly into disuse since that privilege was taken away, we come to notice the other prevailing modes of tenancy. Mr. Eugene Curry tells us, in the letter already quoted, that—

“The mode of taking land to farm in the reign of James the First, and down to the middle nearly of the last century, was by parcels of ballys (townlands), or half ballys, plough lands, or half plough lands, &c., at high rents. The farm was taken by a man and his sons, brothers, cousins, or neighbours, and divided among themselves, on the principles of fellowship, but they never had the power given them of transferring the possession of the farm, in whole, to any other party; with their minor divisions, and occasional transfer of a minor division, the lord did not concern himself, the land being at all times responsible to him for his rents, without any regard to the particular occupier. This system led to confusion and irregularity, where the landlord and tenants were not of the same race or tribe, or even nation.

“On the accession of James the First, and the confiscation and plantation of the six northern counties, a new race of owners and tenants sprang up in these counties. Between those parties there was scarcely any of the sympathy which might be expected to subsist between landlord and tenant, as the former got his lands in an abrupt and summary manner, and was constrained to accept as his tenants such persons as the state assigned to him, and to such terms as the same state deemed proper to prescribe. This system continued for a long time to be one of considerable dissatisfaction to both landlords and tenants, the former making various attempts to limit and cramp the privileges of the latter, and the latter constantly, and successfully too, calling on the state to sustain him in his original position. Within the last seventy years this state of things was found to correct itself; for, when the native Irish began to breathe a little more freely, and multiply in numbers and in hostile feelings to the new aristocracy, the latter deemed it their interest to encourage and indulge, even to spoiling, the men of their own creed and kind, who had now, under government support, grown up into a powerful armed confederacy, so that a little encouraging and soothing favours, which were from time to time conceded directly or through neglect,

* The Irish forty-shilling freehold was first granted in the reign of Henry VIII., and was abolished in the reign of Geo. II. when, as Primate Boulter stated, the Roman Catholics being five to one were found to be growing too strong for the English interest. The elective franchise from this freehold was conceded in the year 1793 as an instalment of Catholic Emancipation, and again extinguished when that measure was conceded in 1829.

became fixed rights and privileges engrossed on the far-famed roll of ‘No Surrender.’”

The opinion expressed in the last sentence is not altogether well founded, but there appears no reason to doubt that it is from the old practice of letting land to farm in townlands, and to whole families, and also from the confiscation system, that we have derived the two modes or customs of tenures now remaining to be described. These are the rundale and tenant rights which are peculiar to the north of Ireland, and have for some time past been subjects of considerable interest.

The Rundale “system,” as it has been called, is a lingering remnant of the old cases in which bodies of men took large tracts or divisions of land to cultivate amongst them. They took the land in common, and each claimed a common right to the whole. This rude custom and worst form of tenantry still prevails in Donegal, and the wilder ranges of the north, where each tenant considers himself entitled to a portion of each various quality of land in his division. The man who had a bit of good land at one extremity is sure to have a bit of bad at the other, and bits of other quality in odd corners, each bounded by his neighbour’s farms, without any ditch or fence between them; trespasses and fights, and the total impossibility of any improvement are the natural consequences.*

Tenant right† is the difference between the rent actually charged by the landlord, according to the custom of the country, and the utmost competition value of the land. So that if the rent on an extensive estate be low, and confidence in the landlord be great, the amount of tenant right will be large. It exists equally in the cases of tenancy at will and leases. It prevails generally throughout the whole province of Ulster, but varying in amount in different counties—being highest in Armagh and Down, and lowest in Monaghan and Cavan. Out of Ulster it is only met with in the counties

* Facts from Gweedore, by Lord George Hill.

† This account of Tenant Right, its value and origin, is taken from the evidence given before the Committee on the Town Land Valuation of Ireland, 1840, and the Land Commission, 1845, by Messrs. Senior, Griffiths, Sinclair, Hancock, &c.

Sligo and Leitrim, and in them to no considerable extent. Throughout the rest of Ireland it is unknown.

The custom is an old one, and its origin is ascribed to the manner in which the settlement of Ulster was effected. That settlement, says Mr. Sinclair, was quite a feudal settlement. The tenants *in capite* got a certain portion of land, on condition of subletting to under tenants a portion for three lives and twenty-one years, upon strictly feudal terms, as to be ready with arms to defend the place ; and it appears that we can trace the present indefeasible tenant right up to that, for those who were settled by the original patentees were in some sort fosterers or kindred, and were then engaged in the defence of the country, and became rather a kind of friendly tenant than a tenant for money ; and I think from that time to this, the tenant right has been continued, and in no way altered by law but by custom. It arose from the persons so brought in having in the first instance built the dwellings and houses themselves, and their being connected in a closer way with the original patentees than the mere connection of a tenant with a landlord.—*Land Commission Report*, Par. 11—185.

Mr. Senior takes nearly the same view of the origin of this right, saying, the early settlers were stationed in a hostile country, and could only tempt their retainers to come over, or remain, by granting permanent advantages in return for the protection they afforded. It may in fact have been a species of feudal tenure.—*Townland Survey Report*.

Tenant right can only exist where land is let on low terms. On steadily managed estates it has risen as high as from 20*l.* to 30*l.* an acre, and it falls as low as 3*l.* an acre. It is found in point of fact that as the rent rises, the tenant right falls in amount. If land worth 2*l.* an acre be let for 1*l.* an acre, the value of the difference will be given by the incoming tenant as a premium for his admission to the farm. And that will be done, whether the difference of 1*l.* an acre arises from the original state of the soil, or has been produced by drainage or other agricultural improvements.

The marketable value of the tenant right greatly depends upon the character of the landlord. Some proprietors regard it as a point of honour not to raise the established rent; by others it is treated simply as a matter of good policy, or a compulsory obligation. For the disallowance of the right is attended with serious consequences. When the landlord refuses to admit the right, the incoming tenant's house is burned, his cattle are houghed, or his crops trodden down by night.

Of late years, a strong disposition to abate the right has been manifested, but hitherto it has been strictly respected—so much so, that a landlord, who is obliged to evict a tenant by process of law, will not consider himself at liberty to let the land at a higher rent than the former tenant has paid for it. He will allow the outgoing tenant the full value of his tenant right, and will return him any sum it may produce over and above the amount of the arrears which caused the eviction. The incoming tenant, under such circumstances, is charged precisely the rent undertaken by his predecessor. The consent of the landlord is commonly, though not invariably, looked for in transactions of this kind. In the majority of them no sale can take place, if the landlord will not accept the incoming tenant. At the same time instances are recorded in which he has not been consulted.

It is admitted on all sides that tenant right has its advantages; but these, by some authorities, are held to be outweighed by its disadvantages. Unquestionably, the landlord's rent is secured by it in the firmest manner. The tenant in possession may break down and not pay, but another is sure to be found under the protection of this custom, who will come in and discharge the arrears out of the purchase-money given for the right. A man, moreover, is encouraged to make improvements, to keep his house, farm buildings, and fences in good repair, when he knows that in the event of his giving up his holding, no matter from what cause, he will be repaid the fair value of any permanent improvement he may have effected. Practically, however, the right is accompanied by serious inconveniences. As the landlord is forbidden to look

for an increase of his rent, the burthen of effecting improvement necessarily falls exclusively upon the tenant ; and when he happens to give a large sum of money to obtain possession of his farm, he is often found to have exhausted, in that investment, the capital required for profitable husbandry. Where, moreover, as often occurs, he has borrowed the purchase-money, he begins his tenancy in a state of distress, from which he is seldom able to rise. Such a person will be compelled to apply to the discharge of that debt, and the interest accruing upon it, the means required to keep the land in a state of good cultivation.

If such a right should come to be faithfully admitted for any length of time, two results seem inevitable : the landlord's interest will become an unimproveable one, and the rent will resolve itself in effect into a species of quit rent. The power of interfering in matters of detail, of altering the size of farms, and of introducing a higher class of tenantry, will be taken from the landlord. For if he should wish to consolidate half-a-dozen farms into one large one, he will only be able to accomplish his object by buying up the tenant's right, which would be tantamount to a re-purchase of his estate.

There is this additional peculiarity in the tenant right, that although extensively observed, it does not appear to have received any legal sanction. This being the case, the range of the estimated value being so considerable—from 3*l.* to 30*l.* an acre—and the tendency to control and abate the right being so marked, it is reasonable to believe that even if left to the action of existing causes, it will gradually decline. If, however, a law shall be made to secure to every outgoing tenant the re-payment of all money invested in substantial and permanent improvement, it must quickly disappear. This, it is to be hoped, will soon be the case. For it is impossible to read the voluminous evidence that has been collected upon the subject, without perceiving that the custom is a clumsy mode of enforcing equitable compensation for work and labour of substantial value. In the earlier instances referred to, the tenant built the house, and the farm buildings, and he preserved them

in times of danger. In later times he has reclaimed mountain wastes—making a property of that which before was unproductive; or he has thorough drained and fenced, thus adding increased value to the estate. A sense of equity, under these circumstances, has led the one contracting party to claim, and the other to admit, the price of a positive benefit conferred. It is now time that so material a right should no longer be left dependent upon the force of a variable custom, or confined to one only of the four provinces of the island.

Tenancy at will remains to be noticed. In Ireland, like most other things, it differs essentially from the corresponding occupation in England and Scotland. In these countries the landlord invariably does something more than merely let the bare land. He contributes buildings, gates, fences, and puts the ground in a tenantable condition. In Ireland the practice, with a few bright exceptions, is to do nothing but take the highest rent that can be obtained, and to make no allowance for improvements—not even for the erection of substantial buildings.* Upon this subject nothing more can be required in the way of illustration than a reference to the opinion of Adam Smith, who speaking of the contrary practice in England maintained that the laws and customs, which

* Wakefield's description of Irish landlords and tenants in the year 1812 gives the present condition of both. "In Ireland, landlords never erect buildings on their property or expend anything in repairs, nor do leases in that country contain so many clauses as in England. The office of an agent is thus rendered very easy, for he has nothing to do but to receive his employer's rents twice a year, and to set out the turf bog in lots in the spring. Six months' credit is generally given on the rents, which is called the "hanging gale." This is one of the great levers of oppression by which the lower classes are kept in a kind of perpetual bondage, for as every family almost holds some portion of land and owes half a year's rent, which a landlord can exact at any moment, this debt hangs over their heads like a load, and keeps them in a continual state of anxiety and terror. If the rent is not paid the cattle are driven to the pound, and if suffered to remain there a certain number of days they are sold. This I have frequently seen done after the occupying tenant had paid his rent to the middle man, who had failed to pay it to the head landlord. The numerous instances of distress occasioned by this severity, which every one who has resided any time in Ireland must have witnessed, are truly deplorable, and I believe them to be one of the chief causes of those frequent risings of the people under various denominations which at different times have disturbed the internal tranquillity of the country, and been attended with atrocities shocking to humanity and disgraceful to the empire." Wakefield further reported the common price

secured to the yeoman a beneficial interest in the improvements he effected, had contributed more to the grandeur of the country than all her boasted regulations relating to commerce taken together.

The quantities in which land is chiefly held to cultivate in Ireland, are farms of less than one and not more than thirty acres. These are classed in the Census Report of 1841.* It thus appears that the number of holdings under *one* acre is 685,309; above one to five, 306,915; above five to fifteen, 251,128; above fifteen to thirty, 78,954; and above thirty acres, 48,312.

If we assume, and the computation is a moderate one, that there are four persons in every family located on each of these holdings, we shall first have so many as 2,741,236 persons in Ireland committed to the impossible labour of sustaining existence out of patches of land each less than an acre in extent for every four persons. We shall next have 1,227,660 persons barely able to live upon farms of from one to five acres in extent. It is only when we come to the 1,004,512 persons occupying farms of from five to fifteen acres, that we find the means of the most frugal comfort placed within the reach of one eighth of the population, very nearly one half of the whole being at the same time either in a state of pauperism, or removed but a single stage from that extremity.

These statistics prepare us for the admissions—sad of labour to be 8*d.* a day and in some cases 6*d.*, just as it is now, and the rents of different kinds:

First, the rent to the Crown, small.

Secondly, the rent to the holder of the grant from the Crown, also small.

Thirdly, the rent to the middlemen, often five or six deep.

Fourthly, the occupying tenant whose toil discharged the whole.

* The distribution into provinces is worthy of notice.

Provinces.	Under one Acre.	Above one to five Acres.	Above five to fifteen Acres.	Above fifteen to thirty Acres.	Above thirty Acres.
Leinster . . .	133,220	49,152	45,595	20,584	17,889
Munster . . .	162,386	57,028	61,320	27,481	16,557
Ulster . . .	234,499	100,817	98,992	25,099	9,591
Connaught . . .	155,204	99,918	45,221	5,790	4,275
	685,309	306,915	251,128	78,954	48,312

echoes of the harrowing pictures drawn by all preceding authorities—made by the Commissioners of Land Inquiry in 1845. Every member of that Commission was an Irish landlord, and they reported *unā voce* to Parliament—that “*the agricultural labourers of Ireland suffer the greatest privations and hardships—they depend upon precarious and casual employment for subsistence—they are badly housed, badly fed, badly clothed and badly paid for their labours—it would be impossible to describe adequately the sufferings and privations which the cottiers and labourers and their families in most parts of the country endure—in many districts their only food is the potato, their only beverage water—their cabins are seldom a protection against the weather—a bed or a blanket is a rare luxury—nearly in all, their pig and their manure heap constitute their only property—a large proportion of the entire population comes within the designation of agricultural labourers, and endure sufferings greater than the people of any other country in Europe have to sustain.* * * * *It would be impossible for language to convey an idea of the state of distress to which the ejected tenantry have been reduced, or of the disease, misery, and even vice which they have propagated in the towns wherein they have settled; so that not only they who have been ejected have been rendered miserable, but they have carried with them and propagated their misery wherever they have dwelt.*”

This power of ejectment is characterized by a sweeping severity that makes the Irish landlord resemble some Eastern despot, inflicting general punishment. At every blow he smites a multitude. Particular information has been laid before parliament on several late occasions respecting the frightful extent to which the power is carried. Amongst the latest documents published upon this subject is a return ordered to be printed by the House of Commons, 12 June 1846, from the clerks of the peace and the proper officers of the Courts of Queen's Bench, Common Pleas, and Exchequer in Ireland. By this paper* it appears that in the year 1844 there were

* The returns give various and not always similar details, which are too minute for insertion here. The extent of land affected is mentioned in the civil bill cases, but not in the proceedings of the superior courts.

6522 ejectments brought, in which 23,822 persons were concerned, and in 1845, 4900 ejectments, in which 18,070 persons were concerned: total in two years—ejectments, 11,411; persons affected, 42,900.

It was remarked in the first chapter of this work, v. i., p. 7, "that the improvement of Ireland must, if it is to be permanent, spring from the very lowest foundations of the social system. We must begin at the bottom and work upwards." If this be not a false notion, the first care of the statesman who aspires to render his name immortal by regenerating Ireland, must be the removal of the huge dead weight created by 3,968,896 persons who overlay the industrial energy of the whole community in the desperate attempt to derive subsistence from 992,224 farms, each under five acres in extent. These are paupers, and they must be dispauperised. They must be enabled to find some better means of subsistence

The acres, moreover, in the former cases are specified in different measurements—Plantation, Cunningham, Irish, Statute and Imperial. In the following summary to avoid excess every acre has been computed as English measure, which is the smallest of all.

1844.

	Number of Ejectments.	Number of Acres.	Number of Persons affected.
Quarter Sessions . . .	4683	22,681	13,085
Queen's Bench . . .	963	not stated	7,908
Common Pleas . . .	76	ditto	1,153
Exchequer	790	ditto	2,686
	6512	22,681	24,832

1845.

	Number of Ejectments.	Number of Acres.	Number of Persons affected.
Quarter Sessions . . .	3501	13,602	9054
Queen's Bench . . .	726	not stated	5870
Common Pleas . . .	62	ditto	904
Exchequer	610	ditto	2242
	4899	13,602	18,070

than the roots they have hitherto reared out of their scanty patches of ground. They must not be dragged at the rate of 20,000 in a year before the courts of justice, and subjected to a summary eviction from their little all. For they constitute the vitals of the social system, and while they remain unsound, how can the system itself be wholesome ?

When the proposed task comes to be undertaken, and the proper time for it is already overdue, the state at large will have to do much—the landlords more, for ultimately they will be the largest gainers by the results. In applying their resources to raise their unfortunate country from ruin by retrieving their own shattered fortunes, it will behove them to seize upon a high principle of action, and be themselves the first to put a social ban upon the landlord who, for the future, may be so wicked as to let land in a manner, or upon terms manifestly injurious to the public welfare. When, for instance, a tenant is known to have no means of subsistence but the produce of a farm, how is it possible for the landlord to stand justified, either to his own conscience or his country, who lets that land at a rent or in a quantity which, as he well knows, will not yield the tenant what Chief Justice Blackburne has so truly called the means of decent subsistence ? This test would be infallible if it were generally applied—the good would soon be separated by its virtue from the bad. When landlords write to the newspapers or rise from their seats in parliament protesting that they do their duty and are grievously wronged by the aspersions cast upon the class to which they belong—one explanation should be demanded from them—they should be called upon to show how the farms upon their estates are distributed, and how far the size and rent of each are sufficient to enable the tenant to derive from it the means of decent subsistence. The severity of such a test would be more apparent than real; for it is due to the body to state that there are in every province in Ireland estates so well managed as to demonstrate that the system desired is not only practicable but highly advantageous. Its extension is mainly prevented by those who will neither consent to allow the poor man to have a property in the produce of his labour or

subsistence from a poor rate when no labour is to be obtained.

In order to enforce generally the salutary action of such a rule, the state, as already observed, will have to contribute its part, and the requirements needed in this respect may be briefly reviewed. They are

First, A law to secure compensation for substantial improvements effected by tenants for their landlords.

Two bills have been tendered within the last few years for this purpose—the first in the session of 1843 by Mr. Sharman Crawford to the House of Commons, and the second to the House of Lords by Lord Stanley in the session of 1845.

The former dealt with the subject in a straightforward manner, and might by a few amendments have easily been rendered an appropriate measure. It proposed to give equally to tenants holding from year to year and on lease, compensation for the erection of new buildings and the repair of old ones, and for planting and raising fences; and “for effecting permanent improvements by draining, quarrying, reclaiming, inclosing, spade-trenching, or any other means by which the value of such lands shall have been increased.” The compensation having been assessed in the first instance by the county surveyor, was, in the event of disagreement between the parties, to be determined, when the amount exceeded £100, in the Court of Exchequer, and, when under that sum, by process before the assistant barrister at the quarter sessions.

Assuming the word “buildings” here to mean what was probably intended, though not expressed, buildings suitable to the agricultural purposes of each particular farm, there was much to commend in this plan and in the mode suggested for carrying it into effect.

Lord Stanley’s measure was as cumbrous as Mr. Sharman Crawford’s was simple. A monstrous board, and enormous machinery was projected by his Lordship, comprising at the head a chief commissioner of improvements, with an unlimited train of assistant commissioners, secretary, clerks, &c., &c. All improvements relating to building and draining were to

be registered by the tenant, and were then to be tested by no less than six trials of various kinds before the amount of compensation claimed could be finally settled.

This short exposition of the machinery proposed by Lord Stanley supersedes the necessity of particularising the circumstances, under which the bill would have admitted claims for compensation, or of describing the arbitrary powers it proposed to confer upon the commissioner and his assistants in order to enable them to decide upon claims when registered. The scheme was soon abandoned as one utterly unworthy of consideration. But it may still be important to observe that no new tribunal is wanted for the *bona fide* purposes contemplated by the bill. The established courts of justice in Ireland are those to which all men should be made to resort. Their adaptation for the trial of questions of this kind is indisputable. If compensation is to be given at all for agricultural improvements it should be easy of attainment, and quick as well as economical in its process, and it should be in its authority above all suspicion of influences from the prejudices or the corruption of class and party. The law courts of the country possess in those respects a reputation which no government commission would easily attain. Its complicated, dilatory, and expensive machinery could not fail to feed the suspicions of the discontented, and augment the distress and disturbance of the country. A simple form of arbitration, or a cheap trial before a jury, is the only mode by which disputes of this kind could be fairly investigated, and justly determined.

Mr. Sharman Crawford's bill, and Lord Stanley's, appear to have been attentively considered in Ireland. Many voices have been raised in favour of the former, none for the latter. The principle and mode of operation desired in such a law may, therefore, be treated as having been to a certain extent defined and approved by public opinion. Noting the extreme wants of the country, and the rapidity with which it would become extensively applicable, it seems difficult to suppose that another year will be allowed to elapse before it finds its place in the statute book. It will be vain to propose other measures of improvement, and omit that which is the great

root of the national enormities. The statesman will be suspected of want of judgment, if not of want of sincerity, who shall dream of ameliorating the condition of Ireland, while he leaves the mass of the population without the protection of any law whatever for the security of the poor man's only capital—the produce of his daily toil invested in the soil, by which the landlord and the state are both supported.

Secondly, a substantial and comprehensive poor law is indispensable. It will not be enough to provide the tenant compensation for labour and capital invested in work. When he is destitute and cannot find employment, the right to obtain support from the property of the country should be his, and being thus entitled, mendicancy upon his part should be made a punishable offence. The administration of such a law should be placed chiefly in the hands of those whose interest it is to abate its excesses. If a different provision be made the Irish landlords will obstruct the action of the law. They know their power and will not tamely submit to a transfer of it to other hands. Scotland has been admitted to the privilege of a separate Commission. If the principle or application of the poor law in Ireland is to differ from the English rule and practice, there ought to be a separate Commission for Ireland, and the Commissioners ought to be Irishmen. These are three essential principles of a good poor law for Ireland.

The present law is perhaps the greatest failure of modern legislation. It has cost an enormous sum of money, and has in no sensible degree lightened the pressure of distress, or the claims of charity. On all sides infinite dissatisfaction has been expressed against its operation and effects. That the property of the country shall be charged with the maintenance of the poor, so that if it should not find them employment it must provide them food, is the only principle that can render such a measure efficient, and it is one that is not in any degree acted upon in the Irish Act : on that ground alone the experiment was sure to fail ; but the plan contains other faults. The arbitrary powers given to the commissioners are particularly unsuited to the temper and habits of Irishmen. They are felt to be unnecessary as well as offensive, and are proudly

resisted. They should be reduced, and more authority to direct the action of the law should be vested in those whose property is most affected by the results. The inspection of poor houses, the auditing and publication of accounts, suggestive and critical reports to parliament and the government, and the enforcement as public prosecutors of due punishment for any offences committed against the law, these are the proper functions of commissioners. The powers created by the acts in force in both countries are unconstitutionally absolute, and alike unproductive of public benefit, and offensive to good feeling.

When it was first proposed to extend the poor law to Ireland, the extent of destitution shown to exist deterred men from grappling energetically with an evil of so much magnitude. The rental of the country, it was said, being not more than thirteen millions, and there being upwards of two millions of paupers, if you make them a charge upon the land they will eat up its produce and absorb its value. The locust plague was to be practically illustrated. The attention paid to this remonstrance led to the enactment of a poor law, which has been no relief to the great body of the poor. Poor houses have been built, which have sometimes been occupied and sometimes not ; for two options are allowed : it is optional on the part of the poor to claim relief or not, as they choose ; and it is optional on the part of the guardians to give relief when claimed, or not, just as they choose. The most distressing consequences have been the result of this perfect freedom of contradiction in both parties concerned.

The argument of those who resist the application to Ireland of such a law as is here demanded, proceeds in the main upon an erroneous supposition. It is assumed that if the property of the country was compelled to support its poverty, the latter would not be diminished ; in other words, that the number of paupers would continue to be upwards of two millions if a rate were levied for their relief. But that would be impossible. For obviously as soon as the property became really chargeable with the support of this mass, serious and

successful efforts would be made to employ a considerable portion of them, and the employment so given would dispauperise that portion, and at the same time increase the rental of the country by the produce of the additional labour thus applied to its cultivation.

A plan has been produced of extending the power of the poor law generally, but leaving the enforcement of the power discretionary with government. The idea is not a happy one. A matter of this kind is the last that should be left in uncertainty. It will tend to confirm the poor in those habits of improvidence to which they are too much addicted. They will not care to anticipate the day of want while confident that clamour and intimidation, when that day comes with its attendant horrors, will wrest relief from the lord lieutenant, and the varied comforts of extended charity from the empire at large. In periods or places of limited distress the position of the lord lieutenant and privy council will be one of peculiar difficulty. While publicly importuned by the people to order a prompt and efficient enforcement of the law, they will be privately solicited by the aristocracy not to burden the land with an additional tax for which they will declare themselves unprepared and unequal. In a word, the obligation not being customary and established, will always when demanded be resisted as an innovation and an injury. And so the deadly struggle will be continued as of old, and neither party will be fairly treated while it lasts.

There are then but the two courses already recommended to be pursued, and these, if they are to be allowed a fair trial, must be pursued concurrently. Give the tenant a property in the labour and capital he invests in the enrichment of the land, and he will not fail to realize that property. Give him a right to food when he cannot earn it by labour, and he will abandon the attempt he is now obliged to make of trying to support human nature by cultivating a patch of land which cannot one year with another yield him the sustenance he requires. Assure him in other words that if he will trench, fence, and improve his farm, he will receive the fair value of the improvement;

and his industry, animated by its natural impulse, will grow active and doubly fructify the land. The small and the large farmer will both rise quickly in the scale of existence by the force of these laws; while the lowest of all, when assured of food by other means, will no longer cling to his miserable patch with the tenacity of a drowning man, but will be content to see it enlarge some neighbouring farm, which will then afford him better fare as a labourer than it ever gave him as its occupier.*

* Some of the principles here advocated have been forcibly sustained by Mr. M'Culloch in the last edition of his Statistical Account of Great Britain. "In saying that the landlords should be made responsible for the subsistence of every individual upon their estates, we mean by landlords those who have the real property of the land, whether they possess it under interminable or long leases, or who can determine the mode of its management, and not those who only receive a great rent from it. Make the real owners directly responsible to the poor, and give them at the same time, and at whatever cost, easy means of ejecting, without danger to themselves or their agents, those tenants who may divide their holdings, and you will have done all that is necessary. The sagacity of the landlords will do the rest, and they will do it a thousand times better than it can ever be done by any one else. The obligation to support all the individuals settled on their lands will make even the most inconsiderate proprietors adopt every precaution to prevent the undue increase of cottages and cottiers, and to lessen their numbers, if they be excessive; at the same time that it will prevent them from attempting to effect these objects, as they have too frequently done, by turning out poor wretches with no alternative except that of starving in ditches or on the road side, or of banding themselves in nocturnal predatory associations. Being bound to provide adequate means of support for the cottiers dismissed from their holdings until the latter could provide for themselves, the landlords would have to proceed, even in enforcing schemes of improvement, with due deliberation. We should under such a system hear no more of wholesale 'clearings,' and provision might be made for the cottiers it was necessary to dismiss, as well as for the other classes of paupers, in a variety of ways and at but little cost, till they had been absorbed by the increasing demand for labour, or had emigrated to Britain or elsewhere. Let it be proclaimed that the poor are to be supported, *coute qui coute*, by rates levied on the land and assessed in all cases directly on the landlords; and let it further be proclaimed that the landlords need not look for pecuniary assistance to parliament or to any other source, and there cannot be so much as the shadow of a doubt that they will soon learn to assist and protect themselves and to organise machinery for that purpose. All that is required on the part of the state is to protect them in the fair exercise of their rights, and to compel them to do their duty, by giving an easy appeal to paupers dissatisfied with the decisions of the authorities—*i. e.* of the people of property—in the parish, townland, or other division to which they belong."

Thirdly a law for the better regulation of leases, and for the improvement of property held on lease, is greatly needed.

Two powers are desirable in such a law: the first to regulate future leases, the second to amend those already granted.

With respect to future leases it may perhaps be conceived too much to demand that none shall be lawful which for building purposes shall exceed a term of ninety-nine, and for agricultural purposes a term of twenty-one years. If this should be considered too bold an innovation to make at the present juncture upon the rights of private property, the principle might at least be applied to all church and corporation property, and to property held by trustees for charitable uses. A provision of this description could not fail to keep the profits of estates devoted to public trusts at all times commensurate with the increasing value of money, and thus enable the trustees to maintain the efficiency of the trust in a state of undiminished utility. Under any circumstances, the power to grant for the future such terms of lease as 500 and 999 years might be safely dispensed with. No advantages appear to accrue from the privilege, but many disadvantages, amongst which embarrassments of title, and depreciation in value, are not the lightest that are experienced.

The powers of retrospective action demanded are of the highest importance, and will require the most considerate treatment. It will not suffice to convert long leaseholds into freeholds, and renewal fines into increased rents. The power to extinguish both the one interest and the other is needed, and with the precedent furnished for the extinction of the Crown and quit rents, assuredly it would be wise to afford, without delay, facilities for purchasing up the many small rentals which are possessed by the representatives of ancient lessors, whose interests are in themselves insignificant when compared with the rental itself, however positive the value to the respective proprietors, and however considerable may be the total amount of such rentals now extant. If the principle here

contended for be admitted, the course to be pursued is direct and easy. These small rents should be treated as annuities, and they should be made purchasable, according to the rates established under the government tables, by the person holding more than a moiety of the whole of the income at present derived from the estate out of which they arise.

But as many of the estates thus circumstanced are strictly entailed, it would be necessary to give the Court of Chancery power to direct such sales as are here contemplated, and the investment of the produce in the purchase of other estates: it would also be found beneficial, once such a power was created, that it should be extended to other purposes, two of which invite particular attention. The one is a power to effect, by order of the Court, the sale of any estates under settlement, for the purpose of re-investing the produce in other lands more conveniently situate, with reference to the objects of the settlement. Much of the landed property that has been acquired of late years has been bought by mercantile and professional men in detached portions, as their means of purchase, or the quantity offered for sale, favoured the operation. These, in due course, have fallen under settlement, and the consequence is that many men possess rentals of 2,000*l.* and 3,000*l.* in detached freeholds, often situate in different counties, and extending to not more than from 100 to 200 acres each. By the consolidation of such estates, farming operations on a liberal scale would be extended, and the benefits of residence and personal superintendence on the part of the landlord would be materially promoted. The other power, and it is imperatively called for, is the power of selling settled estates when overburthened with debt. Whenever the Courts find an estate, notwithstanding the settlements to which it has been devoted, so incumbered with obligations and charges pronounced good and legal by the Courts themselves, as to be no longer equal to the maintenance of the trusts declared in those settlements, the satisfaction of the judgment creditor and the support of the tenant for life; they should possess the power to see their

own decrees carried into execution and to cause the lands to be sold. Abundant reasons are to be assigned in favour of such a law. Apart from the soundness of the principle which subjects land to the payment of its debts, in common with every other species of property, the state must feel that pauper landlords necessarily beget pauper tenants. So that justice between man and man, and the safety of the common weal must be held to unite in insisting upon the equitable power here demanded.

But if care is to be taken—and assuredly care ought to be taken—for the purpose of enabling the landlords of Ireland to place their estates upon such a footing as shall prove alike advantageous to themselves and the community, a concurrent effort should be made to afford the lower classes and the thrifty farmers throughout the country an opportunity of becoming landed proprietors also, by vesting the savings of their labours in the purchase of farms in fee. Small estates of this tenure are almost unknown in Ireland, and the country suffers no heavier misfortune than that deficiency. There is not a district, however notorious for unlawful proceedings, that would not have been peaceful, if some fair portion of the cultivators of the soil had been proprietors of it also, and had their proper interest in the discouragement of crime, and the maintenance of the established order of things. The more the statistics of disturbance are traced to their obvious causes, the more acutely will it be felt that incalculable benefits are to be realized by the introduction of farms held in fee simple, by the persons cultivating them, to the extent of from 20 to 100 acres each. There is no yeomanry in the country ; there are no small landowners, such as abound in the continental states, that are making enviable progress in the arts of peace and prosperity ; and peace or prosperity of an enduring character will not find a home in Ireland, until small landed proprietors become established in it. They are the surest protectors of the law, the strongest maintainers of peace, and the most indefatigable promoters of improvement, because law, peace, and improvement are their best allies, and the indissoluble partners

of every interest they possess. Agrarian disturbances, insurrections, fever and famine, could not have so long and so severely made a prey of the country if such a class had been in existence ; and if the periodical recurrence of so many plagues is to be prevented for the future this class must be created.

The direct means possessed by government or the legislature of raising such a class are but few. If the Crown lands in Ireland were judiciously parcelled out into small lots and sold to the occupying tenants, some good would be effected. If the London companies were called upon to dispose in the same way of the vast estates they possess, an immense benefit would be conferred. When the municipal corporations were reformed those bodies were compelled to sell within a limited period all the church livings of which they were proprietors. Analogous reasoning dictates the abandonment of the unseemly possessions held by the London companies in Ireland, and such a measure may be the more confidently advocated because a liberal price would in every instance be paid for the property, and thus the sellers would rather be gainers than losers by the transaction.

Private enterprise, however, will in all likelihood prove the most effective agent in bringing about this as well as most other improvements in Ireland. One or two attempts have been made to form joint-stock companies in that country for the purchase of estates as they are publicly offered for sale, and then reselling them in suitable portions to small capitalists and practical farmers. The present juncture is so favourable for operations of this kind, the empire at large must continue to suffer so intensely while the class referred to remains uncreated, and so much land is sure to change hands in Ireland within a few years, that if a few competent persons were to take the lead in such an enterprise it could not fail to be eminently useful to the state, and profitable to all parties concerned.

It would be easy to add considerably to the list of remedial measures already reviewed. There are, for instance, the laws which regulate the elective franchise, those which deny the tenant for life of an entailed estate the right to charge the

inheritance with the cost of important improvements, and those which empower grand juries to levy county rates and cesses:—all these are more or less vexatious and impolitic. But it is unnecessary to insist upon a particular consideration of any of them, because if the more essential improvements were conceded, all minor ones would naturally follow in their turn. If the waters of regeneration could be made to flow even for a short interval in the right channels, it would be impossible to arrest their current or to set a limit to the blessings they will surely diffuse as they pour along.

A few projects—but more or less of doubtful policy—for the improvement of Ireland and the employment of her people have been pushed forward from time to time with varying degrees of zeal and confidence, and it will now be proper to advert briefly to them for the sake of completeness and impartiality. The projects referred to are a state reclamation of waste lands, a tax upon absentees, and a compulsory obligation on landlords to grant leases.

The Irish waste lands being of considerable extent have long attracted the notice of speculators and improvers. They are about to receive the attention of her Majesty's government, and a sum of one million is promised to the Irish landlords as an aid towards their reclamation. But there is much room to doubt the policy of such a proceeding at any time, and especially at the present time.

There was a Commission to survey the bogs of Ireland, which cost £32,000 in the year 1809. Four able reports and several good maps were published by the Commissioners, but no steps have since been taken by the government to found any measure upon their labours. The Committee relating to the poor of Ireland in the year 1830 refer in their report to no less than twelve preceding sessions during which the importance of reclaiming the Irish wastes was, amongst other advantageous works, strongly recommended. In the session of 1835 the Commons Committee on Public Works went again into the subject at considerable length, and reported that “no experiment was necessary to persuade any

scientific man of the possibility of carrying into effect the reclamation of bogs."

The evidence justifying this language was principally that given by Mr. Griffith, the civil engineer, and Mr. Featherstone, a successful practical farmer.

Mr. Griffith deposed that,

"The mountain bog of the south of Ireland—the moory bog, varies in depth from nine inches to three feet, below which there is a clayey or sandy sub-soil. On the average, about £4 per statute acre is required to bring it from a state of nature to one of cultivation, and then it will fetch a rent of from 5s. to 10s. per English acre."

Again,

"£1 4s. an acre is the highest estimate for the draining of this land in covered drains; the remainder of the expense consists in the trenching up the surface, turning up the sub-soil, and mixing it with the bog; no manure is wanted, a portion of the bog being burnt for that purpose."

Further,

"The expense of reclaiming deep bogs per acre, may be estimated thus:—drainage of an English acre, in the most perfect way, about £1 4s., which is about 40s. the Irish acre; that includes the underdrain: the levelling and digging comes to about £1 10s.; and afterwards, the claying comes to about £6 12s. per statute acre."

Lastly,

"The reclamation of mountain land is very profitable, and easily effected; but the reclamation of deep bog land is attended with a much greater expense, and requires both care and judgment. But both are certainly reclaimable, and would give a successful return when judiciously treated."

Mr. Featherstone assured this Committee that he had reclaimed the worst sort of bog land for £13 an acre, and some cush bog land for £6 an acre: the former, when reclaimed, was worth £1 an acre, and the latter £2 an acre. "It took me," he adds, "£13 an acre to reclaim the first red bog I tried my hand on: and it would take to reclaim, on the average, the red bog of Ireland, £10 an acre."

The Commission of 1809 returned as improvable,
1,576,000 acres of flat bog;
1,254,000 acres of mountain top bog;
2,070,000 acres of convertible mountain bog.

In the year 1845, Mr. Griffith made an estimate for the Land Commission of the unimproved pasture and bogs of the country, which he set down as 6,290,000 acres in the whole, of which 2,535,000 are not to be improved.

Three reclamation experiments upon a large scale have been undertaken of late years, but the results are not esteemed satisfactory. The Commissioners of Woods and Forests placed a wide tract of waste land belonging to the Crown, called Pobble O'Keefe, or King William's town, under the management of Mr. Griffith, and expended some amount of money in trying to render the property productive—but without much effect. Here there appears to have been no want of knowledge, judgment, caution, or of capital—but the profit has not encouraged an extension of the experiment. The Crown holds still larger tracts of the same kind of land on the same spot, but the Commissioners have not ventured to enlarge their operations.

The Irish Waste Land Society, incorporated by the Act 6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 97, has been in existence upwards of ten years, and has taken on lease several tracts of waste land in different counties. If reliance may be placed upon the reports published by the Directors, the operations of this society have been productive of many benefits, but as no dividend has ever been produced to the shareholders, and a price is not to be obtained for their shares in the market, it is impossible to regard this investment, however well intended, or judiciously conducted, in any other light than that of a complete failure.

The monks of the order of La Trappe, located at Mount Melleray, in the county of Waterford, have produced green crops from the very worst description of bog land, but their attempts to raise grain have not succeeded. The capital spent by that penitential fraternity in labour has never been computed. No other men could subsist and toil upon the

frugal diet with which they are content. If the stubborn barrenness of the mountain bog could be subdued by mortal hands, it would have yielded to theirs. But the example of their labour and its results has inspired no imitators worth speaking of.

There are then two sides to the question : on the one are the statements of private persons who depose in positive terms to the profitable character of the trials they have made ; and on the other are the larger but less successful operations of the government and public bodies. Perhaps the difference between the two results is to some extent a natural consequence of certain essential differences between the position of the two parties. The best of all workmen is he who works for himself only. Thus the enterprise of an individual when well directed and ably sustained, will generally be found to exceed that of the state, or of incorporated communities. The economy of the man who is to reap the whole profit of a venture, his keenness, vigour, and spirit are unconquerable. His daring is commensurate with his gain ; and he stands unequalled, because others have divided interests and he but one.

But there is still another aspect in which the reclamation of Irish wastes deserves to be viewed. The Poor Law Commissioners have sanctioned some reclamations on Trafford Moss, by the paupers of the union in which it lies, and the work is said to proceed satisfactorily. The principle upon which employment is found for workhouse poor supposes quite another rule of profit from that applied to ordinary labour. It is not necessarily reproductive, and may be highly useful although attended with pecuniary loss. In this point of view the employment of the Irish poor upon the waste lands of that country suggests new considerations. If the state should be called upon to advance any large amount of money for the relief of Irish destitution, it may be wise to insist that some labour shall be given in return for this succour, and in that event why not devote the labour to these waste lands ? The work, though a present loss, might ultimately prove advantageous. It is possible that a waste

cultivated upon the plan adopted at Trafford Moss by a poor-law union, or taken to reclaim by the different unions of one county, might, after the first expense of draining and fencing had been treated as sunken capital, be let out beneficially both for the public and the tenantry in small divisions of twenty acres each, and a rent of five shillings an acre for twenty-one years. If such an experiment obtained moderate success, and a law securing compensation for improvements were on the statute book, the rapid growth of a yeoman class might be regarded as certain.

Absentees have been the cause of fearful evils in Ireland, and a tax having been more than once imposed upon their estates in former times, it is common to see them registered in the popular lists of Irish grievances, and to find the renewal of the old tax advanced as one of the standard panaceas of Irish distress. But amongst the very best of the Irish proprietors are to be found men who do not set a foot in the country once in seven years. There is not a province in Ireland in which, if it be desired to point out the best method of managing land, and the best manner of treating a tenantry, the example will not be found on the estate of an absentee. To levy a tax upon such a man would be monstrous injustice, and a national wrong.

The plain truth is, that although a resident landlord may, if he be a well-disposed and prudent man, accomplish infinite good, yet a tenantry may enjoy fortune and happiness in a high degree without being blessed with his presence. No doubt it is a beautiful sight to behold the lord of the soil residing in the hall of his ancestors, and spending within his own domain the rents produced by the industry of his surrounding tenants; but the content of their position follows not as a consequence of the residence of the landlord, but of the terms upon which he lets his land. The whole question, with its dread alternative of prosperity or ruin, turns upon that one condition—the amount of rent paid. If that be fairly apportioned to the circumstances of the locality, all goes well and merrily; if not, penury and discontent overspread the scene.

The true inquiry to make, therefore, is not where the landlord lives, but what are the terms upon which those over whom he has power are enabled to obtain the means of living. Whether we take the farm labourer, the man who sows the seed, or the farmer who sells the grain when grown, or the merchant who buys it in the market for retail or exportation, we shall in each case find that it is the profit gained by the individual in his own division of the general labour that gives wealth and independence. Throughout the whole process, therefore, and without any drawback or limit, the presence or absence of the landlord whose property is the foundation and origin of the common activity and general gain, does not, at any period or under any circumstance, form an element in their respective calculations or transactions.

But a tax upon absentees would not only be unreasonable upon general principles—it would in its application to particular cases involve gross inconsistencies. Passing over, without comment, the restraints that would thus be imposed upon the liberty of the subject, and the tendency which such a law would have to make a man's castle his jail, it is to be observed that estates in Ireland are often much divided. A man for instance has 1000 acres in the south—1000 in the centre of the island, and a mansion and demesne near Dublin. How is he to be dealt with? As to his largest estates he is non-resident, and virtually an absentee. Is he to pay the tax on one or on both, or, though he lives on neither and yet in the country, is he to pay no tax at all? The latter would probably be the opinion of those who dream of raising Ireland in the scale of nations by resorting to such expedients as a tax upon absentees, who are often found the best proprietors of the country.

It is from this class of political economists that the idea has sprung, of compelling landlords to give leases to their tenants. If the latter had been entitled to compensation for substantial improvements, so unreasonable a law could not have been proposed. But even though it were now

in force, it would not tend to fuse into closer union the relations of the owner and the occupier of the soil. These ought to be one and the same, though they are too often treated as if they were inherently constituted and qualified by different and generally conflicting interests. The landlord demands the value of his land—the tenant the value of the time, labour, and capital invested in its cultivation. The former declines a lease because he will be debarred by its provisions of all participation in the increased profits, which industry, money, and the progress of science may produce during the term granted ; while the latter will covet a lease for the purpose of securing those very consequences. A legislative enactment for the purpose of accommodating such an adverse state of things as this would be a mischievous absurdity. The difference springs from matters of detail, which will vary in almost every case, and can never be foreseen or regulated by an act of parliament. In this, as in many other difficulties, it is the friction of daily events, and not the force of law that must smooth the asperities of contending interests and make the separate parts of a common system move in the harmonious action of mutual concession for the general good.

END OF VOL. II.

WILLIAM STEVENS, PRINTER, BELL YARD, TEMPLE BAR.

